LEGAL MEDICINE.

PART I.

EVIDENCE.
THE SIGNS OF DEATH.
IDENTITY.
THE CAUSES OF DEATH.
THE POST-MORTEM.
SEX.
MONSTROSITIES.
HERMAPHRODISM.
EXPECTATION OF LIFE.
PRESUMPTION OF DEATH AND SURVIVORSHIP.
HEAT AND COLD.
BURNS.
LIGHTNING.
EXPLOSIVES.
STARVATION.

BY

CHARLES MEYMOTT TIDY, M.B., F.C.S.,

Master of Surgery,
Professor of Chemistry and of Forensic Medicine and Public Health at the London Hospital.
Medical Officer of Health for Islington,
Late Deputy Medical Officer of Health and Public Analyst for the City of London
etc., etc.

C-06039

"It has been finely said, that among the students of nature irreverence is possible only to the superficial You are too conscious of the great powers in whose presence you move and work, of the mysteries above, around, within you, of the magnificent and exhaustless subject, whose fringes you seem only to have touched when you know most about it, to escape from the awe which all true knowledge, with its ever present consciousness of a larger ignorance must always inspire."
—CANON LIDDON. *Sermon preached before the International Medical Congress, August 7, 1881.*

LONDON:
SMITH, ELDER & CO., 15, WATERLOO PLACE.

LONDON:
WERTHEIMER, LEA & CO., PRINTERS,
CIRCUS PLACE, LONDON WALL.

TO

THE HONORABLE SIR JOHN WALTER HUDDLESTON,

BARON OF THE EXCHEQUER, AND ONE OF THE JUSTICES OF THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE.

3, MANDEVILLE PLACE, W.

May 1st, 1882.

MY LORD,

I thank you for permitting me to dedicate this book to you, and for the interest you have taken in its preparation.

As a Member of that Judicial Bench known throughout the world for its integrity and impartiality, its love of learning and of right, the countenance of no better name than your own could have been found, as a real assurance that our highest authorities are willing to encourage the humblest efforts made in the investigations of science, and in the exaltation of the truth.

I remain,

Your Lordship's faithful Servant,

C. MEYMOTT TIDY.

PREFACE.

IT is not without a feeling of the most solemn responsibility that I have undertaken a task of which this volume is the first instalment. I use the words "solemn responsibility" advisedly. For if anything I write should hereafter be quoted to condemn the innocent or to gain a verdict against right, then indeed most truly could I wish the book had remained unwritten.

Some years ago, when engaged, with one prematurely lost to our profession, in the preparation of "A Handybook of Forensic Medicine and Toxicology," I determined that I would one day attempt a more or less complete treatise on Legal Medicine. To the fulfilment of that design, the spare hours of a somewhat busy life have been devoted. Two things, it was evident, had to be done if such a work was to be of any special value to the lawyer and physician :—

First, and before a word could be written, it was necessary to collate from English and Foreign literature all recorded cases having reference to the various subjects under consideration. The numerous errors that had crept into the published records, rendered it impossible to guarantee accuracy without consulting the original reports. It was a matter of no small difficulty to determine how best to utilise the enormous mass of material thus collated. Experience

had taught that to quote long cases in the text in illustration of one single point, was certain to disturb the continuity of the argument, by the inevitable introduction (in order to render the history complete) of numerous details, irrelevant to the subject under consideration. I decided therefore to print the cases at the end of the chapter they served to illustrate, and to refer to them in the text by number only.

Secondly. It became necessary, for the purpose of clearing up what was ambiguous and of reconciling what was contradictory, to institute new enquiries and conduct fresh experiments in most of the subjects. So far as circumstances have permitted, I have endeavoured, whenever the study of recorded cases indicated doubt, to investigate the subject *de novo*. I must admit that it was here one's chief anxiety occurred. To shirk the manifest conclusions of experiment, because such conclusions are not in harmony with the generally received opinions of authorities, is unscientific timidity. On the other hand, dogmatically to state as facts the conclusions drawn from one's own experiments, more especially when such conclusions are at variance (as at times will be the case) with those arrived at by others who have adopted different (it may be better or worse) methods of research, may seem to partake of scientific venturesomeness. And those only who in Science work have felt the difficulty, and yet the necessity, of avoiding the extremes of timidity and venturesomeness, can realise how that difficulty becomes intensified when, as in Legal Medicine, the subject relates to such serious issues as imprisonment or freedom, and it may be life or death.

For the medical jurist, whose object should be the interests of justice, to hesitate where science is positive, is as unjustifiable as for him to speak without reserve on those details of our science, where the limits of exact scientific knowledge are undefined. There is a scientific certainty which only the coward treats as uncertainty, and there is an uncertainty which only the boldness of ignorance ignores.

The subjects dealt with in this volume constituted the basis of my course of Forensic Medicine Lectures at the London Hospital during the Summer of 1881. I have however dropped the Lecture form, except in the first chapter, where I have retained it as the most convenient method of dealing with various questions otherwise difficult to discuss.

In addition to a general Index, and an Index of Cases, I have added a paged *précis* of Contents in order to facilitate reference.

It is impossible for me to acknowledge as I could wish the assistance I have received from friends in the preparation of this work. First of all, I must express my indebtedness for much valuable matter, characterised by a depth and originality of thought, and a rare grasp of details, to the manuscript notes of my old master and colleague, Dr. Letheby, who at his death entrusted his papers to my care.

I desire to express my thanks to Mr. Michael J. Michael, Barrister-at-Law, for the important help he has rendered me in dealing with many legal questions. It is only right to say, that much I have written is due to his friendly assistance.

My thanks are due to Dr. Fenwick, Dr. Dobell, Dr. Sansom,

Mr. McCarthy, and Mr. Treves for very valuable help. In the section on Blood I am under great obligations to my kind friend, Dr. Sorby.

I desire to record my special thanks to my distinguished friend, Mr. Moulton, for his ever ready assistance. Let me add that but for him I might never have had the courage to send the manuscript to press.

To one other I am indebted in the preparation of this volume and of those I hope may follow, far more than I could express or others would suppose. But to write more of this would be to speak of days too painful to recall.

3, MANDEVILLE PLACE, W.
May, 1882.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

PAGE

The Study of Legal Medicine 1

The Process of Law 4

The Coroner's Inquest 4

The Duties of the Coroner's Jury 4

The Post-mortem, an essential part of the Coroner's Inquest... ... 4

The Magistrate's Inquiry 5

The Grand Jury 6

The Petty Jury 7

Evidence 7

Cases where Evidence is, and is not Required 7

The Duties of the Witness and Jury compared 7

No Evidence to be given foreign to the question at issue 9

Evidence respecting Character 9

Hearsay not Evidence 10

Cases where Witnesses are unable to attend on their Subpœna, on account of Ill-health 11

Dying Declarations 12

Two Kinds of Evidence:—

(1.) Direct or Positive Evidence 15

(2.) Circumstantial Evidence 16

Two Kinds of Witnesses:—

(1.) Common Witnesses 16

(2.) Skilled or Expert Witnesses 17

Expert Evidence 17

The Witness Box 18

1. Examination-in-Chief 18

(1.) The Use of Written Notes... 19

PAGE

(2.) Authorities not to be Quoted by a Witness 19
(3.) Medical Secrets 20
2. Cross-examination 21
3. Re-examination 21

Preparation for giving Evidence 22

1. Necessity for full Acquaintance with the Facts 22
2. Necessity for careful Preparation 22
(α.) Methodical Arrangement of the Facts 23
(β.) Previous Consideration of all details relating to Measurements, Size of Objects, etc. 23
Value of Sketch Illustrations 23
(γ.) A careful Consideration of the Conclusions warranted by the facts, essential 24
3. Necessity for Distinguishing between Facts and Opinions... ... 25
4. Plain English to be used in the Witness Box... 25
5. Conversations to be Recorded by a Witness in the Precise Words employed 26
6. Coolness Essential for a Witness 26
7, 8, 9. An Admission of Ignorance on the part of a Witness, at times necessary 26

CHAPTER II.

THE SIGNS OF, AND THE APPEARANCES PRODUCED BY, DEATH.

Definition of Death (Somatic and Molecular) 28
Premature Burial 29
Circumstances under which the Medical Jurist may be required to certify as to the Reality of a Death 30

THE SIGNS OF DEATH.

1. The Entire and Continuous Cessation of the Heart's Action 31
Possible Fallacies 32
Methods of Determining Cardiac Cessation 34
Certain Tests of death depending upon Stoppage of the Heart's Action 35
2. The Entire and Continuous Cessation of Respiration ... 36
Popular Tests 37
Cheyne-Stokes' Respiration, a Possible Fallacy 37
3. Insensibility and Loss of Power to Move 38
Cases other than Death, where these Conditions occur 38

PAGE

4. Certain Minor Signs of Death 39
(α.) Effects of Flame and Heat on the Skin 39
(β.) Action of Caustics 40
(γ.) Changes in the Face and Countenance (Facies Hippocratica) 40
(δ.) Position of the Hands 41
(ε.) Transparency of the Hands 41
(ζ.) The Odour of Death 41

5. Changes in and about the Eye 41
(α.) Changes in the Iris—its Loss of Sensibility to Light ... 41
Insensibility to the action of Calabar Bean, Atropine, &c. 42
(β.) Loss of Sensibility of the Cornea 43
(γ.) Loss of Transparency of the Cornea (loss of lustre)... ... 43
(δ.) Changes in the Conjunctiva Covering the Sclerotic 44
(ε.) Loss of Tonicity and Elastic Resistance of the Eye ... 44
(ζ.) Loss of Elasticity in the Eyelids 44
(η.) Altered Ophthalmoscopic Appearances 44

6. Changes in the Temperature of the Body 45
Observations to be Thermometric, and both External and Internal Temperatures to be Recorded 45
Causes of Post-mortem Cooling 45
The General Facts respecting Post-Mortem Cooling 46
Post-mortem Elevation of Temperature 46
The Time occupied by Post-mortem Cooling 47
The Circumstances influencing Rapidity of Cooling 50
(1.) Causes of Slow Cooling 50
(2.) Causes of Rapid Cooling 51

7. Changes in the Muscles and in the General Condition of the Body after Death 52
Three Stages to be observed :— 52
(A.) THE STAGE OF MUSCULAR FLACCIDITY AND CONTRACTILITY 53
The Period Occupied by this Stage 53
Methods of Testing the Contractility of Muscle 54
General Conclusions 54
(1.) Contractility of Muscle, no Certain Test of Life ... 55
Spontaneous Contractions 55
(2.) Non-Contractility of Muscle, no Certain Test of Death 56
Circumstances Suspending or Modifying Muscular Contractility during Life... 56
(3.) How far an Opinion may be formed as to the Period of Death, from the Condition of Muscular Flaccidity and Contractility in which a Body is found... 57

PAGE

The order in which Muscular Contractility disappears 57
The Influence of Disease on Muscular Contractility 58
General Conclusions 58

(B.) THE STAGE OF RIGOR MORTIS (CADAVERIC RIGIDITY) ... 58
General Facts respecting Rigor Mortis 58
(1.) *The Period after Death at which Rigor Mortis occurs* 61
Circumstances Modifying the Time of its Appearance... 62
Cadaveric Spasm (instantaneous rigor) 63
(*a.*) Importance of Noting the Position in which a Dead Body is found 65
(*b.*) Importance of Recording the Articles found in the Hands after Death, and the force with which they were gripped 67
(2.) *The Order in which Rigor Mortis occurs in the several parts* 69
(3.) *The Time at which Rigor Mortis disappears* 70
(4.) *The Circumstances Regulating the Time of its Disappearance:—* 70
(*a.*) Age 70
(*b.*) Temperature and Atmospheric Conditions ... 71
(*c.*) Condition of the Muscular System 71
(*d.*) Mode of Death 72
(5.) *The Method by which Post-mortem Rigidity may be Distinguished from other forms of Rigidity occurring during Life* 73

(C.) THE STAGE OF PUTREFACTIVE DECOMPOSITION 74
Definition of Putrefaction 74

I. Cadaveric Ecchymoses (*Lividities*) 75
(A.) *External Cadaveric Ecchymoses* 75
Position in which Cadaveric Ecchymoses commonly occur... 75
Causes of Cadaveric Ecchymoses 76
Appearances presented by, and the Circumstances determining the Shape of Cadaveric Ecchymoses 76
Tabular Statement showing the Differences between a Bruise produced during Life, and a Cadaveric Ecchymosis ... 78
B) *Internal Cadaveric Ecchymoses* 80
Bile Stains 81

PAGE

II. Putrefaction Proper 81

(1.) *The General Phenomena of Putrefaction:—* 82

(α.) Colour Changes 82

(β.) The Development of Putrefactive Gases, and the Results consequent upon their Development :— 83

(i.) Distension 84

(ii.) Blood Displacements 86

(iii.) Fluid Effusions 87

(2.) *The Circumstances Modifying the Order and Rapidity of External Putrefactive Changes* 87

(α.) General Tabular Statement of the Circumstances Promoting and Retarding Putrefaction 88

(β.) Effects produced by Burial in Earth after Various Periods 92

(γ.) Effects resulting from Submersion in Water after Various Periods 95

III. The Data upon which an opinion may be formed, as to the Time a Decomposing Body has been Dead ... 99

The Possibility of Putrefaction commencing Before Death 102

IV. The Tissues and Visceral Changes Produced by Putrefaction 102

Methods of Distinguishing Post-mortem Discoloration and Softening, from Discoloration and Softening the Result of Disease 102

(A.) *The Viscera that Putrefy Rapidly* 103

(B.) *The Viscera that Putrefy Slowly* 107

The Presence of Vermin on a Dead Body 109

V. The Formation of Adipocere (Saponification) 111

(1.) History of Adipocere 111

(2.) Its Constitution and Chemical Composition... 112

(3.) Its Formation 112

(4.) The Circumstances Modifying its Formation 112

(5.) Its Properties 113

(6.) The Time required for its Production... 113

VI. Mummification of Bodies 115

Artificial Embalming... 116

How far the Period of Death may be Judged by the Condition of the Body after Death 119

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 121

PAGE

CHAPTER III.

PERSONAL IDENTITY.

MEDICO-LEGAL CASES WHERE QUESTIONS OF IDENTITY MAY ARISE 142

(A.) Identity in the Case of a Living Person, or of a Body that has been Dead a short time only 144

The following points to be considered:—(1) Age; (2) Sex; (3) Trade or Occupation; (4) Complexion; (5) Likeness; (6) Race; (7) Hair; (8) Nails; (9) Stature; (10) Changes by Time and Exposure; (11) Scars; (12) Deformities; (13) Injuries; (14) Pregnancy; (15) Clothes, etc.; (16) Peculiarities of Speech; (17) Smears and Stains ... 144 to 147

(B.) Identity in Cases where Mutilated Remains only have been Recovered 148

The following points to be considered:—(1) Fitting together of the Parts; (2) Age; (3) Stature; (4) Injuries Likely to have Caused Death; (5) Method of Mutilation; (6) Treatment to which the Mutilated Parts have been Subjected; (7) Teeth 148, 149

(C.) Identity in Cases where an Entire or an Incomplete Skeleton has been Recovered 149

The following points to be considered:—(1) Extent of Decomposition of the Soft Parts; (2) Surroundings of the Bones; (3) Origin; (4) Age; (5) Sex; (6) Teeth; (7) Hair; (8) Malformations; (9) Diseases; (10) Injuries; (11) Pregnancy ... ... 149 to 151

(D.) Identity in Cases where Burnt Remains have been Recovered 151

I.—HUMAN REMAINS.

(1.) Are the Bones Human? 153
Consider (α.) their Position 153
(β.) their Associations 153
(2.) Are the Bones Parts or not of the Same Skeleton? 155
(3.) The Length of Time the Body has been Under Ground... ... 155
(4.) The Probable Cause of the Death of the Person of whom the Bones formed a Part 155

PAGE

II.—AGE.

Points of Ossification at Different Ages 158
The following parts are more particularly to be examined in deciding Age:—
Vertebræ, Cartilages of Larynx, Sternum, Cartilages of Ribs, Skull, Lower Jaw, Femur 159, 160
Medico-Legal Aspects of Age 160

III.—SEX.

(See Page 310.)

IV.—STATURE.

The Size of Fœtuses and of Children at Various Ages 162
The Weight of Children at Different Ages 163
The Loss of Weight occurring a short time after Birth, and the subsequent Increase 164
Circumstances Influencing the Growth of Children 165
The Height and Weight of Adults 168
Measurements of the Skeleton at Various Ages... 169
Rule Respecting the Probable Height of the Living Person as Deduced from the Measurement of the Skeleton 171

V.—RACE.

General Characters of the Skulls of the Negro, Esquimaux, Caucasian, etc. 171
Capacities of the Skulls of Different Races 171
Measurements of Skeletons of Different Races 172

VI.—LIKENESS AS PROOF OF IDENTITY.

The Value to be attached to Likeness as Evidence of Relationship 173

VII.—CONGENITAL PECULIARITIES—HEREDITARY DISEASES.

The Existence of Congenital Peculiarities, Diseases, etc., as Evidence of Identity 175

PAGE

VIII.—MARKS OF THE HANDS AND FEET.

Relation between the Size of a Foot and its Foot-print 176
The Circumstances Influencing the Size and Characters of Foot-prints :—
(1.) Material on which the Footprint occurs 176
(2.) The Shape of the Boot 177
(3.) The Rapidity of Progression 177
(4.) The Level of the Ground 177
(5.) Peculiarities of Gait 177
Importance of Recording the Relative Positions of Footprints and of Marks of Blood found on the Floor 178
Method of taking Casts of Footprints 178
Rules to be Observed in the Examination of Footprints, etc. ... 179

IX.—CICATRICES AND TATTOO MARKS.

(A.) Cicatrices 180
The Anatomical Characteristics of a Cicatrix 180
(1.) Does a Wound necessarily leave a Cicatrix? 181
(2.) Inferences to be Drawn from the Appearance of a Cicatrix, as to the Period when the Wound was Inflicted 182
The Circumstances Influencing Rapidity of Cicatrization 182
The Stages through which a Cicatrix passes ... 183
(3.) Inferences to be Drawn from the Character of a Cicatrix, as to the Nature of the Original Wound ... 184
(α.) Scars the Result of Accident 184
(β.) „ „ „ Surgical Operations ... 185
(γ.) „ „ „ Disease 186
(4.) Inferences to be Drawn from the Size of a Cicatrix, as to the Extent of the Original Wound 187
(5.) Can a Cicatrix be Obliterated either by Time or by Artificial Means? 187

(B.) Tattooes 189
(1.) How Far is it Possible for Tattoo Marks to become Obliterated by Time? 190
(2.) What are the Circumstances under which Natural Obliteration is Likely or Possible? 191
(3.) Can Tattoo Marks be Obliterated by Artificial Means? ... 192
Rules for the Examination of Scars and Tattooes 194

PAGE

X.—HAIRS AND FIBRES.

(1.) The Structure of, and the Effects of Reagents upon, Hair ... 197
(2.) Is a Certain Material Submitted for Examination Hair, or some Fibre or another not Hair? 198
(*a.*) Cotton; (*b.*) Linen; (*c.*) Silk; (*d.*) Wool; (*e.*) Hemp; (*f.*) Jute or Bast; (*g.*) Coir 199, 200
(3.) The Measurements of the Hairs of Different Animals, and of Hairs taken from Different Parts of the Human Body ... 200
Questions likely to arise in course of Evidence respecting Hairs:—
(α.) Is the Hair Submitted for Examination Human? ... 202
(β.) If Human, does it Correspond with the Hair of any Person in question (*e.g.*, Victim or Murderer)? ... 202
(γ.) If Human, is it the Hair of Male or Female? 202
(δ.) From what Part of the Body was the Hair Derived? ... 203
(4.) If the Hair be not Human, from what Animal was it Derived? ... 204
(5.) Has the Hair of a Given Person been lately Cut, or if the Hairs Submitted be Free, have they been Torn out of the Body by Force? 204
(6.) The Colour of the Hair—Natural and Artificial Changes of Colour 204
(7.) May the Hair Grow after Death? 208
(8.) The Evidence to be Deduced in Cases of Poisoning from the Chemical Analysis of the Hair 208

XI.—THE TEETH.

The Teeth, as a Means of Determining the Age of Children 209
The Irregularities of Dentition:— 211
(α.) Time of their Appearance 211
(β.) Development 211
(γ.) Supernumerary Teeth and Third Dentitions 212

XII.—STAINS.

Blood Stains 213
General and Naked Eye Appearances of Blood Stains 215
(A.) *Microscopic Test* 215
Bodies likely to be Mistaken for Blood Corpuscles 215
(B.) *Chemical Tests* 215
The Chemistry of the Blood-colouring Matter 215
Changes Effected by Time on the Colour of Blood Stains ... 218
The Chemical Treatment of Blood Stains 219
General Chemical Tests 219

PAGE

The Guiacum Test 221
Teichmann's Test 222

(c.) *Micro-Spectroscopic Test* 222
Blood Spectra 223
Examination of Recent or of Comparatively Recent Blood Stains on a White Fabric 223
Examination of Old Blood Stains, and of Stains on Coloured Fabrics 225
Examination of Blood Stains after they have been Washed, and of the Water Used for Washing them 226
Examination of Blood Stains on Leather 227
Examination of Blood Stains on Earth, or on Clothes Stained with Earthy Matters... 228
Examination of Urine for Blood 229

General Precautions to be Observed in Conducting Spectroscopic Observations 229

Questions *re Blood* likely to be asked in Evidence :— 230
(1.) Are you Certain the Stains Submitted are Blood? ... 230
(2.) Was the Blood Human? 231
(3.) From what Part of the Body was it Derived? 232
(4.) If the Blood be Found on Female's Clothes, may it not have been Menstrual? 232
(5.) Was the Blood Derived from a Living or from a Dead Body? 233
(6.) What is the Probable Age of the Stain? 233

Seminal Stains 234
(1.) General Appearances 234
(2.) Action of Heat on the Seminal Fluid... 234
(3.) Chemical Reactions of the Seminal Fluid 234
(4.) Microscopic Characters of the Seminal Fluid 235

Methods of Examining a Suspected Seminal Stain 235
Bodies with which the Seminal Animalcules are likely to be Confounded 237

Grease Stains 237
Tar and Pitch Stains 238
Tobacco Stains 238
Iron Mould Stains, etc.... 238
Lemon Stains, etc., on Steel 238
Stains of Madder, Sanguinaria, Brasil Wood, Logwood, Camwood and Red Saunders, Archil, Fruits and Flowers, Anatto, Catechu, Rhatany, and Kino 238, 239

PAGE

XIII.—INKS AND HANDWRITING.

Sympathetic Inks 239
Writing and other Inks 240
Erasures, and Method of Examining the Paper where Erasures are Suspected 241

XIV.—LIMITS OF SIGHT AND QUESTIONS RELATING TO VISION.

The Limits of Healthy Sight 242
Conditions Necessary for the Recognition of Objects at a Distance :— 243
(1.) Normal Vision 243
Colour Blindness 243
(2.) Sufficient Light 246
(α) Moonlight 246
(β.) Starlight 246
(γ.) The Flash of Lightning, and (δ.) of Fire-arms 246
(ε.) "Seeing Sparks" 248
3.) Sufficient Size of Object 248

XV.—QUESTIONS RELATING TO SOUND.

(1.) Velocity of Sound 250
(2.) Intensity of Sound 250
(3.) Limits of Hearing 250

Tabular Statement of Details to be Observed in the Examination of Persons or of Bodies Re Identity 252

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 256

CHAPTER IV.

THE CAUSES OF DEATH.

The Causes (Exclusive of Poison or Violence) of Sudden Death ... 279
The Positive and Negative Evidence Afforded by a Post-mortem Examination 282
Tabular View of the Modes of Death 282
The Modes of Death :— 282
I. COMA (Death beginning at the Head) 282, 284
Symptoms and Post-mortem Appearances Indicative of Coma 284

PAGE

II. SYNCOPE (Death beginning at the Heart) 283, 284
Dependent on (1.) *Anæmia* (a Want of Blood) ... 283, 285
(2.) *Asthenia* (a Want of Heart Power) 283, 285
Syncope Proper 286
The General Post-mortem Appearances Indicative of Syncope 287

III. APNŒA (*Asphyxia*) (Death beginning at the Lungs) ... 283, 287
Causes of Apnœa 283
Symptoms and Post-mortem Appearances indicative of Apnœa 287

Death often Due to a Combination of Causes... 281
How far may the Cause of Death be determined at a Post-mortem conducted after the Lapse of a considerable Time 289

CHAPTER V.

THE POST-MORTEM; A MEDICO-LEGAL INQUIRY.

A Post-mortem to be Conducted by more than one Observer, and Persons Inculpated Not to be Present 290
Not to be made by Artificial Light 290
Frozen Bodies to be Thawed before the Post-mortem is Commenced ... 290
A Post-mortem to be conducted with (1) Completeness and (2) Method 290
Notes to be Made at Length 291
A Post-mortem not to be Refused, because a Long Time has Elapsed since Death 291

I. Examination of the Surroundings of a Body 292
II. Examination of a Body before the Removal of the Clothes 292
III. External Examination of the Body after Removal of the Clothes 295
Relation of Wounds to Weapons supposed to have Caused them 295
Determination of the Degree of Maturity in the Case of a New Born Child 295

IV. Internal Examination of the Body 296
(A.) *Brain and Spinal Cord*... 296
(B.) *Thorax and Abdomen* 298
Which to be Examined First 298
(C.) *Thorax* 299
General Points to be Noted 299
(1.) The Heart 300

PAGE

(2.) The Aorta 300
(3.) The Lungs 300
Examination in Case of a New Born Child to Determine whether or not Respiration has taken place (Hydrostatic Test) 301
(4.) The Thymus Gland 302
(5.) Larynx and Trachea, Pharynx and Œsophagus... 302

(D.) *Abdomen* 303
General Points to be Noted 303
(1.) The Liver 303
(2.) The Kidneys 303
(3.) The Spleen 304
(4.) Bladder, Ureters, Urethra 304
(5.) Vagina, Uterus, Ovaries 304
Special Examination in the Case of Women Dying after Childbirth 305
(6.) Stomach and Intestines 305
Rules in Suspected Poisoning Cases 306
Trichinosis... 307
Table of the Weights and Measurements of the different Viscera, etc.... 308
Table showing the Appearance of the Fœtus at different Periods of Utero-Gestation 309

CHAPTER VI.

SEX.—MONSTROSITIES.—HERMAPHRODISM.

SEX.

General Characters of Male and Female Skeletons 310
Differential Characters of the Male and Female Pelvis 311
Table of Measurements of Male and Female Pelvis 312
Examination of Mutilated Portions of a Body to Determine Sex ... 313

MONSTROSITIES—HERMAPHRODISM.

General Considerations 313
Circumstances where Questions respecting Monstrosity and Sex are Referred to the Medical Jurist 313
(1.) Has this Monster the Shape of Mankind or not? ... 315
(A.) Acquired Deformities and Diseased Growths 315

PAGE

(B.) Congenital Deformities Arising from Deficiency of Structures or Defective Development of Parts :— 315
(α.) *Acardiac Monsters* 315
(β.) *Acephalous Monsters* 316
(γ.) *Anencephalic Monsters* 316
(δ.) *Deformities the Result of Structural Deficiency* 316
(C) Congenital Deformities Arising from a Redundancy of Parts, or from the Union of Two or more Embryos 317
DOUBLE MONSTERS 317
(1.) Where the Children are more or less Distinct Above and Below 317
(2.) Where the Union of the Twins is Deep and Intimate, and more or less Complete ... 317
(1.) What is Implied by the Phrase "The Shape of Mankind"? 318
(2.) Euthanasia 318
(3.) Difficulty in Deciding, if a Long Interval after Death has elapsed, whether Unusual Appearances in a Child be Natural or the Result of Violence 319
(4.) How Far is the Separation of United Twins Justifiable? 319
(2.) Is the Monster Male or Female or Both in One (Hermaphroditic)? 320
Differentiation of the Sexual Organs 320
Table of Homologous Parts in the Male and Female ... 321
The Genital Gland, the only Distinctive Sexual Characteristic 322
Definition of Hermaphrodism 322
Tabular View of the Varieties of Hermaphrodism 324

CLASS A.—SPURIOUS HERMAPHRODISM.

(1.) *Manly Women* (*Androgynæ*) 225
Causes producing this condition :—
(*a.*) Enlarged Clitoris 325
(*b.*) Prolapsus of Uterus 326
(*c.*) Loss of One or Both Ovaries 326
(*d.*) Absence of Uterus or of Ovaries or of Both 326
(*e.*) Prolapsus of the Ovaries 326
(2.) *Womenly Men* (*Androgyni*) 326
Causes producing this condition :—
(*a.*) Delayed Manhood 326

PAGE

(*b.*) Adhesion of the Penis 327
(*c.*) Absence of Penis, or the Presence of a Rudimentary Penis only 327
(*d.*) Non-descent of Testes 327

CLASS B.—TRUE HERMAPHRODISM.

(1.) Cases where Male Organs (especially a Testicle), are more or less Developed on the one Side, and Female Organs (and especially an Ovary) on the opposite Side (*Lateral Hermaphrodism*) 327
(2.) Cases where the External Organs Indicate the one Sex, and the Internal Organs the opposite Sex (*Transverse Hermaphrodism*) 328
(3.) Cases of Complex Hermaphrodism (*Vertical or Double Hermaphrodism*) 329
Sexless Beings 330
Concealed Sex 330

(3.) If the Individual in question be Male or Female, or Both in One, is it Capable of Procreating its Kind? 331

General Conclusions 331
The Examination of Cases where the Sex is Doubtful 333

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 336

CHAPTER VII.

EXPECTATION OF LIFE.

PRESUMPTION OF DEATH AND SURVIVORSHIP.

Expectation of Life (*Insurance*) 356
Table of the Expectation of Life at Various Ages 357
Form of Declaration for an Applicant for an Insurance policy 358

The Medical Examination of the Applicant :— 359
(1.) The Nervous and Muscular Systems 359
(2.) The Respiratory System 360
(3.) The Circulatory System 360
(4.) The Digestive System 361
(5.) The Genito-Urinary System 361
Form of Report for the Medical Examiner 362

PAGE
Unusual Risks 362
The Influence of Climate on Longevity 365
The Influence of Pregnancy and Child-bearing on Longevity 365
Assuring the Value of a Life 366
Insurance against Accident 366
Definition of the word Accident... 366
Death from Accident whilst the Insured is Suffering from Disease 367
Accidents during Intoxication 367
Insurable Interest 368
Difficulties arising from the Negotiable Nature of Policies 369
The Onus of Proving the Death of an Insured Person rests with those who will Benefit by it 369
The Death to be Regarded as Natural unless the Contrary can be Proved 369
Presumption of Death in Insurance Cases 370

The Conditions upon which a Policy is Granted:— 370

(1.) That the Applicant shall not Conceal any Disease from which he is Suffering, etc. 370
(2.) That the Applicant shall not Conceal his actual Bodily Condition 372
Obstetric Concealments 372
(3.) That the Applicant give the Names of his Medical Attendants 372
(4.) That the Applicant Detail his Applications to other Insurance Offices 373
(5.) That the Applicant describe accurately his Business 373
(6.) That the Applicant accurately states his Age 373
(7.) That the Applicant Conceals Nothing Respecting his Habits... 373
Intemperance 373
Opium Eating 374
Total Abstinence, Excessive Smoking, Vegetarianism ... 374
Questions usually Submitted to a Jury in Cases where Concealment of Facts is alleged... 375

Insurance and Suicide:— 375

(α.) Accidental or Suicidal? 375
(β.) Suicidal or Natural?... 375
(γ.) Suicidal or Homicidal? 376

Suicide and Insanity in Relation to Life Insurance:— 376

(1.) Does Suicide necessarily indicate Insanity? 377
(2.) If a Person be Insane and commit Suicide, ought the Policy to be Forfeited? 377
PRESUMPTION OF DEATH 380

PAGE

PRESUMPTION OF SURVIVORSHIP 382

(A.) Questions of Survivorship where two or more Persons have met their Death by a Common Accident :— 383

Old Roman Law 383
French Law 384
Prussian Common Law 385
Mahometan Law 385
English Decisions 385

Matters to be Considered in Deciding Survivorship :— ... 386

(1.) Degree of Danger to which the several Persons were Exposed 386
(2.) Age of the several Persons 386
(3.) Sex of the several Persons 387
(4.) The Cause of Death :— 388
(α.) Drowning, Shipwreck, etc. 388
(β.) Smothering 390
(γ.) A want of Oxygen and Exposure to Noxious Exhalations 390
(δ.) Cold... 391
(ε.) Heat... 392
(ζ.) Lightning 392
(η.) Poisoning 392
(θ.) Starvation 392
(ι.) Parturition 393

(B.) Questions of Survivorship, where the precise date and time of Death of one of the Parties is known, whilst that of the other is only Presumptive 393

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 395

CHAPTER VIII.

HEAT AND COLD.

(CONSIDERED MEDICO-LEGALLY.)

Extremes of Temperature considered generally 419
Normal and Abnormal Body Temperatures 419
General Effects produced by an Extreme Heat and an Extreme Cold respectively on Living Animals 420
Extremes of Temperature in relation to Questions of Survivorship ... 422

(A.) EFFECTS OF EXTREME COLD.

Cases where Exposure to Cold may form the subject of Legal Enquiry:—
(I.) In New Born Infants 425
(II.) In Young Children 426
(III.) In the Insane 428
(IV.) In the Wounded 429
Death from Drinking Cold Water when Heated 429
Symptoms produced by Cold 429
Treatment of Persons exposed to Extreme Cold 432
Post-mortem Appearances... 433

(B) EFFECTS OF EXTREME HEAT (SUNSTROKE: THERMIC FEVER: INSOLATION.)

Sunstroke 435
Symptoms produced by Extreme Heat 439
Treatment 441
Post-mortem Appearances... 443

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 444

CHAPTER IX.

BURNS AND SCALDS.

(CONSIDERED MEDICO-LEGALLY.)

Order of Study 452
(1.) Definition of Burns and Scalds 453
(2.) How far may the Appearance presented by a Burn enable us to determine its Origin:— 454
(α.) Burns from Heated Solids 454
(β.) „ „ Molten Metals 455
(γ.) „ „ Boiling Oils 455
(δ.) „ „ Boiling Water 455
(ε.) „ „ Phosphorus 456
(ζ.) „ „ Gunpowder 456
(η.) „ „ Petroleum... 457
(θ.) „ „ Flames generally 457
(ι.) „ „ Explosion of Fire Damp 457
(κ.) „ „ Acids, etc.... 457
(3.) The Classification of Burns 458

PAGE

(4.) The Effects produced by Burns :— 459
(α.) Local Effects 459
(β.) Constitutional (or General) Effects 463
(5.) The period at which different Burns were inflicted 465
Were all these Burns inflicted at one and the same time? ... 465
(6.) The Causes of Death from Burns :— 465
(α.) Injury 465
(β.) Syncope and Suffocation 465
(γ.) Collapse 466
(δ.) Coma, Convulsions, Tetanus, etc. 466
(ε.) Bronchitis, Pneumonia, Œdema of Lungs 466
(ζ.) Enteritis 466
(η.) Exhaustion 466
(θ.) Gangrene, Erysipelas, Pyæmia, etc. 466
(ι.) Secondary Causes 466
(7.) The Period at which Death occurs in cases of Burns 466
How long after the Burn did the Person live? 467
(8.) The Post-mortem Appearances produced by Burns 467
Examination of Charred and Incinerated Remains :— ... 467
(α.) General External Appearances after Death from Burns... 469
(β.) „ Internal „ „ „ „ „ ... 470
(9.) The Means of distinguishing Burns inflicted During Life from those produced After Death, or from the Results of Post-mortem Changes 472
(α.) Medico-legal Importance of the Line of Redness ... 473
(β.) Medico-legal Importance of Vesication 475
Conclusions to be drawn from :—
(i.) The Absence of Blisters 475
(ii.) „ Presence „ „ 476
(10.) Was the Death by Burning Accidental, Suicidal, Homicidal, or the Result of Spontaneous Combustion? 483
(11.) Burns produced by Acids and other Corrosive Bodies 485

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES. 488

CHAPTER X.

LIGHTNING.

General Considerations Relating to Lightning 496
(1.) What is Lightning? 496
(2.) Time occupied by the Lightning Flash 497
(3.) Meteorites 497

PAGE
(4.) Thunder 497
(5.) *Varieties of Lightning*:— 497
(*a.*) Sheet Lightning 497
(*β.*) Forked Lightning 498
(*γ.*) Heat Lightning 498
The Return Shock 498
(6.) The Cause of Lightning 498
Conducting Power of the Various Tissues 499
Causes of, and the Circumstances influencing, the Injurious Effects of Lightning 499
Places of Safety and of Danger during a Thunderstorm... 499
Lightning Conductors... 500
Experiments with the Induced Spark 500
Symptoms produced by Lightning 502
Nothnagel's Experiments on Rabbits with Electrical Discharges ... 505
The Causes of Death 506
The Capricious Action of the Lightning Discharge 506
The Time of Death 507
Treatment 508
Post-mortem Appearances 508
ILLUSTRATIVE CASES... 510

CHAPTER XI.

COMBUSTIBLES AND EXPLOSIVES.

Cases respecting Explosives, etc., in which the Medical Jurist may be Consulted 520
Acts of Parliament relating to Explosives 521

A.—SOLID COMBUSTIBLES, ETC.

(1.) Spontaneous Ignition of Coal 521
(2.) The Slaking of Lime 522
(3.) Lampblack 523
(4.) Sulphur 523
(5.) Gunpowder 523
Fireworks—Explosions in Cartridge Factories, &c. 524
(6.) Guncotton (Pyroxylin) 524
(7.) Phosphorus 524
Greek Fire 525
(8.) Dynamite 525

PAGE

(9.) Metallic and other Combustible and Explosive Compounds ... 526
(a.) Silver Fulminate 526
(b.) Berthollet's Fulminating Silver... 526
(c.) Oxide and Oxalate of Silver 52
(d.) Silver Potassium Fulminate, &c. 52
(e.) Mercuric Fulminate 526
Percussion Caps and Signal Light Composition 526
(f.) Aurum Fulminans 527
(g.) Iodide and Chloride of Nitrogen 527
(h.) Explosive Prescriptions 527
Use of Explosive Bullets 528

I. Spontaneous Combustion of perfectly dry Organic Substances 528

II. Spontaneous Ignition of Organic Substances moistened with Water 529

(1.) *Vegetable Substances:—*
(α.) Hay 529
(β.) Raw Cotton 529
(γ.) Flax 530
(δ.) Oats, etc. 530
(ε.) Esparto Grass 530
(ζ.) Jute 530
(η.) Damp Leaves and Manure 530
(θ.) Grain whilst Malting 530
(ι.) Tobacco Leaves 530
(κ.) Coir (Cocoa Nut Fibre) 530

(2.) *Animal Substances:—*
(α.) Wool 531
(β.) Silk 531

III. Spontaneous Ignition of Organic Substances moistened with Oil, etc. 531

Oily Waste 531
Details to be noted in investigating Cases of this nature ... 533
Spontaneous Combustion in the Human Body 533

B.—LIQUID COMBUSTIBLES.

Definition of a Combustible Liquid 535
Acts of Parliament relating to Combustible Liquids 536
Petroleum Explosions (Xerotine Siccative) 536
Boiler Explosions 539
Nitro-Glycerin (Glonoin: Nobel's Blasting Oil) 539
Bisulphide of Carbon 540

PAGE

Alcohol (Ethylic) 540
Wood Spirit (Methylic Alcohol) 540
Ether 540
Turpentine 540
Benzol 541

(C.) GASEOUS COMBUSTIBLES.

Phosphoretted Hydrogen 541
Hydrogen 541
Coal Gas Explosions 541

Coal Mine Explosions 542

Galloway's Experiments with the Safety Lamp as a Method of Testing the Presence and the Quantity of Fire Damp in Air ... 542
Influence of Dust in Mechanical Suspension in Air in producing an Explosive Mixture 543
Explosions in Flour Mills, etc. 549

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 551

CHAPTER XII.

STARVATION.

Definition of Acuté and Chronic Starvation 560
Cases where Starvation may become matter of Legal Inquiry 560
Circumstances under which Death may Occur from Starvation :—
(I.) Disease 561
(II.) Criminal Neglect 562
(III.) Suicidal Starvation 563
(IV.) Starvation as an Exhibition 563
General Requirements relating to the Supply of Food by Parents, Guardians, etc., to their Children, etc. 563

FOOD 565
(α.) The Varieties of Food... 565
Milk and its Several Constituents... 565
(β.) The relative nutritive Values of different Articles of Food ... 567
(γ.) The Quantity of Food required to sustain Life at Different Ages 568
How much Food should a Healthy Adult or Infant Consume Daily ? 569
Dietaries 570

PAGE

Sudden Increase of Weight in Persons under Training ... 572
Quantity of Food required by Children 573
Quantity of Milk Secreted by Women during Lactation ... 573
Digestion 573
Conditions as regards Food, necessary to maintain Health and Vigor 574

I. The Symptoms of Starvation:— 575
(α.) The Pulse 577
(β.) The Temperature 578
(γ.) The Loss of Weight 578
(1.) Emaciation not necessarily the result of Starvation... 582
(2.) Death from Starvation possible without Emaciation... 582
(3.) The Extent of Muscular Power possible in Cases of Starvation 583

II. The Time of Death in Starvation:— 583
Influencing Conditions:— 583
(α.) State of Body 583
(β.) Access to Fresh Water 584
(γ.) Age 584
(δ.) Warmth 584
(ε.) Hybernation 584
(ζ.) Atmosphere in which the Person is Placed 585
(η.) Previous and Existing Health 585
(θ.) Whether the Starvation be a part of general Ill-treatment 585
(ι.) Whether the Fast be Complete or not 585

III. Treatment in Cases of Starvation 586
IV. Post-mortem Appearances Indicative of Starvation ... 586
V. Diseases Arising from a Deficient Diet or from an Improper Quality of Food:— 589
Paraplegia; Pellagra; Gout; Sea Scurvy; Land Purpura; Diarrhœa and Dysentery; Ophthalmia; Rickets; Relapsing Fever and Typhus; Insanity 589
The General Effects produced by Deficient Food 591

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES 593

LEGAL MEDICINE.

CHAPTER I.

IMPORTANCE OF THE STUDY OF FORENSIC MEDICINE.—THE PROCESS OF LAW—The Coroner's Court—The Magistrate's Enquiry—The Grand Jury—The Trial.—EVIDENCE—Matters not requiring Evidence—The Functions of a Witness Defined and Compared with those of the Jury—Evidence must relate to the Questions at Issue—Evidence of Character—Hearsay not as a Rule Evidence—Exceptions to the Rule that the Evidence of absent Witnesses is inadmissible—Dying Declarations—Varieties in the Character of Evidence—Expert Evidence.—THE WITNESS BOX: Examination-in-Chief—Use of Notes—Quotations from Authorities—Medical Secrets—Cross-Examination.—PREPARATION FOR THE WITNESS BOX AND SUGGESTIONS AS TO GIVING EVIDENCE—Facts and Opinions.

are called to see a patient—is his illness natural disease or the effects of poison? These are examples of the many hundred questions, any one of which, I say, your first day's practice may require you to consider. For the practice of forensic medicine is one that devolves on the profession generally, and not on a few in particular. I admit that in any great case, experts (as they are called) are usually consulted; but for the actual facts and conditions, the appearances, symptoms and the like observed at the moment, the general practitioner must, as a rule, be alone responsible.

And for a moment allow your minds to grasp to the full the responsibilities involved in the practice of legal medicine. Begin, if you like, by a selfish consideration—anything to make you true, careful, and diligent. Think of the responsibility so far as your own position is concerned. The evidence given, and the opinions expressed by you in open court, even if that open court be but a village inn, may be reported in thousands of papers, and be conned over, discussed and criticised wherever the English tongue is read. Depend upon it, if your evidence in any case be one-sided, if your judgment be biassed, if your opinions be not founded on knowledge, or be swayed, either for or against the accused, by popular sentiment, by friendship, or by a want of common sense and science, that one medico-legal case may mar your career, as it may, if you bring thought, learning, power, judgment, discrimination, discretion, common sense to bear upon it, make it. But to be unselfish, think how often the medical evidence, more especially in a criminal case, determines the verdict, and how pregnant with meaning to the prisoner as he stands in the dock the verdict of the jury is. Realise the force of that word "Guilty," as it falls from the lips of the foreman. It seems to seal to many a hideous life-future, the ruin of a prisoner who has done a wrong—the crushing of a family, may be, who have done no wrong. Do not misunderstand me. I would not for an instant urge upon you the painful effects of your evidence (no matter how painful) for any other reason than to quicken your judgment and to intensify your care, save to urge that you estimate every detail to the best of your ability at its right value, and in no sensational or unfairly sympathetic

spirit. Be jealous for truth, careless whom you please or displease. Let not your judgment be influenced one iota either by policemen who are "working up" a case, or by the solicitor who is conducting it. Be careless which way the verdict goes so long as your evidence is that of honest conviction, of intelligent judgment and of accurate observation.

The work before us is not easy, and it would be folly to lead you to think it was. The power to endure bravely any arduous physical effort (such as climbing an ice-mountain) depends much on previous training—on realising the necessity for hard work, and on the determination to succeed. But more than this —safety depends on looking the difficulties and dangers straight in the face. They must first of all be realised as difficulties and dangers; not exaggerated I admit, but not pooh-poohed for fear that our courage may be regarded by others, or appear to ourselves, mere womanly fear. No! eye the dangers well, and then bring to them a strong will, unflinching boldness and determined courage. And the elements of success in intellectual work are very much the same as in physical effort. You have had a certain professional training, and you now come, at the close of your student days, to learn the applications of that work to law, and to be told how to apply your knowledge so as to escape the numerous difficulties to be encountered in the practice of forensic medicine. The habit of observation that the physician insists upon so strongly as essential to a good practitioner, I would urge yet more strongly as *the* essential of a good medical jurist; for it is not unlikely that your observations may have to be conducted under difficulties of a most unusual nature, different to-day from what they were the day before—in the face, I mean, of a moral dust-cloud that some in attendance may have an interest in raising to blind your eyes or to obscure your vision.

I said at the outset, Let us realise *our* responsibilities. As your teacher and guide, I would endeavour to realise mine. If I appear dogmatic, remember it is my duty to direct you along the path I believe to be right. You are at all times entitled to demand reasons for my dogmatism—reasons why I reject lines approved by certain authorities, and adopt others,

Whilst, therefore, I shall point out to you, "dogmatically," what in my judgment is the true course, I shall also endeavour to discuss the views advocated by those who have devoted attention to the several subjects that will come before us in our course of lectures, and which, whether we accept their conclusions or not, should at all times receive respectful consideration.

The Process of Law.

Probably the coroner's inquest will be your first experience of courts of justice and legal enquiries. The duty of the coroner's jury is—(1) To view the body of the deceased person on whom the inquest is to be held (that is to make sure of the death); (2) To hear evidence as to who the deceased person was (that is to establish identity); and (3) To decide the cause of death. Such an enquiry practically necessitates medical evidence. If medical evidence be not required, then as a general rule the coroner's inquest is not required, and *vice versâ*. To establish the *fact of death* as well as the *identity* of the person, may require medical evidence (oftentimes of a most involved character), but to determine the precise *cause of death* must as a rule demand it. Thus the post-mortem examination of the body is an inseparable part of the coroner's enquiry. So important is it, that under no circumstances should the medical man undertake, either to perform an autopsy under circumstances of hurry, *e.g.*, during the sitting of a jury, or at an improper time, *e.g.*, by artificial light, when certain important appearances (such as the yellow colour of the skin induced by picric acid poisoning, &c.), might, and probably would, pass unnoticed.

In a case of grave suspicion and where important issues are at stake, the post-mortem should be performed by at least two independent experts. If the medical man himself be in any way inculpated, or his treatment called in question, it is unadvisable for him to be present, although it is only fair, if he wish it, that he should be represented at the examination by a friend. A case is known to me, where a medical man accused certain sisters of mercy of poisoning with opium a child that had been placed under their custody in a crêche. A

post-mortem was ordered by the coroner, and a friend was present on behalf of the sisters. The examination was conducted by the practitioner who made the charge. At the inquest he stated that the post-mortem revealed all the appearances of death from opium, but did not state until he was cross-examined that the liver was in a condition of complete fatty degeneration. This would probably never have come out as the primary cause of the death, had not a representative of the sisters been present at the autopsy. As a matter of prudence, therefore, neither the accused nor the accuser, nor in fact any one actually suspected, should be present during the operation, inasmuch as tampering with viscera and the contents of the stomach, are circumstances not altogether unheard of in forensic literature.

The coroner's jury may return a verdict of manslaughter or of wilful murder against some person known or unknown. The case now may, or may not, undergo further investigation in the magistrate's court. The nature and scope of the enquiry before the magistrate differs from that before the coroner in this respect:—The coroner's jury are called upon to decide *the cause of death.* This, as a matter of fact, is the special, if not the only object of the inquest. Hence, as a rule, a suspected person is not present at the coroner's enquiry. But the magistrate has to enquire, not so much the actual cause of death, as whether an accused person was, or was not, concerned in causing it. Before the magistrate, therefore, the person suspected is always present in custody. These (viz., the cause of death, and the person who caused the death) are really two different issues, and however much they are necessarily associated, there are many obvious reasons why they should be regarded as distinct. An inquest is held whether suspicion attaches itself to anyone or not, but a magistrate's enquiry is only held when some person or persons are actually suspected of being concerned directly or indirectly in causing the death.

Either on the coroner's warrant, or by the magistrate's decision to send the case to a jury, or by both, a prisoner may be committed to take his trial for murder or manslaughter as the case may be, and the medical witness with the other wit-

nesses be bound over to appear and give evidence. It may be worth remarking here that the depositions taken at an inquest and before the magistrate are not only sent to the judge, but are certain to be in the hands of counsel, and to form a serious weapon for cross-examination should any discrepancies occur in the evidence given by a witness at the trial and that given at these preliminary enquiries. It is most advisable that *all the facts* known to a witness should be stated both before the magistrates and the coroner. Facts stated at the trial for the first time commonly provoke severe comment, counsel representing them to the jury rather as the invention of the witness (by no means necessarily wilful), than as an unvarnished record of what occurred. In all cases the facts stated, and the facts *as* stated, with the least possible delay after their occurrence, are regarded of greater value as evidence, than those remodelled or recalled after an interval. And this is as it should be, considering how imperceptibly and unintentionally, by the mere dwelling on a case, or by discussing it with others, a certain colouring may be imparted, or an importance ascribed to certain details, which may be unreal or even imaginary.

In a criminal case where the prisoner has been committed by the magistrates for trial, a preliminary inquiry is held by what is called "*the grand jury.*" Where a prisoner, however, has been committed on the coroner's warrant only, he is then tried by the petty jury, without the grand jury being called upon to hear the case. In practice, where the case has been heard both by coroner and magistrate, it is the usual custom to send it before the grand jury. Their duty is merely to hear what the witnesses for the prosecution have to say without cross-examination, and to call so much of the evidence as in their judgment is necessary either to find a "true bill," when the case goes for trial, or "no bill," when the whole matter is at an end and the prisoner discharged. Thus the medical witness may, or may not be called before this tribunal, although his presence (should he be wanted) under his subpœnâ is imperative. Neither the prisoner nor his counsel are present, the special points for the consideration of the grand jury in the several cases being

referred to in the "charge" of the judge that precedes their labours.

A true bill being found, the case now comes before the judge and the petty jury for trial.

EVIDENCE.

In law the burden of proof *(onus probandi)* rests on the prosecution, or on that side in an action that states the affirmative. Proof is invariably a matter of evidence, and, without entering upon any legal subtleties, it is very essential that we should have clear views as to what constitutes evidence, and on the other hand, what is inadmissible as evidence. It is often a matter for regret that medical men neglect the study of the rules of evidence, and suffer accordingly.

There are certain matters which need no proof. Such, for example, are things that occur within the constant and invariable course of nature. No evidence is needed, for example, to prove if a woman be confined with a living child, the husband only having access to her a month before, that he could not be its father. If, however, a living child be born within a period where the husband might, in the opinion of certain authorities, be the father, such an opinion being contested by others, then evidence may be given by the several authorities of their experience, the jury being called upon to decide between the opinions expressed, in their special application to the case before them.

And this suggests a word on the relationship between the evidence given by an expert and the functions of the jury, which latter are not to be usurped by the former. Thus the exact fact which the jury are called upon to decide, or the precise question at issue between the parties in a civil cause, cannot be a matter of evidence as the opinion of an expert. To draw a rigid line is often a matter of the greatest possible difficulty both for counsel and for witness, and in but few medico-legal cases is this difficulty more apparent than in defending a prisoner on a charge of murder, where the guilt is admitted, but unsoundness of mind urged as the excuse. The

trial of Sweetland for murder (known as the Holloway murder case) supplies an illustration of this difficulty. Witnesses were called to prove certain peculiarities of manner, which peculiarities had specially developed themselves after certain severe accidents. A well-known expert was called to give evidence for the defence. The judge, however, ruled that the following question was inadmissible, on the ground that it was practically asking the witness the very question that the jury were there to determine, viz., Having heard the evidence given by the several witnesses, was the prisoner, in your judgment, at the time he committed the act, of sound or of unsound mind?

The following questions, however, Mr. Justice Hawkins allowed, their special characteristic being that they are *general* and not special:—

1. Given in any case certain peculiarities of habit, manner, etc., such as—[here counsel detailed the main peculiarities proved in the case of the prisoner]—are such peculiarities, in your opinion, inconsistent with soundness of mind?

2. Are they indicative of insanity?

3. If you were informed that such peculiarities specially developed themselves after an accident, such as—[here counsel detailed the accident that had been proved to have occurred to the prisoner]—would this circumstance more strongly support to your mind the opinion you have expressed that these peculiarities indicate unsoundness of mind?

4. Is it within your experience that such peculiarities which you say indicate insanity, may result, and are likely to result, from an accident such as I have mentioned as an exciting cause, more especially if there be an hereditary predisposition in the person to unsoundness of mind?

In a case of suspected poisoning (*R.* v. *Wilmot*) the medical man stated that certain symptoms he noted and described were consistent with poisoning by strychnia. Mr. J. Manisty ruled against the next question—"Do you consider these symptoms were the result of the exhibition of strychnia?" but allowed the following—"What in your opinion was the cause of the symptoms that you say were consistent with poisoning by strychnia?"

The rule which in criminal cases is strictly observed, (however it may be occasionally relaxed in civil causes) is that *no evidence can be given foreign to the question or points at issue;* in other words, evidence must not be offered in proof of collateral facts, unless fair and reasonable inference can be adduced therefrom in proof of the points in dispute. Whether the evidence on collateral facts admits of being fairly applied is for the judge to determine, although he is compelled in a great measure to trust to counsel whether the facts will turn out to be material. In certain cases, however, evidence on collateral facts constitutes important evidence on the points at issue. Thus, if a surgeon is prosecuted for want of skill and judgment in a certain case, evidence is admissible of his general skill and judgment in cases of a like kind (*Wells Harbour Case*, 2 Stark, Ev., 382). Or again, in an indictment for murder, previous threats or expressions of ill-will by the prisoner towards the deceased are admissible in evidence as proof of ill-feeling, but not other acts of ill-will expressed by him towards other persons. Again in a murder case, the possession by the prisoner of property proved to belong to the deceased may constitute important evidence in proof of the murder, but evidence cannot be adduced to show that the prisoner committed a burglary (for which he is not indicted), unless such evidence is material in support of the capital charge. Thus, in the St. Albans murder case (*R.* v. *Wheeler*), the prisoner shot his victim with a gun, stolen (it was believed) some time previously from a house in the neighbourhood. The particulars of the burglary at this house, connecting as it did the gun stolen from it with the gun in the possession of the prisoner, became important evidence in proof of the charge of murder.

But there is another case where the evidence may take a somewhat wider scope than the exact point at issue, and that is in the matter of *character*. But here there are distinct limits. Evidence of character as an integral part of a case, is only admissible if it be necessitated by the nature of the proceeding. Thus, in criminal cases, evidence of general good character may furnish a presumption that the prisoner has not been guilty of the crime alleged, such general evidence being always

open to cross-examination as to the grounds on which the witness's belief is based.* In a charge of rape, or attempted rape, evidence in defence is permissible to show the unchastity and general bad character of the prosecutrix, and this although she may not in cross-examination have been asked any questions impeaching her chastity. Or once again, in a question of illegitimacy, evidence having been offered of probable non-access on the part of the husband, it would then be admissible to prove that the mother was a person of bad character.

As a rule evidence of character does not, however, form a part of the actual case. In the event of a prisoner being found guilty, the judge may then hear evidence of previous character to guide him in pronouncing judgment. And the justice of this is obvious. A man may commit a criminal act, however unblemished his previous character, and the jury have only to decide the yea or the nay. But the previous good character of the prisoner convicted of the charge should, and always does, weigh with the judge as to the sentence he passes.

As a general rule *hearsay is not evidence.* The law believes no man's bare assertion (be he prince or peasant), but requires his actual presence in court, the sanction of an oath or its equivalent, and the opportunity for cross-examination. But even this rule has its exceptions. For example, in cases of pedigree, prescriptions and custom, the statements of the dead are admitted as the only possible means of getting at the facts. Or, again, if the hearsay be a part of the actual transaction (*i.e.*, part of the *res gestæ* in question and not merely a medium of proof), it may be received at the discretion of the judge. In a breach of promise case for instance, where the defendant pleaded the bad character of the plaintiff, a witness was allowed to be examined as to representations of character made to him by third persons, character being a matter of general repute (*Foulkes* v. *Selway*, 3 Esp., 236). Or, again, if a witness has heard a second witness since dead give evidence on oath at a trial, he may repeat on oath what he heard that

* "In civil cases the fact that the character of any party to the action is such as to affect the amount of damages which he ought to receive, is generally deemed irrelevant."—*Fitzjames Stephen.*

witness say, but the repetition must be the precise words uttered, and not the mere general effect of the evidence.

Evidence is therefore received in exceptional cases without the personal attendance of the witness. For he may be dead. Thus if a witness, having given evidence in a case on oath and been open to cross-examination, die, his evidence will be admitted in any subsequent suit between the same parties, provided always that the evidence involves the same material questions. Or, supposing one man to have stabbed another, the evidence of the injured man can be used against the prisoner on an indictment for murder, if the injured man should afterwards die from the wound received.

And this suggests two cases of a like kind where the medical man may be called upon for an opinion. In the case of *R.* v. *Savage* (5 C. & P., 143), it was decided that the evidence given by a woman when a case is before a magistrate cannot be afterwards used at the trial, on the ground that she was unable to attend because near her confinement. This case, however, was decided in 1831, and before the passing of the 11 & 12 Vic. 42. Since that statute it has been held by the Court for Crown Cases Reserved (*R.* v. *Stephenson* L. & C., 165), that "there may be incidents attending an approaching parturition of such a nature as to make it an illness within the meaning of 11 & 12 Vic. 42, s. 17." "The question whether the illness proved is or is not within the statute is a question for the determination of the judge presiding at the trial, and this court will not interfere with the exercise of his discretion." In the case referred to, the brother of the witness who had given evidence before the magistrates swore that she was daily expecting her confinement, and that she was "poorly otherwise," and upon that her deposition was admitted.

Again, where it is proved that a witness is too ill to travel, the deposition of that witness taken before the committing magistrate may be read as evidence, provided such deposition was taken in the presence of the person accused, and full opportunity for cross-examination permitted (11 & 12 Vic. 42, s. 17).

Where it is proved that there is no reasonable probability

that the deponent will ever be able to travel or to give evidence, a deposition made by a witness, although not taken before the committing magistrate, may be given in evidence. Such deposition must, however, have been made in the presence of a magistrate and signed by him. Reasonable notice of the intention to take such deposition must also be served upon the person (whether prosecutor or accused) against whom it is proposed to be read, and it is also necessary that such person, or his counsel or attorney, had, or might have had if he had chosen to be present, full opportunity of cross-examining the deponent.

The law requires all evidence to be given on oath, or what is equivalent to an oath. But here again there are certain exceptions. Thus in an indictment for manslaughter, a statement made by the deceased immediately after he was knocked down, as to how the accident happened, has been held admissible (*R.* v. *Foster*, 6 C. & P., 325).

But the main exception to the necessity for an oath is in the matter of *dying declarations.* And here three points must be strictly noted so as to render such declarations without oath, of equal value to evidence on oath:—

(1.) The person must believe he is in actual danger of death.

(2.) He must believe his recovery to be impossible.

(3.) To make the declarations admissible as evidence, death must have ensued.

The law presumes that no one would willingly leave this world with a lie in his mouth, and that if at so solemn a moment an accusation be made, it is at least sincere.* In the

* It may be sincere without being true. Dr. Taylor cites (p. 455) the case of a dying woman in St. Thomas's Hospital, who accused a man of assaulting her on Kennington Common. He was found guilty, and executed. A year after his execution the real murderers were discovered, and his innocence established.

The following cases (quoted by Taylor) may be referred to on this point:—

(1.) Chief Baron Pollock ruled in *R.* v. *Bayley* (Exchequer Chamber, Jan. 1857), that although the surgeon had given some hope to the dying person before the declaration, his declaration might be taken as evidence, because,

case of *Jenkins* (Crown Cases Reserved, April, 1869), a statement was rejected because the dying person, in using the expression, "I have no hope of my recovery," requested that the words "at present" should be added. In *R.* v. *Londesborough* (York Lent Assizes, 1871), Mr. Justice Brett declined to receive a statement because the evidence went no further than that the dying youth said he thought he should not get better. Chief Justice Erle, in Seton's case (*R.* v. *Pym*, Hants Lent Assizes, 1846), said, "The law admits these declarations, not because recovery is impossible, but because there is in the mind of the person making them the conviction of approaching death."

Still there are cases where these rules seem to have been somewhat relaxed. Thus, in the case of *R.* v. *Morgan* (Cox C. C., vol. xiv., p. 337), a question arose as to the admissibility of dying declarations by the subject of the homicide where the wound was serious but no actual fear of immediate death expressed by the person. In this case (a trial for murder) the death was caused by the prisoner cutting the throat of his victim. The deceased about five minutes before his death and when actually dying made the declaration in writing, having at the time no power to speak. This was proved by a witness

in spite of the surgeon, he believed he should not recover. (2) *R.* v. *Harvey* (Exeter Summer Assizes, 1854), Justice Wightman. (3) *R.* v. *Wanstell* (Leeds Autumn Assizes, 1869, and *R.* v. *Pettingill* (C. C. C., April, 1872), Baron Cleasby ruled that the dying person must either expect death, or death be imminent, even when a magistrate has taken the deposition. (4) In *R.* v. *Barrett* (Leeds Lent Assizes, 1869), Baron Cleasby ruled against a declaration, because the strongest statement was that "she thought she should not recover." (5) In *R.* v. *Qualter* (Stafford Lent Assizes, 1854), the surgeon was, as we think, unjustly blamed for the escape of the criminal through a technicality of this kind.

See also the case of *John Clark*, tried in December, 1783, for "killing and murdering *Thomas Johnson*, by stabbing him in the belly," etc. "The declarations of the deceased," said the Judge, "after receiving the death-wound, are always considered as admissible evidence in cases of murder, though nothing before that wound is considered in that light. The man is in health; he receives his death-wound; he declares his own idea of it that it will be mortal," etc. ("Select Criminal Trials at Justice Hall in the Old Bailey." Vol. i., Appendix, p. 32, etc. Edinburgh, 1803.)

who saw the deceased come staggering out of the hut with his throat cut. It was held by Denman, J., after consulting Cockburn, C. J., that the declaration might be admissible; but that, having reference to certain decisions, and especially *R.* v. *Cleary* (2 F. & F., 850), it would be proper, if admitted, to grant a case for the C. for C. C. R. The learned Judge required that the whole of the evidence should be before him previous to deciding whether the declaration could be received.

[Cases cited in note to this case:—*R.* v. *Reason and Tranter*, 1 Strange Rep., 499; *R.* v. *John*, 1 E. Pleas of Crown, 357; *R.* v. *Tinkler*, 1 E. P. C., 354; *R.* v. *Woodcock*, 1 L. C. C., 500; *R.* v. *Mead*, 2 B. & C., 605.]

In the case, however, of *R.* v. *Bedingfield*, a somewhat different course was adopted. This case was an indictment for murder, in which it appeared that the deceased, with her throat cut, came suddenly out of a room in which she had left the prisoner, who also had his throat cut and was speechless. Immediately on coming out she said something, and a few minutes afterwards died. It was held that the statement made by her was not admissible, either as a dying declaration, or as part of the *res gestæ*. *Sed quære*, whether in a dying declaration, it is not a question of fact, upon the surgical evidence, that from the nature of the wound the person must have been conscious of almost immediate death. See *R.* v. *Bonner*, 6 C. & P., 386.

It is to be remembered that such dying declarations are not available in civil but in criminal cases only; and further, that they are only admissible in cases of homicide where the death of the person making the declaration is the subject of the charge. The declarations themselves, moreover, must relate to the actual circumstances of the death, and to nothing else. Thus the dying declaration of a dead man concerning things done by himself is inadmissible (*Garnons* v. *Barnard*, 1 Anstr., 299). And further, the same rules as to dying declarations hold good as to evidence on oath, viz., that a child of tender years must be proved to have had such religious knowledge as would have made the oath admissible, or if it be an adult, that he had a *religious* sense of approaching dissolution. In the

case of *R.* v. *Perkins* (2 Moodie C. C., 135), the dying declaration of a boy aged ten was received as evidence.

And here a word may be added as to the duties of the surgeon in cases where a dying person desires to make a declaration.

If a magistrate or other legal functionary be present, the medical man in charge of the case should not interfere further than to give his opinion as to its hopelessness, and the state of the dying person's mind—that is, whether he be *compos mentis* or otherwise. But should no legal functionary be present, the medical man is undoubtedly the best person to receive such declaration or confession. He must not, however, be officious in extracting information, but should content himself with writing down the *identical words voluntarily uttered* of the sick person, and not his interpretation of them. He should then, if possible, make the dying person sign the confession after reading it over to him.

In the case of certain severe injuries, death is sometimes so sudden that there is no time even to pencil down the words of the dying man. If a medical man be present, he should (whilst endeavouring to prolong life) listen quietly to such statements, only interrupting when he does not hear or understand, and suggesting nothing save to make clear what is ambiguous. This done, he should write down the words so soon as he can get writing materials, and if others have heard them, he should read over to them what he has written, and have the statement attested.

It is allowable for a medical or other witness to give *parol* (or word of mouth) evidence of a dying declaration, but greater weight is always attached to those statements that are taken down in writing in the presence of witnesses.

Evidence is of two kinds—(1) *direct* or *positive*, and (2) *circumstantial*. Thus, if a witness were to say "*I am certain that the prisoner is the man I saw knock the deceased person down*," then that fact is proved, so far as any fact is capable of proof. Provided the witness is to be believed, such evidence is *positive*, and the jury have no alternative but to find a verdict in accordance with it. But if the witness were to say "*To the best of my belief the prisoner is the man*," explaining that at the time

the crime was committed the night was dark, or that he himself was flurried, then a doubt hangs over the evidence of identity, which at best is merely *circumstantial.* But even circumstantial evidence is of very different value. Thus *it may be conclusive.* If, for example, A be charged with the murder of B at a certain time and place, and reliable evidence be called to prove that A at the time of the murder was 100 miles away from the place where the murder was committed, (*i.e.*, an alibi,) the evidence is conclusive that A could not have been the murderer. But *circumstantial evidence may be merely presumptive, i.e.*, where the inference to be drawn from it is only probable.

A jury must give a verdict in accordance with the evidence. As regards positive evidence, therefore, the credibility of the witness is practically the only point they have to consider. Or, in case of two witnesses giving diametrically opposite positive evidence, the jury have to determine which of the two is to be believed. Still more difficult and delicate is their duty with respect to the circumstantial evidence. And for us it is enough to remember that as scientific witnesses, common or expert, our duty is not to usurp the functions of the jury in venturing to decide the case submitted to them and to them only, but merely, as far as we can, to assist them in their deliberations.

Scientific witnesses may be called either as common witnesses or as experts, or (what is perhaps more frequently the case) both as witnesses of facts and as experts.

1. *A common witness* has to speak to the matters of fact which have come within his personal knowledge. That strychnia was present in the stomach of the deceased, that a dead body he was called to see had sustained severe injuries, that a girl had upon her person on a given day certain marks of violence consistent with having been raped, and so forth, are facts to be proved by the scientific witness, in which, save in the nature of the facts on which he has to give evidence, he in no respect differs from an ordinary witness. Further, if any fact relating to the case be within the personal knowledge of the scientific witness, a subpœnâ served on him to speak to that fact in a court of law is as imperative as when served on any other witness.

2. The *skilled* or *expert witness*, as he is termed, is called to state his opinions either on facts observed by himself, or proved in evidence by others. No witness can be compelled to give his opinions in the witness box. Further, no one is bound to accept a subpœnâ merely to state opinions. The witness that can speak to any actual fact connected with a case, must attend the trial if he be required to do so, but the expert, however wide his experience, cannot be forced to give the court the value of his general or special knowledge.

The skilled witness must form his opinions on the facts he has heard proved. Thus Mr. Justice Hawkins, in the Staunton case, declined to take the expert evidence of a physician, because he had not been present during the time that the witnesses were giving their evidence, but had based his opinions on the facts submitted to him in writing by the attorney. Hence, it is not enough for an expert to run into court the minute he is wanted, but it is necessary that he should be able to say that his opinions are based on the evidence he has himself heard in the witness box.

And here a few words are suggested on the vexed question of *expert evidence*. Nothing is more horrible to contemplate than a traffic in evidence either for gain or notoriety. Hence we lay down this definite rule that in our judgment should always guide the scientific expert, viz., that no one is justified in giving evidence in support of a case, or in support of that part of a case upon which he may be specially retained to give evidence, that he does not believe to be right and true. Any evidence offered by the expert in the witness-box should be as honestly and truly his scientific belief, influenced by reasons as definite and as accurate, as if he was arguing the points in dispute before a scientific tribunal, competent to weigh his arguments and pronounce on his opinions with accuracy and precision. Guided by this rule, expert evidence is far from the worthless thing that some would affect to regard it. The truth in disputed cases can only be learnt by a fair statement of different opinions. Whether an unscientific tribunal is capable, or should be required to decide scientific differences, is not the question we are discussing; but given these differences of opinion amongst men

of science, if only they be honest, the grounds being stated on which the opinions are based, and the witness being subject to cross-examination by counsel prompted by experts who possibly hold different views, and are familiar with the strength and the weakness of their opponents' position and arguments, no better way, it would seem to me, could possibly be devised to arrive at *the truth*, which is the object of all legal enquiry. Lawyers would scarcely be prepared to admit that legal decisions are worthless because three judges unanimously on appeal decided a case in favour of the defendant, which three other judges in an inferior court had as unanimously decided in favour of the plaintiff (*Julius* v. *The Bishop of Oxford*, 1879). Neither is it just or fair, on the other hand, that lawyers (as they are fond of doing) should represent the opinions of experts as of no value, merely because differences of opinion exist amongst scientific authorities. In all expert evidence the witness must never for a moment transgress the limits of scientific accuracy, nor, with the warmth of a partizan, or the desire to do the best he can for his case, permit himself to colour or distort, directly or indirectly, the hard, straight, and inflexible lines of well attested scientific facts, such as he would never dream of disputing, colouring, or distorting before a learned society.

THE WITNESS-BOX.

Every witness is, or may be, subjected to three, and possibly four sets of questions.

1. *Examination-in-chief:*—that is, the rehearsal of the actual evidence the witness is prepared to give in support of the side on which he is called. In examination-in-chief, leading questions (that is, questions where certain answers are obviously suggested) are not permitted. Thus it would be inadmissible in examination-in-chief for counsel to ask a witness, "Did you, as you were passing, see the prisoner push the deceased into the water?" this question merely suggesting "Yes" as the reply. The question must take some such form as this: "What did you see on passing?" the witness answering, "I saw the prisoner push the deceased into the water."

There, is, however, one exception to this rule of the inadmissibility of leading questions in examination-in-chief, viz., in the case of "a hostile witness,"—that is, a witness who is compelled to state certain facts within his knowledge, but which he has an object in concealing. Thus the friend or relative of a prisoner may have seen him, and been the only person who saw him, commit a murder. His desire to shield his friend or relative is natural. Yet his evidence is essential to bring home the charge, and to prove the guilt. In the examination of such a witness leading questions in examination-in-chief are necessary, the witness being "hostile" to the side on which he is called.

And here two or three questions arise which, from the medical jurist's point of view, are worth discussing:—

1st. *As to written notes.* The witness must not read his evidence, but he may "refresh his memory" (as it is called) by referring to written notes, provided always that these notes were made *at the time of*, or (if this was impracticable) *immediately after*, the occurrence to which they relate. The notes used must be the original notes and not copies. As a matter of fact judges prefer in some cases evidence where the details have been committed to writing. For example, conversations with a prisoner—the results of a medical examination—the details of an autopsy—are far more likely to be accurately stated when written down at the time that such examinations were made or conversations occurred, than if the witness merely trusted to memory, more especially considering the interval that frequently elapses between the committal and the trial. Again, there must be no additions (the result of after-thoughts) made to the notes, if they are to be used in the witness-box. The actual notes taken at the time of, or at most immediately after, the occurrence to which they relate—uncorrected, unexplained, uninterpolated—are *the* notes to be used, and no other.

2ndly. *A witness must not quote authorities in the witness-box.* In the case of a scientific witness there is a great temptation to do so; but it must be remembered that the expert is called to give his opinion, and not to say who agrees or who disagrees with him. Counsel, however, may read a quotation (although

not as a quotation) from a book, asking the witness, in the form of question, how far his own view coincides or not with the opinion there expressed. No written or published opinion of a living authority can be quoted even by counsel, the law requiring, if the opinions of such authority be deemed necessary in the judgment of those conducting the case, that the authority himself should be called to state his opinion on oath and be subject to cross-examination.

And here one word of practical advice. If a quotation from the works of a deceased authority is read to you in cross-examination, and you are asked how far you agree or disagree with the opinion expressed, never under any circumstances accept the quotation as expressing the opinion of the authority in question. Neither assent to, nor dissent from the quotation, until you have asked to be permitted to see the book from which the quotation is made. For a counsel may misrepresent the author wilfully or by mistake. One sentence preceding or following the quotation read, will often put an entirely new aspect on the quotation itself.

3rdly. *As to Medical Secrets.*—In New York it has been decided that "No person duly authorized to practise physic or surgery shall be allowed or compelled to disclose any information which he may have acquired in attending any patient in his professional character, and which information was necessary to enable him to prescribe for such patient as a physician, or to do any act for him as a surgeon."

The highest legal authorities in England, however, have decided that medical men enjoy no special privilege with regard to secrets of a professional nature. In other words, no practitioner can claim exemption from answering a question, because the answer may or would involve a violation of secrecy, or even implicate the character of his patient. This is the law:—and however it may be defended on legal grounds, we hope there are not a few medical men who would prefer to sacrifice their personal liberty to their honour. It seems a monstrous thing to require that secrets affecting the honour of families, and perhaps confided to the medical adviser in a moment of weakness, should be dragged into the garish light of a law court, there to

be discussed and made joke of by rude tongues and unsympathetic hearts.

2. In *cross-examination* (that is the examination of a witness called in support of one side by the counsel on the opposite side) leading questions are the rule. In fact, the witness now occupies, to the examining counsel, the position of a hostile witness. It is in cross-examination that the true power or the true weakness of a witness manifests itself.

Great liberty is allowed (and rightly allowed) to counsel in the matter of cross-examination. Their duty is to do the best they can for their client, by detecting flaws, omissions, and inconsistencies in the evidence of an opposing witness,—by toning down strong expressions,—by seeing how far ignorance of facts or bias may have influenced him, and by putting the best construction on acts and words that tell most against that view of the case it is their duty to advocate. Great as is the liberty allowed the cross-examiner, it is in our experience a liberty (certainly in civil courts) rarely abused. It is the exception, we believe, for counsel to use their liberty as "a cloak of maliciousness." A witness must not be over-sensitive :—still, should counsel abuse his privileges, the witness may then fairly appeal to the judge, placing himself in his hands to decide how far the necessities of the case warrant the severe cross-examination to which he is being subjected. No words can express one's abhorrence at the base use of a great power, when counsel make cross-examination the opportunity for false assertions and untrue insinuations, taking refuge in doing so under the instructions they have received from the attorney.

It is very seldom indeed that a witness is justified in declining to answer a question. Of course, no witness is called upon to reply to any question, the answer to which would criminate himself. I have already suggested, however, that a witness may be morally justified in doing that which legally cannot be supported. But to take so serious a step on the high ground of professional morality, must be no act of momentary impulse, but well considered in all its bearings.

3. In *re-examination*, a good examiner takes care to clear up obscurities in the evidence of his witness, and to make good,

as far as he can, the ground lost by cross-examination. The witness cannot be asked in re-examination on any new matter except by permission of the judge; in other words, he can only be re-examined on subjects about which he has been cross-examined, or that arise out of the cross-examination. If by permission new matter be introduced, it will be always open to further cross-examination.

4. Lastly, the judge may see fit to ask the witness certain questions that occur to him as necessary for the purposes of justice.

Preparation for the Witness-box, and Suggestions for giving Evidence.

And here a few suggestions as to how to give evidence may be permitted. They are offered with but one object;—not to teach you to be a skilful partisan, nor a sharp defiant witness, nor to get the best of counsel, but simply for this—that your evidence may be of such a nature, both as regards its arrangement and scope, that justice may be assisted by a clear and orderly statement of the truth and the whole truth, and not perplexed by a disorderly combination of chaff and wheat—a hopeless entanglement of the material and the immaterial.

1. It is your duty to make yourself fully acquainted with, and master of, all the facts bearing on that part of a case upon which you may be called to give evidence. Your knowledge, in short, should be as far complete as possible. As an illustration of what I mean, no medical man is justified in venturing to give evidence on the results of an imperfectly-conducted or half-performed post-mortem. Because a death was sudden, and you find on opening the thorax evidence of heart disease, you are not justified in neglecting the examination of the brain. Death is sudden in some cases of cranial hæmorrhage, and apoplexy may co-exist with, or be caused by, poisoning. In all cases likely to be matters of judicial enquiry, *completeness of work* is absolutely essential for two reasons,—the one to avoid personal censure, and the other to further the interests of justice.

2. Do not think yourself above a careful previous preparation for the witness-box. As you train your body for physical exer-

tion, train your mind for an intellectual contest. The witness has a harder struggle than the cross-examiner (for it is far easier to ask questions than to answer them):—hence by so much let your preparation be the more active and complete.

And for this work of preparation, to which the evening before the day of trial may with advantage be devoted, a few suggestions may not be out of place:—

(*a.*) Arrange all your facts methodically, and as far as possible chronologically. Make yourself perfectly clear on all dates and times, recalling as far as possible the day of the week as well as of the month, of every important event. In any case where the precise date or time is a matter of question, and important facts turn upon it, it is advisable to recall the circumstances that enable you to speak positively to a specific date or time, as that on which the event happened about which you may be asked.

(*β.*) Again, where measurements, size, weight, distances of objects, are matters of evidence, these should be carefully considered beforehand. In description, it is advisable to adopt well-known English standards. Thus, speak of inches, feet, yards, &c., rather than of metres; of grains, rather than of grammes; of gallons, rather than of litres. Where, however, absolute accuracy is unnecessary and comparative accuracy sufficient, such common expressions as a finger's or a hand's breadth, or, in speaking of size, the use of such comparisons as the size of a sixpence or of a shilling, or other well-known objects, are often not only allowable but preferable, as common to everybody's comprehension and grasp.

Sometimes an illustrative drawing is of great service in evidence. Thus, in describing injuries, such as cuts, stabs, etc., a sketch (and if life-size so much the better) of the injured part, showing the precise direction and size of the wound, at once renders the whole thing clear to judge and jury when simple description might fail. In fact, there is in certain cases no plan that commends itself more entirely to all engaged on a case than sketch illustrations, or, as we may term it, the graphic form of evidence. Thus a rough drawing, showing the exact position of a dead body as you found it when first called

—its relationship to bed, window, table, fireplace, chairs, or to other objects in the room, such as glasses, a pistol or a razor (should these constitute important points in the case), saves greatly, in many cases, the time of the court. But though the drawing may be rough, remember it must be correct, or it is worse than useless.

We repeat:—let your mind, before you enter the witness-box, be clear on all dates, times, distances, size, measurement of objects, etc., on which you are about to give evidence, lest you confuse rather than help justice.

(γ.) Again, as an expert, you will be called upon for opinions. The conclusions you would draw from the facts proved, demand your most careful and studious consideration. The medico-legal opinion of any value is the thoughtful, oftentimes tedious, work of the study, and not that (as we may say) jumped at on the spur of the moment under examination. And if in the quiet of your study you fail to come to a satisfactory conclusion, do not attempt a wild conjecture (I beseech you) in the hurry and excitement of the witness-box. To *be* accurate, is ten thousand times better than to *appear* brilliant. Read over and carefully study the subject-matter of your evidence as stated by authorities. Carefully consider the opinions held and taught by others, and the precise grounds on which they hold and teach them. I do not say that the opinion of an authority, however great, is to convince you against your reason; but I do say, that it is your duty respectfully to consider it with a mind fully open to conviction. Want of thought (laziness in fact) is a far worse crime than error of judgment.

Further, on matters of opinion, assuming your own opinion to be correct, it is manifestly unfair to an inculpated person to state it as if there were no other, when professional men of admitted eminence hold an opposite view.

And here let me suggest that in your quiet preparation for the witness-box, you should regard yourself as prompting counsel for your own cross-examination (playing the part, as has been wittily said, of devil's advocate). This is indeed the only safe course. Never for an instant allow yourself to imagine that counsel on the other side will be imperfectly instructed, or

ignorant of the views of standard authorities. Do not, therefore, be blind to the difficulties of your case, lest they come upon you unawares, and your eyes be opened at an inconvenient season. Rather to yourself exaggerate the difficulties of your own side, and carefully consider how you will meet and explain them when the time comes. And so your preparation on this head should be of a dual nature; *first*, a careful study of the opinions held and expressed by authorities; and *secondly*, your reasons for accepting certain opinions and for rejecting others.

3. Before giving evidence carefully distinguish between facts and opinions. That prussic acid and belladonna are deadly poisons are facts, but their precise method of action are matters of opinion. The direction of a wound in the throat and its size are matters of fact, but the deduction that the wound in question was inflicted by a left-handed person, or that it was homicidal and not suicidal, or *vice versâ*, will in most cases be matters of opinion. Facts, of course, hold a very different position in evidence to the opinions of experts, no matter how distinguished the experts. And as regards opinions, remember this, they must be formed on facts known personally to yourself, or proved in evidence, and not from hearsay and public rumour.

Once more, carefully distinguish between your duty as a witness and the duty of the jury. As I have already pointed out, the witness must never attempt to arrogate to himself the functions of the jury. Difficult as oftentimes this task is, the good sense of the medical jurist will in most cases dictate the line that he must not pass.

4. In giving evidence, use at all times when possible plain English:—at any rate never attempt quotations (as if to appear learned) in foreign languages. A "blood clot" is a better witness-box phrase than "an apoplectic extravasation." Speak of "a bruise" rather than of "a contusion," of "the belly" rather than "the abdomen." Avoid exaggerated expressions. Avoid, too, all flippancy of manner. I do not say assume any absurd air of preternatural gravity, but be natural. Take care before you answer a question, that you both hear and understand it, and then answer it so that you can be heard and understood. Avoid as far as possible all prolixity and useless repetitions. Avoid

giving answers qualified by "ifs" and "provided thats," and so on. If you, knowing all the medical details, are uncertain in your own mind, how can a jury decide who only know what you tell them? I do not mean that you are to speak positively when you are unable to do so, but simply this, that if you are unable to make up your mind definitely on matters of opinion, it is infinitely better not to attempt an opinion in the witness-box at all. And above all, frame your answer so that it conveys your real meaning, and take care, if any doubt as to its meaning exists in the mind of the judge, that you do not pass it over until the obscurity has been cleared up.

5. In stating conversations you have had with a prisoner, or with others in the presence of a prisoner, judges prefer that the precise words of the conversation should be stated. Thus, instead of saying "I asked the prisoner whether he knew anything about the murder, but he denied doing so," it is better to state it thus: "I said to the prisoner, 'Do you know anything about this murder?' to which he replied, 'No, I know nothing whatever about it.'"

6. In cross-examination never lose your temper. Your best defence, if unfairly pressed, is perfect coolness. The honest witness can afford to be dignified.

7. If you are asked a question you cannot answer, at once admit it, with a plain outspoken "I don't know." Nothing is more dangerous than for a witness to attempt a guess for fear of being thought ignorant. For a manufactured answer suggests further questions, until at last the witness finds himself in a maze from which extrication is well nigh hopeless. It is absurd to suppose that an individual, however accomplished, can answer every question and unravel every difficulty that can be invented by a skilful cross-examiner, whose life has been spent in framing questions and in manufacturing difficulties. Nothing baffles a troublesome counsel more completely than the plain "I don't know" of an honest witness. It is difficult enough at times to answer a scientific question, framed with scientific precision, but it is often well-nigh hopeless to answer scientific questions, asked with the want of precision of the unscientific counsel.

8. But having once replied "I don't know" to a question,

never allow yourself to be further drawn out by the skill of counsel. For instance, you may be asked—"How long in your opinion was a certain wound inflicted before your attention was called to it?" to which you answer (and in many cases very properly) "I don't know." Take care that is your ultimatum,—for the next question you may be asked is, "Do you think it was a month before?" and should you be tempted to say "Yes," the next question is certain to be, "Was it a fortnight?" and the next, "Was it a week?" and so on, until your original "I don't know" appears, to say the least, ridiculous. In all such systems of cross-examination remind counsel at once of your original answer.

9. There are certain cases where counsel may compel you to say "Yes" or "No" to a question. Having done so, however, you have then a right to insist upon giving any explanation you see fit. And seeing how practically impossible it is at times to answer a question with a plain "Yes" or "No," a witness should always, if circumstances require it, insist on his right in this respect, lest his answer convey a wrong impression.

I cannot do better in conclusion than quote the sensible, manly advice given by Sir William Blizard (a former surgeon of this hospital) to his pupils. He said—"Be the plainest men in the world in a court of justice. Never harbour a thought that if you do not appear positive you must appear little and mean. Give your evidence in as concise, plain, and yet clear a manner as possible. Be intelligent, candid, and just, but never aim at appearing unnecessarily scientific. State all the sources from and by which you have gained your information. If you can, make your evidence a self-evident truth. Thus, though the court may at the time have too good or too mean an opinion of your judgment, they must deem you an honest man. Never be dogmatic, or set yourselves up for judge and jury. Take no side whatever, but be impartial, and you will be honest."

[*The foregoing Lecture, introductory to the Course of Forensic Medicine, was delivered in Substance at the London Hospital Medical College, May,* 1881.]

CHAPTER II.

THE SIGNS OF DEATH.

Definition of Death—The Cessation of Circulation and Respiration—Insensibility and Loss of Power—Effects of Flame on the Skin and other Minor Signs of Death—Changes in and about the Eye—Changes of Temperature—Muscular Flaccidity and Irritability—Rigor Mortis—Cadaveric Ecchymoses or Lividities — Putrefaction — Adipocere — Mummification.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 121.)

DEATH may be defined either popularly or scientifically.

During life the loss of tissue consequent on work actually performed, is compensated by the formation of new tissue similar in character, and within a little alike in quantity, to that destroyed. This ever-recurring destruction and reparation of tissue, constitutes the business of the animal or vital functions. In youth the formation of tissue proceeds more rapidly than its destruction:—hence arises growth. As age advances the work of reparation declines. Death is the actual cessation of the process of reparation—the inertia of all that was capable of motion under the *régime* of life.

The cessation of the vital functions, and of the general renewal of tissue consequent on that cessation, is termed *Somatic Death, i.e.,* the death of the body as a whole. The actual moment of its occurrence can be more or less precisely determined by the stoppage of circulation and respiration.

But there may be the death of a part, tissue or organ, without the general stoppage of the circulation. The part thus affected becomes obedient to the operation of the ordinary chemical and physical agencies governing the inorganic molecule. This is termed *Molecular Death.* Molecular death may be either *partial* or *complete.* If only partial, it may, or it may not, spread to the organism as a whole:—in other words, the weakness in one part of the machinery, may throw, or may fail

to throw, the whole working out of gear. As a rule, the action required to bring about complete molecular death (*i.e.*, the suspension of vital activity in every part) is progressive. In a given case, therefore, we are unable to state any definite time as *the* period of its occurrence. After somatic death it is certain that a considerable degree of molecular life may manifest itself, such as epidermic fecundity (evidenced by a growth of the hair and nails), and occasionally, acts of nutrition and secretion.

Complete molecular death is the true scientific death of the body. From it efforts at resuscitation are unavailing, and the precise moment of its occurrence is not recognisable. *Somatic death* is the popular idea of death. From it efforts at resuscitation, under exceptional circumstances, succeed, whilst in most cases the time when it takes place can be more or less accurately defined.*

Two points occur for our consideration:—

First.—*The signs of the reality of death.*

Secondly.—*The indications by which, in any given case, the medical jurist may form an opinion as to the period that life has been extinct.*

We are far from denying the possibility of apparent death being mistaken for real death (*Cases* 55 to 57);† but we are equally unprepared to admit that such a mistake is likely to occur, in this country at least, to a cautious observer, after careful examination with the instruments that modern science has placed within his reach. (*Case* 70.) Hence, whatever *may* have happened, modern stories of premature burial in England, belong to the domain of the novelist rather than of the scientist. Further, the signs of death are, for the most part, as certain and as de-

* In a communication to the French Academy, Professor Fort mentions a child (æt. 3) having been resuscitated by artificial respiration continued for four hours, and not commenced until three and a-half hours after its apparent decease; also a second case of drowning, where Dr. Fournol kept up artificial respiration for four hours with a successful result, although it was not commenced until one hour after the patient had been removed from the water apparently lifeless (?).

† Ogston records one case of a child alive for seven hours, and a second case of a young woman alive for four hours after they had been left as dead.

finite after a few hours' suspension of the vital functions, as they are after many days. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," May 22, 1875, p. 559.) But granting this to be true in temperate climates such as our own, it would appear that the difficulties of diagnosis are greater in some others, and that to mistake the living for the dead, is not so uncommon an error as might at first be supposed. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," May 10, 1879, p. 515.)

Professor Nussbaum, of Munich ("*Journ. de Med. de Bruxelles*," Feb. 7, 1871), states that he believes many to have been buried during the war that were not really dead, but merely suffering from an extreme lethargy arising from loss of blood, exhaustion, hunger, cold, and fear.

The opinion of the physician as to the reality of a death may be sought under the following circumstances:—

1. Where the person has directed by will that before being finally "screwed down" he shall be certified by a competent authority to be dead. ("*Medical Press and Circular*," 1879, I., p. 492.)

2. Where, owing to certain exceptional occurrences, such as post-mortem hæmorrhages, the turning of a body in the coffin, and other effects resulting from the development of the gases of putrefaction—or to the slowness with which from accidental causes putrefaction may develop itself—or to the unaltered and life-like condition of the face and countenance not infrequent after certain forms of death—or to the retardation of post-mortem cooling (*Case 71*), a medical opinion confirmatory of the reality of the death is sought by the relatives.

3. Where, in cases of succession to titles or large property, the relatives require a certificate of the reality of the death.

4. And lastly, cases arise where, a dead body being found, the opinion of the medical jurist is sought as to the interval that has elapsed since death.

One general remark of caution is suggested here. No physician is justified in certifying a person to be dead unless the majority of the signs of death are well marked; in other words, he should never be satisfied that life is extinct from one or two appearances merely.

It will be convenient first of all to consider the data, as a

whole, upon which our answers to these two questions—viz. (1), the reality of the death, and (2) the time of death—must be based. Having considered these in detail, we shall then discuss how far we are warranted in returning definite replies to the questions, and what are the limits of our exact knowledge on the subject.

We shall discuss the signs of death in the following order:—

I.—The entire and continuous cessation of the heart's action.

II.—The entire and continuous cessation of respiration.

III.—Insensibility, and the inability to move.

IV.—Certain minor signs of death, viz.:—

(α.) Effects of flame and heat on the skin.

(β.) Action of caustic.

(γ.) Changes in the face and countenance.

(δ.) Position of the hands.

(ε.) Transparency of the hands.

(ζ.) The odour of death.

V.—Changes in and about the eye.

VI.—Changes in temperature.

VII.—Changes in the muscles and in the general condition of the body. These will be considered under the following heads:—

A. The period of muscular flaccidity and contractility.

B. The period of rigor mortis or cadaveric rigidity.

C. The period dating from the commencement of putrefaction.

VIII.—The formation of adipocere.

IX.—Mummification.

I.—The entire and continuous cessation of the heart's action.—No certain opinion respecting the cessation of circulation can be formed in any case from the mere absence of pulse, *i.e.*, of the stroke communicated to the finger by a more or less superficial artery. For an absence of pulse may

occur in many diseases, such as cholera, abdominal collapse, shock, etc.

The noise produced by the heart under the ordinary conditions of health may be resolved into two sounds, commonly represented by the syllables lūbb-dŭp, lūbb-dŭp, etc. The first sound, which is coincident with the contraction of the ventricles (*systolic*), is longer and of lower pitch than the second, which is coincident with the closure of the semilunar valves (*diastolic*). These sounds are separated by short, but appreciable intervals of silence, a longer pause intervening between the second sound and the recurrence of the first, than between the end of the first sound and the commencement of the second.

But the noise of the heart may be *abnormal*. Thus the first sound may be extremely short or even inaudible, a condition that may occur in cases of great weakness. Or again, a blowing sound (*bruit*), as in cases of valvular disease, etc., may replace one or both sounds.

The medical jurist, in determining the reality of death, therefore, must convince himself not only of the *entire cessation*, but of the *continuous cessation*, of the action of the heart. For the heart may seem to cease for a time, yet after a brief interval recommence action. (*Cases* 58 and 65.) To decide the absolute absence of all cardiac sounds, auscultation and palpation, in a perfectly quiet room, are necessary. And this examination must include not merely the region of the heart proper, but of the chest generally, remembering that both the *position* and the *sounds* of the heart may be abnormal. Again, that this absence of cardiac sounds is *continuous*, and not merely accidental, should be determined by careful auscultation for two or three hours, at intervals of fifteen minutes.

There can be no doubt that recovery has taken place after the heart has (at any rate) apparently ceased beating for a quarter of an hour. In the case of children, efficient means have succeeded in restoring vitality, where for fifteen or thirty minutes after birth no pulsations could be detected. *Case* 58 is one of a similar nature, recorded as having occurred in an adult. There may be cases, again, of syncope, or of coma from intoxication, where the action of the heart is for all practical purposes im-

perceptible, although there is reasonable doubt whether, under favourable conditions, even in such cases, the heart-beats are not always to be detected by an experienced auscultator. (*See* M. Bouchut's experiments.) During the condition of hybernation, it has been shown that vital energy is greatly reduced. Thus in the marmot, the beats of the heart, which under ordinary conditions range from 80 to 90 per minute, sink during hybernation to 8 or 9 (*M. Bouchut*). The cases recorded of profound sleep or trance (a kind of human hybernation), occurring more especially in girls, but by no means confined to them, show how slow and feeble the heart's action, consistent with life, may become. (*Cases* 59, 64, 65.) Still, in an extreme illustration of this nature on record (*Case* 63), where every vital function seemed interfered with, the case presenting a condition almost of cadaveric rigidity *minus* death, the beats of the heart could nevertheless be detected, and constituted practically the only test of life. (*See* also *Case* 60.)

Again, the possibility of a voluntary suspension of the heart's action must not be overlooked. The case of the Hon. Colonel Townshend supplies us with a curiously instructive illustration of how careful observers (remembering that at this time the stethoscope had not been invented) may be deceived by conditions simulating death :—

"He told us he had sent for us to give him some account of an odd sensation he had for some time observed and felt in himself; which was, that composing himself, he could die or expire when he pleased, and yet, by an effort, or somehow, he could come to life again; which, it seems, he had sometimes tried before he had sent for us. We all three felt his pulse first; it was distinct, though small and thready, and his heart had its usual beating. He composed himself on his back, and lay in a still posture some time. While I held his right hand, Dr. Baynard laid his hand on his heart, and Mr. Skrine held a clean looking-glass to his mouth. I found his pulse sink gradually, till at last I could not feel any by the most exact and nice touch. Dr. Baynard could not feel the least motion in his heart, nor Mr. Skrine discern the least soil of breath on the bright mirror he held to his mouth. Then each of us by turns

examined his arm, heart, and breath, but could not by the nicest scrutiny discover the least symptom of life in him. This continued about half an hour. As we were going away (thinking him dead) we observed some motion about the body, and upon examination found his pulse and the motion of his heart gradually returning; he began to breathe gently, and speak softly. This experiment was made in the morning, and he died in the evening. On opening the body nothing was discovered but disease of the kidney, for which he had long been under medical treatment, all the other viscera being perfectly sound." (*Cheyne's "Treatise on Nervous Diseases,"* p. 307.)

It would seem, from records well attested, that certain Indian Fakeers are able to hold their breath and pass into a state of trance, during which the heart's sounds become inaudible. (*See Braid on "Trance and Human Hybernation."*)

In addition to palpation and auscultation, certain mechanical tests (first suggested by Dr. Balfour), are worth notice. To detect fine chest movements, Dr. Balfour proposed sticking needles (having little paper flags fixed on their blunt ends) into the skin. Dr. Sansom suggests, as preferable, small pieces of cotton wool drawn out into finely pointed cones of about two inches in length. These are to be attached by their base to the skin with a little unguent or cold cream, and distributed over the vessels of the neck and the region of the heart, more especially its apex and right ventricle. The room must be kept perfectly still and free from draughts during the time that the observations are being conducted. The slightest movement of the chest wall will now be evident, and amplified by the length of the cotton wool lever. Of course this at best is only a positive test. Given no visible movements, death is by no means necessarily indicated, inasmuch as cases occur during life where no external movements of the chest are manifest. The cardiograph for this purpose is useless, for even with a fairly active heart, under many conditions, such as when the heart is covered by lung, its indications are but slight.

We need merely mention the far-fetched and impracticable test of Foubert, viz., cutting through one of the intercostal spaces and feeling the heart with the point of the finger (!).

There are several other tests of death that have been suggested, the rationale of which depend on the stoppage of the circulation. These may be mentioned here ("*London Med. Record*," 1874, p. 226) :—

1. "If a limb of the body (a finger being the most convenient unless the hand be very horny, when the lobe of the ear may be operated upon) be tightly bound round with a ligature, the part beyond the constriction will, if the person be living, become bright red, the tint increasing in depth until it finally assumes a uniformly bluish-red colour. At the spot, however, where the ligature is applied, a narrow white ring becomes visible. No change results from the application of the ligature after death." (*Dr. Magnus*, "*Virchow Archiv.*," *Oct.*, 1872.)

2. "If, after life has been extinct *for some hours*, a scarificator and cupping glass be applied, no blood flows." (*M. Levasseur*, Hotel Dieu). It is to be remarked that in Case 32, certain wounds, inflicted during life, bled some days (perhaps as many as eight) after death.

3. "If, during life, clean and bright needles be thrust into the muscles, the steel rapidly rusts or tarnishes (oxidizes). After death no such oxidation change takes place, although the needles may remain in the flesh for an hour." (*M. Laborde, in paper before Paris Academy of Medicine*, July 26, 1870.) Much depends, however, in the results obtained by this test, on the extent to which the body has cooled.

4. It has been proposed in doubtful cases to cut down on an artery (say the temporal), to ascertain its colour and contents. "After death the arteries are pale or yellowish, and empty of blood, whilst during life the vessel pulsates, and has the colour of the surrounding tissues." (*Dr. Leon Davis.*) There are, however, exceptions to this (as we admit) general rule, more especially where the arteries have become rigid.

5. "If, during life, a little ammonia solution be injected subcutaneously, a port wine congestion is set up in the surrounding parts, no such redness resulting when the operation is performed on a dead body." (*M. Montcverde de Cremoni.*) This is no doubt the case after death for some hours, but it is not always true within a short time of death. Possibly degrees of

congestion produced by the ammonia may roughly indicate how long life has been extinct.

Although the fact of death is to be determined, as we have said, by no single sign, but by a combination of several tests, the entire and the continuous cessation of the heart's action undoubtedly ranks first in importance. For the heart, and especially the right auricle has a life, it would seem, of its own, (*ultimum moriens,*) that is, a life distinct from the great nervous centres, continuing to beat and to contract a few minutes (possibly four or five minutes) after the cessation of respiration, after its removal from the body, and even after it has been cut into fragments. Duval records having seen the heart of a criminal beat for fifteen minutes after decapitation, the left auricle pulsating more or less for an hour. ("*Prov. Med. Jour.*," Sept., 1851.) A still more remarkable case of this nature is recorded by Dr. Rawitz, of Berlin, in the case of an embryo discharged in the membranes, and measuring 3½ inches. ("*Archiv. für Anat. Physiol.*," 1879, p. 69.) The beats of the heart were observed before the sternum was removed, and the pulsations, he states, continued for four hours after the pericardium was exposed.

That vitality can be restored after the heart has absolutely ceased work for thirty minutes, is, we believe, beyond doubt impossible. The practical question, however, is not so much this, as—May not the action of the heart be so feeble that even an experienced auscultator may fail to detect it?

2.—The entire and continuous cessation of respiration.—Breathing being a vital act, any long suspension of this function must prove fatal. The time that people can "hold their breath" varies greatly, but three minutes and a half may be taken as a maximum. This, however, refers only to the *absolute* and *voluntary* cessation of breathing. To commit suicide by holding one's breath is a practical impossibility. It is certain that life may be prolonged considerably beyond three and a half minutes when the stoppage is involuntary, or when the slightest attempt at respiration, however slow and shallow, is made. (*Cases* 59, 63.)

The cessation of respiration may be more or less accurately determined by several popular tests. Of these may be mentioned :—

(1.) *By holding a looking-glass over the mouth and nose.*—Moisture is a constant constituent of the breath. If the merest trace of moisture be exhaled, it will be rendered perceptible by condensing on, and dulling the mirror. But the presence of moisture on the glass is a far more valuable indication of life, than its absence is of death. Thus a mirror placed over the mouth of animals in a state of hybernation is not dulled. In Case 64, the mirror was said to have shown no signs of condensed moisture when held over the mouth, and the same absence of dulling was also remarked in Colonel Townshend's case (page 33).

(2.) *By suspending a feather or other light body near the mouth or nose.*—The absence of any movements of the feather may be regarded as indicative of the absence of breathing. But here again care is required in drawing conclusions. Dr. Marshall Hall's "Bat" (an instrument of great delicacy employed by him for the detection of minute air currents) was not disturbed by the breathing of hybernating animals.

(3.) *By standing a glass of water (or better still, of mercury) on the chest.*—By this means the slightest motion of the chest walls, such as occurs even with the faintest respirations, will be indicated by the rippling on the surface of the water, or by the movements of a reflected image (such as a candle-flame) from the surface of the mercury. The absence of such movements indicates the absence of any motion of the chest walls, and the probable stoppage, therefore, of respiration.

These three popular tests are good in their way, their positive being in each case of far greater value than their negative results. But the medical attendant will of course fall back on careful auscultation. Nevertheless it must not be overlooked that it is consistent with life that, for a short time, respiration may for all practical purposes be imperceptible. (*Cases* 59, 63, 64.) *For a short time*, we say; hence the test of death is not merely the *entire* stoppage, but the *entire* and *continuous* stoppage, of respiration.

There is a form of breathing known as the "Cheyne-Stokes

respiration" that might be important medico-legally, but which at any rate suggests the remark, that the stethoscopic examination, in cases where the existence of life has to be determined, must be something more than the mere application of a stethoscope to the chest for a few seconds. The patient in such a case might seem, when first examined, to be scarcely breathing at all. Each succeeding inspiration, however, becomes a little deeper until a maximum is reached; after this each breath that follows becomes more and more shallow, until at last the breathing seems to cease altogether. After a few seconds a feeble respiration may be taken, followed by others, each a little stronger than the one preceding it, until again a maximum is reached. Such a series of respirations (occurring occasionally in certain cardiac and cerebral diseases, in fevers, tubercular affections, etc.), might deceive an incautious observer. The period however between maximum inspirations scarcely ever exceeds two minutes, and is rarely so long. Hence it is scarcely possible for this condition to prove a serious source of error unless the examination be hurried.

Bearing on the subject of respiration, we may note that the blood taken from a dead body, provided access of air to it be prevented, exhibits the spectrum of reduced hæmoglobin only. This spectroscopic appearance of blood under the conditions mentioned was at one time supposed to be characteristic of death by asphyxia. Still there are many exceptions to this general rule, *e. g.*, in carbonic oxide poisoning (where the blood shows the spectrum peculiar to carbonic oxide hæmoglobin); also after death from cold and starvation (where the reducing power of the tissues is much diminished); and, lastly, in those cases where the entrance of air into the veins has proved the immediate cause of death.

3.—Insensibility and the loss of power to move.—Not only does insensibility and inability to move often precede death, but they are conditions that not infrequently occur without resulting in death. Such cases deserve notice:—

(1.) *Asphyxia.*—Life in cases of asphyxia (judged by the three

signs of respiration, circulation, and sensibility) may be for a certain time almost unrecognisable.

(2.) *Syncope.*—A long faint may prove deceptive. Fresh air, cold water, and ammonia to the nostrils, effect, however, rapid restoration.

(3.) *Apoplexy.*

(4.) *Trance—Catalepsy—The Mesmeric State—Cases of long persistent Sleep.*—A case is recorded of a woman in a state of trance having been buried alive, the medical man and the mayor of the place who authorised the interment, being punished for having committed "involuntary manslaughter." (*Case* 57.) *Cases* 59 to 65 are illustrations of how in the cataleptic condition the vital functions may be reduced to the lowest possible ebb. Thus a remarkable fall in the temperature (*Cases* 61 and 64), insensibility to external influences, even the application of the fingers to the glottis (*Cases* 63 and 65), an almost entire stoppage, so far as physical signs would indicate, of the action of the heart and lungs (*Cases* 64 and 65), and in some cases even muscular rigidity (*Cases* 63 and 64), have been recorded. As a matter of fact, it would seem that "human hybernation" is more than a mere name. (*Cases* 59, 60.) Nevertheless in all these cases some one or more well-marked symptoms of vitality presented themselves, so that at most the difficulty was of comparatively short duration.

[*See* a series of cases mentioned under *Case* 65. *See* also "*London Med. Rec.*," 1879, p. 244, article on "Epileptic Sleep"; Lecture by Dr. Russell, of Birmingham, on "Sleep, Epilepsy, and Somnambulism," in the "*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1870, II., p. 90; "*British Med. Journ.*," 1880, II., p. 381, "Sleep and Hypnotism," by Professor W. Preyer, of Jena. *See* also an article in "Nature" on Preyer's paper, by Mr. Romanes.]

4.—There are **certain minor signs of death** which we may with advantage consider here:—

(a.) *The application of heat to the skin.*—This may be effected either by dropping melted sealing-wax upon it ("*Lancet*," 1876, I., 562), or by applying a candle flame until a vesicle forms (M. Martinot), ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," April 25, 1868), or (as

Dr. Sansom has suggested), by inserting a needle for a quarter of an inch through the skin into a muscle, and heating the part protruding with a spirit lamp. We shall discuss hereafter under "Burns" (*see* Index) the exact importance to be attached to the formation of vesicles resulting from the application of heat, and the characteristics, under various modifying conditions, of the vesicles produced before and after death. This much may be stated here:—

1. If a blister on the skin, produced by the application of a flame, contains a serum rich in albumen, whilst the cutis vera, after the cuticle has been removed, presents a reddened appearance, more especially if, after a short interval, a deeply injected red line forms around the blister, absolute evidence is afforded of the vitality of the part to which the heat was applied, and exceedingly strong confirmatory evidence of the life of the person.

2. If a blister, formed by the application of flame to the body, contains air, or a little non-albuminous serum merely, the cutis vera after the removal of the cuticle appearing dry and glazed—more especially if, after an interval, no red line becomes visible around the blister, the evidence is absolute that the part so treated was dead, whilst the presumption is strong that the person himself was dead.

(β.) *The results of the application of Caustic.*—"If caustic be applied to the skin of the really dead, either no eschar is produced, or the skin turns yellow and transparent; but if it be applied to living skin, the eschar formed is of a black or reddish brown colour." (M. Pryrand, of Libourne, "*Rev. Méd.*," Nov. 20, 1880.)

(γ.) *Changes in the face and countenance.*—During the after-death period of muscular relaxation, a more than usually placid expression, with marked pallor, is frequently observed (*Case* 70), whilst a drawn, contracted, painful expression with reddened countenance may be occasionally remarked after death.

What is termed the "Facies Hippocratica" (that is, a peculiar sharpness of nose and chin, flaccidity and paleness of lips, sunken eyes, hollowed temples, prominent cheek-bones, dryness of the forehead, wrinkled brow, and livid skin) is found after death

during the period of relaxation only; but it is important to note that this condition may not only be absent after death (as, *e.g.*, when the death is sudden, or the result of acute disease), but that it is occasionally well marked during life.

The cause of death has much to do with the features after death. Thus army surgeons have remarked that the mere expression of the dead on the field of battle will often reveal the cause of death, the features being said to be indicative of repose after death by sword wounds, but of pain after death by the bullet.

Undoubtedly the countenance may alter so rapidly after death, that identification, even by those who knew the person well during life, becomes impossible.

(δ.) *Position of the hands.*—After death the fingers and thumbs become more or less flexed. Generally the thumbs bend across the palms, and the fingers over them. Whether, however, this takes place at death, or is merely an incipient sign of rigidity, is an open question. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1830, II., 420.)

(ε.) If the hand after death be examined by transmitted light it appears marble-like and opaque, whilst during life it is transparent and rosy. (Dr. Carrière, of St. Jean du Gard, "*Edin. Med. Jour.*," XV., p. 470.)

(ζ.) Many observers have spoken of a peculiar musk odour developed at the time of, and sometimes before, death. (*See* Dr. Isham, "*Amer. Journ. Med. Science*," 1881, I., p. 430.)

5.—Changes in and about the eye.—Some of these changes occur synchronously with death, whilst others set in after a greater or less interval. Of these may be noted :—

(α.) *Changes in the iris, more particularly its loss of sensibility to light:*—in other words, the inability of the pupil to contract or dilate, according to the amount of light thrown upon it.

This loss of the sensibility of the eye to light is best determined by what ophthalmic surgeons call "oblique illumination," that is, by placing a bright light on one side of the eye, in such a position that by means of a double convex lens the focus of the light may be concentrated on the pupil. By rapidly shifting the focus alternately on or off the pupillary aperture, the operator may

note with great precision the contractile power of the iris under different degrees of illumination. Still it must be remembered that many cases of disease and of long persistent sleep are recorded, where complete insensibility of the pupil to light existed. (*Cases* 60 and 64.) It must not be forgotten that during life different eyes have very different degrees of contractility, and moreover that the action of certain poisons (such as calabar bean, duboisin, atropine, alcohol, etc.), and of certain diseased conditions of the eye where adhesions of the iris occur (more particularly if of old standing) materially affect the mobile power of the iris.

The action of atropine and of other bodies to produce dilatation of the pupil (*M. Dupont*), and of calabar bean to effect contraction (*Dr. Fleming*), cease with life. It has been suggested, therefore, to test the reality of death by noting the effect on the pupil of a solution of atropine, or, better still, of duboisin. Although it is undoubtedly true that these bodies have no action on the iris after life has been extinct for some time, it is by no means necessarily so, in the case of a body that has been dead for a few hours only. Thus it has been shown that the pupil of a rabbit which died from natural causes, contracted permanently an hour after death, to one-fourth its size, from the application of two drops of an aqueous solution of physostigmia. ("*Chemical News*," 1864, I., p. 109; "*New York Med. Journ.*," IX., p. 654; "*Lancet*," 1873, I., p. 654.) I have myself seen on several occasions both atropine and physostigmia produce marked effects on the eye in the human subject half-an-hour after death.

Again, admitting that an absence of action arising from the application of electrical and mechanical stimuli is strongly indicative of death, nevertheless it is certain that they may affect the eye for a considerable period after life is extinct.

After death the iris becomes more or less flaccid. Thus during life the circular shape of the pupil is uninfluenced by external pressure, except so long as the pressure is actually applied. But after life is extinct (as M. Ripault first pointed out), external pressure is capable of permanently affecting the normal roundness of the pupillary aperture. Thus by synchronous compression of the globe in two opposite directions,

the pupil in real death may be made to assume an oval or an irregular shape. [*See* letters in "*British Med. Journ.*," September 25, 1880, p. 507, (Dr. Boyd Joll), and October 9, 1880, p. 580, (Dr. Joseph W. Hunt). The latter states that this test is unreliable, as it occurs in certain cases during life, of which he quotes three instances. In one case the iris was flaccid although the patient ultimately recovered, and in two others flaccidity was noted some hours before death actually occurred See also a letter by Mr. J. Farrant Fry, October 30, 1880, p. 728, to the same effect.] There can be little doubt that during life a certain flaccidity of the iris occasionally exists, but never in my experience to the same extent that occurs after death.

And this flaccidity of the iris explains the dilatation of the pupils that invariably occurs after death (*Küssmaul*). I believe this post-mortem dilatation to be of such constant occurrence, that it is impossible to judge the exact state of the pupils at death, by their condition at a post-mortem conducted some days afterwards.

(β.) *Loss of the Sensibility of the Cornea to Touch.*—This insensibility of the cornea, always found after death, also occurs during a certain stage of an epileptic fit, and in certain cerebral injuries.

(γ.) *Loss of the transparency of the Cornea:*—in other words *the loss of lustre in the eye.*—This loss of lustre, as a rule, sets in speedily after death. It depends, in the first instance, on the formation of a thin film of mucus over the surface of the eye. After a time, the cornea itself becomes perceptibly milky and opaque. Finally, it loses its tension, and becomes wrinkled and sensibly flattened from the absorption of the aqueous humour.

But here it is to be observed:—

First. That the eye may lose its lustre during life. This condition has been frequently recorded as occurring several hours before death in cases of cholera. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1848, I., 104.)

Secondly. That the eye may not lose its lustre for a long time after death.—This condition has been particularly observed after death from apoplexy, and after poisoning with the oxides of carbon, cyanogen and its compounds, etc.

(δ.) *Changes in the conjunctivæ.*—Soon after death the conjunctivæ exhibit externally grey cloudy discolorations which rapidly become black. These discolorations are due either to the formation of films of mucus, or (according to M. Larcher) to cadaveric imbibition dependent on putrefactive changes. M. Larcher remarks that these external stains are closely succeeded by internal stains of a similar kind, and that "the two spots extend and approach each other, forming the segment of an ellipse." ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1869, I., 468.)

(ε.) *Loss of tonicity and of the elastic resistance of the eye.*—During life the eye-ball is elastic and resists pressure, but after death it collapses, sinks in its socket, and becomes so flaccid and buttery, that it retains the dent or mark of any pressure to which it may be subjected. This inelastic condition of the eyeball comes on in most cases about twelve or fourteen hours after death, but sometimes sooner.

But it is to be noted (1) that there may be loss of tonicity during life. Thus the globe sinks into its socket with age, and also in various affections of the eye and of the general system, more especially in diseases accompanied by great exhaustion. On the other hand (2) the eye after death may assume a preternaturally prominent appearance, the globe being pressed forward by the development within of the gases of decomposition.

(ζ.) *Loss of the elasticity of the eyelids.*

(η.) *Changes in the ophthalmoscopic appearances.*—Although as yet observations are not sufficiently numerous to say that the ophthalmoscope may be absolutely relied upon as a test of death, there is sufficient evidence to show that its indications are valuable. (*Case* 72.) Supposing the cornea to be clear enough to allow of ophthalmoscopic examination, it is stated (*M. Poncet*) that the yellowish red of the living fundus of the eye, becomes at death of a yellowish white hue. Further, M. Bouchut records that at the moment of death the gases normally imprisoned in the venous blood are disengaged, causing the column of blood in the vessels to be broken by beads of air or gas (pneumatosis of the veins). This beaded condition is, according to Bouchut, easily and well seen with the ophthalmoscope in the case of the retinal veins, and

constitutes a certain and immediate sign of death. (Bouchut, "*Gaz. des Hôp.*," March 10, 1874.) Dr. Gayat mentions that after death, the arteries and veins of the *fundus oculi* are completely emptied, not only upon the optic disc, but for a limited distance around it. Beyond this point, however, the vessels remain filled with blood. ("*Annales d'Oculistique*," Jan., 1875.)

6.—Changes in the temperature of the body.—During life the healthy body has a warmth (independently of the surrounding temperature) of from 97° to 100° Fahr. (36·1° to 37·77° C.) After death a *gradual* and a *progressive* loss of heat occurs both externally and internally, until in time the temperature of the body becomes *almost* the same as that of the medium by which it is surrounded. Post-mortem cooling, however, derives its special medico-legal importance from the fact that this loss of heat is progressive. Temperature thus becomes, in many cases, not merely a sign of death, but an indication of the time that a body has been dead. (*Case* 68.)

All observations on temperature should be thermometric. The mere application of the hand to the body, is not a sufficiently delicate test of temperature, so much depending on the relative warmth of the hand of the operator and of the body. To the cold hand of one person a body may appear warm, which to the warm hand of another might appear cold.

Again, in forensic cases both the external and the internal temperature should be recorded; the external temperature being taken in the axilla, and the internal in the mouth or rectum. The external temperature, as a rule, sinks more rapidly than the internal, the skin and solids of the body generally, being bad heat conductors. M. Réné, however, states that in new-born infants he has found the temperature in the rectum to be usually lower than that in the axilla. ("*Gaz. des Hôp.*," April 7, 1877.)

Again, the temperature should be taken at stated intervals, remembering that it is not the *absolute* temperature which is so important medico-legally, as the *progressive* and *continuous* cooling of the body.

The cooling of the body after death depends upon several

causes, such as (*a*) on the *cessation of certain chemical processes* going on in the body ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," Jan. 13, 1877, p. 43, and "*Lancet*," Sept. 26, 1874, p. 466); (*b*) on *radiation*; and (*c*) on *conduction* and *convection* by the air surrounding the corpse, and by the various substances in contact with it.

It will be convenient, in the first place, to state the general facts bearing on post-mortem cooling. These are:—

(1.) That in ordinary cases a body becomes cold in from fifteen to twenty hours after death.

(2.) That in certain cases of disease, or where the body has been freely exposed to air, draughts, etc., the cooling process may practically be complete after four to five hours, whilst in certain other exceptional diseases, or under unfavourable conditions for cooling, forty-eight hours or even three days may elapse before the body is cold.

(1.) Respecting the first statement it is right to note that Casper fixes eight to twelve hours as the ordinary period for cooling, a time which, in our judgment, is too short.

It is important to follow this cooling process from its very commencement:—

It is not at all improbable that in all cases of death there is in the first instance a slight post-mortem elevation of internal temperature, owing to the stoppage of the circulation, and to the blood being no longer cooled in its passage through the lungs. This was pointed out as long ago as 1845 in the "*Phil. Med. Exam.*" (pp. 625 and 359), where it was asserted that the maximum temperature was not reached until an hour-and-a-half after death. This post-mortem rise of temperature becomes very marked in certain diseases. Thus in deaths from yellow fever and cholera, Bright's disease (*Dr. Wilks*), abscess of the liver (*Dr. Goodhart*) and other abdominal affections (*Dr. Bennet Dowler*), rheumatic fever, smallpox ("*Lancet*," 1870, I., 21), tetanus and injuries to the nervous system generally, etc., an increase of temperature, amounting in some cases even to 9 degrees F. (4·95 degrees C.), has been observed. Dr. Davy records a post-mortem temperature of 113° F. (45° C.) in the pericardium. In Dr. Goodhart's case ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*,"

1874, I.) the post-mortem rise of temperature (commencing nineteen hours after death) amounted to 4 degrees, although the atmospheric temperature during the same period had a corresponding fall of 4 degrees. Savory records that he has noticed in dogs poisoned with strychnia an after-death elevation of temperature equal to 1 to 2 degrees Fahr.

We have now to consider the time occupied by this cooling process.

The researches of Drs. Taylor and Wilks on *external* temperatures ("*Guy's Hospital Reports*," Oct., 1863, p. 184) are summarised in the following table. The observations were made by simply placing the bulb of a thermometer on the skin of the abdomen:—

	2 to 3 hours after death.		4 to 6 hours after death.		6 to 8 hours after death.		12 hours or more after death.	
Number of observations	76		49		29		35	
	F.	C.	F.	C.	F.	C.	F.	C.
Maximum temperature of the body.	94°	34·4°	86°	30°	80°	26·6°	79°	26·1°
Minimum temperature of the body.	60°	15·5°	62°	16·6°	60°	15·5°	56°	13·3°
Average temperature.	77°	25°	74°	23·3°	70°	21·1°	69°	20·5°

Of *internal* temperatures, Taylor and Wilks record cases of 76° F. (24·45° C.) seventeen and eighteen hours after death, and of 85° F. (29·45° C.) ten hours after death.

Dr. Guy remarks from an analysis of the eight cases of accident in which observations are recorded by Taylor and Wilks, that (starting from the abdomen which had at death an average temperature of 83° F.) the cooling process proceeded at the rate of about 1 degree Fahr. per hour. These bodies were merely lightly covered. The cooling would necessarily be more or less rapid according to the amount of clothing on the body.

According to the observations and experiments of Messrs. Durand and Linas, eighteen to twenty-four hours is the period

ordinarily required for a body to cool down to the temperature of the surrounding atmosphere.

M. Laborde states that, according to his observations, the temperature of the deeper tissues of the body sink as low as 82·4° or even 80° Fahr. (26·0° to 26·66° C.) after from five to eight hours.

Dr. Niderkorn's observations on this subject ("*De la Rigidite Cadavérique chez l'homme*," Paris, 1872) are of great interest. Respecting *external* temperatures (taken in the axilla) the following table records the average results of 135 observations made by him on the bodies of persons who had died from various diseases:—

Temperature of body after death.	2 to 4 hours.		4 to 6 hours.		6 to 8 hours.		8 to 12 hours or more.	
	F.	C.	F.	C.	F.	C.	F.	C.
Maximum	109·4°	43·0°	98·2°	36·8°	95·3°	35·2°	100·4°	37·8°
Minimum	89·6°	32·0°	80·6°	27·0°	70·5°	21·4°	62·6°	17·0°
Average	96·9°	36·1°	90·2°	32·3°	81·7°	27·6°	77·9°	25·5°

Of internal temperatures Niderkorn states, that in six cases examined from six to eight hours after death, the rectal temperature averaged 90·6° F. (32·6° C.), and that in nine cases examined from twelve to fourteen hours after death it averaged 89·2° F. (31·8° C.)

Dr. Wilkie Burman has recorded a series of observations on post-mortem cooling extending over periods varying from one to twenty-five hours after death. The results, unfortunately, are incomplete, seeing they do not embrace the entire period extending from the moment of death to the time when air and body are of identical temperatures. Thus, in one case twenty-five hours after death, the body was 19·6 degrees F. above the temperature of the room (54° F.) Assuming the temperature of the body at death to be 98·4° F. (36·8° C.), and the corpse to remain in bed with the usual coverings, Dr. Burman calculates that cooling progresses at the average rate of about 1·6 of a degree F. per hour ("*Edin. Med. Jour.*," xxv., p. 993).

But it is most important to bear in mind that the rate of cool-

cooling is not uniform. Notwithstanding the post-mortem rise of temperature, it is, on the whole, during the earlier hours after death that the most rapid cooling occurs. During the later hours, the loss per hour becomes exceedingly trifling. Thus Dr. Goodhart records two cases, one the body of a robust child, and the second that of a boy æt. 19, where the loss was no less than 8 degrees F. during the first hour.

We are indebted to Dr. Goodhart for the following table, the result of his observations on post-mortem cooling, showing the rapidity of the cooling process during the first few hours after death, compared with what takes place at later periods:—

	3 hours from time of death. Loss per hour. Degrees Fahr.	6 hours from time of death. Loss per hour. Degrees Fahr.	Body nearly cold. Loss per hour. Degrees Fahr.
In the Emaciated	4·7	3	1·12
In the Robust	3·5	3	1·26

We may here note the influence of an abnormally high body temperature at the time of death, on the after cooling. Dr. Goodhart has observed 9 cases occurring in well-conditioned as well as in emaciated subjects, where the temperature before death was over 102° F. After death the average loss per hour during the first three hours, in both emaciated and robust, was 3·37 degrees F., whilst in emaciated subjects only, the loss was 4·55 degrees F.

In fixing fifteen to twenty hours as the time ordinarily required for post-mortem cooling, it is not suggested that within that period the body becomes absolutely of the same temperature as the medium (be it air or water) in which it is placed. For this a very long time indeed may be required. Dr. Letheby, in the year 1851, showed that even so long after death as from twenty to twenty-four hours, when the surrounding atmosphere was 55° to 57° F. (12·77 to 13·89° C.), the axillary temperature would often register 14° F. (7·70° C.), and the rectal temperature 18° F. (9·92° C.) above that of the room. The same fact has been noticed by Dr. Hensley, whilst Drs. Taylor and Wilks' experiments indicate, that even after the lapse of very many hours, the heat of the body always remains a little above the temperature of the air.

Thus when we fix fifteen to twenty hours as the normal period of post-mortem cooling, we imply that within that time the temperature of the body will gradually and progressively sink very much below that which experience proves to be essential for the existence of life :—in other words, the natural warmth indicative of life will practically disappear.

(2.) We have now to consider the circumstances influencing the rapidity of cooling :—

1. *The time occupied by the process of cooling may be lengthened:—*

(*a.*) In acute diseases generally—in sudden death (as from accident, apoplexy, etc.)—in all cases of asphyxia (except from drowning), the body parts with its heat slowly. Nysten states that after death from asphyxia it may require three days for the body to cool; but cases are certainly not uncommon where the process has occupied 48 hours. Cases of rapid cooling, however, in asphyxia are recorded. Thus in one which came under my own observation (Lowestoft murder case), where three children were murdered by the mother placing their heads in a pail of water, the evidence was conclusive that the bodies completely lost their natural warmth within 6·5 hours. The children were seen alive at 10 P.M., and at 4.30 A.M., when the medical man was called in, the bodies were perfectly cold. The case, however, was somewhat complicated, the children's clothes having been a good deal soddened by the submersion.

A remarkable case is recorded in the *Lancet* (*Case* 70), and a second by Ogston (*Case* 71), where some doubt as to the reality of death was felt on account of the prolonged cooling of the bodies. We scarcely follow Ogston, however, in accounting for this slow cooling by the occurrence of putrefaction, and the increased warmth resulting from the chemical changes consequent upon it.

It will suffice merely to mention other circumstances that prolong post-mortem cooling :—These are

(*β.*) The body being well clothed.

(*γ.*) Its preservation in a small and warm room, and its non-exposure to currents of cold air.

(*δ.*) Its being well covered, or, if in the air, the body being on a dungheap or other non-conducting material.

(ε.) *Age.*—Adults cool less rapidly than either children or the aged.

(ζ.) *Condition of body.*—The body of a fat person (fat being a very bad conductor of heat) cools far more slowly than that of a lean one.

2. *The time occupied by the process of cooling may be shortened:*—

(α.) In death from chronic diseases, where there has been great wasting (phthisis, cancer, œsophageal disease, etc.)—in cholera —after great losses of blood (Dr. Richardson, "*Medical Critic*," Jan., 1863, p. 370), etc., the body usually cools rapidly—so rapidly indeed that within four or five hours its external temperature may be almost identical with that of the surrounding medium.

Dr. Taylor has shown, however, that loss of blood does not invariably cause rapid cooling. Thus he records the case of a man (æt. 48) who died from hæmorrhage, the temperature of whose abdomen four hours after death was 84° F. (28·89° C.) and eight hours after death 80° F., (26·66° C.) the temperature of the dead-house being only 38° F. (3·3° C.). It is, however, noteworthy that the man had met with an accident necessitating ligature of the axillary artery. (*See Case* 69.)

It is worth noting that in the recorded cases of rapid cooling, an extreme coldness of exposed parts (such as of the hands, feet, nose, ears, etc.) commonly manifested itself during the last hours of life.

Of other causes of rapid cooling may be mentioned:—

(β.) The body being exposed to air and to cold draughts in a more or less uncovered state.

(γ.) The size of the apartment where the body lies, cooling being more rapid in a large and draughty room, than in a small warm one.

(δ.) Its exposure to the air on the floor or other good conducting surface.

(ε.) *Age.*—The bodies of children and of old persons cool more rapidly than those of adults.

(ζ.) *Condition of body.*—The bodies of lean people cool more rapidly than those of stout.

(η.) Death from drowning—the temperature of water on

any given day being always considerably below that of the air.

We may conclude these remarks on temperature by one practical observation—However suggestive of the cause of death, the *rapid* after-death cooling of a body may be, it is certain that no conclusion can be drawn from the *slow* cooling of a body. (*See "British Med. Journal,"* 1874, I., pp. 125, 153, 303, 408.) Regarding the whole subject from this point of view, we conclude (1), that, knowing the cause of death in any given case, it is not possible to predict with any certainty the probable rate of cooling; and conversely (2), that from the rate of cooling, we are not justified in drawing a positive conclusion as to the cause of death.

7.—Changes in the muscles and in the general condition of the body after death.—We may distinguish three post-mortem periods or stages, marked severally by very different conditions or states of the body. These three stages furnish data by which to determine in any given case the period that has probably elapsed since death, and are forensically in all their details of the very utmost importance.

FIRST STAGE (A).—Within a short time after death the muscles become flaccid. This shows itself by the dropped jaw, the loss of tonicity in the eyelids, the flexibility of the joints, and the flabbiness of the limbs. During this period, however, the flabby muscles are capable of contracting under the application of stimuli, such as the interrupted electric current, blows, etc. We may term this period therefore

The stage of muscular flaccidity and contractility.

SECOND STAGE (B).—When flaccidity and irritability cease, the muscles become stiff and rigid. We term this

The stage of cadaveric rigidity (rigor mortis.)

THIRD STAGE (C).—As soon as the rigor mortis ceases, or, more properly we should say, synchronously with the disappearance of the rigor mortis, putrefaction sets in. This third period is

The stage of putrefaction.

Although chronologically inaccurate, because in the time of appearance belonging to the first stage, we shall for convenience consider under this head the subject of "*Cadaveric Lividities.*"

First Stage (A).

The period of muscular flaccidity and contractility.

This constitutes the first stage after death. The period of muscular softness (not to be confounded with the cadaveric softening that *follows* rigidity), includes the interval between death and the commencement of rigor mortis. Commonly with death there ensues complete muscular relaxation. This occurs even after severe tetanus, the jaw becoming unlocked and the limbs pliant with death. As a result of this non-elasticity and softness, the parts of the body in contact with the bed or surface on which it may rest, become flattened. We shall discuss hereafter the time this condition of muscular relaxation and flaccidity with contractility continues, but we may say here that although it may occasionally occupy only a few minutes, and even be non-existent, (a circumstance of great importance forensically), it more commonly lasts about three hours. There are no well attested cases, however, where this stage has been prolonged beyond twenty-four hours.* It is difficult to say what is the cause of this muscular softness. It may be mole-

* The experiments of Rosenthal (Stricker's "*Med. Jahrbüch,*" 1872, and "*Journal of Anat. and Phys.,*" Nov., 1872) on the duration of the electrical excitability of the muscles and nerves, were conducted on twenty subjects that had died of various diseases. The stimulus used was both the continuous and interrupted currents. Rosenthal proved that the excitability of the muscles lasts longer than that of the nerves, dying out in a centrifugal direction. The orbicularis palpebrarum is, according to his observations, the last muscle of the face to lose its susceptibility. Rosenthal concludes that the absence of electrical excitability in the muscles is an unequivocal sign of complete somatic death, when the retention of other characters might render the diagnosis in some measure doubtful. He records a case where the presence of vitality was diagnosed by this means after forty-four hours of apparent death.

cular, or (what is more likely), dependent on a different distribution of the fluids in the tissues.

During this first post-mortem period, the muscles, though flaccid, are easily excited to contraction by interrupted currents, such as are produced by the ordinary 'medical machine,' where the keeper rotates between the poles of a magnet. In this respect the muscles during life, and during this first after-death stage, agree. In like manner, chemical irritants and mechanical excitants, such as striking a muscle with the hand, may produce similar effects. Thus Dr. Dowler (of New Orleans) states, that by a succession of slight blows he has succeeded in making a dead limb raise a heavy weight, and also perform perfect pronation, supination and flexion. ("*Experimental Researches on Post-Mortem Contractility*," by Bennet Dowler, New York, 1846, p. 601.)

To test the muscular irritability of a body, two fine steel needles are to be inserted into the biceps, or (preferably) into one of the trunk muscles, an interval of about two inches being left between them. The needles are now to be connected by copper wires with an ordinary magnetic medical machine, the handle at first being worked slowly. A series of contractions will at once be noticed, if the muscular irritability be retained.

During the contraction of a muscle both *heat* and *sound* are produced. It has been suggested to record the *heat* developed during the experiment, by placing a thermometer, capable of registering at least tenths of a degree Centigrade, into the muscle. The *sound* (susurrus) produced by muscle in action (audible, for instance, if the little finger be inserted in the ear and the muscles of the ball of the thumb be vigorously worked), may be distinctly heard when the stethoscope is placed over a muscle artificially excited to contraction. As a practical fact, however, sight is the best test of muscular contractility. The thermometer is, we believe, useless, whilst movements may be detected by the eye that are unrecognisable by the ear.

The general practical conclusion respecting post-mortem muscular contractility may be thus stated:—Given the non-contractility of a muscle under an artificial stimulus, we may

conclude not only the reality of the death, but that life has been extinct for some time. On the other hand, given contractility, we may conclude either that the person is alive, or at most has only been dead for a short time.

But there are several points suggested by this general statement of fact requiring further consideration:—

(1.) The contractility of a muscle by electrical and other stimuli, is no certain test of life.

(2.) The non-contractility of a muscle by electrical and other stimuli, is no certain sign of death.

(3.) Hence we enquire, If after death a muscle contracts by the passage of an electric current, what conclusions are we justified in deducing to assist us in determining the time of death?

(1.) We note then, first, that *the contractility of a muscle is no certain test of life.* As we have already said, muscular contractility continues more or less completely for some hours after death, definite movements resulting when the muscle is irritated.

A further curious question, however, arises here, viz., how far may post-mortem muscular movements occur spontaneously? One such spontaneous movement is of frequent occurrence after death, viz., raising the lower jaw. During the cholera epidemic of 1866, I repeatedly witnessed such movements several hours after the cessation of respiration and circulation. In one case, muscular movements of a very marked kind, pronation, supination, and flexion, were observed seven hours after death, no artificial stimulus being employed for their production. They were, so far as one could judge, absolutely spontaneous. The same thing has been noticed after death from yellow fever, and from other diseases. It is recorded in a case of cholera, where for an hour after death spontaneous contractions and relaxations took place in the arm, that the limb became manifestly warmer. (*Mr. Rumsey.*) The occurrence of such movements have no doubt been the origin of many of the sensational stories of premature burial, such as novel-mongers delight in. Certainly, however, they may with reason prove a source of trouble to friends, although they can scarcely long deceive the physician as to the reality of the death. (See "*Dr. Bennet*

Dowler's Experimental Researches on Post-mortem Contractility," New York, 1846.) Again, the continuance of muscular contractility, and the possibility of its being spontaneous, may (as has been suggested) be one explanation of those rare cases where a fœtus has been born, as it were naturally, after the death of the mother (*Case* 73), although undoubtedly it, and results of a similar kind, are more likely to be caused by the outward forcing occasioned by the development of the gases of putrefaction, than by spontaneous post-mortem muscular action. (*See* p. 86.)

(2.) But, secondly, *the non-contractility of a muscle by an interrupted current is no certain test of death.*

Under certain conditions the power of living muscle to contract by the action of stimuli, may not only be modified, but in a great measure suspended. These circumstances require notice. They are:—

(*a.*) *Exhaustion,* consequent on great fatigue, or on the long continued application of electricity. Hence it is undesirable, in cases of suspended animation, to apply galvanism for any great length of time without intermission.

(*b.*) *Certain diseases* impair and sometimes actually destroy muscular contractility. Of these, paraplegia, pseudo-hypertrophic paralysis of Duchenne, and other diseases of the brain and spinal cord, may be mentioned.

(*c.*) *Certain psychical conditions*, such as trance, hysteria, shock, &c., greatly impair muscular contractility.

(*d.*) *Certain poisons.* Thus muscular contractility is materially weakened in chronic lead poisoning, and by the action of strychnia, nitrite of amyl, &c.

(*e.*) *A long continued low temperature,* such as a cold of 28° to 38° F. suspends, without destroying, muscular irritability. (*Richardson's Croonian Lectures*, 1873.)

(*f.*) *A long continued heat of about* 12° *Fahr.* (6·6° Cent.) *above the normal temperature of the animal,* produces a permanent loss of irritability, by coagulating the myosin. (*Richardson.*)

(*g.*) *Large losses of blood or the ligature of large arteries,* greatly impair muscular irritability. Of this we have been frequent witnesses. It has been a subject of dispute whether the blood

has any appreciable influence upon post-mortem muscular contractility. Thus it is said that muscular contractions under the influence of the interrupted current in an amputated limb, are just as marked after it has been drained of blood, as before. ("*American Journal of Medical Sciences*," Oct., 1846, p. 440.) This statement does not agree with our own experience; but be this as it may, it is practically certain that muscular irritability during life is more or less influenced, and may be even suspended, by great losses of blood.

Again, if a dead body be exposed to the action of ammonia, sulphuretted hydrogen, or carbonic anhydride, both the intensity and the duration of muscular contractility are lessened. On the other hand, there are certain vapours and gases, such as carburetted hydrogen, chlorine, and sulphurous acid, that seem to be without action in this respect.

(3.) The question remains: *How far can an opinion be formed as to the period of the death of a body from its condition of muscular flaccidity and contractility?*

In considering this question, it is important to remark that the involuntary muscles generally are more easily excited in the first instance than the voluntary, although, as a matter of time, their contractility is of shorter duration.

Again, we must note the order in which muscular contractility disappears:—

Onimus ("*Le Mouvement Médical*," Feb., 1873), states, that the first muscles to lose their excitability are the diaphragm and the tongue. The facial muscles, the masseter being the last of these, come next in order, their contractility usually lasting from two to three hours. In the limbs the extensor muscles yield first —the flexors retaining their excitability about an hour longer. Five or six hours after death the trunk-muscles still answer to faradisation, and the abdominal muscles sometimes for even a longer period.

According to *Nysten*, who first suggested the loss of muscular irritability as a sign of death, the order in which it ceases is the following:—first, the left ventricle of the heart; then the intestines, stomach, urinary bladder, right ventricle of heart, œsophagus, and iris; afterwards the muscles of the trunk, and

of the lower and upper extremities; and lastly, the left and right auricles of the heart.

The time when muscular irritability ceases in the muscles of the trunk and limbs after death from various diseases, was observed with great care at La Charité. The results obtained were as follows:—

In death from peritonitis, it ceased after three hours.

In death from phthisis, and carcinoma, after from three to six hours.

In death from cardiac diseases and hæmorrhages, after nine hours.

In deaths from paralyses, after twelve hours.

In deaths from pneumonia, low fever, etc., after from ten to fifteen hours.

Summing up all the facts observed, and admitting great variations, depending on season, the temperature of the day, the age of the person, the cause of death, and lastly, the circumstances connected with the death, it may be laid down, as a general rule, that if the muscles are flexible and contract under the influence of the interrupted current (the experiment being conducted by preference on the trunk muscles or the flexor muscles of the limbs), death probably occurred within three hours, but most certainly within twenty-four hours of the time of the experiment, there being no recorded case where after-death flaccidity and contractility continued beyond this period.

SECOND STAGE (B).

The period of cadaveric rigidity (rigor mortis).

This is the second stage after death. It is the death struggle of muscular fibre. (*"Med. Times and Gazette,"* 1880, II., p. 709.) It was suggested as a sign of death by Louis in 1752, and it occurs after death, always, in all animals, vertebrate and invertebrate.

By "rigor mortis" we mean rigidity of the muscles, accompanied by stiffness of the limbs and joints. With rigidity there occurs a slight diminution in the volume of the muscles. Rigor

mortis commences so soon as elasticity and muscular irritability cease, pliancy giving place to stiffness, and flaccidity to firmness. Thus in reptiles muscular irritability is very persistent, and as a result rigidity is late in appearing; whilst on the contrary, in birds, muscular irritability passes off rapidly and rigidity supervenes quickly. It lasts as a rule until putrefaction commences.

During the stage of rigor mortis, the muscles retain the precise position they occupied at the time that rigidity supervened. Thus a flexed limb remains flexed, and an extended limb extended. This fact has an important medico-legal bearing.

Rigor mortis is a phenomenon common alike to the involuntary and the voluntary muscles. Nysten, at the beginning of the present century, proved it to be dependent on the condition of the muscles, since he found it persistent after the ligaments, fasciæ and aponeuroses had been divided. On the other hand it could be prevented, or removed if it had already set in, by the division of the muscles or by separating them from their attachments.

Rigor mortis is altogether independent of the nervous system. (*Béclard* and *Hermann.*) The division of the nerve supplying the muscle, or indeed the removal of the entire brain and spinal cord during or before its occurrence, in no way affects it.

It is moreover altogether independent of the air, for it occurs equally well whether the body be placed in an atmosphere of pure oxygen or in a vacuum. (*Hermann.*)

Further, it is independent of temperature, although it is probably true that the early supervention of rigor mortis may have some influence in quickly lowering the surface temperature of the body. As a fact, rigidity frequently supervenes when the body is warm [as after malignant cholera (*Ollivier*)] and the blood fluid. (*Case* 18.) No doubt rigidity in most cases commences as the body is getting cold, but it commonly occurs first of all in those muscles that retain their heat longest. The congelation of a muscle neither destroys its irritability nor its power of becoming rigid, although undoubtedly cold both retards the appearance, and delays the disappearance of rigor mortis.

It has been said that the advent of rigor mortis betokens the actual death of the muscle. (*Küssmaul.*) It is true that rigidity commences when irritability ceases, but Brown-Séquard has shown that if a current of defibrinated arterial blood, or of aërated venous blood, be established through a rigid muscle, rigidity passes away and muscular irritability returns. ("*Gaz. Méd. de Paris,*" Nos. 24 & 27; "*Amer. Journ. Med. Sci.,*" Jan., 1852, p. 221. See also *Savory* on "*Life and Death,*" Lecture IV.) There is however no authority for the statement that has been made, that the setting in of rigor mortis is synchronous with the coagulation of the blood within the body, much less that the coagulation of the blood is the cause of the rigor mortis.

The true cause of post-mortem rigidity has been a subject of much discussion. Kühne was the first to suggest that it was probably a chemical act, and due to the coagulation of the myosin or muscle fibrin, the albuminous principle of muscular tissue. This body coagulates at a temperature of 104° F. (40° C.), and also when acted on by weak acids, such as by 10 per cent. solutions of hydrochloric acid. During life, Kühne considers that acid bodies are being constantly formed in, and as constantly removed from, the system, but that after death these acid products accumulate in the muscles, and effect the coagulation of the myosin. This coagulation is, in his opinion, the cause of the rigor mortis. As putrefaction proceeds, however, the azotized matters of the body undergo decomposition and develop ammonia. This dissolves the coagulated myosin. Hence the disappearance of rigor mortis, and the subsequent flaccidity. ("*Lancet,*" Jan. 22, 1881, p. 145; *Lecture by M. Richet at the Faculty of Medicine.*) It is also worthy of note, that if the coagulated myosin be allowed to remain for some time in the hydrochloric acid solution, the clot dissolves and a body called syntonin is found.

The study of the reactions of muscle under different conditions, lends support to this view. Thus:—

(1.) A living muscle *at rest* changes the colour of both red and blue litmus. The action on the red litmus is, however, far more distinct than that on the blue. Hence the reaction of living muscle at rest must be regarded as faintly *alkaline.*

(2.) Immediately *after contraction*, muscle still acts both on red and blue litmus, but the action on the blue litmus is more marked than that on the red. Contracting muscle must therefore be regarded as possessing a faintly *acid* reaction.

(3.) During rigor mortis the muscles exhibit a well-marked *acid* reaction.

(4.) When rigor mortis passes off, the muscles become soft and inelastic. They then exhibit a well-marked *alkaline* reaction.

(5.) Lastly, it has been noted by Kühne that if a rigid muscle be exposed to a temperature of 120° F. (48·9° C.), its rigidity is greatly increased.

The forensic aspects of rigor mortis may be best discussed by considering the following questions:—

(I.) How soon after death does rigor mortis set in?

(II.) In what order are the various regions and parts of the body affected?

(III.) How soon does rigor mortis pass off?

(IV.) What are the circumstances modifying the time at which rigor mortis first appears, and the period during which it lasts?

(V.) By what means may post-mortem rigidity be distinguished from other forms of rigidity that occur during life?

I. *How soon after death does rigor mortis set in?*

Rigor mortis in the voluntary muscles, as evidenced by stiffness of various parts of the body, usually commences at the third or fourth hour after death, and is complete about the fifth or sixth hour:—in other words it takes one to two hours to mature. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," March 7, 1874, p. 304.) Niderkorn, whose observations on rigor mortis appear to have been made with scrupulous exactness, states that in 79 of the 113 cases observed and recorded by him, post-mortem rigidity was complete between the third and sixth hour, but that in two cases only was it complete in two hours. He states, however, that in the whole of his 113 cases, one or more of the articulations were rigid within the first two hours of death.

Niderkorn's actual results are as follows:—

In	2	cases	rigidity was complete at the	2nd hour.
„	14	„	„	3rd „
„	31	„	„	4th „
„	14	„	„	5th „
„	20	„	„	6th „
„	11	„	„	7th „
„	7	„	„	8th ,
„	4	„	„	9th „
„	7	„	„	10th „
„	1	„	„	11th „
„	2	„	„	13th „
	113			

In the involuntary muscles rigor mortis occurs sooner than in the voluntary. Thus as a rule the heart becomes rigid and firmly contracted (a condition not unlikely to be mistaken for cardiac hypertrophy) in about one hour, extreme flaccidity (also liable to be regarded as a morbid condition) succeeding so soon as the rigor mortis passes off.

But the period when rigor mortis supervenes, may be either greatly extended or greatly shortened:—

(*a.*) Thus *rigor mortis may be late in appearing.* This happens more especially in cases of sudden death occurring in muscular and well-developed subjects. If death be sudden, the muscles not having been previously fatigued by violent effort, or the body weakened by pain and disease, we then possess the most perfect conditions possible for prolonging the stage of muscular irritability, and to a like extent for delaying the setting in of rigor mortis. Under such circumstances rigidity may not occur for twelve hours, or even longer, after death. Again, if the body be exposed to cold, rigor mortis is often slow in making its appearance. There is, however, no well authenticated case where its advent has been delayed beyond twenty-four hours.

(*β.*) But, on the contrary, *rigor mortis may make its appearance very soon.* This is especially true in the case of certain parts and regions of the body. Rigidity of the eyelids frequently occurs

within five minutes of death, "sometimes," as Guy remarks, "before the heart has ceased to beat."

Again, rigidity often sets in very rapidly in the facial muscles. And here it may be remarked that if the contractions of these muscles just before death have been powerful, the expression common to the person during life may suffer so complete a change, that identification within a few minutes of death may be rendered impossible. So also the placid face, resulting from the relaxed muscles of the first after-death stage, may acquire an expression of pain during the rigidity of the second. There is good ground therefore for the anxiety commonly displayed by old nurses to close the eyelids and bind up the lower jaw as soon as possible, lest rigidity should supervene before they had arranged and "composed" the corpse.

There are numerous recorded cases where complete rigidity has set in whilst the body has been warm (*Cases* 15, 18), a circumstance I have myself frequently observed in animals (*Ollivier*, "*Ann. d'Hyg.*," I., 233). Brown-Séquard records a case of death from typhoid fever, where rigidity commenced whilst the heart was actually beating, and within three minutes after respiration had ceased. ("*Proc. R. S.*," May, 1861.) Immediate rigidity is also recorded in the case of dogs poisoned by salicylate of soda (*Bochefontaine*), and after the administration of medium doses of strychnia (*Richet*). Sommer states that he has known rigidity appear in ten minutes after death, but never later than seven hours.

But facts show that not only may the flaccid condition of the first stage disappear within a minute or two of death, but that rigidity, or what for all practical purposes is indistinguishable from it, may supervene at the very moment of death:—in other words, that living contraction may pass at once into post-mortem rigidity, the stage of muscular flaccidity being practically non-existent. Thus numerous cases are on record where, *after* death, a body has retained the precise attitude that it assumed immediately before or *at* death, *i.e.*, as the final act of volition. It has been frequently recorded that the attitudes in which many of the dead are found on the field after a battle, are precisely those in which they met their death. Thus

one man may be seen stiffened in the act of taking aim—the very expression of countenance, the kneeling position, the hands grasping the rifle, being accurately retained. A second may be observed with his arm raised, holding his sword in clenched hand, as though prepared to strike. Ogston records how at Balaklava an officer, killed by a shell, retained his seat on horseback in a stiffened condition for some time before the body fell. (*Case* 3.)

And these cases are confined to no one special mode of death. Although it would seem that they happen most often after death from wounds of the chest, Dr. Brinton has shown that there are many similar cases recorded after death from gunshot wounds both of the head and abdomen ("*Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences*," Jan., 1870, Vol. LIX.).

Again, in cases of apoplexy (*Cases* 1 and 2) and after death from drowning, more especially when the water has been ice-cold (as in skating accidents), the last attitude of life has not unfrequently been preserved. (*Case* 7.)

It is right to note that many authorities (*Ogston*, *Taylor*, etc.) speak of this as something distinct from true cadaveric rigidity, under such names as "*cadaveric spasm*," "*instantaneous rigor*," "*tetanic rigidity*," etc. Seeing, however, that no physiological distinction has been suggested between these states, and that there is no interval between this condition and what they call "true rigor mortis," no practical object is served in, and no scientific reason can be adduced for, regarding it otherwise than as cadaveric rigidity of instantaneous occurrence.

It has been commonly observed that where immediate rigidity has occurred, the period just preceding the death has been one of great fatigue and physical exhaustion. A hunted animal frequently stiffens the moment it is killed. In the appearances presented by the dead on the battle-field, it has been stated on good authority that the life-like stiffness we have described is observed very frequently in those killed at *the end*, and but rarely in those killed at *the beginning*, of the fight.

It is important here to guard against a possible mistake. The cases we are describing are, we repeat, those where there has been great fatigue before death; for as a rule, in cases of sud-

den death, the period supervening between death and rigor mortis—in other words, the stage of flaccidity and muscular irritability is longer than usual, more especially, as we have already said, when the subject is robust and muscular. Thus, after decapitation, Brown-Séquard records muscular irritability continuing (and rigidity therefore delayed) for ten or twelve hours. So again in asphyxia, Nysten records an interval of sixteen hours before post-mortem rigidity commenced. The cases, therefore, of instantaneous rigidity must be regarded as exceptional, occurring, not as the result, but in spite, of the sudden death, and depending for the most part on the muscular exhaustion preceding the last hours of life. In cases of poisoning (as, for example, by strychnia) the continuance of muscular irritability is not so much determined by the action of the poison *per se*, as by the degree of exhaustion—the convulsions, spasms, &c., preceding death. And this explains why, after a small dose of a poison, where the time between the exhibition of the poison and death is considerable, the stage of muscular irritability and relaxation may be of short duration, whilst with a large dose, rapidly succeeded by death, the period of muscular irritability may be normal. Again, in death from hydrophobia, where the patient has been exhausted by suffering, post-mortem rigidity may occur, for all practical purposes, instantaneously.

When the last attitude of life is maintained after death, considerable light may be thrown on the question whether the case is one of suicide or of homicide. On this ground the precise position in which a body is found, demands the careful consideration of the medical jurist. (*Cases* 4, 6, 9 to 14.) He must in such cases note therefore:—

(*a.*) *The position of the dead body.*—Thus, after the suicide of two persons from hydrocyanic acid, I found the bodies firmly folded in each other's arms, as though, after taking the fatal draught, they had embraced one another, died, and stiffened in the act. It has been recorded, in the case of a man poisoned by the carbonic acid generated from a limekiln, that he was found some time after death in the attitude of sleep, resting his head on his hand, the arm being supported only on the elbow. (*Case* 5.) Again, the suicide may be found sitting in a chair,

with dropped arms, but firmly grasping in his hand the pistol, knife, or other instrument employed by him to take away his life. (*Case* 10.) So strong, indeed, under such circumstances, may be the grip with which the weapon is held, that considerable force may be required to remove it from the hands. Or again, hand and arm may be fixed in the exact position of the last voluntary act, as *e.g.*, the attitude assumed in firing a pistol. (*Case* 4.) Or again, the after-death attitude may betoken the occurrence of a scuffle during life. (*Case* 6.) Thus from the position and posture of a body, we may gather important evidence to help determine in a case of doubt the question of suicide or homicide.

But there are other questions besides this upon which light may be thrown, by carefully noting the position and the attitude of a corpse. For example, it is often important to determine whether the place where a body is discovered, be the precise spot or not at which the deceased met his death. Or again, supposing it to be the place, the question may arise whether there is reason to believe that the body has been disturbed or otherwise tampered with since death. In deciding these questions we must bear in mind (admitting that in rigor mortis the flexor muscles are always a little more contracted than the extensors), that the position of the muscles at death, unless disturbed during the period of flaccidity (in other words, the position when rigor mortis supervenes) is their position during rigor mortis. Without discussing numerous matters of detail, the three following propositions are, we believe, scarcely open to question :—

1. If a dead and rigid body, with open eyes and dropped jaw, be discovered *fitting itself* (as it were) *to the surface on which it rests*, the muscles of the buttocks or of other parts being flattened at the points of pressure, the probability is that the death occurred *at the precise spot* where the corpse is found. Supposing, however, there had been any interference with the body after death, such interference, it is next to certain, must have taken place *before* post-mortem rigidity set in.

2. If a dead and rigid body be discovered *not fitting itself to the surface on which it rests*—that is, if the limbs be twisted

and contorted whilst the surface is even, or conversely if the body be straight and the surface uneven—the probability is that the place where the body is discovered, is not the place where the deceased person died. At any rate, it is next to certain, that the corpse has been interfered with, or otherwise disturbed, *after* post-mortem rigidity set in.

3. If a dead and rigid body be discovered evenly extended, and fitting accurately the surface on which it rests, having the eyes and jaw closed, it is practically certain there must have been some interference with the corpse after death, and before post-mortem rigidity commenced.

(*b.*) But *the position of the weapon, or the nature of the materials grasped by the hands*, may constitute evidence of even greater importance than the mere attitude of the corpse.

If a weapon likely to have caused the death be found tightly grasped in the hands of a dead body, it is important to observe its precise position. For example, if the weapon be a pistol, note must be taken whether the direction of the muzzle be such that the man may have shot himself, or whether the murderer, desirous of making the act appear suicidal, has in the flurry of the moment placed the pistol in the hands of his victim in such an impossible position as to furnish the strongest possible evidence in favour of homicide. Similarly, if a knife be found in the hand of a corpse, the sharp edge being placed backwards, a conclusion of a like kind is suggested.

Again, any articles found in the hands of a dead body should be carefully preserved. Pieces of a dress, for instance, corresponding to that worn by a suspected person — or hair corresponding to that of the accused, clutched during a scuffle between him and his victim—have many times constituted evidence of the greatest value. (*Cases* 8, 9, 46.) In drowning, one of the most important proofs we possess of the immersion having taken place during life, is furnished by certain materials (weeds, for example) being found in the hands of the deceased, these having been clutched by him in his final efforts to save himself. The very materials themselves have not unfrequently furnished convincing proof, not only of the exact place where the person was drowned—for example, by comparing the weeds

found in the hands with those growing on the bank or at a special part of the bank—but, if the act be homicidal, of the person or persons concerned in the murder.

Again, the force with which the various articles are grasped, should be carefully and immediately noted. *Immediately*, because when once the articles have been removed from the hands, no conclusions of any value can be formed by after experiments or observations (the conditions being so materially disturbed by handling) as to the power with which they were grasped.

The following points are worth attention:—

(α.) *If a weapon be found loosely held in the hands of the deceased, no conclusion of value can be deduced as to the question of suicide or homicide.* For it may have been suicide, partial muscular relaxation following the cessation of life;—or it may have been homicide, the murderer placing the weapon after death in the hands of his victim so that it may suggest self-murder. (*Cases* 11—13.)

(β.) *But if a weapon be found firmly grasped by the deceased person, suicide rather than homicide is indicated.* (*Case* 10.) It would be difficult for a murderer to place a weapon in the hands of his victim after death, unless the muscles were warm and pliant at the time; and this being the case, it is scarcely possible to conceive that the instrument would be found tightly grasped, unless it was held or secured in position during the period of muscular relaxation, and until post-mortem rigidity supervened. (*Küssmaul.*) But it is doubtful how far even this would be successful. It is probable, therefore, if a weapon be found after death securely gripped, that the deceased person committed suicide, and that no appreciable interval supervened between the death and post-mortem rigidity.

We need scarcely add that the presence or absence of blood on the instrument (*Case* 12)—the form of instrument considered in connection with the character of the wounds—the hand (right or left) in which the instrument is found—its position in the hand, viewed in relation to the direction of the wounds (*Cases* 11 and 12)—the presence or absence of blood marks, of powder stains, or of injuries on the hands, and more especially on the hand grasping the weapon (*Cases* 12 and 13), are all

important points to be observed in connection with the subject we are discussing.

II. *In what order after death are the various regions and parts of the body affected by rigidity?*

Nysten ("*Recherches de physiologie et de chimie pathologiques pour faire suite à celles de Bichat sur la vie et la mort*," A.D. 1811) says, "This stiffness always begins in the human subject with the trunk and neck, then attacks the upper limbs, and from them proceeds to the lower, so that the latter may be still supple, whilst the former are already stiff. The stiffness follows the same order in disappearing, so that the legs are often stiff when the other parts of the body have regained their suppleness." [He does not mention the jaw at all.]

Sommer ("*De signis mortem hominis absolutem ante putredinis accessum indicantibus*:" Copenhagen, 1833—a rare book, quoted by Orfila) says, "Rigidity begins in the neck and lower jaw, then attacks the upper extremities, and lastly the pelvic limbs. It is rare for it to begin in the lower extremities, or to invade all four limbs at once." [In 200 cases, Sommer only found one in which it did not begin in the neck.]

Larcher (Memoir addressed to the Academy of Sciences, in the "*Archives de Médicine*," 1852) founded on the examination of 600 bodies, states that, "The order of post-mortem rigidity is always the same, no matter what the kind of death, or whether it be sudden or slow, natural or accidental. The muscles of the lower jaw stiffen first, then the abdominal limbs, then the neck muscles; lastly, more or less slowly, the thoracic limbs (arms). The muscles, which are the first to stiffen, remain stiff the longest. It is also certain that the lower jaw, and the knee stiffen more slowly and thoroughly than the shoulder."

Casper states that, "It (*i.e.*, rigor mortis) passes from above downwards, begins on the back of the neck and lower jaw, passes then to the facial muscles, the front of the neck, the chest, and the upper extremities, and last of all to the lower extremities. Usually it passes off in the same order, and once gone it never returns, the body becoming as flexible as it formerly was."

Niderkorn (loc. cit., p. 91) thinks there is no such invariable

law as these authors suppose. He says the hip and knee, and the shoulder and elbow, lose their rigidity together, and that in about one half the cases, the foot and wrist go with their larger joints.

Our own observations on post-mortem rigidity, lead us to agree in the main with Ogston. The eyelids are first attacked, and then the muscles raising the lower jaw (masseter, temporal and pterygoid). These are followed by the muscles of the face generally, and then by those of the lower extremities; but most often, both the upper and lower extremities stiffen simultaneously.

The departure of rigor mortis follows the same order as its occurrence.

III. *How soon does rigor mortis pass off?*

Taylor gives sixteen to twenty-four hours as the usual period during which post-mortem rigidity lasts. This in our judgment is too short a time. Experience would lead us (reckoning from the very commencement of rigidity to the very end) to fix from twenty-four to thirty-six hours in summer, and from thirty-six to forty-eight hours in winter as the time of its continuance. It is difficult, however, we admit, seeing how variable its persistence is in different cases, to make any general statement as to the precise period of post-mortem rigidity. Thus:—

(*a.*) Rigidity *sometimes passes off very rapidly*—so rapidly, indeed, that it has been reported never to have occurred. There are unquestionable cases (especially where death has resulted from debilitating diseases) where rigidity has not lasted more than one or two hours.

(*β.*) Again, rigidity *sometimes lasts a very long time.* Thus in cold weather, and after death from certain diseases, its persistence is so great that it may continue for three weeks, or even longer.

IV. *We must now consider the circumstances that modify the time of its first appearance, and the period during which it lasts.*

(*a.*) *Age.*—Rigidity is less marked in the bodies of middle-aged persons (except the subjects be very muscular), than in those of the old, where the most complete post-mortem stiffness

occurs. In the case of infants, rigor mortis usually sets in very rapidly, often before the body is cold. The existence of rigidity in a newly-born child, may be regarded as proof that it has lived in a *physiological*, but not necessarily in the *legal*, sense, *i.e.*, that the child exhibited signs of life after it was completely external to the mother. (*Cases* 15, 16 and 17.) In *Case* 16, we have an illustration of strong rigidity occurring in the body of a child delivered by craniotomy. Many illustrations of stillborns exhibiting well marked rigidity have occurred within our own experience. Sommer records two cases of infants born asphyxiated. In order to resuscitate them they were put into, and left in, a warm bath, notwithstanding which, rigor mortis set in after three and four hours respectively.

(*b.*) *Temperature and atmospheric conditions.*—A low temperature and a dry air favour a long persistent rigidity. In the bodies of the drowned (more especially in winter when the water is ice-cold), it has been commonly noticed that rigor mortis lasts an unusually long time. Not only is the water on any given day always a few degrees colder than the air, but it is a better conductor of heat, thus retarding putrefaction. On the other hand Brown-Séquard and Niderkorn (*loc. cit.*, pp. 32 and 59) have shown that rigor mortis may come on even in a warm bath (*see case just quoted*)—that it is exceedingly well marked in hot countries—and that it often supervenes even when the internal temperature of a corpse is above the normal.

(*c.*) *Condition of the muscular system.*—Both the first appearance of post-mortem rigidity and the period during which it lasts, are far more dependent on the muscular development and nutrition of the subject, than on any other cause. Thus rigidity often lasts a long time after violent death (as hanging), because in such case the system is less likely to have been previously weakened by fatigue or disease. Dr. Symonds found a body after judicial hanging rigid on the eighth day, whilst Brown-Séquard in cases of decapitation gives ten or twelve hours after death as the usual time of its appearance, and a week as the usual period during which it lasts. Küssmaul states that rigor mortis, after sudden death in a muscular subject often continues for fourteen days and even longer. Thus in

all cases of rigor mortis the two points requiring special consideration are (1) muscular development, and (2) the extent of exhaustion and fatigue preceding death.

(*d.*) *Mode of death.*—Whenever death results from a lingering disease accompanied by great vital prostration (such as phthisis, hydrophobia, scurvy, low fever, etc.), or from violence preceded by intense physical fatigue (as in the case of those slain at *the end* of a battle), rigor mortis sets in speedily and disappears quickly. Thus it may last one or two hours only, and even be so slight as to be overlooked. This circumstance no doubt accounts for those cases where it has been reported never to have occurred at all.

Paralysed limbs equally with others become rigid after death. In a hemiplegic patient, the rigidity of the paralysed side is generally as well marked as that of the unaffected side. After death from lightning John Hunter stated that rigor mortis did not occur, but this Sir B. Brodie, Gulliver, Richardson, and others, have shown to be an error. (*Case* 19.) No doubt, in such cases, it may (and frequently does) set in very soon, and pass off equally rapidly. Where, for example, the lightning destroys life by an intense convulsion, every trace of muscular irritability may be destroyed, just as the advent of rigor mortis may be always hastened by exhausting muscular irritability before or even after death by the continuous application of galvanism. On the other hand, if death from lightning results from fright or from hæmorrhage, the rigidity is usually of a more lasting nature.

It has been said that after death from small-pox, acute rheumatism, tetanus, meningitis, abdominal diseases, pyæmia, and the like, bodies become rigid rapidly, and remain so a long time. There are facts to support the statement that when death occurs during the time that the temperature is above the normal, the early appearance and long continuance of rigor mortis may be expected.

Again, in poisoning cases, rigidity as a rule sets in late and lasts long. It has been said not to occur after narcotic poisoning (*Casper*), but this does not accord with our experience. Habitual drunkards commonly exhibit a long continuance of

post-mortem rigidity. But in poisoning we must again repeat that the primary question, as regards rigidity, is not so much the action of the poison, as the intensity of the exhaustion that has preceded death. This fact was strikingly illustrated by Brown-Séquard's experiments with strychnia on dogs. When the dose given was small and the death slow, accompanied by great exhaustion of the vital powers, rigor mortis appeared rapidly but lasted a short time only:—On the other hand when the dose administered was large and the death correspondingly rapid, rigor mortis set in slowly and lasted a long time. An intermediate dose was found to produce intermediate results. This is shown in the following table:—

No.	Dose of strychnia given.	Death.	Muscular Irritability lasted.	Rigor mortis lasted.	Putrefaction.
1	2·0 grains.	Immediate.	8·0 hours.	19 or 20 days.	Slow.
2	0·5 grain.	In 12 minutes.	2·5 hours.	5 days.	Rapid.
3	0·25 grain.	In 21 minutes.	0·5 hour.	Less than 1 day.	Very rapid.

The same thing is equally true no doubt of other poisons.

One general conclusion (we repeat) may be permitted. It is neither the disease nor the poison that determines either the time when rigidity sets in or the period during which it lasts, so much as the muscular power and energy of the person, and the extent to which these have been taxed before death by the action of the poison or the effects of the disease.

V. *By what means may post-mortem rigidity be distinguished from other forms of rigidity, such as may occur during life?*

When a joint, stiff from post-mortem rigidity, is forcibly bent, the stiffness passes away, and does not return, *provided rigidity be completely established.* If rigidity, however, has not completely set in when the limb is bent, a certain but less marked stiffness may return. Further, if a limb affected by rigor mortis be forcibly bent, it does not return of its own accord to its original position. But in the rigidity of hysteria, of the cataleptic state, and of syncope, or in the rigidity resulting from the action of certain poisons, the stiffness is *not* destroyed by forcible

bending, whilst so soon as the force is removed the limb at once returns to its original position.

Further, post-mortem rigidity is accompanied by a progressive loss of heat. In disease, at any rate, the internal warmth is practically constant. This, with other signs of death, will prevent any possible confusion between rigor mortis and the rigidity occurring in some cases during life.

THIRD STAGE (C).

The period of putrefactive decomposition.

This constitutes the third and last period after death.

By putrefaction is implied "*a spontaneous change common to all nitrogenised organic bodies when exposed to the air, whereby they become resolved into new and simpler products.*" The putrefactive action is accompanied by the evolution of unpleasant gases, compounds for the most part of sulphur and phosphorus.

The putrefaction of a body usually commences when rigidity ceases. Dr. Taylor states this as an absolute rule. Exceptional cases, however, where rigidity and putrefaction coexist, certainly occur. (*Case* 31*f.*) Thus Dr. Woodman informed me that in the case of a young girl, he had seen well marked rigidity a week after death, although putrefaction had set in, and had even attacked the face. The weather at the time was somewhat cold.*

Putrefaction may be regarded as an infallible sign of death, provided it be general and advanced. ("By this time he stinketh," S. John xi. 39.) Partial putrefaction, however, or the mere existence of certain of the effects usually indicative of putrefaction, can scarcely be regarded as of much value in this respect. Thus (1,) after some local injuries, more especially if they occur in persons of feeble health, a portion of the body may die (gangrene). (2.) Again, a *smell* undistinguishable from post-mortem putrefaction, occurs in certain diseases, such as in

* Carpenter mentions (p. 1029, in a foot note) that in the case of negroes in the last stage of the adynamic fevers of the African Coast "death and decomposition appear to extend gradually upwards from the extremities to the trunk, so that the former may be in a state of absolute putrescence before the respiration or circulation have been brought to a stand."

gangrene of the lungs, ulcers, caries of bones (ozœna), etc. And, once more, (3,) *appearances resembling the colour changes of putrefaction* may be closely simulated by bruises, etc.

We shall consider first of all

I. The Appearances due to Cadaveric Ecchymoses (*ἐκχύω, to pour out*).—[Hypostases (*ὑπο ἱστημι*) of Casper—Subcutaneous hypostases—Cadaveric Lividities—Post-mortem stains—Sugillations—Vibices.]

We consider post-mortem stains here for convenience only. Chronologically the subject belongs to the first stage of muscular flaccidity. Cadaveric lividities are not the result of, nor are they in any respect related to, putrefaction, although their effects have frequently been mistaken for it.

By cadaveric ecchymoses or lividities, we imply certain after-death stains, closely resembling in their general appearance the effects of bruises or contusions. They occur, both externally and internally, on the lowest and most dependent parts of the body.

We shall consider these stains under the two divisions of. A. *External Ecchymoses*, and B. *Internal Ecchymoses.*

(A.) *External Cadaveric Ecchymoses.*

External ecchymoses generally show themselves during the eight or ten hours succeeding death, that is, whilst the body is warm and the blood liquid. When the blood has coagulated and the body cooled, the progress and formation of cadaveric ecchymoses cease.

These ecchymoses, which are *invariably* found in one part or another after death, vary greatly in their extent according to the amount of blood present in the body. In other words, the size of cadaveric ecchymoses depends on the fulness of the vascular system. Thus, if cadaveric ecchymoses be well marked and of considerable extent, covering the entire under surface and dependent portions of the body, vigour of circulation at the time of death is indicated, and *vice versâ.* The increase of redness in one part may thus explain an increased post-mortem pallor in another. These stains occur, according to Casper, even after death from hæmorrhage and anæmia, a statement dis-

puted both by Devergie and Ogston. Age, sex, and constitution have no apparent effect on their formation.

In considering the cause of these post-mortem ecchymoses, we must first of all note the changes the blood undergoes in the body after death. The blood *within* a dead body coagulates in much the same manner as it does when withdrawn from the living body. The top or highest portion is the least coloured, whilst the lower portions are deeply coloured. Thus it may be noted that the arrangement of a blood clot within the body, may indicate the posture of a corpse for some hours after death. ("*Sir James Paget on the Coagulation of the Blood after Death.*" *London Med. Gazette*, XXVII., *p.* 613.)

But forensically, the *time* is of greater importance than the *manner* of coagulation. Blood when drawn from the body during life, or within the first three or four hours after death, coagulates almost directly it is exposed to the air, but when it remains in the body, that is, in contact with animal structures, some six to ten more hours may elapse before coagulation occurs.

But the precise time required for coagulation, whether in or out of the body, depends upon the quantity of fibrin present in the blood. This varies greatly in different diseases:—consequently the formation of post-mortem ecchymoses, depending as they do in great measure on the time that the fluidity of the blood lasts, will vary considerably according to the cause of death. Thus in acute inflammations, where the amount of fibrin in the blood is large, coagulation may precede the actual moment of death, and in fact be the cause of death. Hence cadaveric ecchymoses in such cases will be of limited extent. Conversely, in other diseases, such as phthisis, where the quantity of fibrin in the blood is small, the blood coagulates slowly. Cadaveric ecchymoses in such cases will be extensive.

Having noted these general facts respecting the coagulation of the blood in dead bodies, we may now follow the formation of cadaveric ecchymoses.

The *fluid* blood, which during life was equally distributed over the body, gravitates after death to the lowest and most dependent parts—*i. e.*, by death, the blood becomes obedient to

the laws of inert matter. The blood stagnates in the dependent parts, congestion of the superficial, and now non-contractile, capillaries resulting—in other words, cadaveric ecchymoses form. There is but little doubt, however, that something more than the mere liquidity and coagulation of the blood has to be considered in determining the true nature of post-mortem stains. Some lake-like solution of the blood-colouring matter, resulting from the ammonia developed during decomposition, probably takes place, whilst the varying degrees of the oxidation of the more or less superficial blood may serve to explain some of the curious colour changes occasionally to be noted in these ecchymoses.

The post-mortem stains thus produced are dark, often slate-coloured, or of a coppery-red or reddish-blue tint, and more or less mottled. They are never elevated above the skin. They are usually irregular both in size and outline, but well defined and even abrupt in their boundaries.

There are two other peculiarities of these ecchymoses worth noting:—

(*a.*) Although they appear on the most dependent parts, they do not occur on those portions of the body that are subjected to actual pressure:—in other words, they are not found where the body and the bed are in actual contact. The passage of the fluid blood into the superficial capillaries being prevented, these spots of actual pressure appear as a rule more than usually pale.

External pressure may thus determine both the shape and the appearance of post-mortem ecchymoses. Thus, it is important to observe that by the mere pressure of the clothes, or of the surface on which the body rests, stripes (*vibices*) may be produced closely simulating the effects of flogging. Congestion in such a case takes place within the interstices of the folds, whilst the parts compressed remain white. Again a line round the neck having the appearance of the mark of a cord, or other marks suggestive of violence, may be produced in a similar manner. In all post-mortem hypostases, however, the cuticle will be found unbroken. (*Cases* 21 and 22.) Occasionally post-mortem ecchymoses (particularly after death by lightning) assume

an arborescent or tree-like form, due to the distension of the cutaneous capillaries and small veins.

(*β.*) If whilst the body rests on its back, ecchymoses form on the depending parts, they may be made to disappear more or less completely, *provided the blood remains liquid*, by turning the body over on the belly. Fresh ecchymoses on the now depending portions of the abdomen, will replace those previously existing on the back.

From the facts stated it will be seen how important it is for the medical jurist to distinguish accurately between post-mortem ecchymoses and bruises the result of violence inflicted during life. The points of resemblance between these are often so great that mistakes are not only possible, but have no doubt frequently been made. (*Case* 23.) Further, after putrefaction has set in, and when the tissues have become soft and the blood easily diffused, the difficulty in distinguishing the one from the other becomes greater. The following tabular statement may render the distinctions between the two clear:—

Table showing the points of difference between a vital ecchymosis (bruise) and a post-mortem ecchymosis (lividity).

Bruise produced during life.	*Post-mortem ecchymosis.*
1. *Anatomical seat.* Effusion of blood from small ruptured vessels into the true skin and the surrounding cellular or areolar tissue (subcutaneous tissue).	1. *Anatomical seat.* Congested capillaries in the rete mucosum and vascular tissue *above* the true skin.
2. *Position.* The seat of the injury.	2. *Position.* Such dependent parts of the body (according to how it may be placed) as are not subjected to pressure.
3. *Appearance.* The bruise will often be noted to have the shape of the instrument that inflicted the injury. Its colour not generally uniform.	3. *Appearance.* Irregular in shape but with well defined edges. The colour uniformly dark. Not elevated above the skin.

The bruised part is often elevated above the surrounding skin.

4. *Extent.* More or less limited to the parts injured.

5. *Results of incision.* Effused blood at once flows from the cut.

6. *Changes by time.* The dark purple bruise after eighteen to twenty hours, or sometimes as late as two or three days, becomes highly tinted at the edges, and of a more or less violet colour. After this the colour of the bruise passes through various shades of green, yellow, and lemon, the centre, however, always being the darkest part. During these changes, which are dependent on the oxidation of the effused blood, the spot enlarges. The changes are complete in times varying from a few days to some weeks.

4. *Extent.* At first the stain appears in isolated patches, rapidly running together more or less over the whole of the dependent portions, except those parts subjected to the pressure of the surface on which the body rests.

5. *Results of incision.* No effused or coagulated blood escapes, although perhaps a few bloody points where the veins have been divided (*puncta cruenta*) may be apparent.

6. *Changes by time.* The colour remains tolerably constant until putrefaction sets in. No zones of colour form round the edge, such as occur in a life bruise.

It is evident, therefore, that as a rule the distinctions between a bruise produced during life and a post-mortem ecchymosis are fairly well defined. In *Case* 23, however, zones of colour were

apparent in an after-death lividity, whilst the anatomical seat of the post-mortem ecchymosis, as described, was said to be the subcutaneous tissue. This case shows the need of great caution in such enquiries. No doubt the blood in this instance was diluted and diffused, as Taylor suggests, by the general dropsy from which the man suffered. It may be noted that the cadaveric ecchymoses occupied as usual the dependent parts of the body.

Dr. Ogston remarks that these stains are not such absolute indications of the reality of death as might at first be supposed, because there are marks occasionally met with in the living (which however do not necessarily occur on the dependent parts), difficult to distinguish from post-mortem ecchymoses. These lividities may be found at times on the legs and feet of aged persons and of those dying from adynamic diseases (such as scurvy, typhus, etc.), or on other parts of the body after death from apoplexy, hanging, or suffocation, or from carbonic acid poisoning. Similarly dusky red patches (frost erythems) occur on the body as the result of low temperatures, and may prove an important indication of death having resulted from the effects of extreme cold.

(B.) *Internal or visceral cadaveric ecchymoses.*

The cause of internal lividities is the same as of external, and like them they *occur in the dependent parts of the several viscera.* This fact is important to remember in determining whether the redness be due to disease, or to a post-mortem lividity.

Internal cadaveric ecchymoses are found chiefly in the following situations:—

(*a.*) *The veins of the pia mater and the posterior hemisphere of the brain.*—This follows as a result of the ordinary position in which the body is placed after death. Care must be taken not to confound cerebral post-mortem lividities with the results of congestive apoplexy.

(*b.*) *The posterior part of the spinal cord, and particularly of its pia mater.*—These hypostases must not be confounded with pre-existing meningitis, or be mistaken for the results of violence to the back inflicted during life.

(*c.*) *The posterior part of the lungs.*—Cadaveric ecchymoses are all but invariably found in the lungs. About one-fourth of the entire viscus is as a rule affected. They are, moreover, found at a very early period after death. Care must be taken that this condition is not ascribed to pneumonia or to apoplexy of the lung.

(*d.*) *The dependent parts of the stomach and intestines.*—This condition might be mistaken for the effects of inflammation. To determine to which cause the redness is due, the convolutions of the intestines should be stretched to their full extent. In post-mortem ecchymoses, breaks in the redness are certain to be observed, whilst in inflammation no such want of colour continuity will be apparent.

The heart is not subject to cadaveric ecchymoses, but after death coagulated fibrin, stained with blood-colouring matter, is found in the cavities (Cardiac polypi). This coagulation no doubt takes place after death, although there are reasons to think that it may occur in some cases just at the moment of death.

Bile stains.—Very soon after death (often after only a few hours) the bile undergoes certain changes (of the precise nature of which we are not well informed) whereby its colouring matter oozes through the gall bladder. Thus the contiguous parts of the stomach and intestines may become stained of a yellow or greenish-yellow colour, presenting an appearance not unlikely to be mistaken by an incautious observer for the action of a corrosive poison.

II. Putrefaction Proper.

This we shall discuss in the following order :—

I.—The general phenomena of, and the changes produced on the body by, putrefaction. In other words, the *external* results of decomposition, recognizable without dissection.

These are :—

(*α.*) Colour changes.

(*β.*) The development of the gases of decomposition.

II.—The circumstances that modify the order, and the rapidity, of putrefaction. These may be considered under three heads as follows :—

(*a.*) General modifying conditions.

(*β.*) Burial in earth.

(*γ.*) Submersion in water.

III.—The question arises "How far the medical jurist, from the external inspection of a body, can form an opinion as to the length of time that the person has been dead?"

IV.—The changes in the tissues and viscera resulting from putrefaction. In other words, the *internal* or visceral effects of putrefaction revealed by a post mortem.

V.—The production of—the circumstances modifying—and the appearances due to, the formation of adipocere (saponification).

VI.—The appearances due to mummification.

I. The general phenomena of, and the changes produced on the body by, putrefactive decomposition:—in other words, the external results of decomposition recognizable without dissection.

(*a.*) *Colour changes.*—The first colour sign of putrefaction is a slightly purple, or greenish, or yellowish-green patch occurring commonly in the centre of the belly. This usually shows itself about the third day after death. The tint gradually deepens, until about the fifth day, the whole of the abdominal parietes will be found to have changed colour, and the green tint to have more or less extended to the genitals. Green patches now begin to form on the neck, the back, the sides of the chest, and the inferior extremities, the body generally, through the green or purplish-green discoloration, presenting a peculiar marbled appearance. This is owing to the turgescence of the superficial veins, and to the changes effected on the blood-colouring matter by the gases of putrefactive decomposition. Towards the eighth or tenth day these patches of colour coalesce, so that the whole face and neck exhibit a reddish-green tint, whilst the abdomen becomes of a brown or reddish-brown hue.

At the end of a fortnight the whole body will be strongly coloured, some parts being of a deep green or violet, and others of a brownish red or black. Beyond this the colour changes can scarcely be traced.

No doubt the colours produced by putrefaction are chiefly due to chemical changes resulting from the action of the gases of decomposition on the hæmoglobin.

(β.) *Development of the gases of decomposition.*—The gases developed in the body during life, as for example in the stomach, differ in their composition from those formed after death. The gases formed *during life* are often inflammable, and usually contain considerable quantities of pure hydrogen. Thus in one case, the gas was found to contain 20·5 per cent. of hydrogen and 10·7 of carburetted hydrogen, with carbonic anhydride, oxygen, nitrogen, and a small proportion of sulphuretted hydrogen ["*London Med. Rec.*," 1874, p. 495 (*Dr. Schultze*), and Aug. 26, 1874 (*Dr. Ewald*)]. It is certain that the gas developed in the body during life, contains as a rule very little sulphuretted hydrogen. *After death*, the composition of the gases formed, varies at different periods and under different circumstances, such as the nature of the contents of the stomach and intestines at the time of death (*Case* 31 *h*). In the earlier post-mortem stages, say until about the fifth or sixth day, the gases of putrefaction consist chiefly (according to my own experiments) of sulphuretted hydrogen, carburetted hydrogen, and ammonia, with variable proportions of carbonic oxide, phosphoretted hydrogen, nitrogen, and carbonic anhydride. But after the fifth or sixth day the proportions of sulphuretted hydrogen and of ammonia decrease, carburetted hydrogen and carbonic oxide then largely predominating. The gas present in some of the coffins removed from the vaults of the London churches was found to contain ammonia, nitrogen, and carbonic anhydride, but no sulphuretted, carburetted, or phosphoretted hydrogen.

If a puncture be made in the skin and a light applied, the gases of putrefaction will, as a rule, be found to burn with a yellow or blue flame (*Case* 31 *h*, *i*). Sometimes a series of slight explosions will take place on holding the light to the aperture

from which the gas escapes. The gases formed continue to be very offensive up to about the twelfth or fourteenth day after death, when the quantity of sulphuretted hydrogen becomes comparatively insignificant.

Again, the rapidity with which gas is developed in the body after death, depends on a variety of circumstances. Thus if a body be taken out of the water and exposed to warm air, the quantity of gas generated within a very short period is often enormous, altering the features and general appearance of the corpse within a few minutes of its recovery.

We have now to consider the effects produced on the body by the development of the gases of decomposition. Ogston describes these under three heads, viz. :—

(i.) Distension and its results.

(ii.) Blood displacements.

(iii.) Fluid effusions.

(i.) *Distension and its results;* in other words, the body swells and becomes bloated, the belly, scrotum, chest, face, and limbs (in fact all parts) increasing in size.

Thus the specific gravity of the body, which normally is only a little heavier than water, becomes specifically lighter.

This explains why a body rises to the surface after some days' submersion, and sinks after the accumulated gas has escaped, rising a second time when fresh gas has formed, and so on.

Great as the power of the gases generated by putrefaction may be, it is seldom that a body bursts, because of the elasticity of the tissues. It is, of course, possible for a large evolution of gas to force open a leaden coffin, but if it be well made, and of thick lead, we should imagine such a circumstance must be of exceedingly rare occurrence.

The effects of distension are specially noticeable in the face. Thus the eyes, which after death collapse, as the result of fluid transudation, become more or less prominent so soon as the gases developed within the cranium and orbits are sufficient in quantity to force them forward (*Case* 33). This prominence of the eyes commences, as a rule, from the fourth to the eighth day after death. (*Dr. Geoghegan.*) One case is recorded where

both eyes protruded sixteen hours after death.—(Dr. Taylor, "*Med. Gaz.*," June, 1850, Vol. X. N.S., p. 171).

Not unfrequently the tongue swells from the development of gases within its pores. Thus it may either fall or be pushed forwards by the *vis a tergo*, so that after death it will be found hanging out of the mouth. Strange to say that in Cases 33 and 34 the medical men regarded this appearance of the tongue and the prominent condition of the eyes as indicative of death by strangulation. In all such cases, careful note must be taken whether the tongue be bitten, or even indented with the teeth. In violent strangulation, further, the hands are usually clenched.

And again, the countenance and general features (particularly the lips, *Cases* 33, 34) may become so bloated and distended, that recognition may be rendered well nigh impossible (*Cases* 31 *g*, 33, 34). This bloated appearance arises partly from the formation of gases in the loose tissues of the face, and partly by the blood being forced upwards by the development of gases in the thorax and abdomen. The mucus and bloody froth commonly seen after death hanging about, or issuing from, the mouth and nostrils, is frequently due to this latter cause.

After the gases of putrefaction have been set free, the body increases in size; and further, in the case of children (and this is a matter of great importance to be remembered where the precise age of an infant or stillborn is in question) makes them look considerably older than they really are. I have on more than one occasion seen a stillborn, owing to the free development of gas, have all the appearance of a child a year old.

It is important to note that the development of gases in the body has been known to produce certain effects closely simulating vital acts. Probably gaseous distension is the usual cause of the occasional movements of a corpse, such as its turning on the side after it has been "settled" in the coffin. Again it is recorded that the pressure of the gases generated in the abdomen has been sufficient to force fæces from the bowels, urine from the bladder, and even a fœtus from the uterus. (*Case* 73.)—("*Guy's Hospital Reports*," 1864, 3rd series, Vol. X., p. 253.)

Dr. Aveling records a series of six cases collected from medi-

cal literature, where delivery is said to have occurred spontaneously after death. In one of the cases it is stated that the child was born alive. ("*Lancet*," April 27, 1872, p. 596.) It is certain that, as a rule, this spontaneous post-mortem delivery results from the pressure exerted by the gases developed in the abdominal cavity, although another explanation of this unusual occurrence has been suggested (page 56). Again the gases developed in the abdomen and intestinal canal, have (it is recorded) forced food from the stomach into the œsophagus and pharynx, and even out of the mouth. And, what is perhaps of even greater importance, the food thus forced upwards has been known to find its way into the larynx, a result which, if discovered at a post-mortem, might give rise to a suspicion that suffocation had been the cause of death.

(ii.) *Blood displacements, occurring as the result of pressure on the heart and large vessels.*

This constitutes another series of effects produced by the generation of the gases of putrefaction. After death, the heart and large blood vessels are usually empty. If any fluid blood remain in them, this is certain to be forced either into the superficial capillaries, or into the mucous and serous membranes, or into the vessels of the viscera. (*Cases* 33, 34.)

From this cause a diffused and intense redness of the skin and areolar tissue, very different to, and much later in appearing than, post-mortem lividities, may often be observed after the cuticle has pealed off and putrefaction considerably advanced.

At times the effects produced by blood displacements have caused considerable alarm, owing to the pallid face of a corpse suddenly becoming red and rosy. I have seen this happen to an alarming extent, but in the case to which I am alluding, the original pallor rapidly returned when free exit was given to the gases confined in the thoracic and abdominal cavities. (*Case* 20.)

A marked redness of mucous and serous surfaces from this cause, must not be confounded with inflammatory redness. Besides the presence of false membranes, of purulent exudations, and of thickened tissues (all of which *if present* point *to*, and *if absent* point *from* inflammation as the cause of the redness), it will be noted that *in post-mortem redness*, the red colour is limited to

the course of the vessels, whilst *in inflammatory redness*, it is more widely spread.

The development of gases and the blood displacements consequent on the resulting pressure, explain the occurrence of what is known as *post-mortem hæmorrhage*. This may occur before putrefaction has commenced, from the liquid blood oozing from a wound and afterwards coagulating; but it may, and most often does, occur after putrefaction is fully developed, from the cause we are now considering. Thus is explained "bleeding after death," the origin of many a fabulous story of people coming to life after they were supposed to be dead.

A third effect produced by gaseous distension is:—

(iii.) *Fluid effusions into cavities.* We have traced the blood as it is forced into the capillaries by the pressure on the large vessels. The pressure on the overloaded capillaries continues to increase as the gases of putrefaction are developed. This constant pressure forces the serum (brownish red in colour, offensive in odour, uncoagulable and tinged with blood) into the serous cavities, more especially into the pleuræ and pericardium. The fluid thus effused after death may be recognised by its being homogeneous, whilst that effused during life as the result of inflammation is usually non-homogeneous, and frequently contains pus and false membranes. These after-death effusions are said not to be found in cavities lined with mucous membranes (Orfila and Devergie). With respect to the time of their formation, they rarely occur for some weeks, but never during the first week, after death.

II. The circumstances that modify the order and the rapidity of the putrefactive changes in the body.

(*a*.) We shall present these modifying conditions as far as possible in a tabular form under two columns:—

(i.) The circumstances promoting putrefaction, and (ii.) the circumstances retarding putrefaction.

(*β*.) We shall then consider certain modifications of the putrefactive process resulting from the burial of a body in earth, &c.

(*γ*.) Certain further modifications of the process resulting from the submersion of a body in water.

(a.) *The circumstances respectively promoting and retarding putrefaction in a corpse.*

(i.) *Circumstances promoting putrefaction.*

1. *Temperature.* Warmth assists putrefaction by lessening cohesion. The most favourable temperature for putrefaction is between 70° and 100° Fahr. (21·1° and 37·7° C.). Thus one day's exposure in summer (75° F. or 24° C.) may effect a greater alteration than a week's exposure in winter. A warm room promotes decomposition.

2. *Moisture* promotes the process of putrefaction by effecting actual contact between the air and the tissue. The body naturally contains enough moisture (two-thirds its weight) for this purpose, but putrefaction is hastened if an excess of moisture be present. Such excess may be the result of disease (as dropsy) or may arise from the previous submergence of the body in water. Thus the viscera, according to the amount of moisture they contain,

(ii.) *Circumstances retarding putrefaction.*

1. *Temperature.* Below 32° F. (0° C.) and above 212° F. (100° C.), putrefaction is entirely arrested. Cold prevents decomposition by intensifying cohesion, and heat by effecting the evaporation of moisture. A remarkable instance of the preservative power of cold is given by Adolph Erman, who states that the body of Prince Menschikoff, a favourite of Peter the Great, exhumed after ninety-two years' burial in frozen soil, at Beresov (in Siberia), had undergone hardly any change. (*See* also *Quarterly Journal of Science*, vol. viii. p. 95.) The rapidity of putrefaction grows less and less as the temperature rises above 100° F. (37·8° C.), until (as we have said) at 212° F. it is entirely arrested. Bodies buried in hot sand do not putrefy, but become mummified. Thus warmth *(per se)* has a tendency to retard putrefaction. It is only so far as it is associated with air and moisture that it promotes it. *(Case* 32.)

2. *Moisture.* If there be sufficient water to allow the entire submergence of the body, putrefaction will be retarded, because access of air is thereby prevented. Any circumstance rendering a body unusually dry, *e.g.*, its preservation in a dry and warm atmosphere, retards putrefaction.

decompose at different times after death; the brain (more especially if air gain access to it) and the eye putrefying rapidly, whilst the bones, teeth, hair, and nails decompose slowly. Speaking generally, any cause, or combination of causes, rendering the body preternaturally moist assists putrefaction.

3. *Air.* If blood or flesh be placed in a vacuum, its decomposition proceeds slowly. Similarly, decomposition is slow in atmospheres of hydrogen, of nitrogen, or of carbonic anhydride, or indeed of common air, provided a vapour (such as turpentine) be present, capable of absorbing oxygen. Air also promotes decomposition as a carrier to the body of the lower forms of organic life, which themselves have the power to start, or at any rate to promote, chemical changes.

A body putrefies more rapidly in air than in water, or after burial. Given similar temperatures, the degree of putrefaction developed in a body during one week's exposure to air, will about correspond to that developed after submersion for a fortnight, or after burial in a deep grave for a period of eight weeks.

A naked body putrefies more rapidly than a clothed one. Decomposition will be less rapid in parts where the clothes fit tightly (*e.g.*, in the feet with the boots on), or if the clothes worn be impermeable to air.

In a leaden coffin, putrefaction is slow from the oxygen soon becoming exhausted. Thus in the case of bodies buried in lead, the faces may be recognisable after the lapse of long periods of time.

3. *Air.* If access of air to a body be prevented by any means, such as by its enclosure in a close coffin, by tightly-fitting clothes, or by complete immersion in water, putrefaction is retarded.

4. *Combined action of Warmth, Moisture, and Air.*

It is important to consider the action of these jointly as well as separately:—

Moist air promotes putrefaction.

Stagnant air promotes putrefaction.

A *moist cold air* in winter, assists putrefaction more efficiently than a *dry hot air* in summer.

A *moist, hot, stagnant air* is the most favourable atmospheric condition for putrefaction.

Thus of the three (air, warmth and moisture), the presence of moisture is a more important means of promoting putrefaction, than either warmth or air.

5. *Effects of Burial.*

Putrefaction is promoted by—

(*a.*) The body having been kept for a long time exposed to the air before interment. Besides the mere action of oxygen, insects during exposure may find their way to the corpse and deposit their ova in or upon it. These, when hatched, materially assist putrefaction.

(*β.*) The grave being situated in low ground (as in a valley), and in a damp swampy soil.

(*γ.*) The body being buried without clothes or coffin. Thus where infants (as not infrequently happens) have been merely thrown into the ground, and loosely covered over with earth, putrefaction is rapid.

4. *Combined action of Warmth, Moisture, and Air.*

Dry air retards putrefaction.

Air in motion retards putrefaction.

A *dry hot air* in summer, retards putrefaction more efficiently than a *moist cold air* in winter.

A *dry cold air, in rapid motion*, is the least favourable atmospheric condition for putrefaction.

The removal of moisture from the body by whatever augments evaporation (as, *e.g.*, by warmth—free atmospheric currents, etc.) constitutes the most important means of retarding putrefaction.

5. *Effects of Burial.*

Putrefaction is retarded by—

(*a.*) Burial within a short time after death.

(*β.*) The grave being on high ground and in a dry, absorbent soil. Thus bodies buried in dry, warm sand often become mummified, in which condition they resist putrefaction almost indefinitely.

(*γ.*) The body being well wrapped in its shroud, and enclosed in a well-secured coffin, lead coffins being undoubtedly the most perfect in this respect. The oxygen present in such case is rapidly exhausted, whilst the remaining nitrogen is somewhat antiseptic in its action. Oak coffins are also very durable and efficient, but

(δ.) Burial in a *shallow* grave, where the body is exposed to constant variations of temperature. The diurnal changes extend to about three feet below ground, and the monthly, or seasonal changes, to nearly six feet. Thus putrefaction is more rapid when a body is buried in six feet (or less) of earth than when interred in a deep grave.

(ε.) Burial in marl or clay (if air have access), or in loose mould, or in porous soil impregnated with animal and vegetable matters.

[It is possible under these conditions, if the ground be not too dry, that adipocere may be formed when putrefaction is suspended.]

6. *Age and Sex.* Childhood.—According to Orfila, putrefaction is rapid in the *female* sex.

7. *Cause of Death.* Acute exhausting diseases (*Case* 31 *i*), such as hydrophobia, typhus, and typhoid (*Case* 31 *d*) (see "*Guy's Hospital Reports*," Oct., 1863), dropsy from organic disease, a diseased state of blood (pyæmia), delivery, &c., promote putrefaction.

8. *Corpulence.* (*Case* 31 *h.*)

9. *Certain Poisons.* It is said that putrefaction is rapid after death by prussic acid, morphia, and narcotic poisons generally (*Casper*); also after death from certain animal and gaseous poisons, such as CO and H_2S. The bodies of the intemperate usually putrefy rapidly. (*Case* 31 *h.*)

[N.B. In this case the true question is whether the rapidity of putrefaction is due to the poison or to the habits of the individual.]

those made of deal or pine soon rot and fall to pieces.

Burial in water delays putrefaction so far as it prevents access of air. Burial in peat delays putrefactive changes in a remarkable manner.

(δ.) Burial in a deep grave. The deeper the grave, the more perfect the retardation, because the body is placed beyond the daily and seasonal changes of temperature. At a depth of six feet the temperature of the ground is low, and fairly uniform.

(ε.) Burial in sand, gravel, or chalk.

[In such cases adipocere is rarely formed, unless water finds its way into the grave.]

6. *Age and Sex.* Adults and old age.—Males are said to decompose less rapidly than females.

7. *Cause of Death.* Thus putrefaction is delayed after death from chronic diseases (*Case* 31 *c*) unless they be associated with dropsy. In the case of plethoric persons who have died suddenly in good health, and after death by asphyxia, putrefaction is usually slow in appearing.

8. *Leanness.*

9. *Certain Poisons.* Arsenic, antimony (*Case* 28), chloride of zinc, also chloroform, phosphorus, and strychnia, when they are actually the cause of death, usually retard decomposition.

In arsenical poisoning, putrefaction ordinarily commences as usual, but seems to stop after it has com-

tion, no doubt, is not so much the action of the poison as, *was the patient so exhausted by fatigue or pain before death, that rigidity supervened rapidly?*]

10. Any parts affected by bruises, fractures, or wounds, putrefy rapidly. (*Case* 31 *a b e f g.*) Such portions of the body look worse a few hours after, than before death. Putrefaction is specially rapid in parts that have been subjected to surgical operation.

menced. Then a process very similar to mummification begins.

After death by sulphuric and other mineral acids, putrefaction appears to be retarded, possibly from the acid preventing the formation of ammonia, or combining with it as soon as formed.

11. *Lime.* Lime, if freely applied to a dead body, may retard putrefaction by preventing access of air. In smaller quantities, however, it acts both as a deodorizer and antiseptic. The attempts, not uncommonly made, to destroy a body by covering it with lime, usually on the contrary succeed in preserving it. (*Cases* 29, 30.) In tanning skins, the application of lime is adopted for the purpose of removing the fat and separating the hair. Possibly a little external softening of the cuticle may be thereby effected, but no change results so far as the tissues generally are concerned, the fact being that lime *prevents* putrefaction (and even arrests its progress, if already started) by changing the skin into a hard and dry substance.

12. *The mineral acids.* By such means putrefaction is retarded by the destruction of the tissues. (*Case* 30.)

13. *Various antiseptics.*

(β.) *Certain further modifications of the putrefactive process, resulting from earth burial in coffins.*—For the most part, the

changes that take place in a coffin, are similar, except that they are slower, to what would occur if the body were exposed to the air. We have already stated many of the conditions that modify the progress of putrefaction after interment (p. 90)—viz., the character of the coffin and of the soil—the depth of the grave—the time that has elapsed before burial—the cause of death, etc. Considering all the facts, it is scarcely within the power of the medical jurist to fix a definite period of death or time of burial, from the mere appearance of an exhumed body. Even under apparently identical circumstances the most variable results have been observed. Taylor records a case where, after 34 years' interment, an entire and perfect skeleton was discovered, surrounded by traces both of shroud and coffin, whilst in an adjoining grave, all that remained of a body that had been underground for 25 years, were the long bones and the base of the skull. In *Case* 37 the body was found well preserved after six years' burial, and in *Case* 43 we have a remarkable illustration of preservation after 30 years' interment.

We are indebted to Orfila, and some other observers, for certain general facts bearing on this subject worth recording:—

After periods, varying from a few months to one and a-half or two years, it will usually be found that the soft tissues of a body buried in a coffin become dry and brown, and the limbs and face covered with a soft white fungus. About this time, (although I have seen this condition on more than one occasion after less than two months' burial,) hard white crystalline deposits of phosphate of lime form on the surface of the soft organs. If these crystals occur on the mucous membrane of the stomach (a not unusual position), they might possibly be mistaken for the effects of poison. In the case (*Case* 38) of two children that had been poisoned with arsenic, and exhumed after seven months' burial, the faces were found well preserved, excepting the soft parts of the nose. The genitals were converted into adipocere.

After a period of four years, the viscera become so mixed together that it is difficult, if not impossible, to recognise or to distinguish them.

After eight years' burial (case of Peter Mawer, exhumed at Boston, 1862), Dr. Taylor found a body in fragments, the soft parts being loosely adherent to the bones, and covered with a white, fibrous, offensive-smelling substance. The features were entirely destroyed, and the bones of a dark colour. [The body in this case had been buried in a damp grave, and the coffin had water in it, which contained animal matter, together with ammonic sulphate and phosphate.]

At later periods the soft parts, as a rule, entirely disappear. If a body has been buried in a very dry soil, portions may be found brown and mummified, in which condition they remain unchanged for a long time. In course of time the bones become disarticulated. At a still later period, the long bones only remain, the short flat bones, the base of the skull, and the vertebræ crumbling to a white powder.

Thus in Briand's case (*Case* 66) the body after eleven years' interment was found reduced to a skeleton. The third to the sixth cervical vertebræ, however, were surrounded by the remains of a cord, that had no doubt been criminally used to destroy life. The length and colour of the hair, the state of the teeth, and the form and length of the bones, were recognisable. (This subject will be further discussed under Identity.)

The teeth, bones and hair are the most indestructible parts of the body. These may be found in perfect preservation after many years' burial, and possibly throw light on the age, sex and identity of the person. Unless, however, the body has been buried in lead, or the conditions have been favourable to the formation of adipocere, it is not likely that any of the soft parts will remain after the lapse of nine or ten years.

There is little question that children's bones decay more rapidly than those of adults, more especially if they be buried (as they often are) in superficial graves. Thus, in Case 67, a child's body (æt. 8) was completely decomposed after sixteen months' burial—the hair, lower jaw, and certain articles of dress constituting the only means by which identification of the remains could be established.

The action resulting from prolonged *burial in peat bogs* is remarkable. (*Case* 47.) Similar in many respects to burial in

peat is Case 48, where a body was recovered after long interment in a turf bank at a depth of about ten feet. The remarkable preservative and antiseptic properties of the peat are strikingly illustrated in these cases, such action being no doubt due to the presence of tannic acid or of some body resembling it. But the most striking result recorded is the disappearance of the earthy matter of the bones. Thus in Case 47 no bone of any kind was found, and in Case 48 all the phosphate of lime had disappeared, so that the bones had entirely lost their solidity. It is clear, therefore, that peaty water must have some specially solvent action on bone. Whether, as has been suggested ("*Lancet*," July 5, 1873, p. 28), this is due to the free nitric acid said to be found in moss water, or to ulmic acid generated by the decomposition of vegetable fibre, or whether it be that whilst the peat preserves the skin and flesh the bones decay as usual by time, it is not easy to say.

(γ.) There are certain special modifications of putrefactive decomposition, that require study in the case of bodies submerged in water. The putrefaction of a body is far less rapid in water, if completely submerged, than it is in air, because of the lower temperature of the water and the exclusion of oxygen. A week's exposure to air, is in this respect about equal to a fortnight's submersion. But the rapidity of decomposition in water varies. Putrefaction is fairly rapid when the water has a temperature of from 64° to 68° F. (17·8° to 20° C.). In stagnant water, again, putrefaction is more active than it is in running water, whilst in shallow water (the heating power of the sun's rays being expended on the superficial layers), putrefaction is more rapid than in deep water. A body may be found fairly well preserved, after eighteen months' burial in deep water. Further, putrefaction would be retarded if the body became coated with mud, a condition which after prolonged submersion frequently occurs. (*Cases* 36 and 39) In cesspools, putrefaction is as a rule retarded, because the conditions are such as to favour the formation of adipocere.

If a body be recovered from the water, after eight or twelve days' submersion in summer, or after a still longer period in winter, the probability is that no very distinct signs of decom-

position will be apparent. But if it be now exposed for a few hours only to the air, very rapid decomposition ensues. So rapid indeed is the putrefaction of a body after its recovery, that twenty-four hours' exposure may then effect infinitely more marked putrefactive changes, than would have resulted from a fortnight's longer submersion. The face rapidly becomes bloated and black, rendering identification well nigh impossible. (*Cases* 35, 44.) (See also *Case* 36, where the face was well preserved after 29 days' submersion.)

It is important to note that a bruise or contusion produced during life, might not be apparent in the case of a dead body when first recovered after some days' submersion. After a very few hours' exposure to air, however, the bruise would probably manifest itself with even a somewhat exaggerated severity, owing to the specially rapid changes of colour certain to result under such circumstances.

About the twelfth day of submersion in summer, a change of colour commences. This is first observed on the ears and temples, then on the face, from which it spreads to the neck. It appears afterwards on the shoulders, chest, and abdomen, and lastly on the legs. This order of putrefaction is, in the main, agreed to by Casper, Briand, and Kanzler, and, it will be observed, is almost the inverse order of parts affected by putrefaction in bodies exposed to air. Thus—

Order of parts affected by putrefaction in air: Abdomen, genitals, breast, face, neck, superior and inferior extremities.

Order of the parts affected by putrefaction in water: Face, neck, breast, abdomen, legs.

Casper even states that the order in which the various parts exhibit colour-changes, affords strong evidence either in favour of, or against death by drowning; but I have reason to believe that this inverse order of putrefaction in water and in air occurs equally, whether the body be submerged alive or dead. I agree with Ogston, moreover, in his statement that occasionally (although rarely) the colour-changes in submerged bodies commence on the abdomen.

The gases of putrefaction are equally developed in water as in air. Thus the body after a short time (as we have already

mentioned) becomes buoyant, very little gas indeed being necessary to make it rise. A short time after it has risen to the surface the gas escapes, and the body sinks, rising a second time when a sufficiency of fresh gas has formed.

As regards the *position* in which the body floats, it will be noted that either the back or the abdomen (and in the case of females it is invariably the latter) seems lifted above the water, whilst the head and the extremities invariably remain below the surface.

The appearances presented by the body at different periods after submersion, have been stated by Devergie as follows ("*Annales d'Hygiène*," Vol. II., p. 160; Vol. V., p. 429; Vol. VI., p. 209):—

First four or five days.—Little change. Post-mortem rigidity may persist to the fourth day in some cases, particularly if the water be cold.

Fourth or fifth day.—The skin of the ball of the thumb and little finger, and the lateral surfaces of the fingers begin to whiten. On the sixth or eighth day this extends to the palms of the hands, and the soles of the feet. The skin of the face will appear softened, and of a more faded white than the rest of the body.

Fifteenth day.—The face is slightly swollen and red. A greenish spot begins to form on the skin of the mid-sternum. The hands and feet are quite white, except the dorsum of the latter, and the skin of the palms appears wrinkled. The subcutaneous cellular tissue of the thorax is reddish, and the upper part of the cortical substance of the brain of a green tint.

At one month.—The face is reddish brown, the eyelids and lips green and swollen, and the neck slightly green. A brown spot, with green areola, about six inches in diameter, occupies the upper and middle part of the sternum. The skin is very wrinkled, but the hair and nails are still adherent. The scrotum and penis are now much distended by gas, so that from this cause the latter is sometimes erect. The lungs become very emphysematous, and overlap the heart. (In *Case* 36, the absence of tumefaction after twenty-nine days is recorded.)

About the sixth or the seventh week.—The neck and thorax become very green, and the cuticle at the wrists begins to separate.

At two months.—The body is covered with slime, which penetrates through the clothes. The face will appear enormously swollen and brown, and the lips parted, so as to expose the teeth. The skin on the middle of the abdomen, as well as that on the arms, forearms, thighs, and legs, remains in a natural state, thus contrasting with the phenomena of putrefaction as it occurs in air, where the abdomen is the first part to exhibit change. The skin, with the nails attached, now begins to come off, like a glove, from

the hands and feet; the hair falls off, or can easily be detached. The veins are almost completely empty of blood, and filled with gas. If at the moment of death the right cavities of the heart were gorged with blood, the internal surface of the right ventricle will now appear of a jet black colour. Devergie insists strongly on this.

At two and a half months.—The green colour of the skin extends to the arms, forearms, and legs. The nails are quite detached from the hands and feet. Some *adipocere* will be formed on the cheeks, chin, breasts, arm-pits, and internal parts of the thighs [see before, pp. 23—30]. The abdomen will be greatly distended by the gases of putrefaction. As yet the muscles are not much altered in colour.

At three and a half months.—The scalp, eyelids, and nose are so destroyed as to render recognition, or determination of age, difficult or impossible from mere inspection. The skin of the breast is generally of a greenish brown, and the centre of the abdomen of an opaline appearance, studded with small ulcerations. Larger erosions are found on other parts of the body. The hands and feet are quite bare of skin. The lungs no longer fill the thorax, but leave a space between them and the pleura costalis, filled with reddish serum.

At four and a half months.—The face and scalp are so destroyed, as to leave the skull bare. The remains of the face, neck, and interior parts of the thighs are entirely converted into *adipocere*, and small eminences, indicating the commencement of calcareous incrustation, will be observed on the prominent parts. The brain presents traces of adipocere on its anterior portions.

After prolonged submersion the skin becomes blue, green, and black. As putrefaction advances the muscles become soft and discoloured, certain parts suffering conversion into adipocere. In course of time the soft parts of the body are washed away from the bones, and the adipoceratous portions get broken off. Finally, the skeleton separates. (*Case* 39.)

In one case, where *a body was drowned in a cesspool* (*Case* 66*), its complete reduction to a skeleton, after eight or nine months, is recorded. This most unusual result is to be accounted for by the influence of the putrescent animal surroundings, which in this case had failed to effect the conversion of the body into adipocere, a result which, under such conditions, might have been expected.

Having considered the changes resulting from putrefaction, and the time occupied by these changes under varying conditions, we are now led to consider the following important question:—

III. How far can the medical jurist, from the external inspection of a body, form an opinion as to the length of time that a person has been dead?

This question may be asked:—

(1.) In a case where the body of a child has been discovered, in order if possible to connect its birth (as proof of identity) with the delivery of a woman suspected of being the mother.

(2.) If the body of an adult be found under circumstances suggestive of homicide, the opinion of the medical jurist may be sought as to the probable time of death, to connect the crime, if possible, with some person or another suspected of being concerned in the murder.

In the earlier post-mortem stages, a fairly accurate opinion may, *under certain circumstances*, be formed of the period that has elapsed since death. As a rule putrefaction commences by a green discoloration of the abdomen about *the third day* after death. At the same time it must be remembered that this discoloration may occur earlier than this (*Case* 33) as well as later (*Case* 32), just as rigidity may, on the one hand, set in rapidly (as, *e.g.*, in cases of extreme prostration), and on the other hand be very late in appearing, as Brown-Séquard has shown to be the case after decapitation.

In the later stages after death, we agree with Orfila that it is "utterly beyond the power of man" to give a decided, or indeed any opinion of value as to the time of death, even with a full knowledge of the circumstances of the case. *Case* 35 shows the difficulty and danger of attempting that which the present state of our knowledge does not justify. *Cases* 49 and 50 are excellent illustrations of how very different may be the results of decomposition under practically identical conditions. In *Case* 50 the results recorded are precisely opposite to what we should have expected. We repeat, it is evident that the commencement of putrefaction after death may vary within the widest possible limits. This subject has more than once proved of great medico-legal importance. Thus in *Case* 32, the question arose, Was the absence of putrefaction in the body consistent with the person having met his death six days previously? If it was *not*, there was an absence of any evidence of value to

connect the prisoner (Desha) with the murder; if it was, then the evidence against the prisoner was strong. Again in *Case* 33 many important questions turned on the time of death, which could only be judged by the extent to which putrefaction had advanced. Much medico-legal controversy is reported to have occurred in this case, one side stating that the decomposed face, protruded eyes, swollen lips, projected tongue, the frothy liquid issuing from, and the larvæ about, the mouth, the generally discoloured state of body, &c., indicated that the person had been dead for at least four or five days, whilst others held (and amongst them Dr. Geoghegan) that such changes were not inconsistent with far more recent death. Admitting the exceptional nature of such a case, our own experience proves that a few hours may suffice to produce all the effects recorded, and that the medical jurist is not justified in fixing a definite time of death merely from putrefactive changes. Similarly in *Case* 34 the rapidity of the after-death changes was undoubtedly exceptional, but the medical jurist has to consider in all such cases the possibility of exceptional occurrences. Hence whilst stating what might be expected under like conditions, dogmatism in such matters is in the highest degree dangerous, cases proving incontestably that putrefaction is not to be relied upon as a positive indication of the time that a body has been dead.

In advanced stages of decomposition, an opinion of value may undoubtedly be formed as to the nature of wounds and injuries involving want of continuity. With these putrefaction will not materially interfere. On the other hand, mere bruises or superficial marks of violence (such as the mark of a cord round the neck) will probably be obliterated as putrefaction progresses, or, if recognizable, will scarcely furnish definite evidence as to their nature or cause. (*Case* 33.) Mistakes in such cases are recorded, and preach care.

One further point is suggested in cases of exhumation: that is, not to mistake injuries (say fractures of bones) caused by the pick and spade of the gravedigger or navvy, for marks of violence inflicted during life. (*Case* 41.)

Regarding the order in which the external phenomena of putrefaction occur in bodies exposed to the air or buried, we

cannot do better than quote, with such alterations as experience suggests, the rules laid down by Casper. They are to be regarded as *average results* only :—

Twenty-four to seventy-two hours after death.—A light green colour, visible about the centre of the abdomen. The eyeballs soft, yielding to external pressure.

Three to five days after death—The green colour of the abdomen becomes intensified and general, spreading, if the body be exposed to the air or buried in the ground, in the following order :—Genitals, breast, face, neck, superior and inferior extremities.

[If submerged in water the following order is usual, and as regards time appears later than in the case of air—Face, neck, shoulders, sternum, abdomen, legs.]

Eight to ten days after death.—The colour becomes more intense, the face and neck presenting a shade of reddish green. The ramifications of the subcutaneous veins on the neck, breasts and limbs, become very apparent. The patches congregate. Gases begin to be developed in, and to distend the abdomen and hollow organs, and to form under the skin in the submucous and intermuscular tissues. The cornea falls in and becomes concave. The sphincter ani relaxes. The nails remain firm.

Fourteen to twenty-one days after death.—The colour over the whole body becomes intensely green, with brownish red or brownish black patches. The body generally is bloated, and appears big from the development of gases in the abdomen, thorax and scrotum, and also in the cellular tissue of the body generally. The swollen condition of the eyelids, lips, nose and cheeks is usually of such extent as to obliterate the features and to destroy the identity of the body. The epidermis peals off in patches, whilst in certain parts (more particularly over the feet) it will be raised in blisters filled with a red or greenish fluid, the cuticle underneath frequently appearing blanched. The colour of the iris is lost. The nails easily separate. The hair is loose.

The fourth to the sixth month after death.—The thorax and

abdomen burst, and the sutures of the skull give way from the development of gases within. The viscera appear pulpy, or perhaps disappear (melt away), leaving the bones exposed (colliquative putrefaction.) The bones of the extremities separate at the joints.

At an advanced stage the soft parts gradually disappear.

Another question arises here: *May putrefaction commence in a body before death?* Partial putrefaction undoubtedly may, but not general putrefaction. A peculiar condition of luminosity of breath, and also of the face and other parts of the body (*Cases* 24, 25, 26) has been urged in proof that general putrefaction may happen. But so far as luminosity is concerned (a property that may be studied better, because seen oftener, in fish), it is certain that not only does it not result from putrefaction, but that it ceases (if present) immediately that putrefaction commences.

Case 27 is difficult of explanation. Possibly, however, there is some error as to the precise source of the phosphorescence. Of course the putrefaction of a portion of a body may occur during life, gangrene being such a condition. But this is vastly different to a general putrefaction of the whole body.

IV. The Changes in the Tissues and Viscera resulting from putrefaction: in other words—Internal effects revealed by a post-mortem.

The alterations produced in the tissues and viscera by putrefaction, are practically two, viz., *softening* and *discoloration.*

The various internal organs are affected by putrefaction in very different degrees, depending on the difference of their structure, the different quantities of blood they contain, and the ease or otherwise with which air can gain access to them.

But both discoloration (congestion) and tissue-softening are also found as morbid conditions. It is important, therefore, to note how far it is possible to distinguish between congestion and softening occurring as the result of disease, and similar appearances arising from putrefaction. The following points are worthy of note:—

The discolorations of putrefaction are most marked (like

external hypostases) in the lowest and most dependent parts of the organ, whilst the congestions of life are scarcely determined by position. Further, the putrefactive changes in one viscus may, by contact, promote putrefactive changes in an adjoining viscus. This communication of colour change from viscus to viscus at the precise spot where they touch, is at all times strongly suggestive of putrefaction.

Cadaveric softening generally affects an entire viscus, whilst the degree of softening in the several viscera, or in different portions of the same viscus, will greatly depend on the density of the viscus, or on the part of the viscus affected. Further, in putrefactive softening no adhesions of the organ to the walls of its cavity will occur, nor will pus be found infiltrated through the tissues. In inflammatory softening, on the contrary, it is rare for an entire viscus to be affected, the softening being, as a rule, partial and limited. Further, either adhesions or effusions of serum into cavities, or infiltrations of pus, are almost certain to be found in cases where the redness is the result of disease.

We may now consider the putrefactive changes in the various internal organs, stating them, as nearly as possible, in the order of time in which the viscera are severally attacked. Speaking generally, the windpipe and brain yield first, and the heart, lungs, and arteries last.

(A.) *Organs and parts that putrefy rapidly.*

1. *Larynx and Trachea.* These are the first internal parts of the body that show the effects of putrefaction, probably because they are the most ready of access to air. In from three to five days after death in summer, and in from six to eight days in winter, the larynx, and top part of the mucous membrane of the trachea assume a brownish-red or olive-green colour. Care must be taken not to confound these discolorations (for the diagnosis is not always easy) with the results of laryngitis, or of death by drowning or suffocation.

2. *The Brain of Infants.* The causes of early putrescence in the brains of infants and of young children, are twofold: (1) the easy access of air through the fontanelles; and (2) the soft and pulpy condition of the brain normally. [Hence the *adult*

brain putrefies much less rapidly than the brains of young children.] Whilst other parts are fresh, and even the abdomen untainted, the infant brain may become of a rose-red colour, and sufficiently liquid to flow out of the skull, so soon as the bones of the cranium are removed. (*Case* 38.)

If the cranium be entire, the putrefactive gases may, by their pressure, force the pulpy brain substance along the cerebral and internal jugular veins, whereby a condition may result closely simulating phlebitis. The rapid post-mortem changes that the brains of children undergo, often render post-mortem examinations, in the case of infants, unsatisfactory as a means of determining the precise cause of death.

Given discolorations of the membranes of the brain, or even of the brain tissue, pathologists are fairly agreed that it is practically impossible to state with any absolute certainty whether such discolorations are due to inflammation or are dependent on post-mortem changes.

It is said that in inflammatory softening, exudation corpuscles (not present in cadaveric softening) may be observed in the brain substance under the microscope.

3. *Stomach.* In times varying from three to eight days [4 to 6, (Casper)], irregular and circumscribed patches of reddish-brown, or purple, or black discolorations, may be observed. These patches are of very varied size and shape, and are usually surrounded by dark-coloured venous branches, that seem to wind around and about the discoloured portions. These patches usually occur first of all on the posterior wall of the stomach, the pre-existing post-mortem lividities being the centre of the putrescent changes. In a very short time, however, the change becomes general, from the coalescence of the patches. With this change of colour the stomach becomes soft to touch, and in some cases exceedingly friable.

It is important to consider with what normal or abnormal conditions these putrefactive colour changes in the stomach may be confounded:—

(*a.*) *Certain articles of food.*—The ingestion of a dark-coloured port, or of highly-coloured fruits (such as black currants, etc.), or of *certain medicines* (such as iron, or a strong infusion of the

Papaver Rhæas (*Christison*), etc.), shortly before death, may stain the stomach of various tints likely to prove deceptive.

(β.) *Certain Inflammatory Diseases* (such as catarrh of the stomach, etc.).

(γ.) *Redness incident to digestion.*—If, at the time of death, digestion be proceeding actively, more especially if the quantity of food in the stomach be small in quantity, considerable redness of the mucous membrane may be present.

But there is another condition worthy of note, which long ago attracted the attention of John Hunter, viz., what is called Post-mortem Digestion (or solution) of the stomach. John Hunter describes this state as follows :—

He says: "There are very few dead bodies in which the stomach at its great end is not in some degree digested; and one who is acquainted with dissections can easily trace these gradations. To be sensible of this effect nothing more is necessary than to compare the inner surface of the great end of the stomach with any other part of its inner surface. The sound portions will appear soft, spongy, and granulated, and without distinct blood-vessels, opaque and thick, while the other parts will appear smooth, thin, and more transparent, and the vessels will be seen ramifying in its substance. Upon squeezing the blood which these vessels contain from the larger branches to the smaller, it will be found to pass out at the digested end of the vessels, and to appear like drops on the inner surface" ("*Hunter's Animal Economy*," Owen's edition, p. 119). If this post-mortem digestion has been active, the stomach may be found perforated, and the contents to have escaped. Dr. Fenwick ("*Morbid States of the Stomach and Duodenum*," pp. 42—47) has discussed this subject with some detail. This condition of post-mortem solution is most apparent in persons killed suddenly (*e.g.* by lightning) whilst digestion is going on, also in cases of phthisis, in diseases accompanied by acid dyspepsia, and after death from cerebral disease. It occurs more frequently in warm than in cold weather.

(δ.) *The effects of alcohol.*—If brandy or other powerful stimulants be taken just before death, a slight reddening of the mucous membrane of the stomach is commonly observed at the

post-mortem. It is curious, however, that, in some cases, after death from alcoholism (acute and chronic), the stomach when first opened is exceedingly pale, but becomes intensely red after a short exposure, so as to give the appearance of active inflammation.

(ε.) *The action of irritant poisons.*

(ζ.) *The effects of hanging and drowning.*

(η.) There are *certain other post-mortem conditions* of the stomach that might mislead as to their cause. Of these the changes produced in the blood-colouring matter by the gases developed as the result of putrefaction, and the transudation after death of the contents of the gall-bladder into or upon the stomach, are illustrations.

In putrefaction, all the coats of the stomach (muscular and mucous) equally undergo softening and change of colour. This being so, the peeling off or separation of the mucous coat from the muscular, as a result of putrefaction, is of rare occurrence. Casper says he has never observed it take place; but, although I admit it to be infrequent, I certainly have witnessed such a separation, even in the very early stages of putrefaction. In other forms of discoloration (as, for example, that arising from irritant poisons) it is the mucous membrane which is more particularly, if it be not the only part, affected.

And this practical conclusion arises from what has been stated, viz.: that post-mortem discolorations of the stomach, considering the many chances of error, are scarcely to be regarded, *per se*, as of much importance in proof of the administration of an irritant poison.

But in cases of poisoning there are other conditions of the stomach to be considered besides mere redness. Thus arsenic acts commonly (but by no means necessarily) as a preservative agent, so that, in a case of arsenical poisoning, a fairly accurate opinion may sometimes be formed as to the condition of the mucous membrane after the lapse of even three or four weeks. Again, there are cases where the post-mortem appearances of the stomach at very advanced periods after death (*e.g.*, in the case of the strictly corrosive poisons) are definite and distinct. Further, important conditions are sometimes superadded to discolora-

tions and softening, such as finding a deposit on the mucous membrane of the stomach of reduced mercury, or of particles of white arsenic, or of an arsenical sulphide. Hence, whilst caution is necessary in forming an opinion of poisoning on mere colour change, it must be remembered that the post-mortem examination of the stomach, even at very distant periods after death (omitting altogether for the moment the results of chemical analysis) may furnish evidence of poisoning of the greatest possible value. And, lastly, it is to be remembered that putrefaction in many cases helps, rather than interferes with the toxicologist in his search for poisons.

4. *The Intestines.*—The putrefactive changes that take place in the intestines are similar to, but later in their appearance than those described as occurring in the stomach. The peculiarities of post-mortem lividities in the intestines, have been already described. (See p. 81.)

5. *The Spleen.*—Sometimes this organ putrefies very soon after death, and sometimes very late.

6. *Omentum and Mesentery.*

7. *Liver.*—The livers of children putrefy considerably sooner after death than those of adults. Commencing with a green discoloration on the convex surface, the colour rapidly spreads over the whole viscus, until at last it becomes almost black. (*Case* 34.) The gall-bladder putrefies at a much later after-death period than the liver.

8. *Brain of Adults.*—Collapse, with change of colour in the adult brain, usually commences in the grey matter at the base of the cerebrum, and spreads upwards. The brain becomes soft in from two to three weeks after death, unless air finds access to it through a fracture of the skull, when the change is more rapid. Under ordinary conditions some months elapse before the adult brain becomes actually pulpy.

(B.) *Organs and parts that putrefy slowly.*

1. *The Heart.*—The heart may be found flat, empty of blood, but still fresh and surrounded by its dried pericardium, long after advanced putrefaction has affected the parts and viscera already described. (*Case* 38.)

2. *The Lungs.*—The time when putrefaction commences in

the lungs is far more variable than in the case of the heart. It is true that putrefactive changes may occur in the lungs very soon after death (*Case* 38), but as a rule these organs resist putrefaction for a long time. This fact is important in considering the value of the hydrostatic test as a proof of respiration, putrefaction being one of the difficulties that occur to its use. When putrefaction commences in the lungs, isolated bullæ, varying in size from a millet seed upwards, form in various parts under the pleuræ. These bullæ, in the first instance, do not effect any change in the general appearance of the lungs, but as their number increase, the lungs become soft, of a dark black colour, and putrid.

The lungs may be inflamed (reddened) as the result of disease. This condition in such case will be observed at the post-mortem, no matter how soon after death the examination is made. Hepatized tissue will probably be found, moreover, around the inflamed portions, the general mass in some parts being soft, and in others indurated and of a livery consistence.

3. *The kidneys.*

4. *The bladder.*

5. *The gullet.*—This may be found firm and unaltered many months after death, even when the stomach and intestines have ceased to exist.

6. *Pancreas.*

7. *Diaphragm.*—Sometimes a change of colour occurs very shortly after death, but as a rule the diaphragm may be distinguished after the person has been dead for at least six months.

8. *The larger blood vessels.*

9. *The uterus.*—This organ resists putrefaction longer than any of the other soft parts or viscera of the body (Casper). (*Cases* 51, 52, 53.) Dr. Quinnell of Jhung confirms this statement by reporting a post mortem on the body of a woman, where decomposition had advanced so far that the bloated skin had burst in places and the brain become fluid, nevertheless "the womb was as yet free from putrefactive changes and perfectly healthy." ("*Indian Medical Gazette*," Jan. 1, 1875, p. 4.) As a fact, pregnancy may always, and the recent expulsion of the contents of the uterus may very frequently, be made out in a

body where decomposition is very far advanced, and where no opinion can be formed either as to the cause of the abortion or of the death.

Presence of vermin.—As putrefaction advances in bodies exposed to the air, vermin make their appearance. (*Case* 33.) They chiefly attack the exposed parts of the body, such as the face and fingers, and leave signs of their ravages, which, as a rule, have distinct and well-defined edges. On the contrary, where loss of tissue results from putrefaction, the edges of the parts are usually soft and ill defined. As regards vermin, the possibility of their ravages producing effects simulating wounds must not be overlooked; at the same time, it must be remembered that the existence of sores and wounds on a body is likely to be an attraction to worms and maggots. ("*Indian Med. Gazette*," Jan. 1, 1875, p. 4.)

Lastly: one or two practical thoughts suggest themselves:—

1. We are never justified in refusing to perform a post-mortem, merely because of the putridity of a corpse, or of the length of time that has elapsed since death. Thus in the most decomposed body we may usually find sufficient data by which to determine *the sex*, if not by external, at least by internal observations (*Cases* 38, 51, 52); also *the age* more or less accurately, and very often *the mode of death* (as *e.g.* in many cases of poisoning—after death from violence, aneurism, &c.). Again we may be able to prove or disprove the existence of pregnancy from the presence or the absence of fœtal bones (*Case* 52). And once more, the evidence resulting from the discovery of false teeth, rings, various body malformations (such as club-foot, &c.) or the remains of old injuries (such as fracture, &c.), may prove of the greatest possible value in identification.

Thus in Dr. Harvey's medico-legal returns (see "*Indian Medical Gazette*," Jan. 1, 1875, p. 3), he remarks that "it is rare for any body on which a judicial post-mortem has to be made in India to be quite free from decomposition, and very many in which the cause of death was clearly made out were greatly decomposed." The extent of putrefaction, often urged as an excuse for not making a post-mortem, is, says Dr. McLeod, invalid, "and the careless or superficial or hurried examination of human remains,

in whatever state presented, is a palpable dereliction of duty." Personal inconvenience in this matter must give way to the requirements of law. Admitting that decomposition may often render it impossible to say whether certain appearances are the results of wounds or not, and may often prevent our speaking positively as to the cause of death, the fact still remains that certain evidence of our inability to do so can only be given after most careful dissection. As a rule the obliteration of pathological signs does not correspond with the period of maximum offensiveness. (*See Case* 34*.)

2. If a body be recovered in such a bloated condition that recognition is rendered impossible, although in the highest degree important, the features may sometimes be restored to a remarkable extent by immersing the body in a saturated solution of alum and nitre in alcohol. I am able to speak from practical experience of the success of this method, and Dr. Richardson mentions another case, occurring to Dr. Henry, of Alta, where some such process proved valuable. [" *Vierteljahrss.*" Vols. XXV. and XXVI., (Prof. Hofmann, of Vienna), "*Lancet*," May 16, 1863, p.551, and "*Med. Times and Gazette*," December 9, 1871 (Dr. Richardson).]

3. Dr. Richardson has suggested the following as a good disinfectant preparation where we are called upon to make a post-mortem on a putrid and offensive body:—

Iodine	1 drm.
Methylated ether (sp. gr. 0·720) ...	10 ozs.
Absolute alcohol	1 oz.
Sulphuric acid	4 drms.

Dissolve the iodine in the mixed ether and alcohol, and slowly drop the sulphuric acid into the mixture.

Dr. Richardson explains that the iodine acts as a deodorizer, that the sulphuric acid fixes the alkaline products of decomposition, and that the spirit gives general firmness to the structures. The liquid is to be poured over the putrid body, when it is rapidly absorbed and the body effectually deodorised. Where a suspicion of poisoning exists, and it is probable that an analysis of the viscera and the contents of the stomach will be required, it is

unquestionably preferable to avoid all disinfectants, for fear of introducing difficulties into the chemical examination. Still, if any deodoriser must be employed, it is well to use some preparation the composition of which is exactly known. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," December 9, 1871, p. 701.)

Although, as we have said, a post-mortem on a putrid body is not to be shirked because of its condition, nevertheless the medical jurist must beware of attempting to prove too much as the result of the examination. To recognise features, even after treatment, may be, and often is, impossible. To differentiate with scientific accuracy between disease and post-mortem changes —to decide how long the person has been dead—or in the case of two bodies to determine priority of death, are details concerning which the medical jurist, save in exceptional cases, is rarely qualified at advanced post-mortem periods to give definite opinions.

V. The Appearances due to the formation of Adipocere (Adeps, *lard*, and cera, *wax*), (Saponification):—

(1.) *The History of Adipocere.*—Although adipocere is said to have been known to the ancients, and is mentioned by Lord Bacon, this substance attracted little attention till the publication of Fourcroy's "Memoir," to the Royal Academy of Sciences of Paris (1789). He found that the bodies removed from the Cimetière des Innocents in Paris presented three different conditions:—(1) The most ancient were simply portions of bones, irregularly dispersed by frequent disturbance. (2) In certain bodies the skin, muscles, etc., were dry, hard, more or less grey, and mummified. But (3) the most singular state of all was observed in the "fosses communes," where large numbers of bodies had been interred in deep pits, one above the other. On opening many of these, nothing was discovered but irregular masses of a soft ductile matter, of a grey-white colour, resembling common white cheese. "It was sometimes nearly white, at others yellowish brown; sometimes brittle and dry, but always more or less unctuous or soapy." Since the publication of this Memoir, many researches

have been made into the formation and constitution of this singular substance adipocere, a body by no means invariably of the same composition.

(2.) *Constitution and composition of Adipocere.*—Adipocere is a true ammoniacal soap, that is, a combination of fatty acids, (oleic, stearic, and perhaps palmitic acids), with ammonia. As commonly found, it has mixed with it certain colouring matters and altered organic tissues, (pure adipocere being structureless), together with the various lime, potash, and other salts found in the animal solids and fluids.

There is, however, an adipocere that has lime and not ammonia for its base. Possibly this may depend on the nature of the medium in which the body is submerged, but whether the lime adipocere be formed from ammonia adipocere, or is itself a primary body, is a matter of doubt.

(3.) *Formation.*—Two things are required to form adipocere :

(*a.*) Fatty matter.

(*β.*) A nitrogenized body (such as fibrin), capable, by decomposition, of yielding ammonia.

The ammonia thus formed combines with the fat to form adipocere. Hence adipocere could not be formed from pure fat alone, or from pure fibrin alone. But inasmuch as all fat globules are surrounded by a nitrogenized investing membrane, and all parts contain more or less fat, practically the whole body is capable of conversion into a more or less pure adipocere.

(4.) *The circumstances modifying its formation.*

(*α*) *Age.*—In children and young people where there is much superficial fat, adipocere is more rapidly formed than in the bodies of adults.

(*β.*) It forms more readily, and in greater abundance (as we should expect), in fat than in lean bodies.

(*γ.*) *Water.*—Complete immersion of the body in running water favours its formation.

(*δ.*) Its formation is especially promoted by burial in an *overcrowded churchyard* and in *cesspool soil* (themselves abounding in fatty and decomposing nitrogenized matter), and by interment in *deep graves*, from the probability of the body, under

such circumstances, coming into contact with an excess of moisture.

Adipocere is rarely met with in bodies buried either in sand or gravel.

(5.) *The Properties of Adipocere.*—Adipocere is a white, or a yellowish white, or a brown soapy body. [Lime adipocere is commonly whiter and harder than ammonia adipocere.] It has an offensive, rancid odour increased by warming. When perfectly dry, it is white, hard, and brittle.

It has no structure, but it always occurs in nature more or less mixed with fragments of tissue.

It floats on water. It melts at about 200° F. (93·3° C.), some samples fusing a little below, and others above this temperature. When heated strongly on platinum, it melts, the vapour evolved smelling strongly of ammonia, and burning with a bright yellow flame. A brown mineral residue (equal to about 5 per cent.) remains after incineration, and consists of sodic and potassic carbonates, sodic chloride, phosphate of lime, and oxide of iron. When distilled, it yields a dense oily acid vapour, a carbonaceous mass remaining in the retort. With water, it makes an opaque lathery mixture, having an acid reaction. It is soluble in alcohol, but is re-precipitated from the spirit solution on the addition of water. It is also soluble in a solution of potassic hydrate, a white precipitate being formed when the alkaline solution is neutralized with acids.

Acids generally decompose it. Sulphuric acid chars it. A red coloured liquid results on boiling it with strong hydrochloric acid. Heated with a caustic alkali, ammonia is evolved.

Adipocere is a very permanent body. A case where it was identified after seventeen years' burial, is recorded. ("*Phil. Med. Exam.*," April, 1847; p. 267.)

(6.) *The time required for the production of adipocere.*—It is possible for the whole body (as we have said) to be converted into adipocere, but the breasts, cheeks, and kidneys (that is the parts where fat abounds), are the first to undergo this change. The muscles suffer conversion at later periods.

Devergie gives one year when the body is covered by water, and three years when it is buried in moist earth, as the periods

which, under ordinary conditions, must elapse before *complete* conversion into adipocere will be effected.

But the question arises :—What is the earliest period after death at which, under specially favourable conditions, adipocere may be formed ?

Casper says that adipocere is not formed to any extent, according to his experience, under three to four months' submersion in water, and six months' burial in moist earth.

In a famous trial, where much depended on the time necessary for saponification (*Case* 44), the following evidence was tendered :—

Mr. Dickenson said that he thought that the conversion of a body into adipocere pointed to its having been under water for at least six weeks (a statement in which Dr. Bree agreed), but he also stated that he had seen a greasy spermaceti appearance in a body after submersion for a shorter period.

Dr. Gibbes stated that he had been able to procure a little adipocere, after the maceration of a body in water for a month, but that as a rule it required a longer time.

Of recorded cases the following must be noted :—

Devergie records the case of a new-born child having been found completely adipoceratous after six weeks' burial in water-closet soil.

A case is recorded (*Case* 44) of the body of an adult being found partly adipoceratous, after submersion in water for six weeks.

A case is recorded where a body buried in a dry place (?) was converted into adipocere after four months' interment. (*Case* 46.)

Several cases are recorded of adult bodies being found partly adipoceratous after three to four months' submersion in water.

A case is recorded where the genitals of a child were converted into adipocere after seven months' burial in a dry soil. (*Case* 38.)

Casper records a case where the body was one-third adipoceratous after thirteen months, and a second after six and three-quarter months' burial.

Taylor states that he has found the fat of the breasts, etc., adipoceratous after one year's interment in earth..

Taylor records the case of a female buried in a damp grave, in which the lower part of the body (*i.e.*, the level to which the water had reached) was adipoceratous after fourteen months' interment.

Many cases are recorded where the change has been almost complete after two or three years' burial or submersion. (*Case* 45.)

It is evident, therefore, that *partial* saponification may be expected (the conditions being favourable) after three months' submersion in water, and after twelve months' burial in earth. But it must be admitted that this and any other rule is to be regarded as elastic, recorded cases showing the formation of adipocere at very much earlier periods under specially favourable conditions.

Lastly, it is worth recording that Billroth removed the fruit of an extra-uterine pregnancy, *perfectly* converted (bones and tissues) into adipocere, every part being entire. The woman was believed to have been pregnant two years before the operation was performed. ("*British Med. Journ.*," Dec. 4, 1880, p. 897.)

VI.—The appearances due to mummification.—The desiccation and mummification of bodies may be natural. Our dissecting-rooms frequently supply illustrations in old and bloodless subjects, where the bodies settle down into brown dry masses. Similar changes occur in dry, and in senile gangrene. Bodies exposed to a dry air and protected from moisture (as for example when buried in hot dry sand, or confined in air-tight metal coffins), are frequently preserved for long periods, and undergo complete natural dessication. Ogston records one case of the body of an infant that appeared perfectly mummified after concealment for one or two years in a dry stone wall, and a second case of a similar kind in the body of a child that had been shut up in a box for three months. In Case 38, where two children had been buried in a dry soil for seven months, partial mummification occurred in both cases. This case is complicated, however, by arsenic having been found in the bodies.

As regards the time that bodies may remain in this natural state of mummification, it is difficult to speak positively. ("A tanner will last you nine year.") But it is certain that a medical jurist would scarcely be justified in expressing any opinion as to the probable time of death in the case of a corpse that had undergone this change.

Mummification of the cord.—At periods varying from a few minutes to two days after the funis has been tied, it begins to shrivel. This change is termed *mummification*, and is really the death of the cord. The shrivelling commences at the ligature, and spreads towards the attachment of the cord with the body. Complete desiccation (when the cord assumes a flat, brownish, parchmenty, and more or less translucent appearance) is usually complete about the third day.

Artificial embalming is a process of exceedingly ancient date. Its history has been well told by Dr. Richardson. (See "*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1871, II., pp. 701, 717 and 761, and 1875, I., pp. 1 and 360.) Very varied were the processes adopted, and as varied were the reasons adduced for the operation. Cases are recorded where for fear of premature burial people have requested by will, that they should be embalmed before burial. Of methods, we give one or two illustrations.

(A.) *Hunter's* directions for embalming a body (adopted in the case of the Earl of Moira) were as follows:—("*Med. Times and Gazette*," December 9, 1871, p. 717.)

(*a*) Remove the whole of the abdominal and thoracic viscera and the brain in the manner ordinarily adopted at a post-mortem.

(*β*) After wiping out the various cavities with a cloth, wash them thoroughly with cold lime water. This done, the entire body is to be immersed in rectified spirit.

(*γ*) The intestines and bladder, after they have been emptied of their contents, are to be immersed first in lime water, and then in spirit. In the case of the other viscera, the blood is first of all to be well squeezed out, and Friar's balsam freely applied. After this all the parts are to be thoroughly covered with "spices." [A mixture of coarsely powdered cloves, nutmeg, cinnamon, pepper, frankincense, myrrh and alum.]

(δ) A bed of spices having been prepared in the abdominal cavity, the viscera are to be returned, and the belly, crammed with spices, secured with waxed twine.

(ε) The lungs are to be treated in a similar manner with Friar's balsam and spices, and the thoracic arteries and veins, &c., plugged with spices. The lungs are then to be replaced in the thorax, which after being well crammed with spices, is to be secured in a similar manner to the abdomen.

(ζ) The heart is to be emptied as far as possible of its blood, and saturated with Friar's balsam. It is then to be stuffed with spices, and finally preserved in an urn, which is also to be packed with spices and hermetically sealed.

(η) The brain is also to be treated with Friar's balsam and spices, and returned to its cavity, well packed in spices, and secured as usual.

(θ) The mouth, throat, and nostrils are to be packed with spices wetted with Friar's balsam.

(ι) The whole body having been sewn up and well secured, is to be washed with lime water. When dry each member separately is first of all to be rolled in a waxed cloth, and finally the whole body enveloped in one large waxed cloth.

(B.) *Richardson's* process, which he has described in great detail in the "*Medical Times and Gazette*" (Jan. 2 and April 3, 1875), is shortly as follows:—

(α) A current of air charged with ammonia is first of all to be injected into the vessels. The brachial or the femoral artery is to be used by preference for this purpose.

(β) A weak spirituous solution of zinc chloride* is now to be *slowly* and *gently* injected,† (*i.e.* avoiding the use of too much force, or of too much fluid,) lest any rupture of vessels within the cavities should occur. It may be known when the injection has been carried far enough, by the body assuming a white mottled appearance. The corpse (with the instrument in place) is then to be allowed to remain undisturbed for six to twelve hours.

* Saturate two pints of water with zinc chloride, and add to this one pint of alcohol and one of water.

† The injecting apparatus recommended is figured in the "*Medical Times and Gazette*," April 3, 1875, p. 36.

(γ) In order to plug the artery, and to prevent the escape of the liquid, four to six ounces of a saturated solution of silicate of soda are to be injected into the vessel before the instrument is removed. This done, the artery is to be tied, and the opening in the skin stitched up with silk.

(δ) Exit is to be provided for the gases in the abdomen and thorax, either by means of a hollow needle, or an aspirator syringe. Care must be taken that exit is also given to the gas present in the intestines.

(ε) This done, the abdominal and thoracic cavities are to be injected with what Richardson calls "zinc colloid," that is, zinc chloride dissolved in styptic colloid (20 grs. to ℥j).

(ζ) A hollow needle is then to be passed into the skull through the nose, and the cavity injected with zinc colloid by means of a syringe.

(η) The eyes and outer cavities are to be neatly closed with silk, the nostrils having been previously plugged with cotton wool saturated with zinc colloid, and the cavity of the mouth well brushed over with zinc colloid.

(θ) The body is now to be evenly swathed in a bandage soaked in zinc colloid or carbolic, the hands and face being left exposed. It is then to be clothed, the hair arranged, and placed in a well made shell.

Dr. Richardson gives numerous details as to how embalming may be carried out in cases where a post-mortem examination of the body has been performed. ("*Med. Times and Gaz.*," Jan. 30, 1875, p. 111.)

(C.) *Marini's* process of embalming ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1873, II., p. 292), employed in the preservation of Thalberg's body, is said to be by the deposition of insoluble precipitates in the tissues by electricity (!).

(D.) Another process, suggested by *Ambrose Paré*, is worth recording. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1878, I.) The vessels are first of all to be drenched with cold water, then with alcohol in order to dry them, then with ether in order to dissolve the fat, and finally with a strong solution of tannin, or one composed of glycerin (14 parts), sugar (2 parts), and potassic nitrate (1 part). The body is then to be dried in a current of warm air from which

all moisture has been removed by passing it over chloride of calcium.

Once more we refer to the two questions suggested by the various subjects we have been considering.

Question 1. *As to the signs of the reality of death.* This has been sufficiently answered and discussed.

Question 2. *As to the period of death from the inspection of a dead body.* Any opinion on this point must be founded upon the condition of all the organs, the mode of death, and the surroundings of the body, including in the term "*surroundings*" the season of the year, the heat and moisture to which it has been subjected, the quantity of clothing worn, the depth of the grave in which it has been interred, etc. With slight alterations, we adopt for these determinations the rules laid down by Casper, which are as follows (Vol. I., pp. 15—40):—

(A.) *Signs of death present in bodies dead at the longest from ten to twelve hours.*

1. Complete cessation of respiration and circulation.

2. Loss of lustre in the eye, immobility of the pupil, and loss of the normal tension of the globe.

3. Inability to produce reaction unless it be contraction of muscles by stimuli, which reaction only continues so long as the stimulus is applied.

4. Extreme pallor (ashy whiteness) of the body. [Exceptions: jaundice, the yellow discolorations arising from the action of poisons, tattoo-marks, the edges of ulcers, bruises and wounds inflicted during life, extravasations (as in purpura), &c.]

5. Coldness after from eight to twelve hours.

6. A state (strikingly shown in the globe of the eye) of general relaxation and flaccidity (unless in the case of the muscles rigor mortis be present), with flattening of the nates, calves, etc., when subjected to the pressure of their own weight.

7. Rigor mortis.

8. Hypostases in the dependent or posterior portions of the body and of the viscera.

(B.) *Signs of death present in bodies, dead from two to three days.*

In addition to the preceding signs, we find—

9. Coagulation of the blood.

10. Rigor mortis may be present or may have passed off, a condition of general flaccidity together with incipient signs of putrefaction being apparent.

(C.) *Signs of death in bodies dead for more than three days.*

Except in very rare cases, there will now be signs of *putrefaction.* Exceptions may occur during very cold weather, or in the case of bodies preserved in ice, also after certain modes of death (as alcohol poisoning, etc.), or where some method of hindering decomposition has been employed.

At later periods mummification or the formation of adipocere may be found.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

[NOTE.—*The name in italics after the reference is that of the reporter. At the end of each case the page or pages are stated where a reference to the case in the text will be found.*]

1. Ann. d'Hyg., 1832, I., 602.—*(M. Marc.)*—Male, adult. Death from apoplexy. The man was seen to lean his forehead on his hands, in which position he died and stiffened. His friends thought he was asleep, no period of muscular relaxation having occurred. (Page 64.)

2. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 65.—Female. Found dead, kneeling in an upright position, in the attitude of prayer. Death ascribed to apoplexy. (Page 64.)

3. Virchow's Archiv., Band LI.—*(Rossbach.)*—An account of how certain of the slain on the fields of Sedan and Beaumont retained the position and facial expression assumed by them before death. Thus it is recorded that a group of six soldiers were killed by a shell. In one case the head was carried off, but the face retained the expression of laughter. A second was found holding a cup from which he was drinking when the shot carried off his head. This condition lasted in some instances as long as twenty-four hours. Rossbach does not consider that in such cases the nervous centres must have been injured, nor that death was necessarily instantaneous. Rigor mortis, in his opinion, set in between the last moment of life and the first of death. (Page 64.)

[For similar cases see "*Lancet*," Sept. 3, 1870, p. 344, and *Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences*, Jan., 1870, Vol. lix. p. 87. (Dr. Brinton.)]

4. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 66.—*(Recorded by Devergie.)*—In this case the man was found with his arm and hand stiffened, the pistol being uplifted, and pointed towards that side of the head against which it had been fired. It was manifestly a case of suicide, the hand and arm having stiffened in the last attitude of life. (Pages 65, 66.)

5. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 66.—Death from Lime-Kiln Gases. The man was found dead in the attitude of sleep. The left arm was raised, supporting the head, whilst the right arm was semiflexed on the abdomen. (Page 65.)

6. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 66.—(Case of Lord William Russell, murdered by Courvoisier, 1840.) The position after death in this case indicated that a struggle had occurred as the last act of life. (Pages 65, 66.)

7. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 66.—The ice broke whilst a young man was skating. For a time he supported himself by resting with both elbows on the sound ice surrounding the broken portion, the lower part of his body only at this time being submerged. Eventually the ice on which he rested gave way, and he fell into the water and was drowned. The following day the body was recovered. The arms were found bent, and in the precise position in which he had rested on the ice the previous day. The position of his legs further indicated that he had exerted himself powerfully during the last moments of life to keep his head above water. (Page 64.)

8. R. v. Ellison.—*(Bodmin Assizes*, 1845.)—Hairs (gray and brown), corresponding in all respects to the hair of the prisoner, were found tightly grasped in the hands of the murdered woman. (Page 67.)

9. Ann. d'Hyg., 1829, I., 465.—*(Dr. Marc.)*—A snuff-box was found powerfully grasped in the hands of the murdered woman. (Pages 65, 67.)

10. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 65.—Male. After death, a loaded pistol was found firmly grasped in one hand, and a second pistol, lately discharged, in the other. (Pages 65, 66, 68.)

11. R. v. Gardner.—*(C.C.C., Oct.*, 1862.)—(See Case 69.)—The victim (a woman) died from a cut throat. After death a table-knife was found lying loosely in her right hand, but the back of the blade was towards the palm, and the weapon in the direction of the length of the body. It was shown that the chief cut could not have been self-inflicted with the *right* hand. [This was probably a case of murder.] (Pages 65, 68.)

12. R. v. Heywood.—*(Liverpool Assizes*, 1855.)—Female found dead with her throat cut. A razor, with one small blood spot only upon it, was found *loosely* held in the right hand. There was no blood on the hands, arms, or chest. The arms were folded across the chest, and *the back* of the razor was towards the person of the deceased. The wound was one which, if self-inflicted, must probably have been made by a left-handed person, its direction being from right to left. The jugulars, carotids, and wind-pipe were severed. (Pages 65, 68.)

13. R. v. Saville, 1844.—The prisoner was tried for murdering his wife, by cutting her throat. In the deceased woman's hand was found a razor, but it appeared to be very loosely grasped. There was no blood on the hand holding the razor. (The razor in this case had probably been placed in the hands of the woman after death.) (Pages 65, 68.)

14. Case of Robert Reed.—*(Edinburgh*, 1855.)—The prisoner was tried for the murder of his wife. In this case the remarkable attitude in which the body was found after death, and its condition of rigidity, gave rise to

conflicting opinions. (For a detailed account see "*Taylor's Med. Juris.*," I., p. 71.) Verdict, "Not proven." (Page 65.)

[For similar cases where persons retained after death the position assumed by them during life, see Ogston, page 377.]

15. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 55.—(*Dr. Chowne.*)—A stillborn. The medical man saw the child three-quarters of an hour (during a part of which time it had been in a warm bath) after its birth. He found it quite rigid. (Pages 63, 71.)

16. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 55.—(*Mr. Parkinson.*)—(Page 71.)

Case 1. An infant. Died during labour. Rigor mortis well marked the next day.

Case 2. The body of a dead child delivered by craniotomy. Exhibited strong rigor mortis.

17. British Med. Journal, October 17, 1874, p. 493.—(*Dr. Grigg.*)—Rigor mortis in an infant at birth. The child was certainly alive two hours before labour commenced, and seven hours before it was born. Hæmorrhage was the probable cause of its death. (Page 71.)

[A similar case is recorded in the same Journal, pp. 551 and 707 (Dr. Young).]

18. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 55.—(*Dr. Handyside.*)—Adult. Rigor mortis commenced in one and a-half hours after death from suicidal cut throat, and whilst the body was warm. (Pages 59, 63.)

19. Med. Gazette, Vol. 38, p. 351.—Four labourers killed by lightning. The one who suffered most wore a goat skin. The body exhibited well-marked rigidity after three hours. (Page 72.)

[See also "*Med. Gazette*," Vol. xlvii., p. 844, for a case of death from lightning, followed in twenty-eight hours by rigor mortis.]

20. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 57.—(From "*Med. Critic*," Jan. 1863.)—(*Dr. Snow.*)—Three days after death the face of the corpse suddenly became red and suffused. (Page 86.)

[Similar case reported as having occurred in Dr. Taylor's personal experience.]

21. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 90.—Trial of Mrs. Keir and her son for the murder of Mr. Keir. The charge was murder by strangulation, the chief evidence in support being a broad blue mark on the fore part of the neck. The question was whether the mark was a post-mortem hypostasis or the result of violence. The prisoners were found guilty. (Page 77.)

22. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 380.—(Edinburgh, 1808.)—In this case

cadaveric lividities were mistaken for bruises. The accused was acquitted on medical evidence. (Page 77.)

23. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 91.—Male, æt. 33. Sudden death from morbus cordis. The man suffered from general dropsy. Eighteen hours after death various sized patches of discoloration were discovered on the dependent portions of the body, but the parts which had been subjected to actual pressure were white. The patches exhibited zones of different colours, such as commonly occur in a bruise inflicted during life. Further, on cutting into these patches, the layers of the skin and of the tissues beneath were found to be congested. (Pages 78, 79.)

[Note. The man was dropsical.]

24. Edinburgh Med. Journ., Vol. LVIII., p. 497.—(*Sir H. Marsh.*) —An evolution of light from the face stated to have occurred shortly before death. (Page 102.)

25. Dublin Medical Press, Jan. 15, 1840. — (*Drs. Donovan and Stokes.*) — Phosphorescence of face recorded as occurring after death. (Page 102.)

26. Edinburgh Med. Journ., Vol. LXVI., p. 285.—(*Dr. H. McCormack.*)—Child, æt. 16 months, suffering from dentition. The skin of the hips was noticed to be luminous. There was no odour of phosphorus, and no application had been made to the skin to account for the luminosity. (Page 102.)

27. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 98.—Phosphorescence of a partially dissected body. (Page 102.)

28. R. v. Palmer (1856.) — Poisoning by antimony. The body, which was exhumed after twelve months' interment, was in a good state of preservation. The poison had penetrated to the uterus and ovaries. (Page 91.)

29. Case of Dr. Parkman.—In this case Dr. Webster attempted, but failed, to dispose of Parkman's body by chemical reagents. (See Index.) (Page 92.)

30. R. v. Manning and Wife—Tried for the murder of O'Connor. —(*C. C. C., Oct.*, 1849.)—In order to destroy the body the prisoners poured over it 1½ pints of oil of vitriol, and subsequently covered it with fresh burnt lime. The body nevertheless was afterwards found in a state of good preservation. (Page 92.)

[See also a case where lime retarded putrefaction, reported by Taylor, I., p. 103.]

31. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 111.—

a. Male. Putrefaction set in after thirty-eight hours in a case of death from an accident. (September, 1855.) (Page 92.)

b. Male. Putrefaction set in after forty-eight hours in a case of death from fractured ribs. (September, 1855.) (Page 92.)

c. Male. An absence of putrefaction after forty-four hours in a case of death from phthisis. (September, 1855.) (Page 91.)

d. Male, æt. 26. Advanced putrefaction sixteen hours after death from typhoid (perforation of the ileum). (Weather cold and moist. November, 1855.) (Page 91.)

e. Male (very plethoric). Advanced putrefaction after thirteen hours. Death had been the result of accident. (November, 1864.) (Page 92.)

f. Male, æt. 35. Death from pistol shot; lived six days. Slight rigidity after thirteen hours, when the internal decomposition was found to be advanced. (Weather cold and moist. December, 1854.) (Pages 74, 92.)

g. Male, æt. 50. Death occurred on the fourth day after an accident accompanied by loss of blood. Twenty hours after death the body was so decomposed that the face could scarcely be recognised. Putrefaction was very advanced both externally and internally. (Weather frosty. December, 1860.) (Pages 85, 92.)

h. **Med. Gaz., 1850, Vol. XLV., p. 17.**—Male, æt. 39. Sudden death. The patient was corpulent and intemperate. After sixteen hours, putrefaction was found to be very advanced. After seventeen hours the gas issued in jets from every part of the skin when punctured. It was very offensive, and exploded when a light was applied. The gas did not contain H_2S or PH_3, but burnt like CH_4. When the skin of the scrotum was pricked, the gas burnt in a jet like C_2H_4 for about a minute. (October, 1849) (Pages 83, 91.)

i. **Edinburgh Monthly Journal, Vol. LVIII., p. 501.**—Male: adult. Had been ill some days before death. After eight hours the body exhibited a condition of advanced putrefaction. The gas generated was inflammable, and burnt with a bluish flame. (Pages 83, 91.)

32. Beck's Med. Juris., Vol. II., p. 45.—(Case of Desha tried for the murder of Francis Baker.) Desha was seen with the deceased six days previously to his body (which then had a cut on the throat) being discovered. There was no appearance of putrefaction about the body at the time it was found, but it was a little stiff. It was placed in a warm room, and putrefaction commenced two days afterwards. On this day the throat wounds bled, and the face and abdomen became swollen (November, 1824).

It is recorded that the hair had grown. The prisoner was found guilty.

Question—Was the state of non-putrefaction consistent with the prisoner having committed the crime six days previously? [Yes.] (Pages 88, 99.)

33. The Trial of Mrs. Byrne for the murder of her husband.—(*Dublin, Aug.*, 1842.)—("The Trial of Mrs. Ellen Byrne, for the Murder of Mr. Augustine Byrne, specially reported by T. R. Dunckley," Dublin, 1842.)—"In August, 1842, Mrs. Ellen Byrne was tried at the Commission Court, Dublin, for the murder of her husband, Augustine Byrne, by strangulation, suffocation, or other violence. The prisoner and deceased, who were in a respectable condition of life, were in the habit of drinking to excess. On this occasion they had retired to their bedroom, and about four days after the deceased had been last seen alive, and eight days after they had been in the room, the body of the husband was found dead on the bed, while the wife was in the room. She professed not to know that her husband was dead, and sent for a medical man. From his evidence it appeared that when he first saw the body on Saturday evening (July 9th), it was so much decomposed, that he was led to believe the deceased had been dead at least four or five days. The face and neck were black, and decomposition had gone on to such a degree in these parts, as to obliterate, it was believed, any marks of violence that might have been there at the time of death. The right eye protruded, and the tongue projected between the teeth to about half an inch; the ears were black, the lips were swollen, and the fingers were contracted. There was a frothy liquid issuing from the mouth and nostrils in bubbles, and living larvæ were seen in these parts. The whole of the body was greatly swollen, discoloured, and passing rapidly into a state of decomposition. When first seen deceased was lying on his face. There was a faint, heavy smell in the room. An inspection made the next day revealed the fact that putrefaction had taken place in all parts: but the head and neck were most decomposed; the black colour of the skin appeared to decline as it got down to the lower part of the neck. Internally, the heart was empty, and the vessels of the brain were perfectly empty: the blood was fluid. Fæculent matter had been discharged from the bowels before death.

"There were two medical questions in this case, on which the guilt of the prisoner rested: 1. When did the deceased die? and, 2. Was death to be ascribed to violent or natural causes? On Friday, July 1, eight days before his body was found, deceased had retired to his bedroom with his wife, and during that time a large quantity of spirits had been taken to the room, and consumed by him, by his wife, or by both together. On Sunday, the 3rd, the voice of deceased was heard, as if he and his wife were quarrelling. On Monday they were not seen. On Tuesday (July 5th) a man-servant deposed that he was called upstairs by the deceased, who spoke to him, and gave him half-a-crown to fetch whisky. He then heard deceased's voice,

and saw his bare arm through the partly-opened door; but from the position in which he was placed, he could not see the whole of deceased's body. After this date, deceased was neither seen nor heard—he was found dead on the evening of Saturday (July 9th), his body being then in the highly decomposed state above described. On Wednesday (July 6th), prisoner left the bedroom for a short time, and closed the door. On Thursday (July 7th), and Friday (July 8th), she was seen at the door of the bedroom by the man-servant, and on the latter day by her maid-servant, and she was then quite sober, and spoke to them as usual. On Saturday (July 9th), at ten o'clock in the morning, she ordered the servant to bring up *two* cups of tea. Between six and eight o'clock on the evening of that day, she suddenly called to one of her sons, to turn the deceased on his back. On entering the bedroom, he found deceased dead, and his body as above described. As the prisoner had been in the bedroom alone with deceased, either living or dead, from the Tuesday when he was last seen until the Saturday, she must, it was alleged, have been cognizant of his death, if it had not been directly caused by some act on her part. The prisoner made two statements: first, that she slept in the bed on Thursday and Friday, and that deceased died on Friday. She subsequently stated that he died on Saturday, the day on which the body was discovered.

"From the state of decomposition of the body, two of the medical witnesses for the prosecution assigned a period of at least four or five days during which deceased must have been dead. Two declined to give an opinion as to the number of days, and one (the late Dr. Geoghegan) stated his belief that such changes might take place in from twenty-eight to thirty hours. A medical witness called for the defence deposed that he had seen a body as much decomposed twenty-four hours after death.

"On referring to cases elsewhere related, it will be perceived that the shorter period assigned by these two witnesses—one for the prosecution and the other for the defence—is quite within the limits assigned by experience, although instances of such rapid putrefaction are not common.

"In this case, however, it must be remembered that the dead body was shut up in a close room, at the hottest period of the year, and the circumstances were therefore most favourable to the process. Admitting that this was an exceptional instance of rapid decomposition, the changes described by the witnesses might have occurred within twenty hours of the time at which the body was discovered, thus carrying the death to the night of Friday the 8th, at the time when prisoner was, according to her statement, in bed with the deceased.

"The other question, as to the cause of death, gave rise to a conflict of opinion. On the one hand, it was alleged that the appearances in the body, *i. e.*, the black and decomposed condition of the head and neck, compared with other parts, the protrusion of one eye from its socket, and the projection of the tongue between the lips, as well as the absence of any natural cause of death, were medical proofs that deceased had died by strangula-

tion, and not by any disease or accident. On the other hand, it was asserted that the deceased might have been accidentally suffocated while helplessly intoxicated, by falling with his mouth on the pillow, or that he might have been carried off by a sudden attack of apoplexy or epilepsy. The discoloration of the face, the protrusion of the eye and tongue, and the discharge of fæces, might be accounted for by his dying during a convulsive struggle; while the two supposed indications of strangling afforded by the eye and tongue, might be simply the result of the advanced state of decomposition in which the body was found. All the witnesses were agreed that there were no marks on the neck to indicate death by strangulation; but this want of physical evidence was accounted for, by some of them, on the theory that all such marks would be completely obliterated by putrefaction. The heart contained no blood, and the vessels of the brain were empty; the blood in the body was fluid and dark coloured. The state of the lungs is not mentioned, nor the condition of the larynx and air-passages, so that it is left uncertain whether any mechanical cause of obstruction existed in these parts. The emptiness of the heart, which was adverse to the theory of death by strangulation (asphyxia), was referred to the mechanical effect of gaseous putrefaction on the organ. The emptiness of the brain was left unexplained. It was inferred by most of the witnesses for the prosecution that the marks of manual strangulation on the neck externally, and the usual appearances of asphyxia internally, had existed at the time of death, and that these appearances had been destroyed by putrefaction. Those who adopted this view contended that the protruded eye and tongue were conditions which had resulted from strangulation alone, and that they could not be produced or removed by rapid putrefaction.

"The guilt of the prisoner rested chiefly on these two points. The facts showed, even allowing no more than twenty hours to have elapsed between death and the discovery of the body, the prisoner must have been cognizant of the death; and, unless hopelessly insensible from drink, which appears to have been disproved by the evidence, she would, it was suggested, if innocent, have given an alarm. She ultimately called to her son, and no reason can be assigned why she did not call for assistance earlier. It was impossible to assume that she was speculating on the rapid decomposition of the body, and watching for the stage when marks of violence would be obliterated. No motive could be assigned for the murder, nor for her remaining shut up in the same room with her husband, as it was alleged, for four or five days. Under these circumstances, with the admission by some of the scientific witnesses that the protrusion of the eye and tongue might have been caused by putrefaction, the jury returned a verdict of not guilty. There was nothing to exclude the supposition that the deceased might have died in a convulsive fit from epilepsy, as a result of excessive drinking. In any case, it was obvious that the body had undergone rapid putrefaction. The greater decomposition observed in the head and neck might have arisen from the congestion of blood in the superficial vessels.

As other causes besides manual violence may produce a congestion of the head and neck, the blackening of these parts in a highly decomposed body furnished no medical evidence of homicide. The protrusion of the eye and tongue did not strengthen the theory of strangulation, since it was properly admitted by some of the medical witnesses that these conditions were consistent with the effects of putrefaction in an advanced stage. There was, therefore, no evidence of a medical nature to show that deceased had died by violence; and, instead of drawing the inference that such evidence had existed and had been destroyed by putrefaction, it would have been safer to have said that the highly decomposed state of the body prevented any correct medical opinion from being formed. No opinion went the length of affirming that death was necessarily produced by violence; and the jury were properly informed by the learned judge (Baron Pennefather) that they were not to convict the prisoner on probability, however strong, or on a mere preponderance of medical opinion. (Pages 84, 85, 86, 99, 100, 109.)

[The above account of this remarkable case, and the remarks thereupon, are quoted from "*Taylor's Med. Juris.*," *I.*, p. 115.]

34. Trial of R. v. Mahaig.—(*Kingston Winter Assizes*, 1863.)—The following account of this case is quoted from "*Taylor's Med. Juris.*," p. 118:—"The body of a woman was found dead in a room, in an advanced state of putrefaction. The deceased and her lover, a soldier, had retired to a bedroom some days before, and had kept themselves there secluded: the soldier was found with his throat severely cut. This man was charged with the murder of the deceased, by strangling her with a rope, and the medical questions to be solved were: How long had she been dead? and, Did she die from strangulation, or any other cause? The medical evidence showed, that when the deceased was first discovered, on Friday, November 6th, at 6.30 A.M., she was lying on her back in bed, her body being covered with clothes as usual, the head and neck only being exposed. There was a pillow lying loosely over the face. There was no rigidity, and the hands were not clenched. The upper part of the body, including head, neck, and shoulders, was very much decomposed. The skin of the face was so black that the features could not be described. The tongue was protruded and swollen. The lips were everted and blown up with gas. Gases escaped from between the tongue and lips with a slight hissing sound. The abdomen was enormously extended with gas, and at the lower part much discoloured. On opening the cavity the intestines protruded. The liver was in a putrefied state. On cutting into the skin of the chest a large quantity of air escaped; the lungs were found collapsed, and the heart was empty and contracted. Owing to the putrefied condition of the body, the head was not examined. From the blackened and decomposed state of the upper part of the body, the medical witness formed the opinion that death had been caused by violence, and he inferred that deceased must have been dead for some time.

"According to the evidence, the prisoner and deceased took the bedroom as a lodging at a public-house on Tuesday, November 3. The deceased was seen on that night about nine o'clock, as well as the following morning, Wednesday, November 4. On the last occasion the landlady, who took the breakfast to the door of the room, saw her face in bed. She was lying still, and, as she did not speak, the witness could not say whether she was then living or dead. It was observed, however, that of the breakfasts taken up, which had been ordered for two the previous evening, only one was eaten. From that time deceased was not seen alive. The prisoner came down stairs on Thursday morning, November 5, at nine o'clock. There was nothing unusual in his appearance or manner. He asked to borrow a razor to shave himself, but there was no razor in the house. Breakfasts were not taken up that morning; and the following morning, Friday, November 6, as neither appeared, the room was entered, and the body of deceased was then found in the state described. The prisoner was lying on the bed with his throat severely cut: the wound had obviously been inflicted some hours, and had bled a great deal.

"From the time deceased was last seen living (on Tuesday night), about sixty hours had elapsed. Considering that the weather was close and damp, and the body shut up in a small room, there was ample time for the putrefactive changes described, to have taken place; although such a degree of putrefaction is rarely seen until after the lapse of three or four days in warm damp weather. It was therefore an exceptional instance of rapid decomposition, like those elsewhere described. As the prisoner alone was in the room with the deceased, he must have been cognizant of her death; and yet he gave no alarm. His statement was, that they had both resolved to die; that they had purchased poison on Tuesday, the 3rd, and took it on the evening of that day, and that deceased died in his arms. In the afternoon, having left the room for a short time, he found on his return a cord round her neck, which he removed. The highly-decomposed condition of the body was consistent with his statements; for although one day might be sufficient for such changes, they are seldom witnessed in less than two days. This would place the death of the deceased on the night of Tuesday.

"The main question, however, was this: Had the deceased been strangled by the prisoner on that night, or did she die from any other cause? The putrefied condition of the body was consistent with either hypothesis, and it was a strong circumstance against him that he had remained in the room with the dead body. There was, however, an entire absence of motive for the alleged murder. The prisoner and deceased had been apparently happy together. No quarrelling or struggling was heard at any time by the people of the house. There were no marks of violence on her person indicative of struggling or resistance. It was proved, as prisoner had stated, that the deceased had, on the 3rd November, purchased at a druggist's, under a false pretence, a threepenny packet of Butler's vermin killer. This contains about one grain of strychnia, mixed with soot and flour; and the

paper wrapper of this packet, with the empty bag which had contained the poison, was found in the prisoner's possession. Several letters written by the prisoner, one apparently at the dictation or with the cognizance of deceased, referred to their mutual intention to destroy themselves; and another, dated November 4, stated that deceased had taken poison, and had died in his arms. With these facts there was strong reason to believe that the deceased had really taken the poison which she herself had purchased, and had died from its effects. Assuming that muscular irritability had been exhausted by violent tetanic convulsions before death, and that the deceased had died in one of these convulsive fits with great congestion of the head, the rapid putrefaction and the blackening of the features from the decomposed blood in the vessels would then be explained. The empty and contracted state of the heart was also consistent with this view. The stomach was examined chemically by the medical gentleman who was first called in to see the deceased. He found it empty, containing only mucus with some black particles, the nature of which could not be defined. It was at first thought that it contained strychnia, but on making an analysis of the remainder of the stomach and the spirit in which it had been preserved, I (Dr. Taylor) found that it contained no strychnia, and that the chemical results which had led to this conclusion were owing to the colouring action of sulphuric acid on bichromate of potash in contact with organic matter? In the state in which the stomach was brought to me (Dr. Taylor), cut into two portions and macerated in spirit, it was impossible to determine whether it had originally contained starch or soot (the substances with which the strychnia in the purchased powder was mixed), or gin (the liquid in which the prisoner said the deceased had taken the poison). This negative result did not show that the deceased could not have died from the effects of a small dose of strychnia (half a grain) such as would be contained in one-half of the packet which she purchased: for such a quantity might have been readily removed by absorption, especially as the poison was taken on an empty stomach? The theory adopted by the medical gentlemen who examined the body, was that deceased had probably taken strychnia, but that, before the poison had had time to operate fatally, she had been strangled by the prisoner by means of a rope placed round her neck. This, in their judgment, would account for the contracted and empty state of the heart and lungs: they assumed that as the strychnia was in the system, it would prevent that accumulation of blood in these organs which is considered to be characteristic of death by asphyxia. Another suggestion was, that assuming strychnia not to have been taken by deceased, the empty condition of the heart and lungs might be accounted for by the effect of gaseous putrefaction in the abdomen. A few ounces of bloody serum were found in the cavity of the chest, but no blood was present in the heart or great vessels connected with it.

"As the head was not examined, and the internal appearances of the chest did not support the theory of death by strangulation, it was sought

to establish this view by the external appearances. Here, however, the same difficulty arose as in the preceding case. The advanced state of decomposition in the head and neck rendered the medical conclusions, to say the least, unsafe. The facts relied upon, to show that deceased had died from strangulation were,—1. The black and decomposed state of the head and neck, compared with other parts of the body. 2. Certain marks found on the neck, at the upper part, and chiefly on the left side. 3. The peculiarly moist condition of the head and upper part of the neck, and the drier appearance of the lower part, near the chest. 4. The enormous distension of the head, and the protrusion of the tongue between the lips.

"The first and third reasons assigned indicate, not the cause of death, whether by violence, disease, or poison; but simply an advanced stage of the putrefactive process, in a case in which death had taken place suddenly and the conditions were favourable to putrefaction. The surgeon who first inspected the body found, on the day following its discovery, three marks on the neck, corresponding to three similar marks at the back part. There was no abrasion of the cuticle in front, nor any indentation or depression, but at the back the cuticle was peeling off as the result of putrefaction, and serum exuded from it. On removing the integuments there was no appearance of escape or coagulation of blood beneath; and this is generally found in death from strangulation. The cellular tissue was much blown up with air (the gases of putrefaction). At the adjourned inquest before the coroner, while the facts were recent, the witness had thus described the appearances on the neck: 'On the external surface of the neck there were two or three *indistinct* marks, most distinct on the left side. On removing the skin, there was not the least escape of blood, but here and there the muscular tissue was more discoloured than the remainder.' Another witness, associated with this gentleman, who saw the body twenty-four hours later, described the marks as consisting of two or three lines of dark discolouration. There were no signs of violence beneath the marks, but the structures were of a darker colour below. He further stated that there was much blood beneath the skin from the chin to the chest; and on the arms there were apple-green streaks from putrefaction in the course of the blood-vessels. The protrusion of the tongue was referred by both, not to putrefaction, but to mechanical pressure on the neck as a result of strangulation.

"A long clothes-line was found in the room, under the bed. This was proved to belong to the landlady, who stated that it had been lying a long time in the room before it was let to the prisoner and deceased. On it was one small spot of coagulated blood, as if from a wound, and some long female hairs. When these were compared with some taken from deceased's head, there was found to be no resemblance. It was suggested for the prosecution, that this rope had been employed by the prisoner as the instrument of murder.

"Dr. Taylor's evidence on this part of the case, the cause of death, was to the effect that, as the deceased was not seen in the act of dying, any medical

opinion of the cause of death must be speculative; that there was nothing inconsistent with death from strychnia as alleged by the prisoner, while there were no medical facts on which the hypothesis of death from strangulation could be safely based. The internal appearances, so far as they were observed, were more consistent with death from strychnia, than with death by strangulation, a fact admitted by the two medical gentlemen who ascribed death to homicidal strangulation; that the non-detection of strychnia in the body was not inconsistent with the fact that a small but fatal dose had been taken by deceased (?); that a rigid state of the limbs in a dead body would not be found where putrefaction had advanced to such a degree as in this case. Further, the external appearances did not prove that violence sufficient to cause death by strangulation had been applied to the neck of the deceased. The marks of discolouration on the neck, with the protrusion of the tongue, might have arisen from extreme putrefactive changes. Had they been produced by the application of a cord, such a degree of violence as would have caused the tongue to protrude would have produced indentation and depression of the soft parts of the neck, with an effusion of blood in the course of the depression, and a ruffling or abrasion of the skin. There was no protrusion of the eyes; the tongue was not indented or bitten by the teeth, and the hands were not clenched as in death by violent strangulation.

"It was suggested by counsel that strangulation might have been produced by other and less violent means than by the use of the rope, and the slight appearances thereby produced might have been obliterated by putrefaction. It was admitted that this might happen, but there were no medical facts on which such an opinion could be based. The appearances were all consistent with putrefaction in an advanced stage, without resorting to the assumption that any violence whatever, sufficient to cause death, had been done to the neck. In the defence, it was urged that the prisoner and deceased had agreed jointly to take away their own lives: this was proved by the letters and their conduct. Deceased herself had purchased poison for this purpose, and had taken it, according to the prisoner's statement, on the evening of the day on which she procured it. Everything in the case was consistent with the theory of voluntary suicide, and of an attempted suicide by the prisoner in a state of despair. The powder containing the poison had disappeared, while the paper bag in which it was sold remained.

"In his charge to the jury, the learned judge observed that the great question for them to decide was whether the prisoner had any part in the death of the deceased. If they were of opinion that her death was caused by the rope, and by his act, then their verdict must of course be wilful murder. If they thought that death was caused by poison, then they would have to consider whether the deceased took the poison without any participation on his part, in aiding and abetting her act; and if she did, then they must acquit him. But if, in their judgment, the two agreed together to take poison, and took it together, and she died and he survived, then their verdict

must be also wilful murder. The jury adopted this view, and found that the prisoner was guilty as an accessory before the fact, *i.e.*, that he was not guilty of murder by strangulation, but that he aided and abetted deceased in the voluntary act of self-murder." (Pages 85, 86, 100.)

34*. Indian Medical Gazette, Jan. 1, 1875, p. 4.—(*Dr. Harvey.*)—

(*a.*) Male, æt. 45. A fracture of the sternum without any appearance of union bony or otherwise, and rupture of the intercostal muscles with extensive extravasation of blood at the seat of fracture, were clearly made out at the post-mortem on a body far advanced in decomposition. The appearances indicated violence before death, and moreover that the person did not long survive the injuries inflicted.

(*β.*) A comminuted fracture of the skull discovered in an exhumed and exceedingly putrid body. Prisoner convicted.

(*γ.*) A fractured skull with a penetrating wound of the abdomen clearly made out in "an enormously bloated and maggot-eaten body."

(*δ.*) Identity established in a body almost skeletonised, by the remains of a cartilaginous tumour of the neck.

(*ε.*) Identity determined from mere fragments of what had been a boy (æt. 8) by the hair on the back of the head and the absence of the left lateral incisors. Prisoner convicted. (Page 110.)

35. Holliss v. Turner.—(*Before V. C. Wood*, 1866.)—An attempt in this case was made to prove the death of one William Turner. A body was taken out of the river Wey ten days after the disappearance of a man named Etherington, and this body was sworn to as his corpse by his two sons, others stating that they believed it to be the body of William Turner. The body was buried as that of Etherington. Some months afterwards the man Etherington turned up. The V.C. held that the evidence adduced satisfied him that the corpse buried as Etherington was the body of William Turner. (Pages 96, 99.)

36. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 127.—(*Mr. Eager, of Guildford.*)—Male, æt. 70. This was a case of death by drowning. When the body was recovered it had probably been submerged for twenty-nine days (viz., during a part of January and February). The head, neck, and chest were covered with mud. The face and countenance were so perfectly preserved (although the skin was somewhat darkened in colour) that there was no difficulty in its identification. There was no tumefaction. The skin of the hands and feet was thickened, white, and corrugated, but firmly adherent to the flesh. (Pages 95, 96, 97.)

37. Lancet, Sept. 30, 1876, p. 475.—Body very little decayed after burial for six years. (Page 93.)

38. Brit. Med. Journ., Dec. 14, 1872, p. 650.—(*Mr. Mansar.*)—

Description of the appearances presented by two children, (1) æt. 10 years, (2) æt. 14 months, after burial for seven months in a dry soil. [Arsenic was found, on analysis in the bodies.]

In the elder child the soft parts of the nose had disappeared, the rest of the face being dry, and of a dark brown colour. The brain was a mere pulp, and traces only of the eyes remained. The skin of the chest, thighs, and abdomen was of a reddish-brown colour and mummified. The genitals were converted into adipocere. The sex was not distinguishable.

The face of the younger child was better preserved than that of the elder, but the soft parts of the nose had quite disappeared. In other respects the appearances presented by the two bodies were alike.

In both cases the lungs were more decomposed than any of the viscera. The heart of the younger child was in a good state of preservation. (Pages 93, 104, 107, 108, 109, 114, 115.)

39. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 128.—*(Mr. Harris, of Redruth.)*—Male, æt. 24. The body was recovered from the shaft of a mine, after having laid in 30 fathoms of water for twenty-six years (1828—1854). All the soft parts (excepting a small piece of fatty substance) were destroyed. The bones were firm and well preserved, but detached, and of a brown or black colour. The skull was full of a brown soft substance, which had no smell. (Pages 95, 98.)

[The remains were identified by the brother of the deceased, chiefly by the boots and buttons, of which remains were found.]

40. British Med. Journ., April 3, 1875.—Remains of a skull and other adult bones recovered near Laurencekirk, and supposed to belong to a man that had been boiled alive near the spot in 1430. [N.B.—There seems to have been no good reason for this supposition.]

41. British Med. Journ., July 6, 1878.—Human remains found in a railway excavation at Ardrossan. The skull was injured during removal. (Page 100.)

42. British Med. Journ., Aug. 31, 1878.—Human remains found at Wigtown.

43. British Med. Journ., Sept. 18, 1875.—Account of certain coffins found intact, after thirty years' burial, at Greenwich. The bodies in some of the coffins were well preserved, the embroidery in one case being as unruffled and complete as though it had just come from the hands of the dressmaker. (Page 93.)

44. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 128, also **Beck's, Med. Juris., (5th edit.), p. 599.**—*(Case tried at Warwick,* 1805.)—The body of a man was

recovered from the water (the case being manifestly one of suicide) five weeks and four days after he had left his home. A Commission of Bankruptcy had been taken out a few days *after* he was first missed. The question arose in this case—was the man drowned *before*, or *after*, the date of issuing the commission? because if it was *after*, the commission was void in law, and the property could not be seized.

Appearance of body.—The face was covered with a muddy slime. Putrefaction set in so rapidly that forty-eight hours after its recovery identification was impossible. The hair of the head could be separated from the scalp by a slight pull. The muscles of the buttock were adipoceratous. The other parts were firm and white. The clothes generally were well preserved, excepting the shirt and neckcloth, which had become rotten.

Question.—Did he drown himself on the day he left his house (*i.e.*, before the commission was issued) or at a *later* period (*i.e.*, after it was issued)?

The jury decided that the deceased was dead when the commission was issued. The bankruptcy, therefore, was superseded. (Pages 96, 114.)

45. Med. Press and Circular, Sept. 30, 1874, p. 290.—Female. Body recovered after being embedded in the bed of the Thames for two or three years. It was completely converted into adipocere, the whole of the internal organs being one solid mass, having the appearance of hard discoloured wax. One leg was wanting. The head was found resting on the left hand. (Page 115.)

46. Lancet, 1873, I., pp. 583 and 498.—*(Pickering Murder.)*—In this case the body, after four months' interment in a dry place at the foot of a stick-stack, was found converted into adipocere. The ligaments of the wrist were incapable of supporting the weight of the trunk. Probably the rapidity of the conversion of the body into adipocere was due to the excessive rain that had occurred since the burial. Some hair was found grasped in one of the hands. (Pages 67, 114.)

47. Lancet, June 7, 1873, p. 817.—Account of human remains found near Omagh in a peat bog, about two feet from the surface. The body was partly covered over with a piece of oak. The structures were perfectly free from odour, and in a good state of preservation, as if tanned. They were of a black colour, and as thick as buckskin. No bone of any kind was discovered. The nails, œsophagus, and mesentery were also well preserved. It is believed that the remains may have been in the bog for a century or more. (Pages 94, 95.)

48. Lancet, June 28 and Aug. 2, 1873, p. 917.—Human remains (female), with shreds of sackcloth, found near the village of Dervock, county Antrim, in a turf bank, ten feet from the surface. The tanned skin was well preserved, except that on the hands and head. The bones had lost all

their solidity (except the carpal and metacarpal bones) whilst some of the shafts of the bones had altogether disappeared. Some of the teeth were found *in situ*, but they crumbled to dust as soon as touched. The integuments of the face, the ears, tongue, and pharynx, the tendons of the joints, more especially those of the wrist and arch of the foot, were perfect. A few hairs of a light reddish colour were found at the back of the ear. The cerebral membranes and a small quantity of cerebral substance was also recovered, and appeared hard, as if it had been steeped in an acid. (Page 95.)

49. Casper, Vol. I., p. 33.—Examination, forty-eight hours after death, of the bodies of fourteen men (ages 24 to 30), all of whom had met the same death (from the rifle) and died at the same time. In no case did the signs of putrefaction found in one, resemble those found in another. (Page 99.)

50. Casper, Vol. I., p. 33.—The bodies of two people (æt. 50 and 60), suffocated at the same time by carbonic oxide, were examined on the fourth day after death. The body of the man (who was thin) was putrid, whilst that of his wife (who was stout) was quite fresh. (Page 99.)

51. Casper, Vol. I., p. 52.—Inspection of a human fœtus that had been buried for about a year in moist garden soil. It was quite black, and the head had dropped off. The sex externally was not recognisable, but the uterus was in a state of perfect preservation, and in its proper position. The muscles of the trunk and extremities were converted into adipocere. (Pages 108, 109.)

[At page 41 (Casper) a case is mentioned where a fœtus was found changed into adipocere after seven months' burial in a garden.]

52. Casper, Vol. I., p. 53.—A girl, drowned in a privy, was recovered after an interval of nine months. The skull, lower jaw, and the greater part of the lower extremities, were bare, the connecting ligaments of the joints being partly separated. The uterus, however, was well preserved, and the medical jurist (Casper) was able to say that it was of virgin size, and unimpregnated. (Pages 108, 109.)

53. Casper, Vol. I., p. 54.—Inspection of the body of a new-born female child, which had been for a long period immersed in water, and probably met its death by drowning. The remains of the umbilical cord (1½ inches) were mummified. All the abdominal organs had disappeared except the uterus. (Page 108.)

54. British Med. Journ., May 1, 1875, p. 575.—*(Dr. Holland.)*—Suicide by hanging. The man was cut down after one hour's suspension. As the rope was slackened, "air escaped from the thorax through the larynx, and a prolonged and rather loud groan was the consequence." He

was undoubtedly dead at the time. Dr. Holland says, "the suicide braces his body for the final throw by taking in a deep breath, and when hanging is the method adopted, the constriction of the air-passage is too immediate and effectual to allow this air to escape; but when the rope is relaxed the lungs and thorax contract with sufficient force to occasion a groan, even an hour after death."

55. Med. Press and Circular, May 13, 1874.—Reported premature burial of a young woman. Interment said to have taken place six hours after the supposed death. (Page 29.)

56. British Medical Journal, Jan. 21, 1871, p. 71.—A case where an infant was nearly buried alive. It was heard to cry as the coffin was being carried to the cemetery. (Page 29.)

57. British Medical Journal, December 8, 1877, p. 819.—A woman in a state of trance buried alive. The Appeal Court at Naples sentenced both the doctor who signed the certificate and the mayor who authorised the interment, to three months' imprisonment, for "involuntary manslaughter." (Pages 29, 39.)

58. Philadelphia Medical Examiner, October, 1850, p. 599.—Male, æt. 33. For eight minutes no heart sounds could be detected. After twenty minutes the pulsations became regular, and the man opened his eyes. (Page 32.)

59. Medical Times and Gazette, 1863, I., 396.—(*Dr. Cousins.*)—Male, æt. 43. The man was subject to occasional and sudden attacks of long persistent sleep (five days and nights being the longest, and two days the average period), from which it was difficult to awake him. In this state the following symptoms were noted:—Skin pale and warm; limbs relaxed; pulse slow and feeble; respirations eight or nine per minute, and almost imperceptible. Secretions suppressed; no food taken. He usually awoke suddenly, remembering the events that happened before he fell asleep, but without the slightest consciousness of the lapse of time. (Pages 33, 37, 39.)

60. Edinburgh Monthly Journal, April, 1845, p. 307.—(From "*Gazette Médicale*," January, 1845.)—Female, æt. 36, married. Subject at intervals of from two to twenty days, to sudden attacks of long sleep, from which she could not be roused. These lasted from two to seven days, five days being an average period. The respiration, circulation and temperature, during the periods of sleep were normal. The eyes during the time were fixed upwards, the pupils being insensible to light. Evacuations suspended. She usually awoke suddenly, but appeared to be unrefreshed by the sleep. (Pages 33, 39, 42.)

61. Lancet, 1870, I., p. 12.—Female, æt. 20. Cataleptic state lasting for eight weeks. The temperature at one time fell so low that she was thought to be dead. (Page 39)

62. Medical Times and Gazette, 1871, I., p. 287.—Female, æt. 17. Profound sleep and stupor, with intervals of waking. (Page 39.)

63. Lond. Med. Record, 1875, p. 333.—*(Case at Cochine Hospital, Paris.)*—Female, æt. 24, unmarried. Extreme stupor (catalepsy). Breathing imperceptible; lips pink; trunk and limbs completely relaxed. When the fingers were placed in the glottis, it did not provoke cough, nor did she feel when the skin was pricked. About the sixth day the patient's muscles became tense and hard. Throughout this condition the action of the heart was clearly audible. (Pages 33, 37, 39.)

64. Lancet, 1867, II., p. 275.—*(Dr. Hingston.)*—Female, æt. 24, married. Cataleptic condition. Thought to be dead, there being at one period of the case a death-like coldness and pallor. The pulse was imperceptible, and the limbs rigid. The eyes were upturned, and the pupils were uninfluenced by light. The respirations were so slow and slight as not to dim a looking-glass. Recovery took place after four hours. (Pages 33, 37, 39, 42.)

65. Lancet, 1877, I., p. 905.—*(Dr. O'Neill.)*—Female, æt. 18. Cataleptic condition. Became insensible. The heart's action was imperceptible, the respirations noiseless, and the muscles rigid. (Pages 32, 33, 39.)

[See also **British Med. Journ., 1876, I., p. 722.**—(Semi-cataleptic state occurring in a male (adult) after a mental shock, recorded by Dr. Sturges.) **British Med. Journ., 1878, I., p. 635.**—(Case recorded by Dr. Gairdner, of abnormal disposition to sleep in a girl.) **Lancet, 1880, I., p. 923, and 1881, I., 66.**—(The case of the sleeping girl (æt. 21) of Turville, recorded by Mr. Hayman.) **Medical Times and Gazette, 1870, I., p. 103.**—(Case of extreme lethargy for two months in an adult male.) **British Med. Journ., 1872, II., p. 167,** and **Med. Times and Gazette, 1874, II., p. 489.**—(Account of the sleeping disease observed in Africa amongst the natives.) **Lancet, 1870, I., p. 586.**—*(Dr. Handfield Jones.)* (Case of epileptic stupor, lasting twenty-five days, and terminating fatally.) And also, by the same reporter, **Medical Times and Gazette, 1875, II., p. 184.**—(A case of hysterical trance in female (æt. 17), lasting for twelve days.) **Edinburgh Med. Journal, Vol. XVII., p. 29.**—*(Dr. Jameson.)*—A case of trance in female, æt. 16. **Med. Times and Gazette, 1872, II., p. 522.**—Prolonged sleep for seventy-one hours in male, æt. 25. **Amer. Journal of Med. Science, Vol. LIX., p. 245,** recorded in **Gaz. des Hop., Nov. 2, 4, 9, 11, 1869.**—*(M. Legrand du Saulle.)*—Male, æt. 32. A seven months' sleep, simulating death.]

66. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 137.—*(Case recorded by Briand.)*—The body of a woman was exhumed after eleven years' burial. It was found to be reduced to a skeleton, but the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth cervical vertebræ were held together by dark-coloured decomposed flesh, whilst portions of a cord around the neck were well preserved. The length and colour of the hair, the state of the teeth, and the form and length of the bones were recognisable. A ring was found on one of the finger-bones, by which means identity was established. (Page 94.)

66*. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 140.—A body recovered from a cess-pool was found to be completely converted into a skeleton after eight or nine months' submersion. (Page 98.)

67. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 140.—Child, æt. 8, exhumed after 16 months' burial. The bones were supposed to be those of a dog until the skull, with the hair upon it, and the lower jaw, were discovered. These, together with certain articles of clothing found, served to establish sex and identity. (Page 94.)

68. R. v. Spicer.—*(Reading, March,* 1846.)—In this case a man was tried for the murder of his wife. The woman had suffered violence, and was heard to fall down stairs at 12.30 a.m. At 9 a.m. she was found perfectly cold and rigid. It was argued that death must have occurred about the period when the fall was heard, and that the prisoner's statement therefore, that he saw his wife alive at 4.45 a.m., was untrue. (Page 45.)

69. R. v. Gardner.—*(October,* 1862.)—In this case a woman was found murdered, having lost a considerable quantity of blood from a wound in the throat. She was rigid and cold when discovered. She was lying on a wooden floor, covered only with a petticoat and chemise. Evidence was given to prove that she had been dead four hours. (Case 11.) (Page 51.)

70. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 370.—*(Quoted from the "Lancet.")*—"In October, 1840, a servant girl, who had retired to bed in apparently perfect health, was found the following morning, as it appeared, dead. A surgeon who was called pronounced her to have been dead for some hours. A coroner's inquest was summoned for four o'clock, and the reporter and the surgeon who had been called in to the girl were ordered to inspect the body previous to its sitting. On proceeding to the house for this purpose at two o'clock, the inspectors found the girl lying in bed in an easy posture, her face pallid, but placid and composed, as if she were in a deep sleep, while the heat of the body had not diminished. A vein was opened by them, and various stimuli applied, but without affording any sign of resuscitation. After two hours of hesitation and delay, a message being brought that the jury were waiting for their evidence, they were forced to

proceed to the inspection. In moving the body for this purpose the warmth and pliancy of the limbs were such as to give the examiners the idea that they had to deal with a living subject! The internal cavities, as they proceeded, were found so warm that a very copious steam issued from them on their exposure. All the viscera were in a healthy state, and nothing was detected which could throw the smallest light on the cause of this person's death." (Pages 29, 40, 50.)

71. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 371.—"One morning, in the summer of 1840, I (Dr. Ogston) was sent for to Littlejohn Street, Aberdeen, to see a lad of 17, who had just fallen down in the street, when on his way to a workshop in the neighbourhood. He had immediately before left his parents' house in good health and spirits. The death appeared to have been instantaneous. Finding that nothing could be done, I left as soon as I perceived that he was really dead. On the afternoon of the same day I was again sent for by the lad's mother, who stated that she had been deterred from proceeding to dispose of the body by observing that it did not become cold, as might have been expected had he been really dead; that the limbs were still supple; and that within the previous half-hour the colour had returned to his cheeks. In short, she expected that he was about to come to life again. These statements were undoubtedly correct, and it was my painful duty to make the poor woman aware that all this was owing to the very rapid approach of decomposition in this instance, which, by next day, was fully developed in the body, the increased temperature still continuing." (Pages 30, 50.)

72. Lancet, Dec. 6, 1879.—(*Dr. Kelly.*)—Boy, æt. 16. Case of poisoning by 3iij. of prussic acid.

The following is the account of the post-mortem ophthalmoscopic examination in this case by Dr. Buzzard: "The usual brilliant red glow from the choroid was entirely wanting, and its place was occupied by a very pale violet-grey tint. The optic disc, of a dull grey white tone, was very ill defined. The retinal arteries could be discerned with the greatest difficulty, as exceedingly narrow threads. The veins, on the other hand, were easily traced, but appeared to be unevenly or imperfectly charged with blood. The observation was somewhat obstructed by a peculiar broken-up-like condition of the media—whether of the cornea, lens, or vitreous, I could not determine—which gave one the idea of looking through cooked tapioca." (Page 44.)

73. Indian Med. Gazette, July 1, 1876.—Female, æt. 25. Drugs given to produce abortion. Death occurred without delivery. A four-months' fœtus was expelled from the uterus after death. (Pages 56, 85.)

[A case also mentioned of a seven-months' fœtus being expelled, five days after death, during the transport of a body. Also of the inversion of the non-gravid womb by the force of the gases of putrefaction.—*Vide supra.*]

CHAPTER III.

PERSONAL IDENTITY.

General Considerations.—Details for the Consideration of the Medical Jurist (A.) in Cases where a person is alive or has recently died; (B.) in Cases of the Discovery of Mutilated Remains; (C.) in Cases where Portions only of a Body are found; (D.) in Cases where a Body has been Burnt.—Questions suggested by the Discovery of a Complete Skeleton or of Isolated Bones.—Age, Stature, Race, Likeness, Congenital Peculiarities, Hereditary Diseases, etc., in relation to questions of Identity.—Marks left by the Hands and Feet.—Cicatrices and Tattoo Marks.—Hair and Fibres.—The Teeth.—Stains.—Handwriting and Varieties of Ink.—Sight and Hearing.—Tabular Statement of Details to be Recorded in Cases of Disputed Identity.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 256.)

Of whom is this the body?—This question may arise (as in the case of Dr. Livingstone) where a body is brought from abroad, and doubt exists whether the remains are those of the person they are stated to be. Further, it is one of the questions specially submitted at every inquest to the jury for their consideration. Enquiries of this nature may have to be conducted on mutilated remains, or even on isolated bones. Hence such questions as the probable age, sex, stature, cause of death, period of death, etc., of the individual of whom the remains form a part, may be submitted to the medical jurist, to help elucidate the question of identity.

But the personal identity of the *living* is a yet more frequent subject of discussion than that of the dead, constituting, as it often does, an essential connecting link in a criminal trial, and the entire subject matter of dispute in a civil cause. Thus, a man who has committed a crime leaves the country, and afterwards returns: the authorities charge him with the offence, to which he pleads mistaken identity. Or again, a person,

after many years' absence, returns home and claims as rightful heir, title and property: unrecognised by the home relatives, they dispute the relationship and kinship of the claimant. As a rule in such cases the decision of the court turns more on general than on scientific evidence; nevertheless, scientific evidence is frequently required, and oftentimes involves the most subtle of subtle scientific questions. (Cases 7 to 10, 14, 15.)

Thus, the precise nature of various corporeal defects—or the cause of sundry marks or cicatrices found on the body—or the question how far the disappearance of cicatrices known to have existed on the real person may be capable of scientific explanation, may constitute the very gist of a case. The medical expert further will be expected to be familiar with the various scientific investigations and enquiries that have been instituted from time to time respecting natural and unnatural growths, and with the recorded observations relating to the effects of age, accident, climate, occupation, and so forth, on individuals at different intervals of time and at different periods of life. These details it will be his duty, as a medical jurist, to apply to the special case under enquiry.

Cases of identity are frequently complicated by the fact that the great majority of people are untrained in minute observation. Thus, one part of a family will describe an absent relative as having very dark hair, whilst another part, with equally good faith, will assert that when last seen he had light hair. Even photographs help but little in this respect, complexion, general appearance, depth of tint, and so forth, depending far more on such details as the after touching-up of the negative, the time of its exposure, and the ease with which it prints, than they do on the face and complexion of the sitter. Further, the recognition of a well-known friend with whom we have had daily intercourse, by a carte-de-visite taken many years previously, is often far from easy. And this suggests the remark that, in all cases where photographs are required in a court of law, the negatives themselves should if possible be called for and produced. The tricks that a skilful photographer and toucher-up can play with a negative, render prints comparatively valueless as evidence. I have known a volume of smoke

appear in a print as issuing from a chimney, and used as evidence of the existence of a nuisance, when no smoke existed in the original negative. In criminal cases where questions of identity arise, two additional points frequently complicate the inquiry, viz., (1) that the prosecutor may have seen the prisoner for a few seconds only, and that by an imperfect or instantaneous light (such as a gas lamp, the flash of lightning or of a pistol, etc.); and (2) that criminals are well-known adepts at personal disguisement.

Questions of identity, again, often occur in cases of infanticide and of the exposure of new-born children. A variety of circumstances frequently combine in such cases to render positive identification a matter of the greatest difficulty. Thus, the child may, in the first instance, have been found by boys in the street, who deliver it up to a policeman. When the child is afterwards shown them they are unable to identify it, and are probably ignorant even of the sex. A medical man, in such case, should not commence the post-mortem until either the body has been identified or every effort to identify it has failed; and further, if compelled to commence the autopsy, it is advisable that the face should be as little disfigured as possible, and every minute point of detail recorded. (*Case* 5.)

Bearing in mind the many questions involved, it will be understood why the subject of the personal identity of the living and dead should be one beset with difficulties.

It will be convenient, in the first place, to generalise briefly on the principal matters to which our attention, *re identity*, should be directed in different cases, and afterwards to discuss separately and in detail, some of the chief points that require further consideration.

(A.)—Identity in the case of a living person, or of a body that has been dead a short time only.

(1.) *Age* (p. 156).—It may be of importance in establishing identity, to fix the probable age of the person. In the case of chil-

dren, the size, development, and condition of the epiphyses, and in the case of adults, the hair and teeth, and the condition of the alveolar processes, demand special attention. (*Case* 13.) The greatest possible caution, however, in attempting to fix the age of a person is necessary. (*Case* 37.)

(2.) *Sex.*—Cases of doubtful sex will be discussed in detail in Chapter VI.

(3.) *Trade, character of work and occupation of the person.*—Thus, the existence of horny hands denote that the person has been accustomed to hard manual labour (*Case* 31), whilst soft pliant hands, wanting in muscular development, indicate employment of a different character. Certain stains on the fingers (such as silver stains commonly found on the hands of photographers, etc.), should be recorded as suggestive of the business in which the person had been engaged.

(4.) *Complexion.*—In *Case* 13 a difference in the complexion of two persons proved of importance in determining identity, the murdered woman being proved to have had a sallow complexion, whilst the woman with whom she was confused was of a dark complexion. (See also *Case* 36.)

(5.) *Likeness and general type of face* (p. 173).—Type of face constituted a question of great importance in the Tichborne case (*Case* 4), the flat broad nose, broad nostrils, badly-formed ear lobules, and blue eyes sworn to as existing in the real Roger, being scarcely consistent with the straight aquiline nose, well-formed nostrils and ear lobes, and the brown eyes of the claimant. (See also *Cases* 6 to 10.)

As regards identity from likeness after death, there are many circumstances that may render recognition, even by the nearest relatives, a matter of the greatest difficulty. (*Case* 29.) Thus, the expression, which usually appears calm and placid during the after-death period of relaxation, may become drawn and painful during the stage of rigidity, both the one and the other being equally unnatural. Identity by likeness fourteen days after putrefaction has set in, is as a rule practically impossible, although it must be admitted that exceptional cases occur where likeness can be clearly established after long and almost indefinite intervals. (Pages 41, 85, 96.)

The value of photography, as we have already said, must not be overrated. People change greatly by time, and the lenses of cameras are not uniformly perfect. (Page 143.)

(6.) *Race* (p. 171).—This may in some cases be determined. (*Case* 31.) The colour of the skin, be it natural or the result of disease, or of the action of drugs, should be accurately recorded at a post-mortem.

(7.) *Hair* (p. 195).—The colour, amount, general character, and length of the hair may prove important in determining both the individual and the sex. (*Cases* 13, 35, 41, 57, 59, 62, 63, etc.) But here certain points are to be noted :—

(*a.*) The colour of the hair may be altered by dyes. Thus black hair may be rendered light coloured (*Case* 65), and light hair may be dyed.

Any hair on which evidence has to be given, should first of all be thoroughly washed with water, and its *colour* and *tenacity* in this condition recorded. Afterwards a portion should be digested in nitric acid, and the acid liquid tested for silver, bismuth, and lead. The colour of the hair after treatment with acid should again be taken note of.

(*β.*) Any hairs found in a coffin should be examined, to determine if possible whether or not they are human.

(γ.) Any hair found either in the hands or free about a body, should be carefully preserved and properly mounted in Canada balsam for microscopic examination. The correspondence or the non-correspondence of such hairs with the hair of the deceased or with that of an accused person, may constitute evidence of great importance.

(δ.) A question arises here, Does the hair grow after death? (*Case* 71.) (Page 208.)

(8.) *Nails.*—The nails resist decomposition an unusually long time. Their length and any peculiarities of growth should be carefully recorded. (*Case* 27.)

(9.) *Stature and Girth* (p. 162).—This constituted a subject of discussion in the Tichborne case. (*Case* 4.) Could the real Roger, who at the age of twenty-one was slim, 9 stone in weight, having narrow hips, thin straight legs and long bony fingers, develop within twelve years into a huge man like the Claimant?

(10.) *Changes effected by time, exposure and hardship on the face and person,* (*Cases* 4 and 8,) *and* (*in the case of the living*) *on the mind and memory.*—(*Case* 4.)

(11.) *Scars, &c.* (p. 180).—Tattooes are most commonly found on the arms of sailors and of the idle classes. The marks of nævi, of skin discolourations, of the lash, of bleeding, cupping, branding and setons, also marks of previous diseases, such as adhesions from pneumonia, skin diseases, scrofulous ulcers, small-pox, and syphilis, diseases of the teeth, etc., must be accurately recorded. (*Cases* 3, 4, 5a, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 23, 24, 26, 35, 38, etc.)

Questions relating to the permanence, the nature, and the cause of scars are often important. Thus a person may assert a scar to be due to one cause which is manifestly due to another. (*Case* 3.)

(12.) *Deformities, Congenital Malformations, etc.*—The shortening of a leg, such as would cause lameness or a peculiar waddling in the walk (*Case* 28), the known absence of certain parts or organs (*Case* 15), evidence of spinal disease, of wens, pimples, warts, or moles (*Cases* 28, 29, 30, and 38), of uterine malformations (*Case* 31), etc., may prove important.

(13.) *Injuries.*—The existence of old (united or ununited) fractures, marks of wounds, etc., may constitute important evidence. (*Cases* 2, 16, 47.) The probable *age* (*Case* 1), and the precise *position* of a wound (*Case* 11), either in relation to blood spots or to other injuries inflicted on the body or clothes, may require to be determined in cases of disputed identity.

(14.) *Pregnancy.*—(*Case* 35.)

(15.) *Clothes, rings and other articles of jewellery, contents of pockets, etc.*—(*Cases* 36, 51.) All matters of detail connected with these, such as marks on linen, etc., should be noted with the most exact accuracy. (*Case* 28.) Articles likely to be matters of evidence should be preserved and marked so that afterwards they may be easily identified.

(16.) In the case of the living it may be important to note peculiarities of speech, such as lisping (*Case* 16), stammering, inability to pronounce certain words or letters, or peculiarities of pronunciation.

(17.) In the case of dead bodies all such details as smears of

tar, paint, etc., either on the clothes or body, should be recorded as likely to throw light on the identity of the person or help otherwise in assisting justice. (*Case* 38.)

(B.)—Identity in cases where mutilated remains, or a portion only of a body has been recovered.

As a rule, science in its most elaborate refinements, fails to dispose entirely of a dead body. (*Case* 34.)

The following points (in addition to those mentioned above) need consideration :—

(1.) *How far the several parts fit together.*—By carefully noting the correspondence or otherwise in the bones, muscles and blood-vessels of the several pieces (some of which may be found in one place and some in another), we may be enabled to determine whether they belong to the same body, or to different bodies. (*Cases* 28, 31 to 33.)

(2.) *Age.*—It may often be possible to determine the age, even from mutilated portions of a body (*Case* 38), although in all such cases a very guarded opinion should be given. (*Case* 37.)

(3.) *Stature.*— This may be judged approximately by the relationship generally known to exist between the height of a person and the length of certain bones (p. 169). (*Cases* 34, 36, and 38.)

(4) *Injuries likely to cause death.*—Thus in *Cases* 35, 36, and 38, the nature of the injuries found on mutilated remains, respectively pointed to the form of violence inflicted on the body during life.

(5.) *Method of Mutilation.*—In cases of mutilation, the public invariably suggest medical students as the culprits. It must be remembered, however, that medical students in dissecting do not hack or mangle a body, but rather cut carefully so as to preserve muscles and blood-vessels—that they do not stab or otherwise treat a body in such manner as to simulate acts of violence—that they do not make away with the parts specially necessary for identification—and, lastly, that they do not receive subjects for dissection with their clothes on. (*Case* 36.)

It may be worth mentioning that the method of, and the instrument used for mutilating a body, *e.g.*, whether it be a small

or a large knife, a chopper, a fine or a coarse saw, etc. (*Case* 38), may be suggestive. Again, the presumption that a butcher in mutilating a body would probably do so with less mangling than most people, proved of importance in one case.

(6.) *The treatment to which the parts have been subjected after mutilation.*—(*Cases* 35, 36, etc.)

(7.) In all cases of mutilation every minute detail connected with the teeth (if the head be recovered) should receive special consideration. Their number, arrangement, state of decay, worn appearance (*e.g.*, by constantly holding a pipe), or the presence of artificial teeth (*Case* 34), should be noted. If any teeth have been removed, careful note should be taken whether their removal was, or was not of recent date. It is advisable, in order to avoid possible doubt or discussion hereafter on these points, that a cast of the mouth be taken before the remains are finally buried.

(C.) Identity in cases where an entire or an incomplete skeleton has been discovered.

In addition to what has been already said under A and B, the following points are worthy of note:—

(1.) *The extent to which destruction of the soft parts has progressed.*—This may at once settle the non-identity of the remains. (*Case* 47.) Thus supposing a body after prolonged burial be found completely reduced to a skeleton, and it be stated that the individual in question had been seen alive two or three months previously, the identity is disproved by the impossibility of a body becoming completely skeletonised after burial in earth for such a short time.

(2.) *The surroundings of the bones.*—Thus buttons or articles of jewellery (as a ring) (*Case* 41), or portions of boots, etc., (*Cases* 48 and 50), may be found long after the soft parts of a body have rotted.

(3.) *Are certain bones human?*—Mistakes in answering this question are recorded, and suggest the necessity for great caution. (*Cases* 40 and 51.) The medical jurist in all such cases should content himself with saying whether bones submitted for

examination in his judgment be human, rather than (if they be not human) venturing an opinion as to the precise animal to which they belong (p. 153).

A further question (supposing the bones to be human) will occur, viz., *Are they the bones of one, or of more than one individual?* (P. 155.)

(4.) *Age.*—If the remains be those of a person under puberty, the size, length, and general appearance of the bones, the condition of the cartilages of the ribs and sternum, and the state of the epiphyses, will furnish data by which to determine the probable age. Age becomes a matter, however, of far greater difficulty after the advent of puberty. The condition of the alveolar processes will prove a certain guide at more advanced periods of life. (*Cases* 49, 50, 51, and 53.)

(5.) *Sex.*—The bones where the muscles are attached exhibit a more marked roughness in the male than in the female. The pelvis, however, will be our chief guide in determining sex. (*Cases* 41, 49, and 50.) But it is important to remember that the pelvis is very little guide in this respect before puberty, or at any rate before the age of eight or ten (*Case* 51), whilst even after puberty, unless the entire pelvis be recovered and its sexual characters be well marked, a very guarded opinion only should be given. (*Case* 49.)

(6.) *The Teeth.*—*Cases* 12, 41, 42, and 52, show the importance of noting all particulars respecting the teeth in cases of disputed identity.

(7.) *The Hair.*—Hair may be found in a coffin long after the soft parts have decomposed, and where nothing but the skeleton remains.

(8.) *Malformations of bones.*—Cases are recorded where spinal malformations and bowed legs (*Case* 42), the existence of supernumerary toes and fingers (*Case* 44), and certain peculiarities of bones (*Cases* 12 and 45), proved important in establishing identity where a few bones only were recovered.

(9.) *Diseases of bones.*—On several occasions the discovery of an anchylosed condition of joint, of spinal disease (*Case* 45), etc., have proved, or helped prove, identity. The existence of rickets, of syphilitic disease and softening of bones, should be carefully noted.

(10.) *Injuries to bones.*—Injuries to the skull (*Cases* 42 and 43), and to other bones (*Case* 50), should be sought for. Further, it should be noted how far the appearance of such injuries suggests the instrument with which they were inflicted, and whether they were likely to have caused the death. (*Case* 50.)

And here two cautions are suggested:—

(*a.*) Not to mistake accidental injuries occurring to the bones during exhumation for acts of violence inflicted during life. (*Case* 43.)

(*β.*) Not to confound deficient ossification of the skull or unclosed fontanelles, for criminal violence. (*Case* 46.)

(11.) *Pregnancy.*—If the bones of a fœtus be found in the same coffin with those of a female skeleton, the fact is suggestive of the probable pregnancy of the woman at death. The absence of such fœtal remains in the coffin has been used as an argument against the body exhumed being that of the individual supposed, seeing that at death the woman in question was known to have been far advanced in pregnancy. (*Case* 52.) It must be remembered, however, on the one hand, that undertakers frequently bury still-borns indiscriminately in coffins with adults, and on the other hand, that fœtal bones would probably be disintegrated long before the bones of an adult.

(D.) Identity in cases where burnt remains have been discovered.

The evidence derived from burnt remains must, as a rule, at best be unsatisfactory. Nevertheless the age of a bone, and the state of the epiphyses, may be determined almost as well after, as before calcination, *if the burnt bone be entire.* The presence of phosphate of lime in large bulk in an ash, if that be all remaining, will constitute important evidence in proof of its being a bone ash, although this fact alone supplies us with no data by which to distinguish the ash of human from that of the bones of other animals. (*Cases* 54, 55, 56.)

Cremation, as suggested by certain unpractical enthusiasts, will put an undoubted barrier, at long intervals after death, to the dead body itself furnishing evidence to assist justice (as

earth burial so often permits) either in clearing the innocent or in punishing the guilty. (*Cases* 44 to 46.)

Having thus far summarised the chief points to which attention should be directed in different cases "*re identity*," we proceed to consider certain of these in detail.

I. In cases where skeletons or isolated bones have been discovered, the following questions suggest themselves:—

(1.) *Are the bones human, or are they those of some other animal?*

(2.) *If human, are they parts of the same skeleton, or do they belong to more than one body?*

(3.) *If exhumed, what length of time had the body probably been buried?*

(4.) *What evidence can be gathered from their examination as to the probable cause of the death of the person of whom they form a part?*

The following subjects will then be considered in relation to various questions respecting the identity of the living and dead:—

II. Age.
III. Sex.
IV. Stature.
V. Race.
VI. Likeness.
VII. Congenital peculiarities and hereditary diseases.
VIII. Marks of the hands and feet.
IX. Cicatrices and tattoo marks.
X. Hairs and fibres.
XI. The teeth.
XII. Stains.
XIII. Handwriting and varieties of ink.
XIV. The limits of vision.
XV. The limits of hearing.

I. Human Remains.

(1.) *Are the bones human, or are they those of some other animal?* —Bones, it may be remarked, are not necessarily human because they are found in a churchyard, or *vice versâ*. (*Cases* 40, 51, 55.) It may help us materially, however, in deciding their origin, to consider (*a*) their *position*, and (*β*) *associations*.

(*a*.) As regards *position*, it is customary in Christian burial to place a corpse in the ground at full length, with the head towards the west.

(*β*.) If with the bones be found the remains of clothes, metal buttons, jewellery, etc., such associations constitute evidence of great value in determining origin, and possibly identity. Hence the earth round about the remains in question should be carefully sifted, to see if articles that may help to establish the nature of such remains can be found. (*Cases* 41, 48, 50.)

Further, if, in addition to the body being placed east and west, other bodies arranged one above the other be found near it, such a circumstance is strongly suggestive not only that the remains are human, but that the place where they were found was at some period or another a burial-ground. In a case of this nature therefore various parts of the ground should be examined, to see whether the remains of other bodies can be discovered.

If a whole skeleton be submitted for report, no difficulty can occur in deciding whether the bones be human; for even the skulls and extremities of those anthropoid apes that somewhat resemble man in general appearance, possessing in certain cases clavicles and dental formulæ closely approximating to our own, nevertheless, as a whole, present important differences scarcely possible to overlook or confuse. But the real difficulty occurs when single bones, or fragments of bone are submitted for report. (*Cases* 40, 51.) It is not necessary for us to discuss here in any detail the points of distinction between human bones and the bones of other animals. Some of these characteristics are referred to by Dr. Taylor with questionable accuracy. No difficulty, however, can possibly arise in deciding, by the aid of the microscope, whether the smallest fragment referred for examination be bone or not, seeing that, even

supposing the Haversian canals and systems be wanting, we are certain to detect in the case of bone, at any interval of time, the presence of bone corpuscles or cells (*lacunæ*).

But in such case this is about the limit of our power. For admitting that the bones of different animals not only present differences in their chemical composition but also in their microscopical characters ("*Med. Gazette*," Dec. 11, 1845), the size of the bone-cells bearing a certain relationship to that of the blood-discs, being largest in reptiles, smallest in birds and mammals, and of an intermediate size in fish,—admitting further that the bones of the aged differ chemically from the bones of the young by containing an excess of calcareous over animal matter, and that, as a consequence, slight differences, recognisable under the microscope, may in some cases be apparent;—admitting, we say, all these facts, nevertheless, in the present state of our knowledge, they are to be regarded as mere generalizations, so broad and yet so narrow as to render them unsafe to be applied to medico-legal investigations.

If any hair be found on fragments of a skull, should such be recovered, its examination will afford important evidence. The microscopical appearance of the hairs of different animals are specially characteristic, and scarcely liable to much change either by time or burial. (*Case* 69.)

In the case of mere fragmentary particles being submitted for examination, the medical jurist should content himself with stating whether or not they are bone, venturing no opinion as to their precise origin. If, however, several bones, or a more or less perfect skull be recovered, he may then be able to form an opinion whether they are human. Further than this it is not advisable to go. To state in the witness-box the precise animal of which he may believe the bones form a part, opens a door for cross-examination, which in a medico-legal case is not only, as a rule, objectless, but may do positive harm by diverting attention from the real question at issue. Opposing counsel are only too glad to seize upon such disputed points for cross-examination, in order to discredit a witness. Of course, we admit there may be cases where it is necessary to give more definite evidence, but they are not common. A door should

never be opened unnecessarily, lest it be difficult to shut it when desired.

If numerous separate bones believed to be human be recovered, the question will then arise:—

(2.) *Whether they are parts of the same skeleton, or belong to more than one body?*—It is advisable in such cases to commence our investigations by examining each bone separately, to determine whether it belongs to the right or to the left side. This done, we should label it accordingly, and at once place it in position. (*Case* 34.) By thus determining the side to which each bone belongs, and as we proceed fitting them together as best we can, this question may often be satisfactorily answered. Thus, if two right ulnas, or three femurs, &c., be discovered, the conclusion is obvious.

It may not be out of place to remark that, after the bones have been fitted and arranged, they should be carefully fastened together and photographed.

(3.) As regards *the length of time the bones have probably been under ground*, it is usually supposed that, in an ordinary grave, a body becomes skeletonised in about ten years. Admitting this to be substantially accurate, there are not a few cases where, on the one hand, all the soft parts have been destroyed in a far less time, and, on the other hand, where they have been preserved for a much longer period. (See *Putrefaction.*) Certain parts such as the hair, resist decomposition almost indefinitely. After long burial, more especially in an iron-charged soil, the bones (and frequently the teeth) assume a dark or reddish-brown colour.

(4.) The *probable cause of death*, judged by an examination of the bones, may be inferred if fractures and other injuries be discovered. Given a fracture of, or injury to, an exhumed bone, two questions need careful consideration:—(*a*) Was the injury caused by violence inflicted during the life of the person, or may it have resulted from the axe or spade of the gravedigger? (*Case* 43.) And (*β*), if caused during life, was it of recent or of old standing? Thus in *Cases* 42, 43, and 50, fractures of the skull, indicating the cause of death, were discovered on examination.

Again, certain associations of a skeleton, such as, for example,

finding the remains of a rope round the cervical vertebræ, may be suggestive of the cause of death. (*Case* 41.)

Again, a diseased condition of bone may be discovered. (*Case* 45.) In such cases much care may be necessary to distinguish between disease, decay and violence. (*Case* 46.)

Again, if a fracture with new bone around the broken ends be found, the fact that the violence to the bone occurred during life, and even some time before death, will be abundantly proved. (*Case* 47.)

It may, further, be within the power of the medical jurist to form some opinion from the nature of the injury, as to the instrument by which the violence was inflicted (*Case* 50), and whether it was direct or indirect.

Lastly, in examining a skeleton or individual bones all such details as personal deformities, etc., should be carefully observed and noted. (*Cases* 42, 44.) Further, if around and about the skeleton of a female, fœtal bones be discovered, the fact is suggestive, but by no means absolute proof, of pregnancy. (*Case* 47.)

Although from the examination of the remains of a body we may be unable to determine their identity, nevertheless we may be able to prove what, to the accused, may constitute evidence of great importance, *viz.*, that they could not have belonged to the particular body supposed.

II. Age.

Personal identity will naturally depend, in many cases, upon the age of the person concerned, or upon the age of the body or portions of the body discovered or exhumed. To determine age during life is often a matter of extreme difficulty. In the case of children we may generally fix it more or less accurately by observing the teeth, the height and weight, and the general development. It is, however, to be noted that in certain diseased conditions, such as in some cases of congenital or hereditary syphilis, a retarded puberty is not uncommon.

The middle period of life presents the greatest difficulty in determining age. Hard work, mental anxiety and dissipation may make the adult of twenty-five or thirty look forty or fifty,

whilst the absence of such causes may make others look younger than their own children. Gray hairs do not necessarily denote old age, nor black hairs youth. The hair of the Albino is scarcely liable to deceive in this particular, because of its invariable association with pink eyes, but hereditary premature grayness, or the sudden influence of fright or trouble in bleaching the hair, must not be overlooked (page 205). Again in the matter of baldness, which may be important in establishing age, much care is required. Thus cases are on record where complete baldness has been the result of fright ("*British Med. Journal*," 1879, II., p. 346), and likewise of disease (notably of syphilis) in young persons. ("*Med. Times and Gaz.*," 1870, II., pp. 518, 551, 575; "*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1880, II., pp. 114, 157, 197, 535.)

After thirty-five, besides the "crafty crowsfeet" (of which the laureate speaks) about the eyes, other lines make their appearance in the face, more especially around the mouth. The features become more set. The eye-lashes, eyebrows, and hairs of the face generally grow coarser and longer. Hair, particularly in the male sex, grows profusely in the nostrils and ears, and about the nipples. The thumbs become more pointed, and the great toe turns in a curved direction towards the middle line of the foot. The skin loses its suppleness, and becomes either drier or more greasy. The body may either fall away ("*sinking into little room*") or grow stout. The abdomen often becomes pendulous, whilst in females the mammæ either waste or enlarge considerably. The arteries may become tortuous and cord-like, or of even bony hardness. An "*arcus senilis*" may be apparent in the eye. The figure begins to stoop, as the intervertebral substance is absorbed or shrivels; the muscular power lessens and the vertebræ become more bevilled. The teeth decay, the nose and chin approximate, and old age creeps on in the "lean and slippered pantaloons." (For a full description of these senile changes, see "*A Practical Treatise on the Diseases and Infirmities of Advanced Life*," by Dr. Daniel Maclachlan, 1863.)

In determining age from the skeleton, or from such remains as may be forthcoming, there are several points to be noted :—

The Points of Ossification and the extent to which osseous union has progressed.—Certain details under this head may be stated as follows:—

1 *year:* Points of Ossification:—Lower extremities of humerus and ulna; heads of the femur and humerus; upper cartilage of tibia.

1½ *years:* Anterior fontanelles should be closed.

2 *years:* Points of Ossification:—Lower cartilage of radius, tibia and fibula.

2½ *years:* Points of Ossification:—Greater tuberosity of the head of the humerus; patella; lower ends of the last four metacarpal bones.

3 *years:* Points of Ossification:—The trochanters.

4 *years:* Points of Ossification:—The second and third cuneiform bones of the tarsus.

4½ *years:* Points of Ossification:—The small tuberosity of the head of the humerus; the upper cartilage of the fibula.

6 *years:* The descending ramus of the pubis meets the ascending ramus of the ischium.

From 8 *to* 10 *years:* The upper cartilage of the radius becomes ossified.

9 *years:* The ilium, ischium, and pubis meet in the cotyloid cavity (acetabulum) to form the pelvis.

10 *years:* Ossification begins in the cartilaginous end of the olecranon.

12 *years:* Points of Ossification:—The pisiform bones of the carpus.

13 *years:* The three portions of the os innominata (ilium, ischium, and pubis), though nearly united, can still be separated. The neck of the femur is ossified.

14 *years, or about puberty:* There are now added some fourteen additional centres to the sacrum.

15 *years:* The coracoid process becomes united to the scapula.

Between 15 *and* 16 *years:* The olecranon becomes united to the ulna.

From 18 *to* 20 *years:* The epiphysis at the upper end of the thigh bone is joined to the body of the bone, as well as those belonging to the metacarpus, metatarsus, and phalanges.

20 *years:* The upper and lower epiphyses of the fibula, as well as the lower epiphysis of the femur, are respectively united to the bones.

25 *years:* The epiphysis of the sternal end of the clavicle, and of the crista ilii are united to the bones.

If all the epiphyses be found united to their bones, and the bones themselves are solid and well-marked as to muscles, processes, and foramina; and, further, if the jaws show the wisdom-teeth, we may conclude the individual to be of adult age.

The Vertebræ.—The epiphyses of the bodies of the vertebræ are sometimes not consolidated until 30 years of age.

The Cartilages of the Larnyx in advanced life assume more the appearance of osseous than of cartilaginous structure.

The Sternum.—The second and third pieces of the sternum rarely join until the thirty-fifth or fortieth year, whilst the union of the first and second pieces is not usually complete until quite advanced life.

The Cartilages of the Ribs.—The cartilages of the ribs generally ossify late in life. Dr. Humphry regards this ossification as rather a sign of discase than of age. The first cartilage is more frequently ossified, and at an earlier period of life, in men than in women.

The Skull.—In old age the diploë is more or less absorbed, leaving the cranial bones thinner than they were in middle life. The sutures become firmly ossified, and gradually less distinct. If the sutures of the skull are indistinct, we may then fix the age as at least between fifty and sixty. As a rule the parietal sutures disappear about the age of puberty, although sometimes (but rarely) they remain separate throughout life.

The Lower Jaw.—The alveolar cavities containing the teeth are formed about the sixth month of intra-uterine life, whilst the rudiments of the whole of the temporary and of some of the permanent teeth (the anterior molars for instance), are usually found within the gums in capsules at the time of birth. Again, the jaw of the infant is rounded and somewhat semi-circular, the ramus and body forming an obtuse angle. As age advances towards middle life, the jaw loses its roundness, and as the

alveolar processes containing the teeth become more and more perfect, exhibits a well marked angularity and squareness. With old age, the teeth drop out or decay away, the jaw returning to its infantile shape. After a time the whole alveolar body may become absorbed, a sharp ridge replacing the holes for the teeth as they originally existed.

The Femur.—The neck of the femur *before puberty* is directed obliquely, so as to form a gentle curve from the axis of the shaft. In the *adult* male it forms an obtuse angle with the shaft, being directed upwards, inwards, and a little forwards. In the *female* it approaches more nearly to a right angle. Occasionally in very *old* subjects, and more especially in those greatly debilitated, its direction becomes horizontal, so that the head sinks below the level of the trochanter, and the length diminishes to such a degree that the head becomes almost continuous with the shaft.

It has previously been remarked that the bones of the aged contain a greater relative percentage of mineral to animal matter than those of the young, and that they are generally lighter from the medullary canals being larger.

Medico-legal aspects of Age. Minority and Majority.

In law, a male or female *under twenty-one years old* is regarded as an *infant* or *minor*. Before that age a male can neither alienate, by deed or by will, lands, goods, or chattels (1 Vic., cap. 26), nor can he be required to serve on a jury.

At the age of fourteen a male is supposed to have arrived at *years of discretion*, so that he can consent or refuse to marry. A female may be betrothed, or given in marriage at seven, whilst at nine she is entitled to dower (Henry III., c. 20.) At twelve she is supposed to have arrived at years of maturity, so as to consent or not to the marriage contract (!) But the law requires in cases of youthful marriages the consent of the nearest of kin.

Marriages contracted by minors have, however, for manifest reasons, been held valid, although contracted against the consent of parents or guardians. At twenty-one years of age, both male and female can contract marriages and fulfil all legal and civil rights and duties, without the consent of either parents

or guardians, although certain trusts may in this respect limit powers. Age, in nearly all the cases we have mentioned, must be proved by documents and not merely by medical evidence.

Full age is reckoned on the first instant of *the day before* the twenty-first anniversary of the man's birthday, *i.e.*, forty-seven hours and fifty-nine minutes short of the complete number of days, counting by hours. This mode of reckoning is applicable to all ages.

In every midwifery case it should be a rule with the medical attendant to make a note of the precise time that the child was born, remembering that the important record is not when the labour commenced, but the moment that the child was entirely expelled from the mother—in other words, the time of its legal birth. A simple note of this on the part of an accoucheur might often save a whole estate being squandered in law.

Nearly all the judges (notably Justices Earle and Keating) have held that a child up to the age of seven years, cannot distinguish right from wrong, so as to be *capable of crime.* If, however, "*a malicious intent*" can be proved, in other words, a guilty knowledge of the nature of the act, the law supposes that *malitia supplet ætatem.* If a child under fourteen be indicted for murder or arson, it must be shown that the child is conscious of the nature of the act. In the case of *R.* v. *Vamplew* (Lincoln Summer Assizes, 1862), a girl under fourteen years of age was convicted of poisoning by strychnia.

"In all cases, the question is, whether the jury are satisfied that the child, of whatever age, has sufficient knowledge and discretion to understand that he is doing a criminal act, for if he has, he is answerable to the law for the consequences, and whatever the feelings of courts and juries may be on such occasions, it would be highly detrimental to the public if any age was exempt, because people of full years would employ children to commit crimes of almost every description."

Under fourteen a male infant is not supposed to be capable of committing a rape, nor even a criminal assault in the first degree, although he may be convicted as a principal in the second degree. Under ten years of age, a female is presumed to be incapable of consenting to sexual intercourse. Hence in

cases of rape, provided the girl be less than ten years of age, the question of consent or non-consent is immaterial, nor indeed is the case altered even by solicitation on her part. Under such circumstances a rape is felony. (24 & 25 Vic., c. 100, sec. 50).

If a rape with consent be committed on a girl between the ages of ten and twelve, the crime is regarded as a misdemeanour (24 & 25 Vict., c. 100, sec. 51), whilst if she be above twelve, intercourse with consent ceases to be illegal.

In the case of unnatural crimes, both the active and the passive agent are deemed equally guilty, but if the passive agent be a boy under fourteen or a girl under twelve, the active agent only is charged.

III. Sex.

(This will be discussed in detail in a following chapter.)

IV. Stature. *(Height and Weight.)*

The following are the average lengths of the fœtus at different periods of intra-uterine life, and also of children and adults at various ages. The Table is taken from M. Sue (*Mémoires de l'Academie Royale des Sciences*, 1755, Tom. II., p. 574):—

Age.	Total length.	Trunk.	Upper Extremities.	Lower Extremities.
Fœtus of 6 weeks	16 lines.	1 inch.	5 lines.	4 lines.
2½ months	2 inches 3 lines.	1 in. 8 lines.	9 „	7 „
3 „	3 inches.	2 „ 1 line.	13 „	11 „
4 „	4 inches 4½ lines.	2 „ 11 lines.	1 in. 9 lines.	1 in. 5½ lines.
5 „	6½ inches.	4 „ 4 „	2 „ 6 „	2 „ 2 „
6 „	9 „	5 „ 8 „	3 „ 7 „	3 „ 4 „
7 „	1 foot some lines.	6 „ 5½ „	5 „ 10 „	5 „ 9 „
8 „	14 inches 9 lines.	8 „ 3½ „	6 „ 8 „	6 „ 6 „
9 „	18 inches.	10 inches.	8 inches.	8 inches.
Age 1 year	22½ „	13 in. 6 lines.	9 „	9 „
„ 3 years	2 ft. 9 in. some lin.	19 inches.	14 „	14 in. some lin.
„ 10 „	3 feet 8½ inches.	2 feet.	19 „	20 in. 6 lines.
„ 14 „	4 „ 7 „	2 feet 4 in.	24 in. 6 lines.	27 inches.
„ 25 „	5 „ 4 „	2 „ 8 „	30 inches.	32 „

Six pounds eight ounces is about the average weight of English children at birth; girls, as a rule, weighing a trifle less, and boys a trifle more. For the first twelve years of life the children of both sexes progress in weight as nearly as possible alike year by year.

The following Table gives the average monthly weights of young children during the first year:—

	lbs.	oz		lbs.	oz.
At birth	6	8	7 months	13	4
1 month	7	4	8 „	14	4
2 months.....	8	4	9 „	15	8
3 „	9	6	10 „	16	8
4 „	10	8	11 „	17	8
5 „	11	8	12 „	18	8
6 „	12	4			

It would appear that the average weight and length of Indian children are less than those of European. The following details are given on the authority of Dr. Harvey ("*Indian Med. Gaz.*," July 1, 1876, p. 172).

MALE CHILDREN (53 observations).

	lbs.	oz.		inches.
Average weight	5	8	Average length	18·5
Maximum „	8	12	Maximum „	23·0
Minimum „	3	3	Minimum „	14·5

FEMALE CHILDREN (63 observations).

	lbs.	oz.		inches.
Average weight.....	5	8	Average length	17·4
Maximum „	7	3	Maximum „	23·0
Minimum „	3	3	Minimum „	12·0

Ingerslev (Assistant at the Lying-in Institution of Copenhagen), who has weighed a large number of children, states that at full term, boys weigh on an average 110 grammes (about $3\frac{3}{4}$ ounces) more than females. His researches do not confirm the conclusion arrived at by Dr. Matthews Duncan, that the maximum weight is to be found in those born at full time between the twenty-fifth and twenty-ninth years of the mother's age.

Bouchut ("*Gazette des Hopitaux*," July 7, 1874) gives 3 to 4 kilos. (6·6 to 8·8 lb.) as the ordinary weight of the infant at birth, the extremes being 1½ kilos. (3·3 lbs.) and 7 kilos. (15·4 lbs.). The weight of children at birth is influenced by the height and constitution of the parents, and particularly by the accidents of pregnancy. Scrofula and syphilis in either parent, frequent vomitings or excessive hæmorrhages on the part of the mother during pregnancy, cause a diminution in the weight of the offspring.

In most cases a considerable diminution in the weight of the child occurs shortly after birth. This rule in healthy children, born of healthy mothers, is almost universal. Occasionally the weight will remain stationary, and even increase slightly during the first day, either because the meconium is not evacuated within the first twenty-four hours, or was evacuated during labour and before the child was weighed. In such case the diminution in weight will commence about the second or third day. This decrease may be taken to be from 30 to 100 grammes (roughly from 1 to 4 ozs.) during the first day, the total decrease being about the one-fourteenth of the child's weight at birth. The loss of weight is greatest in firstborns and in boys, although in boys it is more rapidly recovered than in girls. Again, the loss is greatest and the increase more tardy, in inverse proportion to the development of the infant. As regards the after increase, it may be taken that in sixty per cent. children begin to increase in weight about the fourth day, and that on the tenth day the weight will be the same, or even slightly greater than at birth. In some cases, however, a considerably longer period elapses before the birth-weight is reached.

To what is this loss of weight to be attributed? The evacuation of the urine and meconium and the pulmonary and cutaneous transpiration, will at most not explain more than fifty per cent. of the decrease. Neither will an insufficiency of food, due either to the mother having too little milk or to the child being unable to take it, account for it, as experiments abundantly prove. Facts, however, seem to show that the loss depends on the child being unable to derive benefit from the food it takes, the stomach and intestines during the first few days want-

ing in assimilating power. Thus loss of weight is to be expected during the first few days of life, although the food given may have been abundant in quantity and proper in quality. (Chaussier, Siebold, Haake, Winckel, Gregory, Kezmarsky, Boucharp, Ritter, Ingerslev. See "*London Med. Rev.*," Oct. 15, 1875, p. 594; *Bouchut* "*Gazette des Hopitaux*," July 7th, 1874.)

The increase in a child's weight after the primary decrease should be progressive. During the first five months, 20 to 30 grammes per day (= 308 to 462 grains) or say 175 grammes per week, and during the succeeding seven months 10 to 15 grammes per day may be regarded as proof that the child is thriving. At five months, therefore, the child should weigh twice as much as it did at birth, and at sixteen months double what it did at five months. Bouchard considers that a child should imbibe 630 grammes of milk per day during the first month, 700 during the second, 840 during the third, and 950 during the fourth. (See "*Medical Times and Gazette*," July 18, 1874, p. 81.)

It is certain that, as a child grows up, its stature will depend on the air it has to breathe, the food it has to eat, and the work to which it is subjected. Dr. Bridges' tables, showing the deterioration in the height and weight of factory children, are interesting :—

TABLE I.—HEIGHT.

Age.	Factory Children of factory Parents.		Children in non-factory districts.	Non-factory Children of non-factory Parents in factory districts.
		Inches.	Inches.	Inches.
8	Male	45·75	46·66	46·72
	Female	46·48	46·73	47·40
9	Male	48·05	49·21	49·09
	Female	47·62	48·63	49·37
10	Male	46·77	51·00	51·02
	Female	49·52	50·07	49·76
11	Male	51·44	52·87	52·57
	Female	50·80	53·66	52·80
12	Male	52·82	54·05	53·56
	Female	53·13	54·41	53·39

TABLE II.—WEIGHT.

Age.	Factory Children of factory Parents.			Children in non-factory districts.	Non-factory Children of Non-factory Parents in factory districts.
			Pounds.	Pounds.	Pounds.
8	Male		55·60	55·08	53·15
	Female		50·73	52·82	53·64
9	Male		58·41	60·02	59·40
	Female		54·63	56·53	57·79
10	Male		62·14	65·29	63·76
	Female		59·75	61·19	60·78
11	Male		67·22	71·01	70·22
	Female		63·94	68·00	68·97
12	Male		70·74	75·00	70·94
	Female		71·46	75·95	70·55

Here we remark that the factory boys of factory parents, are, on an average, at eight years old nearly 1 inch shorter than those of either of the other classes, whilst at twelve the boys of non-factory districts have gained another ½ inch in height over factory boys. The same results appear in the case of the girls, although in a lesser degree. As to weight, although the factory boys start ahead of both the other classes, nevertheless at twelve years old those of non-factory districts exceed the others by some 5 pounds; whilst at the same age the girls, who start considerably ahead, are nearly 3½ pounds less when compared with non-factory girls.

As regards adults, the average weight of males at twenty is 143 lbs., and of females 120 lbs. Women, however, as a rule increase in weight yearly up to fifty, but males only up to thirty-five. In advanced age, both sexes weigh about fifteen times their weight at birth.

The subjoined figures are reduced from the French weights and measures given in Quetelet's "Anthropométrie" (Brussels, 1870). They are the averages of a large number of observations on Belgians, and are probably a little under the mark as regards the English.

MALES.			FEMALES.		
Age in Years.	Height in Inches.	Weight in Pounds.	Age in Years.	Height in Inches.	Weight in Pounds.
Birth.	19·7	6·8	Birth	19·3	6·6
1	27·5	19·8	1	27·0	18·9
2	31·0	24·2	2	30·7	24·2
3	34·2	27·5	3	33·6	27·2
4	36·6	30·8	4	35·9	30·5
5	38·8	34·9	5	38·5	33·6
6	41·2	39·1	6	40·7	36·7
7	43·4	43·3	7	42·9	39·1
8	45·7	47·5	8	45·5	41·8
9	48·1	51·7	9	47·4	46·2
10	50·4	55·4	10	49·2	50·8
11	52·5	59·4	11	50·6	56·1
12	54·5	63·8	12	52·7	63·8
13	56·4	72·8	13	55·8	71·5
14	58·6	81·6	14	58·1	79·8
15	61·0	90·6	15	58·9	88·0
16	63·0	99·8	16	59·8	95·7
17	64·6	109·3	17	61·1	102·9
18	65·2	118·5	18	61·6	109·5
19	65·6	126·7	19	61·8	114·6
20	65·8	130·9	20	62·0	117·0
21	*65·5	134·6	21	62·1	119·4
22	*66·2	138·3	22	—	120·0
23	*66·2	141·9	23	—	121·4
24	*65·9	—	24	—	—
25	*66·3	145·6	25	—	120·5
27	*66·4	144·9	27	—	121·2
30	66·3	145·4	30	—	121·6

* The heights with asterisks are from Danson.

The subjoined table of measurements is taken from Barthes and Rilliet's well-known book on the diseases of infants. It is founded on the measurements of thirty-seven well-nourished and well-grown children :—

	3½ to 5 Years.	6 to 10 Years.	11 to 15 Years.
	Inches.	Inches.	Inches.
Height	32·8 to 38	38 to 50·8	50 to 52·8
Length of Sternum . . .	4·4 to 5·2	4·8 to 6	5 to 7·2
Length of *Dorsal Vertebræ*	5·6 to 8·8	7·2 to 10·4	9·2 to 11·6
Space between the Coracoid processes . .	5 2 to 6·8	6 to 8	7·6 to 10·8
Round the Thorax (under Armpits) during inspiration whilst seated	20·4 to 24·4	22·4 to 26 8	27·6 to 35·2
Round the Thorax (under Nipples) during inspiration	22 to 25	22·4 to 26·8	27·2 to 32

Dr. Guy gives the following table of averages from the measurements of forty-four male and seven female subjects. They are expressed in inches and parts of an inch.

Sex.	Stature.	Vertex to Pubes.	Pubes to Foot.	Upper Extremity from Acromion.	Femur.	Tibia.	Fibula.	Humerus.	Radius.	Ulna.
Male ..	66·5	33·5	33·0	29·5	17·66	14·58	14·16	12·4	9·4	10·16
Female.	61·0	31·1	29·0	26·66	16·5	13·75	13·4	11·6	8·66	9·75

Some additional proportions are given by M. de S. Luca, ("*Cosmos*," October 2, 1863, p. 386). He takes the average height for the adult French male to be 63 inches, or 160 centimetres, and for the adult French woman, $\frac{1}{20}$th less, or about 5 feet. In England it may be taken that the average height of males brought up under favourable circumstances is 5 feet $9\frac{1}{2}$ inches, and of females 5 feet 2 inches. The head is $\frac{1}{8}$th part of the total height, and is divided into two equal parts immediately below the eyes, the nostrils being midway between the eyes and chin. In a vertical section of the body the pubis is a central point between the two extremities. When the arms are raised vertically above the head, the navel becomes the centre of the length. If the arm be divided into five parts, the hand occupies one part and the forearm and arm two parts each. Multiplying therefore the length of the hand by five we get the length of the arm. The carpal and metacarpal bones represent half the length of the hand. The first phalanx of the middle finger occupies one-fourth of the entire hand, its last two phalanges being together equal to the length of the first. The last phalanx is just halved by the nail. The sole of the foot is one-third longer than the palm of the hand, but the back of the foot, or instep, is as nearly as possible the same length.

It may not be out of place to note here that (according to Dr. Sieveking) the *weight* should be in the following proportion to the height:—

Model Heights and Weights.

The Height being	The Weight should be
5 feet 1 inch.	8 stone 4 lbs.
5 „ 2 „	9 „ 0 „
5 „ 3 „	9 „ 7 „
5 „ 4 „	9 „ 13 „
5 „ 5 „	10 „ 2 „
5 „ 6 „	10 „ 5 „
5 „ 7 „	10 „ 8 „
5 „ 8 „	11 „ 1 „
5 „ 9 „	11 „ 8 „
5 „ 10 „	12 „ 1 „
5 „ 11 „	12 „ 6 „
6 „ 0 „	12 „ 10 „

We now pass from the measurements of the living to the measurements of the skeleton at various ages. And here we must note particularly the relationship between the total height of the skeleton and the length of the several bones of which the skeleton is composed. For the proposition submitted to the medical jurist is usually as follows:—Given, the length of one or two bones, or of an entire limb, determine the probable height of the skeleton and of the living body. (*Cases* 34, 49.) Dr. Humphry's tables are as follows:—

Measurements at different Ages (in inches).

	Age.	Height.	Spine.	Circumference of Skull.	Humerus.	Radius.	Hand.	Femur.	Tibia.	Foot.	Pelvis.	
											Transverse Diameter of	Antero-posterior.
	At Birth	19	7·0	15·0	3·5	2·5	3·1	4·3	3·5	3·5	1·3	1·3
	2 years (average)	27	8·5	17·7	4·7	3·6	3·1	6·2	5·1	3·6	2·2	2·2
	4 to 6 years (average) ..	35	11·8	18·0	6·6	4·8	4·1	9·1	7·1	5·1	2·5	2·5
	8 to 12 years (average) ..	43	12·8	18·8	8·3	6·0	5·1	11·4	9·4	6·4	3·1	3·1
15 yrs.	Female	55	17·0	19·0	10·3	7·0	5·8	14·8	11·0	7·8	4·0	3·6
15 yrs.	Male	54	16·5	19·0	10·5	7·5	5·6	15·0	11·5	—	—	—
15 yrs.	Average	54	16·6	19·3	10·4	7·4	5·7	14·8	11·6	8·0	3·8	3·6
19 yrs.	Female	59	19·0	19·5	11·0	8·2	6·5	16·0	12·8	8·0	5·0	4·8
19 yrs.	Male	59	17·5	20·4	11·0	8·5	6·3	15·0	13·0	8·0	3·9	3·8
19 yrs.	Average	60	18·5	19·8	11·4	8·6	6·6	15·8	13·3	8·3	4·7	4·5
18 to												

Average measurement at different Ages, reduced to a Scale of 100.

Age.	Height.	Spine.	Circumference of Skull.	Humerus.	Radius.	Hand.	Femur.	Tibia.	Foot.	Pelvis.	
										Transverse Diameter of.	Antero-posterior.
Birth	100'00	36'84	79'00	18'50	13'20	16'30	22'60	18'50	18'50	6'80	6'80
2 years	100'00	31'43	65'55	17'40	13'33	11'48	22'94	18.88	13'33	8'14	8'14
4 to 6 years	100'00	33'71	51'42	18'85	13'71	11'71	26'00	20'28	14'57	7'14	7'14
8 to 12 years	100'00	29'76	43'72	19'30	14'09	11'86	26'51	21'86	14'65	7.21	7'21
15 years	100'00	30'74	35'70	19'25	13'70	10'55	27'40	21'48	14'81	7'03	6'66
18 to 19 years	100'00	30'83	33'00	19'00	14'33	11'11	26'33	22'16	13'83	7'83	7'50
Adult	100'00	34'15	31'54	19'54	14'15	11'23	27'51	22'15	16'03	8'00	6'61

Orfila's measurements show in many respects remarkable differences to those given by Dr. Humphry. They are, however, often quoted, and we reproduce both his tables, chiefly for the purpose of showing that the medical jurist must not be too dogmatic on the relative length of bones.

TABLE I.—(Orfila's first Table.)

Stature calculated from length of bones.

[The measurement are given in inches and fractions of an inch.]

Length of Bone.		Stature.		
	Inches.	Maximum.	Minimum.	Difference.
Humerus (19 obs.)...	14'50	68'10	64'50	3'60
Ulna 14 „ ...	10'66	70'80	65'66	5'14
Femur 12 „ ...	17'75	69'66	64.50	5'16
Tibia 11 „ ..	14'21	69'66	64'50	5'16

TABLE II.—(Orfila's Second Table.)

Stature calculated from length of bones.

Length of Bone.		Stature.		
	Inches.	Maximum.	Minimum.	Difference.
Humerus (6 obs.) ...	13'00	73'25	69'75	3'50
Ulna 7 „ ...	10'66	73'25	65'00	8'25
Femur 7 „ ...	18'10	72'00	67'00	5'00
Tibia 7 „ ...	15'00	70'50	65'00	5'50

Given then that we have determined from a bone the probable length of the skeleton, the question arises, *Can we form an opinion as to the probable height of the person when alive?* On this we shall only say that in such calculations it is usual to add from 1·0 to 1·5 inches for the soft parts. But this at best is merely an approximate estimate, and we must be careful in evidence to explain exactly on what principle we have formed our opinion, and not state it as though it were capable of indisputable scientific proof.

V. Race.

It is in the skull where the chief differences of race are manifest. We cannot do more than briefly indicate the characters of the three classes:—

I. *The prognathous skull of the Negro.* In this form of skull there is a peculiar forward extension or prolongation of the jaw. The foramen magnum is placed far back. The organs of sense (smell and hearing), are usually highly developed.

II. *The pyramidal skull of the Esquimaux, and of the inhabitants of North and Central Asia.*—In this form of skull there is a peculiar lateral or outward projection of the zygoma, due to the form of the malar bones, rendering the skull lozenge-shaped in appearance.

III. *The oval or elliptical skull of the Indo-European or Caucasian.*—This is essentially symmetrical, with no marked prominences, and no undue compressions.

In the museum of the London Hospital, there are skulls of different races, which might easily, both for size and capacity, be taken to be European. Hence extreme caution must be exercised in drawing conclusions as to race from the shape of the skull. The degradation and the elevation of a race or of individuals, play no unimportant parts in determining shape.

Cloquet, Cruvelhier, and some other anatomists have stated that the capacity of the skull is about the same in different races. Tiedemann, Ward, and later writers have, after careful experiment, come to a different conclusion. Ward gives the following table:—

		Weight of Skull without Lower Jaw.	Weight of Millet Seeds the skull will hold.
French	1.	26·00 oz. avoir.	42·50 oz. avoir.
	2.	20·60 „ „	31·50 „ „
Chinese	1.	34·50 „ „	37·25 „ „
	2.	27·00 „ „	39·25 „ „
Scythian	1.	40·25 „ „	34·00
	2.	32·00 „ „	35·75

In the negro the feet are very wide apart and flat, whilst the os calcis is remarkable for its backward projection. The skin of the negro, and that of other dark races, is peculiar both in the great depth of its colour and in the thickness of the rete mucosum. The hair is also well known to be modified by race.

The measurements of *skeletons of different races* must be noted. On this we quote Dr. Humphry's tables :—

Measurements of Human Skeletons of different races, etc., (in inches).

	Height.	Middle point of skeleton.	Length of Spine.	Circumference of Skull.	Humerus.	Radius.	Hand.	Femur.	Tibia.	Foot.	Pelvis. Transverse Diameter of.	Pelvis. Antero-posterior. Diameter of.
European (average of 25)	65	Symphysis Pubis.	22·2	20·5	12·7	9·2	7·3	17·88	14·4	10·60	5·2	4·3
Negro (average of 25)	62	1 inch below Symphysis	19·3	19·8	12·1	9·4	7·7	17·00	14·4	11·11	4·6	4·1
Bosjesman (average of 3)	54	Symphysis	17·0	19·6	10·8	8·3	6·0	15·00	12·9	7·50	4·4	3·5
Idiot (in Berlin Museum)	57	Symphysis	19·5	13·5	12·0	8·8	7·0	16·00	12·5	8·50	5·0	3·8

The same, reduced to a scale of 100.

	Height.	Length of Spine.	Circumference of Skull.	Humerus.	Radius.	Hand.	Femur.	Tibia.	Foot.	Pelvis. Transverse Diameter of.	Pelvis. Antero-posterior. Diameter of.
European	100·00	34·15	31·54	19·54	14·15	11·23	27·51	22·15	16·03	8·00	6·61
Negro	100·00	31·13	31·94	19·52	15·16	12·42	27·40	23·23	17·90	7·42	6·61
Bosjesman	100·00	31·48	36·29	20·00	15·37	11·11	27·78	23·89	13·78	8·15	6·48
Idiot	100·00	34·21	23·68	21·05	13·43	12·28	28·07	21·92	14·96	8·94	6·66
O'Byrne at 8 ft. 2 inches	100·00	30·61	23·98	17·35	13·26	10·41	24·69	21·43	12·75	6·94	6·33
Irish Giant 8 ft. 6 inches	100·00	33·04	33·83	16·86	13·23	10·10	24·70	20·90	11·57	8·33	4·45
Sicilian female at 10 yrs., 20 inches	100·00	31·00	70·00	17·50	13·00	11·00	25·00	17·50	14·00	7·00	7·50
Bébé (or N. Perry) at 23 3 feet	100·00	—	—	22·23	13·60	—	26·39	19·45	—	8·63	6.67

VI. Likeness.

Questions of likeness may arise in cases of bastardy, and in discussions respecting claimants to titles or property, etc. In such enquiries medical evidence is not, as a rule, required. Nevertheless, the subject is one which, in many respects, calls for the special consideration of the medical jurist.

The author knows a case where a young lady who had an illegitimate child accused a person in a high position of life of being the father. This the accused denied. When the child, however, was nine or ten years old, the extraordinary likeness the child presented to the person in question (a man of exceptionably remarkable appearance) proved, beyond doubt, who had told the truth.

It has generally been held that the *male* parent transmits the characters of the skeleton, the conformation of the limbs, brain, and senses, whilst the *female* parent transmits the constitution, the internal organs, and the sympathetic nervous system. This may be mainly true, but the exceptions are so numerous that the rule is useless from a medico-legal point of view.

Lord Mansfield said, "I have always considered likeness as an argument of a child being the son of a parent." The decision in the Douglas Peerage case, in the summing up of which the above remark was made, was chiefly based on the the circumstance that the claimant (Archibald) was in features, gestures, and habits, like the father (Sir John Douglas), and his twin-brother (Sholto) like the mother (Lady Douglas). In the famous Tichborne case, there was strong evidence that the claimant was like the father of Arthur Orton in features, voice and figure. (*Case* 4.)

The true difficulty in such cases appears to be to gauge the exact value to be attached to evidence of this nature, the power of seeing likenesses being essentially peculiar.

However valuable evidence of likeness may be in proof of relationship, it is certain that the absence of likeness affords no evidence of non-relationship. (*Cases* 8, 10, 19, etc.)

In considering questions of likeness, there are three points specially deserving attention :—

(*α.*) That likeness, appearance, expression, etc., may be greatly altered by fatigue and hardships.*

(*β.*) That in considering identity, certain peculiarities, besides mere likeness, such as tricks of manner, modes of speech, left-handedness, handwriting, etc., demand special consideration. At the same time it is to be remembered (1) that children are essentially copyists, and copyists frequently of other than blood relatives, and (2) that peculiarities occasionally skip generations (atavism).

(γ.) Criminals are often great adepts at personal disguisement. Thus we are told that the famous Blackheath burglar (Charles Peace), who was tried and executed for the murder of Mr. Dyson (1879), had so remarkable a power of changing his features and altering his expression, that he was accustomed to face detectives who not only knew him well, but were actually seeking to arrest him at the time he was talking to them, and was moreover able to deceive his own wife and son as to his identity.

Passing from the identity of the living person to that of the dead body before putrefaction sets in, it is important to note that remarkable changes in the features take place, in many cases, within a very short time of death. (*Case 29.*)

We have already mentioned the fact that post-mortem changes may produce effects, which in the matter of likeness may serve to deceive those who knew the person well when alive.

* "Danger, long travel, want, and woe
Soon change the form that best we know ;
For deadly fear can time outgo,
And blanch at once the hair :
Hard toil can roughen form and face,
And want can quench the eye's bright grace,
Nor does old age a wrinkle trace
More deeply than despair."

SIR WALTER SCOTT.

VII. Congenital Peculiarities.—Hereditary Diseases.

These may often constitute the strongest possible evidence in proof or disproof of identity. Thus *moles* are sometimes transmitted through several generations. *Nævi materni* or *mother's marks*, are far more common than is generally supposed. (*Cases* 5, 10, 28, 29.)

It may be worth noting that nævi in newly born children, more especially when on the face and neck, may closely simulate marks of violence. (See "*Med. Gaz.*," Vol. XXXIX., p. 379, and Vol. XXXVII., p. 530.)

Polydactylism [2 Sam. xxi. 20; and 1 Chron. xx. 6], hypospadias, etc., are peculiarities frequently transmitted through many generations.

The rare circumstance of one iris having a different tint to the other, proved of importance in one case of doubtful identity. Such deformities, it may be worth noting, as hare-lip, cleft palate, etc., may not at first be detected where an operation has been successfully performed, and a luxuriant beard and moustache cultivated.

The existence of hereditary diseases may constitute evidence of some value in cases of identity. (*Case* 3.) Of these gout, phthisis, and syphilis, may be specially mentioned.*

VIII. Marks of the Hands and Feet.

Although foot-prints and the marks of boots and shoes are generally matters of police investigation, yet occasionally questions relating to them are referred to the medical jurist. This will be especially the case where anatomical peculiarities in the conformation of the feet or hands occur.

* "See what thy guilty love has done,
Repaid thee with too like a son."

BYRON.

"Fortes creantur fortibus et bonis :
Est in juvencis, est in equis patrum
Virtus : nec imbellem feroces,
Progenerant aquilæ columbam."

HORACE.

And here an important question presents itself, *viz.*, *what is the relation in size between footprints and the feet that produced them?* Some have contended that the impress made by a foot *always* corresponds in size with the foot. Others, as Mascar of Belgium and Caussé are of a different opinion, Mascar contending that the footprint is generally *smaller*, and Caussé that it is generally *larger* than the foot.

In comparing footprints it is to be noted that we may have to compare:

(1.) Footprints with the naked foot: or,

(2.) Footprints of a shooed foot with the boot worn at the time the footprint was made: or,

(3.) Footprints of a shooed foot with a boot belonging to the same person, but not the identical boot worn at the time.

It is certain that the evidence in this third case must be always unsatisfactory, the shape and size of different boots belonging to the same person varying greatly.

The author, as the result of numerous experiments, notes that footprints may be both larger and smaller than the boot or foot which produced them, the exact relationship in size being dependent on several causes:—

(1.) *The material on which the footprint occurs.* Thus in the case of an impress occurring in sand or in any material composed of minute, freely moveable particles, the footprint is usually smaller than the foot. In the case of *dry* sand, for instance, this is due to disturbed particles at the edge of the impress gradually falling in and filling up the cavity as the boot is being withdrawn. In the case of *moist* sand, an alteration in the size of the impress occurs so rapidly that it is scarcely possible, from the marks, to form an opinion of any value at all. It always appears, however, as a matter of fact, that in such case the impress is of *less* size than the foot.

Again, if the impression be made in *clay* or other material not composed of fine and free particles, the impress is invariably larger than the foot. And this appears to be due to the circumstance that in walking the foot is invariably lifted from the ground in the opposite direction to that in which it was placed upon it.

(2.) *The impress will depend on the shape of the boot or shoe worn.*—A boot having a sole with a bevelled edge produces a very different impress to one where the edges of the sole slope outwards: the former having a tendency to make the footprint smaller, and the latter larger than the boot. It will be evident from this (*a*) that if the boot worn be in any respect peculiar as regards shape or size, and the impress corresponds thereto, or if the impress indicates certain nails corresponding to those present in the boot, such evidence is important and satisfactory. But (*β*) that if a boot which is not the one worn at the time the impress was made be compared with a footprint, its correspondence is no positive evidence of identity, nor its non-correspondence of non-identity.

(3.) *The size of the impress will depend on the rapidity of progression.*—The impress for instance produced by the foot (naked or shooed) of a person running, is always smaller than that of the same person walking. And further, the impress of the foot of the same person standing, will be larger than either. The reason of this is manifest, viz.: that the size of the impress depends greatly on *the depth* of the impress, and the foot being less time in contact with the ground in running than in walking, produces a *less deep* and therefore a *smaller* impress.

(4.) *The extent of the impress will depend on the rapidity of progression and on the level of the ground.*—In a slow walk the impress more or less of the whole foot will probably be marked, whilst in running the mark of the heel will be less distinct, and that of the front of the foot more distinct, than in walking. Further, in going up hill there may only be slight evidence of the mark of the heel, although the mark of the ball of the foot may be very distinct; whilst in coming down hill, the impress of the whole foot, but especially of the heel, will generally be well defined.

(5.) *The character, shape, and size of the impress, will depend to a large extent on peculiarities of gait.*—And these peculiarities in comparing footprints should be most carefully noted, constituting as they do, important evidence. Thus some people, so soon as they put their foot on the ground, move it slightly

to one side or the other, thereby increasing the size of the whole impress; others move the heel only; others the front part of the foot and not the heel. The author has seen a case where from a peculiarity in moving the heel so soon as the foot was placed on the ground, there could scarcely be a possibility of mistaking a certain person's footprints amongst any number of other footprints.

(6.) Marks of blood may be found on the floor of an apartment, which it may be necessary to compare either with the naked foot of an accused, or with the boot he is supposed to have worn at the time. If a blood stain be found on the sole of a boot belonging to and worn by a prisoner, and corresponding marks be found on a floor, the evidence is important; but in the case of a naked foot, supposing the blood to have been washed off, and there be no peculiarities in the conformation of the foot and toes corresponding to the stain, the evidence of a blood impress on a floor can in itself be of very little value *re identity.*

(7.) The surroundings of all footprints should be carefully investigated. Thus in *Case* 11 certain blood stains found *on the left side of the footprints* constituted most important evidence in proving identity. Hence, in all such cases, the direction of stains, position of weapons, etc., compared with the footprints, should be recorded.

It may be necessary in some cases to take a cast of certain footprints to produce in evidence. As a rule such casts are difficult to take, and frequently not so satisfactory as one could wish. When the impressions occur in sand or in soft mud, M. Hougolin suggests first warming the marks by holding a live charcoal pan or hot iron over and near them, and then filling up the cavity thus heated, with powdered stearic acid (suggested by Sonnenschein), or with paraffin. A hot iron should then again be passed over the impress (taking care to be well outside the marks), then more paraffin put in, and the hot iron again applied. When cool, the paraffin may be removed, and a plaster cast taken from it.

I have frequently succeeded in taking plaster casts direct from sand, mud, etc., but where a single footstep is all that

exists, and the experiment therefore impossible to repeat, the former plan is preferable, as being the more certain of success if carefully performed.

In the case of blood stains on a floor, etc., it is better for purposes of evidence to remove intact the stained piece of board. If the blood stain cannot, however, be completely removed in this way, it should be carefully moistened by means of a soft broad brush, with a mixture of glycerine and water (1 to 10 of water), and an impression of the stains taken on thick unsized paper of rather rough texture.

Rules to be observed and questions considered in the examination of footprints, etc.

(1.) Note any special peculiarities in the conformation of the foot (*e.g.* bunions, etc.).

(2.) Note any special peculiarities in the boots supposed to have been worn when the impressions were made (*e.g.* unusual pieces of iron, nails, and any parts of the soles or heels worn away, indicating peculiarities of tread, etc.).

(3.) *Question.*—Do the impressions appear to correspond with the boots said to have been worn? (Be careful not to be misled by comparing a right-handed boot with a left-handed impress, or *vice versâ*. Specially compare all peculiarities.)

(4.) Note—

(α.) *The material on which the impressions occur* (*e.g.*, sand, clay, etc.)

(β.) *The exact shape of the impressions.* Is the heel well marked or not? Endeavour from this to draw some conclusion as to whether the person was standing, walking or running. Note any signs in the footprints indicating peculiarities of gait.

(γ.) *The level of the ground on which the impressions occur.*

(5.) If there be any marks of blood on the ground, do they correspond or not to marks found on the soles of the boots?

(6.) Take (if possible) casts of the impressions for evidence. Preserve the blood stains, or take impressions of them on paper.

(7.) Note all the surrounding of the footprints (such as stains, weapons, etc.,) and their position in relation to the footprints.

IX. Cicatrices (Scars) and Tattoo Marks.

(A.) Cicatrices.

A cicatrix results from a layer of white fibrous or connective tissue (known as cicatricial tissue) being formed between the cut, torn, or otherwise severed surfaces of a wound. The tissue of an old cicatrix becomes in the course of time very dense, but it is never converted into true skin. It contains neither sebaceous follicles, adipose cells, nor hairs, and but few absorbents, blood-vessels, or nerves. Further, it never acquires a "rete mucosum," and hence contains no pigment cells. (*Dupuytren* and *Delpech.*) A scar on a negro is, therefore, more or less colourless, and, as a rule, very apparent by contrast with the dark coloured skin.

The poor supply of blood-vessels to cicatricial tissue explains why the marks of a cicatrix may often be rendered more distinct, and even visible when almost faded, by first of all compressing the skin firmly (preferably as Foderé suggests with a cold pewter plate), and suddenly removing the pressure. The blood then rushes into the sound skin, leaving the tissue of the scar, into which it does not enter, conspicuously white by contrast with the surrounding redness. A similar result may be obtained by vigorously slapping the part where a cicatrix exists, or by rubbing it briskly with the hand, when the whiteness of the scar is rendered conspicuous by the slight redness induced in the sound skin.—(See paper on "The Structure of Cicatrices," by Mr. Henry Gray, "*Trans. of the Path. Soc.*," II., p. 289.)

The presence or absence of scars frequently constitutes important evidence in medico-legal cases. (*Cases* 1 to 5*a*, 16 to 19.)

If scars be present, their probable cause and the length of time they have existed—in other words, the period that has elapsed since the wounds which caused them were inflicted—will be questions asked of the medical jurist.

If they be not present, the question may then arise whether they can, and how they may, be removed artificially, or whether they may disappear naturally.

In deciding questions of identity from the presence of scars, the possibility of fraud must always be borne in mind. Moreover, it is possible for two people to have similar cicatrices. (See *Case* 16.) Thus, in 1794, a case occurred in France, where a man named Lesurgues was executed for a murder, the proof of his identity depending for the most part on certain scars on the hand and forehead. His innocence was afterwards established, the real man who confessed to the murder being found to have similar cicatrices to the man executed. For these reasons the medical jurist must note with the minutest precision, the situation, colour, shape (design), and exact nature of all scars submitted to him for report.

The following questions must be considered :—

1. Does a wound necessarily leave a cicatrix?
2. How far can the *period at which a wound was inflicted* be inferred from the *appearance* of a cicatrix?
3. How far can the *nature of a wound* be inferred from the *character* of the cicatrix?
4. How far can *the extent of a wound* be inferred from the *size* of the cicatrix?
5. Can a cicatrix be obliterated either by time or by artificial means?

1. *Does a wound necessarily leave a cicatrix?*

A scar inevitably results from a wound involving loss of substance.

Further, it must be remembered that scars are more distinct in the dark than in the fair, and when they occur over a blue vein than in the white flesh.

No scars may result from slight punctures, where the surface of the skin only has been pierced, such as by the prick of a lancet, or the bite of a leech. Again, the scar arising from a perfectly

clean cut with a sharp instrument (more particularly if in the direction of the muscular fibres), the surfaces being immediately afterwards brought into contact, may be so slight, narrow, and uniform (often nothing more than a fine white line) as to escape notice even on close examination.

If then on examining a part alleged to have been recently wounded, we are unable to find any signs of a cicatrix, we should be justified in stating that the probabilities are altogether against a wound of any kind having ever been inflicted, but that at any rate it is certain there had been no wound involving loss of substance. (*Case 2.*)

A scar may affect the epidermis alone, and not the cutis. If then no signs of a scar are visible on a dead body where putrefaction has set in and the skin commenced to peal, we should be cautious in concluding that no scar existed during life.

2. *How far can the period at which a wound was inflicted be inferred from the appearance of a cicatrix?*

In the case of a simple incised wound of no great extent, and in tissues of active vitality, cicatrization is usually complete in from fourteen to twenty days. Rapidity of cicatrization, however, is dependent on many causes, such as:—

(*α.*) *The extent of the wound.*—The more extensive a wound, and particularly if the structures involved be several and complicated, the less rapid is cicatrization.

(*β.*) *The nature of the wound.*—Cicatrization is often complete, as we have said in the case of a simple incised wound, in about a fortnight, but if the parts be contused and lacerated, or if there be actual loss of substance, then the healing process will proceed by granulation, and occupy a very much longer time.

(*γ.*) *The position of the wound.*—Thus wounds of the lower extremities heal and cicatrize more slowly than wounds of the upper extremities. Wounds where the absolute rest of the parts can be insured heal more rapidly than wounds on parts (such as near a joint) where a slight and constant motion is almost inevitable.

(*δ.*) *The age and health of the Patient.*—Thus cicatrization is

less rapid in the old than in the young, and in the diseased than in the healthy.

It is necessary here briefly to note the three stages through which a cicatrix passes:—

(1.) A recent cicatrix is soft, tender, and *pink*, or, at any rate redder than the surrounding skin.

(2.) After one or two months or more, the precise time being dependent on the various circumstances mentioned above, the cicatrix becomes harder, less tender, and of a *brownish white* tint (brown discoloration).

(3.) As the age of the scar increases, it becomes less and less sensitive, hard and thick, *white* and shining. These latter are the characteristics of an old cicatrix, but it is impossible to fix the period of their development. When the scars are fully developed, they undergo little change, except that they have a tendency (independently of their original shape) to become more and more linear.

Given, then, a hard, *white*, glistening, non-sensitive cicatrix, although it is difficult to give a *positive* opinion whether the original wound had been inflicted six months or six years before, a *negative* opinion may safely be given that the scar did not result from a wound inflicted two, three, or even four weeks previously.

Given, a *brown* cicatrix, we are scarcely in a position to give a very definite opinion.

Given, a soft, *red*, tender cicatrix, we may say that the chances are against its being of long standing. The various influencing conditions (such as the age, the health of the patient, the probable extent and nature of the wound, etc.) must, in such cases, be carefully considered.

It will be evident, from what we have said, that it is very difficult to fix the date of a wound merely from the appearance of the scar. But if a description of an alleged injury, of the instrument causing it, and of the date when it was said to have been inflicted, be referred to the medical jurist, he should, in most cases, be able to say if the appearances presented by the cicatrix be consistent or inconsistent with the alleged cause and date. (*Case* 1.)

3. *How far can the nature of a wound be inferred from the character of the cicatrix?*

It may be remarked generally that the shape and character of cicatrices depend as much, and often more, on the structure of the part wounded—that is, whether the skin and tissues underneath be tense or loose—than on the actual character of the wound. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1840, I., 430.)

It will be convenient here to consider in order the character of scars resulting respectively from (α) Accident, (β) Surgical operations, and (γ) Disease.

(α.) *Scars the result of Accident.*

The cicatrices of a straight incised wound involving no loss of tissue, is usually rectilinear. If a wound occurs on a part where the skin is tense, the resulting scar is usually widest in the centre, that being the last part to heal, owing to the elasticity of the skin preserving at this point a greater distance between the surfaces. If the wound occurs in a part where the skin is loose (as in the groin) the cicatrix is, as a rule, perfectly rectilinear.

The cicatrix of an oblique wound is usually more or less semilunar.

The cicatrices of incised wounds, involving loss of substance, or of contused or lacerated wounds, are usually irregular in outline, the surfaces of the scars being depressed, and more or less puckered and uneven. A depressed cicatrix may be taken to indicate a loss of substance of the true skin. The shape of a cicatrix, further, often indicates the weapon used to inflict the wound; although, considering the contraction that commonly occurs during the healing process and the consequent puckering, considerable caution must be exercised in drawing positive conclusions from shape only.

The cicatrix of a stab is commonly triangular. It must be remembered that the cicatrix is usually smaller than the stab wound, and that the stab wound is usually smaller than the instrument causing it.

The cicatrix of a bullet wound, where the pistol was fired *near* the body, is large, deep, and irregular, the chances being that tattoo marks, practically indelible, will be found in the tissue

around (*see* p. 189). These are due to particles of gunpowder being carried at the time of the explosion under the skin. If the pistol was fired *at a distance* from the person, the cicatrix of the wound is usually a depressed disc, regular in shape and smaller than the ball which caused it. If the ball has passed through the body, whereby two skin wounds result, the cicatrix of the wound of exit is always larger and more irregular than the wound of entrance. ("*Ed. Monthly Journ.*," 1854, Vol. X., p. 370.)

The cicatrix of a burn will vary somewhat with the form of the heated body applied, whilst the regularity and contraction of the scar will depend on the extent and depth of the burn. If the burn be deep, the cicatrix will be deep with rounded edges: If the burn be extensive, the resulting contraction is often so extensive that considerable deformity will result, however diligent the surgeon may be in his endeavours to prevent it. If no skin be actually destroyed, the burn may then leave little or no scar. Thus the cicatrix of a burn may vary from nothing to almost any extent.* (See *Case* 17.)

The cicatrix resulting from the application of a caustic, will depend on the caustic used, and the method adopted in its application. Such scars have usually regular edges, but this will vary (as in the case of burns) almost in an unlimited degree. (*Malle in* "*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1840, I., 422, and *Güterbock* in "*Vierteljahrss.*," 1873, II., 84.)

Scars from flogging usually appear as faint white lines extending between little circular pits marking the position of the knots of the lash.

(*β.*) *Scars the result of surgical operations.*

Surgical operations for the most part leave indelible scars. (*Case* 18.)

Marks of bleeding are white and linear, their length being in the direction of the vein. If the operation has been performed properly the scar is oblique. The medical jurist, in deciding that a given scar is due to bleeding, must consider whether it is

* English deserters in the army formerly had a D branded on them, and French deserters the letters TF (travaux forcés.) These marks were very permanent.

in such a position (as the bend of the elbow) where the operation was likely to have been performed.

The presence or absence of marks of previous bleedings may constitute important evidence in cases of identity. (*Case* 9.)

Marks of cupping usually present themselves as a series of small white symmetrical cicatrices.

The cicatrix of an issue is single, round, and depressed.

The cicatrix of a seton is double, each mark being linear, with a band of lymph connecting the two lines.

Blisters, as a rule, leave no scars, their action being superficial. If, however, they have resulted, as they occasionally do, in suppuration and destruction of the part to which they are applied, marks depending on the extent of the damage effected may result.

The cicatrix of vaccination is an irregular, flat, slightly depressed, honeycombed scar.

(γ.) *Scars the result of disease.*

Ulcers leave scars behind them. The cicatrices of *scrofulous ulcers* are irregular and deeply furrowed, with hard and uneven edges. When recent they appear flat, but raised above the skin, and of a bluish red colour. They are usually very thin and easily injured. The cicatrix of a *syphilitic abscess* is usually very deep on account of the great loss of substance common in such cases. It is difficult to describe the general character of the cicatrices of different ulcers, so much depending on their locality—that is whether the tissue involved be loose or dense.

Small-pox scars are deep and irregular, and occupy a place much below the level of the skin.

And here we may make one or two general observations touching the inferences to be drawn respecting the nature of a wound from the character of the cicatrix.

Occasionally we are able by the peculiar appearance of the scar, to say without question the nature of the injury which caused it.

More frequently we must content ourselves with giving an opinion whether the scar in question has been the result of injury or of disease. Case 3 (Smyth *v.* Smyth) illustrates the possible medico-legal importance involved in an opinion of this nature.

In deciding this latter point we must consider not only the *general characters* of the cicatrix, but its *locality*. Thus a scar in the inguinal region suggests a syphilitic abscess:—a scar in the neck, or in the course of the parotid (especially if neighbouring glands be enlarged) suggests a strumous abscess rather than violence. A scar from an ordinary venesection will probably be found at the bend of the elbow, whilst that caused by an issue or a seton will most likely be found about the shoulder or nape of the neck.

4. *How far can the extent of the wound inflicted be inferred from the size of the cicatrix?*

The cicatrix of a wound in the case of an adult (that is of one who has done growing) is smaller than the wound that caused it, contraction of the skin taking place during the healing process. Further, as the age of a cicatrix increases, it is disposed to decrease in size, and to become thicker and whiter. But the cicatrix of a wound on a child increases in size (*pari passu*) with the growth of the body. Thus a small vaccination scar in an infant, frequently becomes a cicatrix of considerable size in the adult. A case is recorded by Mr. Adams where the cicatrix resulting from an operation on an infant, doubled in length and width between the ages of 1 and 19. Similarly, as the result of removing a small nævus from the head of an infant, a bald patch of considerable size is commonly found on the adult. (See *Paget's Lectures on Pathology*, Vol. I., p. 49; "*British Medical Journal*," 1873, II., p. 683, Lecture by Mr. W. Adams.)

5. *Can a cicatrix be obliterated either by time or by artificial means?*

There is plenty of evidence to show that scars resulting from slight incised or punctured wounds,—that is, where the epidermis only has been injured,—or from punctures or cuts which if they have penetrated the cutis have involved no loss of substance, *may* disappear in time. They do not, however, necessarily nor do they invariably disappear. Casper states that the marks of bleeding may entirely disappear, and moreover that he has known cases where the marks of the scarificator have been obliterated after from two to three years. ("*Gerich. Med.*," Vol. I., p. 113.) Devergie doubts this statement, but admits that the

marks become less intense by time. ("*Méd. Légale*," Vol. II., p. 217.) Guy refers to two cases, where the scars of the lancet were distinct after nearly 60 years. The author has seen marks of bleeding which had been performed 26, 30, and even 50 years previously. He also knows of cases of similar marks in young persons that have entirely disappeared within 12 years. In a case under Dr. Turner's care at the London Hospital, there were distinct linear cicatrices one inch long on each side of the spine, resulting from issues (peas) made 30 years previously. There were also cupping marks that, from the statement of the patient, must have been at least 30 years old.

Ogston affirms positively ("*Med. Juris.*," p. 60) that he has known all trace of chancres disappear in six weeks! Of course such cases are extraordinarily exceptional. (*Casper*, Vol. I., p. 103.)

It may be worth noting that the intensity of a cicatrix varies greatly with the health of the individual. This fact may be important in explaining certain apparently contradictory statements respecting a given scar, one person asserting it to be perfectly distinct, and another scarcely visible. The author knows the case of an old cicatrix of a boil, which, although barely visible under ordinary circumstances, becomes exceedingly well marked, and even raised above the level of the skin, when the patient is suffering from dyspepsia. If a scar results from a skin disease or from a wound involving loss of substance —as, *e.g.*, a wound that has healed by suppuration and granulation (that is, otherwise than by the first intention)—it is very doubtful if the scar can be ever obliterated, although it may undergo certain changes which result in its becoming less distinct. Thus vaccination, small-pox, setons, and issues leave marks which are invariably permanent. In *Case* 17 it was contended that a scar from a burn with a red-hot iron might be obliterated by time. This statement is entirely contrary to the experience of most observers. The reason of the non-disappearance of scars is, according to Mr. W. Adams, twofold—(1) that although the cicatricial tissue is of low organisation, nevertheless it is sufficiently organised to maintain itself; and (2) that cicatricial tissue is so different in its characters to other tissues that

it is incapable of amalgamation with them. (*See "Brit. Med. Journ.,"* 1873, II., 683.)

Mr. B. Squire has referred to a method of removing a nævus by scarifying it with parallel and cross incisions, the skin being first of all frozen with ether spray. He remarks that these multiple linear scarifications are very slightly visible when the cure is complete. (*"Brit. Med. Journ.,"* 1878, I., 865.)

(B.) TATTOOING.

The operation of tattooing consists in first pricking the skin deeply, and afterwards rubbing into the punctures a colouring body of some kind or another. Sometimes the instrument used (which generally consists of two or three sewing needles mounted in a piece of cork and bound round with thread to within a short distance of their points) is dipped into the colouring solution or mixture before each puncture is made.* The process results in a considerable amount of inflammation, which commonly lasts a fortnight or more. In about six weeks after the operation, the cuticle scales off, and at the end of two months or thereabouts, the skin assumes its normal character, marked with the various devices suggested by the ingenuity of the operator.

Tattoo marks may be caused *accidentally*. Thus in the case of an injury occurring under circumstances whereby colouring materials (as coal-dust, etc.) find their way into a wound, a tattoo mark is almost certain to result, unless great care be taken to effect the removal of the foreign body. (*Case* 25.) Under such conditions, the tattooes are of course, irregular in shape and outline.

Again, in a gunshot wound, when the pistol has been fired near the person, a tattoo of minute and scattered dots of a bluish colour is of constant occurrence, the carbonaceous particles being driven into the skin by the force of the explosion. From the more complete combustion of the carbon particles in modern powder, owing to improved manufacture, the absence of tattoo

* It is said that the Australians make deep incisions, and rub clay into them in order to elevate the tattoo.

marks can scarcely now-a-days be regarded as certain proof that a shot had not been fired close to the person. ("*London Med. Rev.*," 1878, p. 357.)

Again, it often happens in coal mine explosions, that particles of coal are so driven into the cutis as to effect a perfect tattoo (*see Index*). I have further seen a well marked tattoo produced by scratches with a steel pen;—also in the case of printers from the use of a carbon ink;—and lastly, in chimney sweeps from soot finding its way into wounds or cracks in the skin.

It may here be mentioned that four cases are recorded of death resulting from the after consequences of the operation. ("*Ann. d' Hyg.*," 1870, Vol. II., p. 464.)

A series of cases is also on record where the operation of tattooing resulted in the transmission of syphilis. (*Case* 22.)

The presence or absence of tattoo marks, as in the famous Tichborne case (*Case* 4), often constitutes important evidence in questions of identity. The exact design is moreover at all times worth noting, special marks being chosen by the lower classes for special trades.

In considering this subject the following questions suggest themselves:—

1. *How far is it possible for tattoo marks to become obliterated by time?*

That they may disappear is fully proved:—

Casper ("*Forensic Med.*," Vol. I., p. 106) found that in four of 37 cases the marks entirely disappeared, in two they partially disappeared, and in three they became generally less distinct by time.

Hutin ("*Recherches sur les tatouages*") found that in 47 of 509 cases the marks entirely disappeared in periods varying from 28 to 60 years, whilst in 117 a partial obliteration occurred in periods varying from 10 to 64 years. In the remaining 345 cases there were no signs of fading, although some had been done over 60 years.

Tardieu ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1855, p. 171) found that in four of 76 cases, the marks had entirely disappeared. In two of these cases, where the tattooing had been done with vermilion, the

marks disappeared after 30 years, whilst in the other two, where Indian ink had been used, 45 and 60 years elapsed respectively, before the obliteration was complete.

We have thus ten years as the *minimum* period when tattoo marks are recorded to have faded.

Seeing in how very few cases tattoo marks become obliterated, the question follows :—

2. *What are the circumstances under which tattoo marks are likely to undergo natural obliteration?*

The permanence of tattoo marks is specially dependent on two conditions :—

(*a.*) *The efficiency of the operation.*

If merely the surface of the cutis be penetrated, the marks are far more likely to fade than if the punctures be carried into the substance of the true skin. In other words, the more completely the colouring matter is encysted in or below the substance of the cutis, the less likely it is to fade. It will be evident from this that a tattoo on a thin-skinned person, is more likely to disappear than on a thick-skinned. If the operation be well performed, a tattooed skin may, after death, be macerated in water for an almost indefinite time without the tattoo marks being affected. ("*Ann d'Hyg.*," 1855, Vol. I., 194.) Nor even (so insoluble is the colouring compound formed) does any solvent seem to influence the marks. Indeed, the removal of the cuticle by spirit, water, or other liquid, rather seems to strengthen than to lessen the intensity of the tattoo. (*Rayer* and *Tardieu.*) Hence, after death, the separation of the cuticle by putrefaction, does not interfere with an efficient tattoo.

(*β.*) *The colouring matter employed.*—Vermilion, indigo, and Prussian blue are the colours most disposed to fade. Cinnabar and common ink rank next in permanence, whilst cobalt and ultramarine, but above all carbonaceous materials, such as Indian and China inks, soot, coal-dust, gunpowder, &c. (all of which produce a bluish-black tattoo), are by far the most permanent.*

Of 120 cases of vermilion tattooes examined by the author

* The New Zealander is said to use for tattooing the resin of the Kauri pine, mixed with a red earth. ("*Lancet*," 1872, I., p. 341.)

(in conjunction with the late Dr. Woodman), there were evident signs of fading in 16, whilst in 156 cases, where some variety of carbonaceous matter, such as China ink or gunpowder had been employed, they were unable in a single case, judging from their own observations and from the history given them by the person to discover any indications that the marks had faded since the operation had been performed.

It may here be noted that in the experience of the author the colour produced by taking nitrate of silver is absolutely indelible.

It has been remarked by Follin and Professor Meckel that the colouring matter used in tattooing, even after the natural obliteration of a tattoo, may frequently be discovered in the contiguous absorbent glands. (*Confer.* "*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1870, Vol. II., p. 453, and 1872, Vol. I., p. 423.) Casper confirms this statement, and quotes seven cases in proof. (*Casper*, Vol. I., p. 107.) In the whole of these seven cases, it is worthy of note, cinnabar was the colouring matter employed. Meckel, however, records having found the charcoal used in the operation in the contiguous lymphatic glands. It may, therefore, be worth while in a post-mortem, where a question arises as to the previous existence of a tattoo, to examine the glands in the region where the tattoo was supposed to have existed for colouring matters.

(3.) *Can tattoo marks be obliterated by artificial means?*

They can;—but they cannot, the author believes, be effaced without leaving scars, the result of the means adopted for their removal. For to effect the object in view, substances (such as cantharides, tartar-emetic ointment, etc.) capable of producing suppuration and actual destruction of the skin must be employed. Thus in *Case* 20 a carbonaceous tattoo was said to have been effaced, the prisoner informing Tardieu that the process he adopted, which was successful in six days, was first applying to the skin a paste of lard and acetic acid, afterwards rubbing the parts with potash, and lastly with dilute hydrochloric acid. Tardieu by experiment proved that the process described would answer the purpose. He further states (what in my opinion needs verification) that no trace of the design was afterwards

visible. I have myself operated similarly in two cases, but in both there were distinct signs of the original designs, although so far as the removal of the colour was concerned the results were perfect. In *Case* 21 the partial obliteration of a China ink tattoo was effected by the application of a white-hot iron, sufficient marks remaining to allow of its identification. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1872, Vol. I., p. 423.) It is said that slight tattoos, such as would be produced by pen-and-ink scratches, may be removed by the application of pure carbolic acid. ("*Lancet*," March 30 and April 6, 1872.)

It may be noted here that a fatal case is said to have resulted from an attempt to remove a tattoo by escharotics. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1855, I., p. 199.)

It is a curious fact that many sailors at the present time seem strongly impressed with the belief that the removal of tattoo marks may be effected by binding upon them a fresh sole-skin. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1880, I., p. 721.)

It has been stated that tattoo marks in the young may be obliterated by an attack of confluent small-pox or other severe eruptive disease, where the eruption has affected the parts scarred and the region around. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1871, II., p. 532.)

In examining a part supposed to have been tattooed, a brisk rub of the skin will often render marks apparent that were previously invisible. This plan was successfully adopted by Leroy. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1870, Vol. II., p. 460.) We need scarcely add that this method will be useless after the death of the person.

Summing up the views of the author as the result of the examination of some hundred tattoo marks on persons of different age, sex, and nationality, he believes that if the operation be efficiently performed, and some carbonaceous material or cobalt or ultramarine be employed as the colouring matter, the marks are in an overwhelming proportion of cases indelible, and that even if they do fade, they never entirely disappear. Further, that when vermilion, indigo, or Prussian blue have been used, the marks may be (although they rarely are) obliterated by time. Under any circumstances, however, if artificial means have been adopted to effect the removal of a

tattoo, such means are certain to leave cicatrices indicative of some process having been used for the purpose.

Rules for the Examination of Scars, etc.

If the scars be difficult of detection it will be advisable before examination to enquire definitely :—

1. Is it certain that the person was originally scarred or tattooed ?
2. If so, at what age was the scar seen for certain ?
3. With what instrument was the wound causing the scar said to have been inflicted ?
4. Was the wound a deep or a superficial one ?
5. If a tattoo, what was the colouring matter employed ?

Examine with a lens the spot said to have been scarred. (A bright light should be allowed to fall on the part obliquely.)

If no scar be visible, rub the part briskly, or apply firm pressure, or adopt such other means as will redden the sound skin (page 180).

Note—

(α.) *Number of scars.*

(β.) *Size of each scar.* (Measure each scar with compasses.)

(γ.) *Situation* (*e.g.*, the temple, arm or ankle, [suggestive of venesection,] the shoulder or nape of neck, [suggestive of an issue,] etc.).

(δ.) *Form* (*e.g.*, linear, etc., or of irregular or regular outline).

(ε.) *General Appearance* (rough or smooth).

(ζ.) *Colour* (white, brown, or red).

(η.) *Consistency* (soft or hard, thin or thick).

(θ.) *Condition* (painful or the reverse).

(ι.) *Relation to surrounding skin* (raised or depressed).

(κ.) *Character of surrounding tissues* (loose or dense).

Are the scars such as might have resulted from wounds inflicted at or about the time alleged ?

In the case of tattoo marks note :—

(α.) *Part tattooed.*

(β.) *Colouring matter used.*

(γ.) *Design.*

X. Hair and Fibres. (See Plate I.)

(For further drawings of hairs see "*Woodman & Tidy's Handy-book of Forensic Medicine*," Plates vi. and vii.)

The microscopic examination and identification of hairs and fibres have many times led to the conviction of criminals. (*Cases* 35, 41, 57 to 63.)

Hairs found on the mutilated portions of a skull, or near remains believed to be human, or on a weapon supposed to have caused the death, or clutched in the hands or found on the clothes of a deceased person (the question then being their similarity to the hair of the *accused*), or found on the clothes or person of the accused (the question then being their similarity to the hair of the *deceased*), are some of the cases that the medical jurist may be called upon to investigate.

Again, fibres of different kinds and colours may be found on the weapons supposed to have caused the death, or on the person of the accused, and the question may then arise whether they correspond or not with fibres taken from articles of clothing worn by the deceased at the time of the murder. (*Cases* 58, 59, 60.)

Hairs may frequently be found embedded in blood on a weapon that has been used with murderous violence. Hence, all blood spots, and more especially the edges of the spots, should, in the first instance, be examined with a large hand magnifying lens for hair, fibres, etc., before being otherwise treated. If such be found, the blood spot should be digested in distilled water, and the hair or fibre removed intact for microscopic examination.

It is, however, possible for hairs to be discovered on weapons used with murderous violence, without any blood being found upon them. Thus, such an instrument as a hammer might cause a contusion with fatal fracture of the skull, and yet no blood but an abundance of hair be present.

And here it may be noted, that in examining an instrument such as a hammer or a hatchet for hairs, special search should be made at the spot where the iron head joins the wooden handle,

and particularly at points where the wood is found to be splintered. For here the hairs will probably be tightly secured, and what is more, supposing the instrument to have been afterwards washed and cleansed to destroy suspicion, they are the parts where the hairs are the most likely to escape removal, and the weapon effective cleansing.

In cases of rape the examination of the hairs about the female genitals may reveal the existence of spermatozoa, which cling to them with remarkable tenacity, even to resisting ordinary washing, unless performed before the seminal secretion has had time to dry. In such case those hairs should be selected for examination that appear stiffened and massed together (*Sonnenschein*). Moreover, loose hairs corresponding to those of the accused may be found on the victim, and hairs corresponding to those of the victim on the accused, and furnish material evidence.

Further, in cases of bestiality, some of the hairs of the animal will invariably be found adhering to the clothes or person of the prisoner.

In all cases, except where the hairs are being examined for adherent spermatozoa, they should first of all be washed in water, then thoroughly dried, afterwards steeped for some time in turpentine, and finally mounted in Canada Balsam. In ordinary cases they should be examined with a magnifying power of about 200 diameters. Indeed, in the microscopic examination of hairs and fibres, a low power is as a rule preferable to a high one, because it permits the use of polarized light, which is often of great service in such investigations.*

One general remark may be made here. The comparison of hair with hair, or of fibre with fibre, as to form, colour, length, breadth, etc., yields at all times more valuable evidence, and furnishes data for more exact conclusions, than mere detailed information respecting the microscopical characters of an individual hair or fibre. Hence the actual comparison of the hair in question with hair actually removed from the person

* To examine hairs for spermatozoa, moisten the hair first of all with a drop of ammonia solution, and examine under a microscope after the liquid has evaporated.



Bone

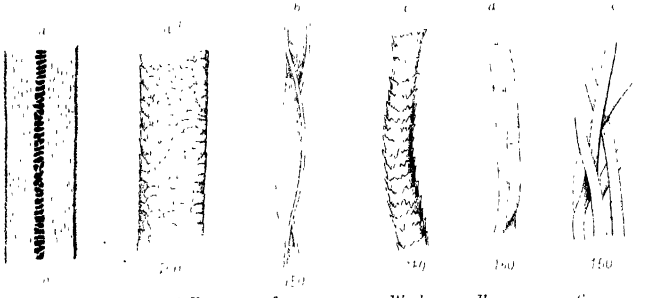


Blood Discs



Hydrochlorate of Hæmatin Hæmin

HAIRS &c



Human *Surface of Human hair* *Cotton* *Wool* *Hemp* *Coir*



Jute

to whom it is suspected to belong, should, in all medico-legal cases, be aimed at.

I have found it convenient to keep a series of hairs of different animals, ready mounted, for purposes of comparison. This is preferable to trusting (however familiar we may be with their characters and appearance) either to memory or plates.

We shall consider the subject of hairs and fibres, and such medico-legal questions as may suggest themselves, in the following order:—

1. The structure of, and the effects of reagents upon, hair.
2. Is a certain material submitted for examination hair, or is it some fibre or other not hair?
3. The measurements of the hair of different animals, and of the hair from different parts of the human body, and from individuals of different age and sex.
4. If a hair submitted for examination be not human, from what animal has it been derived?
5. Has the hair, in a given case, been lately cut or shaved, or has it been torn out violently by the roots?
6. The colour of a given specimen of hair.—Has it changed its colour naturally, or has it been subjected to a dyeing process?
7. May the hair grow after death?
8. The evidence to be derived from the chemical analysis of the hair in cases of poisoning.

(1.) *The structure of, and the effects of reagents upon, hair.*

Hairs are appendages secreted by the skin—in fact, modified epidermic formations. Each hair is embedded in a depression in the skin (*a hair follicle*), and is fixed at the bottom of the follicle by a dilatation of the hair itself (*the bulb*). The portion above the bulb and within the follicle is termed *the root*, and the projecting portion *the shaft.*

Fœtal hairs are completely shed after birth, the new hairs that replace them being formed in the old follicles.

Hair resists putrefaction in a remarkable manner, its micro-

scopic appearance remaining well marked after an almost unlimited period of time.

(*a.*) *Structure.*—A human hair under the microscope appears to be (although really it is not) tubular—that is, it presents a light centre surrounded by dark sides.

The *outer* or *cortical* part is fibrous in structure, and appears dotted or striated. It gives to the hair both its firmness and colour. Treated with sulphuric acid, it breaks up at first into fibres, but ultimately into spindle-shaped, flattened, angular, nucleated cells (1-300th to 1-500th inch long, and 1-2000th to 1-6000th inch broad), containing pigment granules (1-50,000th inch diameter) to which the colour of the hair is due.

The *inner* or *medullary* portion of the hair consists of granular, nucleated cells (1-1000th to 1-2000th inch diameter), angular or rounded in form, and arranged linearly. They contain air. This causes them to appear black by transmitted, and white by reflected light. The black appearance presented by the medullary portion when seen by transmitted light, was the origin of the old notion that the colour of the hair was dependent on the medulla, and that the cells were pigment cells.

The whole hair is surrounded by a cuticular coat consisting of flat epithelial scales. The well-marked characteristics of the hairs of different animals depend in great measure on varieties in the arrangement of this cuticular investment.

The hairs frequently found within encysted tumours, in ovarian cysts, and in the stomach, have in all respects the normal structure of hair.

(*β.*) *Effects of Reagents.*—Hair is roughened by the action of acids. Alkalies produce a similar effect, although they restore the colour of hair bleached by acids. Strong alkalies dissolve hair. Alcohol renders hair more or less transparent, but does not effect solution. Soaked in chlorine water or subjected to the action of the gas, hair becomes rotten and more or less disintegrated.

(2.) *Is a certain material submitted for examination hair, or some fibre or other not hair?*

The microscopical and chemical peculiarities of a few of the

more common materials with which hair is likely to be confused may be noted here, and in passing it may be said that the characteristics to be described scarcely undergo the slightest change after the lapse of centuries. (See Plate I.)

(*a.*) **Cotton** (*the Hairs from the epidermis of certain seeds*).

Cotton fibres consist of flattened bands, with thickened borders, twisted or spiral. This flattening depends on the cells collapsing when dry, from the absence of a regular thickening layer.

(*b.*) **Linen** (*the liber fibres from the stems of the flax plant*).

Linen consists of round fibres having a woody and firm consistency preventing collapse, with jointed markings at unequal distances (from pitting of the cell wall) and tapering to points. Boiled with nitric acid, they exhibit a very oblique and close striation.

(*c.*) **Silk** (*a substance secreted by the glandular organs* [spinning organs] *of certain insects*).

Silk under the microscope appears as solid, cylindrical or somewhat flattened fibres, the boundary lines being well defined. They are free from markings of all kinds, and refract light powerfully.

Test for silk.—Linen and cotton are not coloured by Millon's* or Schultze's test, whilst silk is.

(*d.*) **Wool** (*a variety of hair found in certain of the Ruminantia*).

Wool in certain respects closely resembles hair, but is usually softer, more flexible, and wavy. The fibres are of irregular and unequal thickness. The cortical cells are exceedingly distinct, the cortex in some cases presenting characteristic markings.

[This is the usual appearance of the fibres of cloth, shoddy, alpaca, merino, &c.]

(*e.*) **Hemp** (*the liber fibres of the* cannabis sativa).

The fibres of hemp resemble flax, but are of a coarser nature. Boiled with nitric acid they exhibit no spiral streaks, but swell and become brittle.

* *Millon's Test Liquid* is a strongly acid solution of the mercuric and mercurous nitrates. The following substances *are turned red* by it, viz., albumen, chondrin, epidermis, feathers, fibrin, gelatine, horn, *silk*, etc. The following (if pure) *are not coloured* by it, viz., cellulin, *cotton*, gum, *linen*, etc.

(*f.*) **Jute** (*the liber of an East Indian plant,* corchorus capsularis). **Bast** (*the liber of the lime tree*).

Both jute and bast exhibit a clearly vegetable structure, and consist of long glossy fibres with blunt ends. The walls are thinner than in the case of flax fibres. Boiled with nitric acid, no spiral streaks become visible.

(*g.*) **Coir** (*the fibrous tissue of the husk of the cocoa-nut*).

This material is usually found in the form of bundles of small fibres, each fibre having a blunt end. The fibres are perfectly plain and free from all markings. When boiled with nitric acid they exhibit wide and open cross markings.

(3.) *The measurements of the hairs of different animals, and of the hairs from different parts of the human body, and from individuals of different age, sex, and race.*

Hairs from different parts of the human body, as well as from different individuals of the same species, vary considerably in size. This will be seen from the following table, chiefly taken from Dr. Emil Pfaff's work "*Das Menschliche Haar, etc.*" Leipsic, 1866, quoted by Sonnenschein. The originals have been reduced to fractions of an English inch.

	Fractions of Inch.
Down (lanugo) from a suckling...	$\frac{1}{333}$ to $\frac{1}{250}$.
Down (lanugo) from a young girl's arm	$\frac{1}{1000}$.
Down (lanugo) from the upper lip of a woman ...	$\frac{1}{1428}$.
Down of beard (iulus)	$\frac{1}{1000}$.
Hair from a woman's head (capilli)	$\frac{1}{434}$.
Hair from female pubes	$\frac{1}{1000}$.
Hair from a man's head (capilli)	$\frac{1}{333}$.
Hair from axilla	$\frac{1}{1000}$.
Hair from male pubes	$\frac{1}{250}$.
Hair from the eyelashes of a man	$\frac{1}{666}$.
Eyebrows	$\frac{1}{200}$.
Hair from nostrils (vibrissæ)	$\frac{1}{333}$.
Hair of moustache (mystax)	$\frac{1}{200}$ to $\frac{1}{181}$.
Hair from the ears (tragi)	$\frac{1}{555}$.
Hair from the arm of a man	$\frac{1}{1000}$ to $\frac{1}{666}$.
Hair from a man's hand...	$\frac{1}{370}$.

	Fractions of Inch.
Pig's bristle	$\frac{1}{100}$.
Hair of fallow deer	$\frac{1}{280}$.
Hair of horse	$\frac{1}{240}$.
Hair of goat	$\frac{1}{500}$.
Hair of fox	$\frac{1}{600}$.
Hair of cow	$\frac{1}{600}$.
Hair of spaniel dog	$\frac{1}{1100}$.
Hair of rabbit	$\frac{1}{1125}$.

From the above table we note that human hairs have diameters varying from the $\frac{1}{170}$th to about the $\frac{1}{3000}$th of an inch, according to age, sex, and situation. Hairs from the female head are generally finer, softer, longer, and more inclined to curl, than those from the male. Those of children are softer, finer, and more silky, than those of adults.

In comparing the hairs of a man with those of an animal or the hairs of one animal with those of another, the following are the chief points to bear in mind:—

(*a.*) *Size.*—Thus the hair of the deer is of greater diameter than the hair of a horse, and the hair of a horse than that of a man. It must further be noted that different hairs on the same man may be of very different size, the hair of the head being finer than the eyelashes, and the hair from the arm finer than that of the head.

(*b.*) *Shape and microscopical appearance.*—(For drawings see "Handybook of Forensic Medicine.") The toothed appearance of certain hairs are due to the arrangement of the cuticular cells.

(*c.*) *The relative proportion of medulla and cortex.*—Thus in the deer and horse we find a great development of medulla at the expense of the cortex, whilst an opposite condition occurs in other animals, such as the camel.

(*d.*) *The locality of the pigment.*—Thus in man and also in the monkey tribe the pigment is confined to the cortex of the hair, whilst in certain of the rodentia (the mouse and the rabbit for example) it is found in the medulla.

(*e.*) *The arrangement of the medullary cells.*—Thus in the quadrumana the medullary air cells are larger and less crowded than in the human species. The varieties in this respect are endless.

(*f.*) *The comparative quantity of true hair compared with that of woolly hair or of down.*

Lastly, we note that the hairs of different races have certain special characteristics. ("*Lond. Med. Record*," 1874, p. 656.)

Founded on his examination, the medical jurist must consider how far the facts he has observed justify him in answering the four following questions certain to arise in the course of evidence:—

(*a.*) *Is the hair submitted for examination human or not?*

As a rule this question is easily answered. If the thin cortical substance of human hair, marked as it is more than that of any other mammal by fine transverse lines with an axis band of spheroidal cells, be compared with the peculiarly shaped hairs of other animals, it will be at once apparent that very little difficulty can arise in the majority of cases to prevent our forming a positive opinion whether a hair is human. (See Professor Œsterlen, "*Ann. d'Hyg.*," XLVIII., also "*Lond. Med. Record*," 1878, p. 351). Still it must be admitted that occasionally the hairs of some of the lower animals—for example, those of a brown dog—present a remarkable similarity to human hair.*

(*β.*) *If human, does it correspond or not with other hairs (such as those of the murderer or the victim) submitted to us for comparison?*

We repeat; in all cases the opinions founded on comparing the hairs in question with hairs respecting which there can be no doubt, are of greater value than those based merely on the examination of solitary hairs. The size, colour, and general character of the hairs, are the points specially to be observed in such comparisons. The observations to be valuable should be numerous. Correspondence, the result of a single observation, should not be deemed sufficient to prove identity, any more than non-correspondence in a single observation should lead us to assert non-identity. In giving evidence, it will be safer to say that two hairs are *similar*, than that they are *identical*.

* I have noticed this on several occasions, more especially in the case of the hair of the brown skye terrier.

(γ.) *If human, is it the hair of a male or female?*

This question has been in part answered. Female hairs are usually longer, and the $\frac{1}{2500}$th or $\frac{1}{3000}$th of an inch less in diameter than male hairs. The roots of male hair are from $\frac{1}{300}$th to $\frac{1}{600}$th of an inch wider than the roots of female hairs, and the uncut points are broader. Alkalies, moreover, affect them less.

(δ.) *If human, from what part of the body was the hair derived?*

This question may sometimes be settled by noting the diameter and general appearance of the hairs. The hairs of the eyebrows are usually firm at the point, smooth, angular or oval on section, and possess a stout, knob-like bulb. The eyelashes have spindle-shaped roots. Hairs from the nose and ears are coarser in structure, and have stout roots. The hairs of the beard and moustache are generally triangular on transverse section with one convex side, but the shape is much modified by shaving and cutting, as the hairs of the axilla are by the perspiration. The shafts of the latter rise immediately out of the thick roots and do not taper; their points are conical, but not sharp, whilst the colour generally is light from the action of the perspiration. The hairs on the back of the hand and on the fore-arm are commonly modified by friction and soap, which tend to fray them. Their roots are club-shaped. The pubic hairs are generally oval and much flattened, and often present considerable roughness, (due to a loosening of the epidermic scales of the cortex,) so as to make them appear branched when seen under the microscope. Their roots are knotty (particularly in the male), and the usual rule of size is reversed, those of the female (See Table) being generally broader than those of the male. The roots of the scrotal hairs are particularly long in aged adults.

Although these are the general characteristics of hairs from different parts of the body, the medical jurist should exercise the greatest possible caution in speaking dogmatically as to the precise locality from which hair submitted for examination was derived.

(4.) *If a hair submitted for examination be not human, from what animal has it been derived?*

In cases (as already mentioned) of bestiality this question may be very important. Thus, in a case submitted to me, I was able to say that certain hairs found on the trowsers of a prisoner were the hairs of a horse, and that they corresponded to those of a mare with which the man was accused of attempting intercourse. In this case I also found spermatozoa on certain hairs of the mare, which I had but little doubt were human.

I have frequently been called upon to examine blood stains, in which hairs were embedded, where one was able to say that, from their shape, &c, they were probably the hairs of a certain specified animal.

(5.) *Has the hair in any given case been lately cut or shaved, or if free has it been torn out of the body violently?*

Hair that grows undisturbed tapers gradually to a fine point. Female hairs generally, and the hair of the beard not unfrequently, terminate in two or three branches. After hair has been once cut, the ends never regain their taper condition, but remain more or less rounded. For some days after cutting the hair retains a certain smoothness of section. Hairs pulled out by force generally appear crushed and somewhat frayed, the hair-sheath as a rule in such cases being torn away with the bulb. Epidermic scales from the skin will often be mixed up with the hairs, and blood may also be present in small quantity.

It must, however, be noted that the appearance of hairs lost after fevers and other acute diseases, closely resemble, as regards the condition of their bulbs and hair-sheaths, those torn out violently.

Certain diseases such as ringworm and syphilis, and certain poisons such as arsenic, opium, etc., frequently occasion a loss of hair. Loss of hair may also occur from other causes, such as fright. (*Cases* 66, 68.)

(6.) *The colour of the hair. Has a given specimen changed its colour naturally or has it been subjected to a dyeing process?*

Dr. Sorby has shown that there are several colouring bodies in hair, the two principal being a black and a red brown, both of

which when oxidized change to a yellow. Red hair also contains a pink colouring body. The different colours of hair are due, in his opinion, to an admixture in different proportions of these and some other colouring matters. (See "*London Med. Rec.*," 1877, p. 434.)

Attempts have been made at times to prove paternity by the colour of the hair (*Case* 64), a detail of far less value as a matter of evidence than the colour of the skin. Indeed, seeing how frequently red-haired children are born of dark-haired parents, and *vice versâ*, one is scarcely justified in regarding the colour of the hair in such questions as of any real importance. (Œsterlen. "*London Med. Rec.*," 1878, p. 358.)

The hereditary nature of albinism, a condition characterized by a want of pigment, must be regarded as well proved. Illustrations are numerous where this peculiarity, as we should say, "runs in families." ("*British Med. Journal*," 1880, I., p. 246.) Still its value medico-legally in proof of paternity can only be accepted as of limited value, seeing how frequently a family of Albinos are the offspring of dark and swarthy parents. ("*Lancet*," 1875, II., p. 508.)

The sudden bleaching of the hair by grief or fright, has been much disputed although numerous instances have been quoted. Of these Mary Queen of Scots and Marie Antoinette may be mentioned. (*Cases* 67, 68.)

Allowing for much exaggeration, it has been proved beyond a doubt that certain diseases will at times effect a great change in the colour of the hair. And further, that without any apparent cause, a change of colour may suddenly occur. Such changes may or may not be permanent, and may or may not be limited in their extent.

Something similar occurs in animals. Thus in the case of the arctic fox, the hair turns white in winter without coming off. In spring the white hair is shed, and dark hair grows, this again passing through the same colour change during the following winter. It is also said that some white hairs actually grow in winter. But exceptions to this curious growth and colour change occur, for the hair of certain individuals of the arctic fox remains the same both in winter and summer.

Nor again is this effect peculiar to arctic foxes, for a change in the colour of the hair has been noticed in the case of wolves, ermine, etc. (See "*Lancet*," 1873, Vol. I., p. 754, for an account of seasonal colour changes in the hair of hares. *Mr. Welch.*)

The prolonged contact of the hair of a dead body with decomposing organic matter renders it of a darker colour. (*Chevalier.*) Long burial, however, usually has a contrary effect, from the action of moist acids (Case 69); but the original colour of the hair can in such cases be restored by treatment with ammonia. (*Hauptmann* and *Sonnenschein.* See "*Virchow's Archiv.*," XLVI., iv., p. 502, and *Œsterlen*, "*London Med. Rec.*," 1878). (*Case* 12.)

In certain manufacturing operations, a change in the colour of the hair of the workpeople has been recorded. The greenish tint of the hair of ebony turners and of indigo workers, and the bluish-green tint of the hair of copper smelters, I have myself frequently noticed.

The hair of children grows darker, as a rule, as they advance in life.

We need scarcely do more than point out that the colour of the hair may be important as a means (although alone of but little value) of determining age. [See Paper on Grey and White Hair, "*London Med. Rec.*" (*Dr. Wertheim*), 1878, pp. 88 and 358.] It must always be remembered that premature greyness may be hereditary. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1879, I., p. 999.)

In determining identity it may be important to note that the apparent is by no means necessarily the real colour of the hair. (*Case* 65.) This, in the case quoted, was fully investigated by Orfila and Devergie (see "*Journal of Cutaneous Med.*," II., October 7, 1868, p. 330):—

(*a.*) *Thus light or red hair may be darkened.*—Lead, silver, and (more rarely) bismuth, constitute the principal ingredients of the dyes employed for this purpose. Thus a mixture of equal parts of lime (which removes the fatty matter, and so allows the more perfect action of the dye material) and lead carbonate or oxide made into a paste with water, will change the colour of the hair within four or five hours to any shade up to a dense black, the hair itself supplying the sulphur necessary to convert the

lead salt into a sulphide.* Red hair contains more sulphur than other hair, and by so much the more easily and rapidly in its case is the change effected. (See "*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1870, II., p. 660.)

Frequently a solution of an alkaline sulphide (potassic sulphide) is first applied to the hair, a weak solution of a silver† or bismuth salt (sold as Persian, or Egyptian, or Cyprian water) being afterwards brushed in. All such dyes are without exception dangerous. (*Cases* 70, 70a.)

In all these cases the metal may be easily detected by treating the hair (after removal) with nitric acid, and testing the solution by ordinary analytical processes.

(*β.*) *To convert dark into light hair* is more difficult, and requires a much longer time. (*Case* 65.) If the fatty matter in the hair be first removed by an alkali, the free application of strong chlorine water will effect a manifest lightening of tint within two hours; but its use for general purposes (that is, for purposes other than a desire to destroy identity) is impossible, because of the extremely brittle and rotten condition resulting when chlorine water is applied to the hair for a sufficiently long time, or of sufficient strength to be of much service. Further, it requires many applications to get well marked lessening of colour by merely brushing the solution in, although after the hair has been cut off, almost complete bleaching may be effected in a comparatively short time by continuous soaking.

To dye hair the much admired "golden tint," peroxide of hydrogen (*hydroxyl* H_2O_2) is commonly employed. Whenever the brown pigment of hair is treated with an oxidizing agent it becomes of a yellow colour (Xanthophyl).

If the colour of hair becomes of importance in determining identity, the use of a dye is suggested—

(*a.*) If the colour be marked by want of uniformity.

(*b.*) If the new growth seen at the roots be of a different

* A favourite formula is as follows :—Acetate of lead, 1 grm.; milk of sulphur, 3 grms.; glycerine, 32 grms.: water, 165 grms.

† A formula for silver hair dyes is as follows :—Water, 1 pint: silver nitrate, ½ oz.; copper sulphate, ½ drm.; ammonia, a sufficiency. The salts are to be dissolved in 5 ozs. of the water and strong ammonia gradually added till the solution is of a deep blue colour, and quite clear. The solution is then to be diluted to 1 pint.

shade and colour to the hair generally. As a fact, it is very rarely that a dye is so efficiently used as completely to change the colour over the whole head and down to the very skin. It is where the hair is thickest that the dye necessarily penetrates least, and here at the base the real colour of the hair will probably be perceived.

(*c.*) If the colour of the hair on the pubes or trunk does not correspond with the colour of the hair on the head.

Œsterlen points out that under the microscope dyed hair exhibits a far greater degree of regularity of colour than is found in nature. Again, chemical analysis will easily decide the use or not of metallic hair-dyes. The metal has only to be dissolved out with nitric acid when the original colour will be restored. Hairs tinged by pomades may be detected by treatment with alcohol or ether, in which such fatty preparations are soluble. If a prisoner's hair has been dyed, his scalp will often be found tinted. In a doubtful case the head might be shaved, and the new growth carefully watched.

(7.) *May the hair grow after death?*—That both the hair and nails may grow for a time after death, has been proved by careful observations. Good (who records cases in proof), Pariset, and Villermé, in the "*French Dictionary of Medical Sciences* (the former of whom gives a remarkable instance), and Bichat (who states he has himself noticed a lengthening both of the beard and of the nails after death), are authorities in favour of post-mortem growth, whilst Haller contends that the cases where the hair has appeared to grow after death are in reality deceptive, and due merely to a shrinking of the skin. Still that there may be molecular life and fecundity of the epidermis and therefore of the hair follicles for a time after somatic death, is what theory would lead us to expect, and observations are ample in proof. (See *Case* 71.)

(8.) *The evidence to be derived, in cases of poisoning, from the chemical analysis of the hair.*—M. Joannot, in his monograph on "human hair," refers to having found arsenic in the hair of persons who had been poisoned by it. I have no personal experience on this matter, save in one case of arsenical poison-

ing, where I examined the hair, but failed to detect the poison. —("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," 1878, Vol. II., p. 811.)

XI. The Teeth.

Questions of identity may turn on the absence or presence of teeth (*Case* 13), or on the condition of the alveolar processes as indicative of the period when the teeth had been removed (*Case* 52), or on the presence of artificial teeth and the mechanical appliances adopted for fixing them (*Case* 34), or on certain other dental peculiarities. (*Case* 42.) In cases of identity, therefore, the state of the teeth, and more especially irregularities in dentition, should be accurately recorded. It is advisable, in an important case, that a cast of the mouth should be taken, so that hereafter any question that may arise respecting the state of the teeth or condition of jaw can be immediately set at rest.

The condition and number of the teeth and the period of dentition, are circumstances of the utmost value to the medical jurist in determining the age of the person.

Mr. Edwin Saunders ("*The Teeth a Test of Age*," 1837) was the first to call attention to the value of the teeth as a method of ascertaining approximately the age of children. It is well known that human beings have two periods of dentition. Table I. shows the number and position of the teeth relatively to each other in each set, and the relation of the temporary to the permanent series, and Table II. the average periods of their eruption.

TABLE I.

Arrangement of the Temporary and Permanent Teeth.

		Molars.	Canines.	Incisors.	Canines.	Molars.		
Temporary Teeth	Upper Jaw...	2	1	4	1	2	= 10	= 20.
	Lower Jaw...	2	1	4	1	2	= 10	

		Molars.	Præ-Molars or Bicuspids.	Canines.	Incisors.	Canines.	Præ-Molars or Bicuspids.	Molars.		
Permanent Teeth	Upper Jaw...	3	2	1	4	1	2	3	= 16	= 32.
	Lower Jaw...	3	2	1	4	1	2	3	= 16	

TABLE II.

THE PERIODS OF THE ERUPTION OF THE TEETH.

(α). *Temporary Teeth.*

6th or 7th	month,	two middle incisors.
9th	„	two lateral incisors.
12th	„	first molars.
18th	„	canines.
24th	„	two last molars.

(β.) *Permanent Teeth.*

6th or 7th	year,	the four anterior or first molars.
7th	„	two middle incisors.
8th	„	two lateral incisors.
9th	„	first bicuspids or præmolars,
10th	„	second bicuspids or præmolars,
11th to 12th	„	canines.
12th to 14th	„	second molars.
17th to 21st	„	last molars or "wisdom teeth."

As regards the molar teeth, we may assume the seventh, fourteenth, and twenty-first years to be the periods at which the first, second, and third molars respectively will have been cut.

At nine years of age there will generally be 12 permanent teeth, viz., 8 incisors, and 4 molars. At thirteen years there will be 28 teeth, viz., 8 incisors, 4 canines, 4 bicuspids, and 4 molars. In examining 1,046 children of known ages, Mr. Saunders found that out of 708 of nine years of age, 389 had the full development of teeth for their age. But on the principle urged by him, that *where the teeth of one side are fully developed, those of the other side should also be reckoned,* 530 came up to the standard. Of the remainder, none would have varied more than a year from the standard—and these always by deficiency.

Again, of 338 children of thirteen years, no less than 294 might, from their teeth, have been pronounced with confidence to be of that age. Of the remaining 44, 36 would have been judged to have been in their thirteenth year, and 8 at or about the completion of their twelfth year. Mr. Saunders' pamphlet contains the precise data on which these decisions were grounded.

Dr. Woronichen ("*Jahrb. der Kinderheilk.*," Vol. IX.) from

the examination of numerous German children, fixes five to seven months for the commencement of dentition. The average of a large number of inspections gives 1·2 teeth in males at eight months old, and 1·0 tooth in females. (See "*Braxton Hicks on Dentition in the two sexes.*" "*Brit. Med. Journ.,*" 1877, I., p. 348.) In rachitic children he considers teething to be about one month late. He also fixes, in the case of healthy children, three years for the end of dentition, but a later period in rachitic children.

As regards the decay of the teeth, the wisdom-teeth are, as the late Chief Justice Cockburn remarked in the Tichborne trial, "the last to come, and the first to go." The incisors, from their situation, are the most exposed to injuries and accidents, and the bicuspids and first molars are the teeth especially prone to decay.

And this leads us to remark on the *irregularities* of dentition. —(*Vide* "*Med. Times and Gaz.,*" 1880, I., p. 383):—

(*a.*) *As regards the time of their appearance.* Of preternaturally *early dentition* we note that some children are born with teeth, these being generally the central incisors. (*Cases* 73, 74). In *Case* 74, the mother, curiously, is also said to have been born with a tooth. At certain ages the jaws may normally contain more teeth than even the full number of 32. For instance, we have seen several children between six and seven years of age that had 48 teeth, *viz.,* 20 of the temporary set in a perfect state, and 28 of the permanent set more or less developed and placed behind the temporary teeth which they were to replace.

Of preternaturally *late dentition,* cases are recorded where adults have never cut their teeth. (*Case* 75.) Every one's experience will have furnished him with examples of the wisdom-teeth having been cut late in life.

Instances are not wanting of dentition at an advanced period of life. We lately saw a lady, seventy years of age, who was cutting a canine tooth. In the German "*Ephemerides*" (dec. ij. ann. 3. p. 57), it is stated that a man one hundred and eighteen years old cut a complete front set with excruciating pain, and was seen alive two years afterwards!

(β.) *As regards the development of the teeth.* Two diseases under this head are worthy of special note. *Rickets* retards the development of the teeth, more especially of the first set. Many rickety children reach an age of eleven or twelve months without cutting a tooth. *Syphilis*, on the other hand, causes certain peculiarities in the permanent teeth. Unlike rickets, however, syphilis rather hastens than retards the eruption of the teeth, and particularly those of the first set. (See Mr. Hutchinson's Researches, "*Med. Times and Gaz.*," 1876, II., p. 239.)

(γ.) Supernumerary teeth and third dentitions (*Cases* 76, 77) have been recorded. Even a complete *third* set has been mentioned (John Hunter, "*Nat. Hist. of the Teeth.*" See also the "*Philosophical Transactions*," "*Mason Good's Works*," "*Van Swieten's Commentaries*," and the "*Dictionnaire des Sciences Médicales*," art. "Cas rares.")

XII. Stains.

In questions of identity, more especially in criminal trials, few things hold so important a place as, or involve investigations of greater nicety, than determining the precise nature of various spots or stains found on fabrics, instruments, &c. Before attempting to apply any tests in such cases, record in writing—

(1.) Their number, size, and shape. It should also be noted whether the stains are of the nature of *spots* or *smears*.

(2.) Their exact position on the garment or instrument submitted for examination.

(3.) If upon a fabric, the side of the fabric on which they occur.

It is, moreover, advisable for the medical jurist to place upon all articles sent him for examination a private mark by which he may be able to recognise them readily in the witness-box, and the precise place on each where the stains were found. Much trouble may by this means be saved, as the author knows from experience.

BLOOD STAINS.

[*See Dr. Woodman's and the Author's "Handy-Book of Forensic Medicine" (Churchill).*] (*See Cases* 78 to 82.)

In examining suspected blood stains, note *their general appearance.* Examine them for this purpose with a large magnifying-glass. If they occur upon a coloured substance, they are best seen by artificial light.

As a rule, blood *spots* have well-defined and somewhat raised edges.

The colour of blood stains will depend on (1) their age and (2) thickness, (3) the moisture and temperature to which the blood has been subjected, and (4) the kind of material upon which it has fallen. If the blood stain be upon a *polished* body, it generally appears as a dark and shiny spot, easy of removal, with cracks radiating from the centre; but if it occurs upon cotton, silk, or linen, etc., it has usually a more or less stiffened appearance, and feels like a spot of dried gum.

The blood spot should be subjected to three sets of tests, viz., microscopic, chemical, and spectroscopic. Of these, however, the last is infinitely the most delicate and the most important.

A. *Microscopic Test.*

1. *The microscopic examination of a blood-stain.* Cut out a small portion of the stained fabric and place it on a microscope-glass. Moisten it with one of the solutions mentioned below,*

* Water on account of its swelling the corpuscles cannot be used for this purpose. The following solution is recommended:—Glycerine 1 part; water 7 parts. (The sp. gr. of the solution should be 1030.) [This solution may be rendered faintly acid with advantage. See "*Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences*," Vol. LXVII., p. 128.]

Other solutions suggested by various experimenters are as follows—

1. Half per cent. solutions of common salt.
2. Sodic chloride 4 parts; egg albumen 300 parts; water 2,700 parts.
3. A 32 per cent. solution of potassic hydrate.
4. Chloral hydrate solution (1 to 10 of water) recommended by Pacini.

and cover the specimen over with a thin covering-glass. Examine with a ¼-inch power, and measure the corpuscles with a micrometer. (See Plate I.)

All structures associated with a blood-stain should be examined with great care: such, for example as hairs, different forms of epithelium (pavement epithelium from the vagina being generally found in menstrual blood), biliary or fæcal matter, brain tissue, spermatozoa, etc. By noting these, some clue may possibly be found to determine the source of the blood.

2. The *character of the corpuscles.* The blood-corpuscles in man and in all mammalia (excepting the camel tribe) are circular, flattened, transparent, non-nucleated cells presenting (as generally seen) concave sides with a central bright spot. This bright spot, however, by a slight change of focus or of light may be made to appear shaded.

The diameter of the blood-corpuscles in man varies from the 1-2800th of an inch to the 1-4000th, 1-3200th being an average. They have an average thickness of the 1-12,400th of an inch. The blood-corpuscles of embryonic life are usually larger, and sometimes nearly double the size.*

These corpuscles vary in size and shape in different animals. In the camel tribe, although they are about the size of the corpuscles of other mammalia, they are not round but oval and contain no nuclei. In birds, reptiles and fish the corpuscles are also oval, but they are of comparatively large size (more especially in reptiles), and distinctly nucleated.†

It is worth noting that oval corpuscles may be rendered globular by treatment with an excess of water.

The outlines of dried blood-corpuscles are irregular and jagged,

* Malinin (Virchow's "*Archiv.*," LXV.) says that if the blood corpuscles after treatment with 32 per cent. solutions of potassic hydrate have a diameter less than 0·006 millimètre (=0·000236 inch), the blood is probably not human. If it be above 0·007 millimètre (=0·000275 inch) it probably is human. If it be between 0·005 and 0·006 millimetre (=0·000196 and 0·000236 inch) it is not the blood of the goat, sheep, or ox, but it may be of the dog, pig, or possibly of man.

† For numerous detailed measurements, see the author's and Dr. Woodman's "*Handy Book of Forensic Medicine and Toxicology*," pp. 599 and 600. Also Mr. Gulliver's Paper in "*The Proceedings of the Zoological Society.*"

and more or less stellate. At times they seem to be so agglutinated that no treatment will effect their separation.

3. The *bodies likely to be mistaken for blood-corpuscles.*

a. Starch-cells. These may be distinguished by their behaviour with polarized light. A solution of iodine turns them of a blue colour.

β. The sporules of certain fungi. These may be dis tinguished by their power of refracting light. On the application of iodine a distinct nucleus at once becomes apparent.

γ. The discs found in certain coniferous woods. These may be distinguished by their size, the double ring that surrounds the pits, the formal arrangement (in rows) of the cells, and the presence of woody-fibres.

Lastly admitting the value of Richardson's (of Pennsylvania) laborious researches on the size of the blood-corpuscles of different animals, it would in our judgment be exceedingly unwise to hazard an opinion as to the source of a given specimen of blood from the microscopic measurement of the discs. And this more especially considering that as a rule where evidence of this kind is needed, the measurements have to be made after treating the dried corpuscles with some liquid reagent. ("*Lancet*," 1875, I., pp. 321, 700.)

B. *Chemical Tests.*

Before considering the chemical and spectroscopic tests for blood, it is advisable to examine the chemistry of its colouring matter.*

The colouring matter of blood was originally described by Lecanu under the name *hæmatin.* To Professor Stokes belongs the credit of having proved that Lecanu's hæmatin

* Struve (Virchow's "*Archiv.*," LVI., p. 423) states that there are two colouring matters in blood. One is soluble in water and in alcohol, but is insoluble in ether. It is greenish brown when dry. Hæmin crystals cannot be obtained from it. The second colouring body is insoluble in water, alcohol, ether, chloroform, or acids, but is soluble in weak alkalies, and yields hæmin crystals by proper treatment.

differed from the colouring matter of fresh blood. Stokes named this colouring matter *cruorine*, and he further proved that it was capable of existing both in a *deoxidized form*, which he called *purple cruorine*, and in an *oxidized form*, which he called *scarlet cruorine*. This cruorine has been known at various times by the names *hæmatoglobulin*, *hæmatocrystallin*, *oxy-hæmoglobin*, but is now more commonly called *hæmoglobin*.

In arterial blood we find oxidized hæmoglobin (scarlet cruorine), and in venous reduced hæmoglobin (purple cruorine) combined with more or less oxidized hæmoglobin. In blood taken from a dead body, provided access of air to the blood be prevented, we obtain the spectrum of reduced hæmoglobin only. (*Hofmann*, "*Vierteljahr. Gericht. Med.*," Vols. XXV. and XXVI., also "*Lond. Med. Record*," 1878, p. 461.) But there are exceptions to this general post mortem condition of the blood colouring matter, viz., after poisoning by hydrocyanic acid, after death from cold and starvation (in which case the reducing power of the tissues is greatly diminished), and particularly in carbonic oxide poisoning, when the blood exhibits the peculiar spectrum of carbonic oxide hæmoglobin. In cases moreover where death has resulted from the admission of air into the veins, the spectrum of oxy-hæmoglobin will probably only be found for a short time after death. (Schmidt, see "*Lond. Med. Record*," 1874, p. 729.)

The properties of hæmoglobin require careful study. It is remarkable for its indiffusibility. It is perfectly soluble in water and in weak alcohol, but is decomposed both by acids and alkalies, when the body now called *hæmatin* ($C_{600}H_{960}N_{154}FeS_3O_{179}$), together with an albuminous principle, is formed. According to Preyer, nearly the whole of the iron of the blood is contained in hæmatin as an essential ingredient.

There are reasons for believing that some differences exist in the hæmoglobin obtained from the blood of different species of mammalia, the crystals varying much both in their solubility and crystalline form. ("*Blut Krystalle*," W. Preyer, Jena, 1871.)

By the action of alkalies and of acids generally (but not, it should be noted, of hydrocyanic acid), *hæmoglobin* undergoes conversion into *hæmatin*. This change is chemical and perma-

nent. The important fact, however, to be observed is, that a similar change takes place after the blood has been kept for a long time. The fresh blood-stain is bright red (hæmoglobin); the old blood-stain is brown (methæmoglobin or hæmatin). Further, hæmatin, whether produced by age or by the action of acids, is, like hæmoglobin, also capable of existing in two states of oxidation, each state having its special spectrum-bands.

Hæmoglobin is a very soluble, and hæmatin a very insoluble body. This fact is one of great medico-legal importance. After an article once stained with blood has been washed in water, provided sufficient time has elapsed for the hæmoglobin to be converted into hæmatin, enough will in all probability remain to serve for its identification. But if the stain be perfectly recent, that is before the hæmoglobin has had time to be converted into hæmatin, the whole of the blood may be removed so effectually from the stained fabric by efficient washing in cold water, that no trace will be found. Hot water, however, will not effect the removal of the fresh blood stain like cold water, owing to its further action on the blood-colouring matter. Hence, if in a criminal case it can be proved that an article has been washed in *cold water*, evidence to show the *absence* of blood-stains on the article in question is of but little value. And again if the blood-stained article has been washed in *hot water*, the probability is that the medical jurist will find no difficulty in satisfactorily proving the presence, and determining the nature of the stain.

The age of a stain is no impediment to the spectroscopic test. It is probable that hæmatin, although a very permanent body, does undergo certain changes by time, which at present are but little understood. These changes are not, however, of any practical moment, inasmuch as Dr. Sorby states he has been able to discover the hæmatin bands after forty-four years, whilst I have myself obtained excellent spectra from stains I have good reason to believe were over a hundred years old.*

But there is a body intermediate between hæmoglobin and

* These stains were on a garment preserved by the relatives of an officer who was said to have met his death in battle in the year 1771.

hæmatin formed by the exposure of blood to the air for a shorter period than that required to determine the actual formation of hæmatin. This substance, originally termed by Sorby *brown cruorin*, is now called *methæmoglobin*. There is reason to think that methæmoglobin consists of hæmoglobin loosely combined (as Sorby expresses it) with an extra supply of oxygen (peroxidized hæmoglobin).

Changes effected by Time on the Colour of Blood Stains.

And here, briefly, we must consider the changes effected by time on a blood-stain :—

The *fresh blood-stain* (if upon a white fabric) has a bright red colour, due to the *hæmoglobin*.

If the stain be kept dry, it becomes in time of a brown colour, due to the formation of *methæmoglobin*.

This change of hæmoglobin into methæmoglobin varies according to circumstances. Thus in towns it is rapid, but in the country slow. The alteration is specially rapid when the stain is exposed to an atmosphere in which coal gas is burnt, any weak acid body tending greatly to accelerate it. The change again is rapid when the stained fabric has been worn next the skin, the alteration in such case being hastened by the action of the weak acids of the perspiration.

Finally, *after a time*, more especially if the stain be kept in a damp place, the hæmoglobin is changed into *hæmatin*, or both hæmoglobin and hæmatin may be decomposed.

This rule, therefore, is a safe one :—*If the colour of the blood-stain be bright red, it is a proof that the stain is recent; but if it be brown, it is no proof that it is old.*

We shall hereafter enlarge on the characteristics of carbonic oxide blood, and of the spectrum produced by carbonic oxide hæmoglobin. It is important to note, however, that if blood saturated with carbonic oxide be placed in a vacuum at a temperature ranging from 98·6° to 140° F. (37° to 60° C.), it slowly but entirely expels the carbonic oxide, ordinary reduced hæmoglobin only remaining. (See "*Lancet*," 1873, I., p. 347; also "*Edin. Med. Journ.*," XIX., p. 80.)

Chemical Tests for Blood Stains.

Blood stains are insoluble either in strong alcohol, ether, chloroform, or oils.

Note particularly the *action of cold water* on blood stains:—

(*a.*) If the stain be *recent*, and upon a material incapable of combining chemically with any of the blood constituents, it will be rapidly dissolved by the water, the solution becoming of a rich red or brownish red colour.

(*β.*) If the stain be *not fresh, but still comparatively recent*, it is less rapidly dissolved by the water, and yields a solution of a dirty brown colour.

(*γ.*) If the stain *be very old*, it will be insoluble in water, the soluble hæmoglobin having been completely changed into the insoluble body hæmatin.

All our chemical tests for blood have special reference to the action of reagents on the colouring matter of the blood.

Treatment of the stain.—(*a.*) If the stain be upon *a fabric, such as cotton, linen, silk*, etc., cut a portion out, and treat it with cold distilled water.

(*β.*) If the stain be upon a porous body, such as wood, brick, etc., the stained part should be scraped off for some depth, and when reduced to a fine powder, digested for a considerable time in cold distilled water.

In either case filter the liquid, but preserve both the matters on the filter-paper and the filtrate for examination.

(*γ.*) If the stain be upon *iron or steel*, probably it may be peeled off, but if this is not possible, it must be scraped. These scrapings consist of a mixture of blood and iron. Digest them for several hours in cold distilled water, rendered slightly alkaline with ammonia, or should this fail in effecting solution, a *trace* of citric acid may be used instead. Filter. The blood-solution will pass through, and the iron, except a trace of citrate if citric acid has been used, be left on the paper.

[It is well to remember that the colouring matter of blood is rapidly changed from the soluble into the insoluble form by the

action of oxide of iron. Hence a blood-stain on the *handle* of a knife or axe, may present a very different colour and appearance to one on the *blade*, although both were produced at the same time.]

The reactions of the blood-solution thus obtained, constitute a series of important chemical tests requiring special study:—

(α.) *Heat a small quantity in a test-tube to about* 149° F. (65° C.) Note with a blood-solution three results:—(1) The red colour is destroyed; (2) The solution is coagulated; (3) A thick brown precipitate is produced, the amount depending on the strength of the solution.

(β.) If this brown precipitate is present in quantity, it should be collected upon a filter paper, dried, and heated with a weak ammonia solution, in which, if blood, it will be soluble. The solution, if sufficiently strong, will appear dark green by reflected and red by transmitted light.

(γ.) *Tincture of galls.* A red precipitate. This reaction is important, inasmuch as all red colouring matters due to iron yield a dark, or bluish green precipitate.

[In the case of a stain removed from a steel blade, etc., more especially if citric acid has been employed for the purpose, this test cannot be used, owing to the dark colour resulting from the action of the reagent on the iron dissolved by the acid.]

(δ.) *A very weak solution of ammonia.* If the red solution be blood, the colour will either remain unchanged, or if changed, be slightly intensified and reddened.

[If too much ammonia be added, or if the solution be too strong, the red liquid will change to a brown. But the red colour of blood never becomes green, as happens with the juices of red fruits, nor crimson, as happens with the colouring matters from cochineal, logwood, Brazil wood, madder root, etc.]

(ε.) *A solution of chlorine* effects no change on the colouring matter of blood, if the chlorine solution be but moderately strong.

[A blood solution, moreover, is not easily bleached by a *solution of sulphurous acid.*]

(ζ.) *Strong nitric acid.* The blood solution becomes of a dirty brown colour. If the coagulated mass formed be sufficient in

quantity, heat with strong nitric acid, when a clear yellow solution will be obtained.

(η.) If a solution of sodic hydrate (10 grs. to 1 oz.) be added to blood, a dark olive discoloration results, which on treatment with an excess of acetic acid changes to a red. ("*Edin. Med. Journ.*," XIX., p. 179.)

Guiacum Test. (Day's.)—Wet the blood-stain with *freshly prepared* tincture of guiacum, and then add a small quantity of an ethereal solution of hydroxyl.* If the stain be blood, a characteristic blue tint will be produced.

If the material stained be of such a colour as to obscure the reaction, add the several reagents, and afterwards press the fabric between two pads of white blotting-paper, when the blue colour will be absorbed by the paper. A number of impressions may in this manner be obtained, and the reaction be rendered apparent.

If the blood be fresh, the reactions may be obtained by simply treating a solution of the colouring matter in cold distilled water with the guiacum and hydroxyl.

To detect blood in urine the following process has been suggested: Mix together in a test tube equal parts of turpentine and tincture of guiacum. Then add the urine, so that it may flow to the bottom of the tube. The guiacum resin, which now separates if blood be present, becomes of an intensely blue colour.

In this test the blue colour results from the oxidation of the guiacum resin. But it is important to note that guiacum is blued by a great number of substances, such as by gluten, milk, and the fresh juice of various roots and underground stems (horseradish, colchicum, carrot, etc.); also by nitric acid, chlorine, the chlorides of iron, mercury, copper and gold, the alkaline hypochlorites, and a mixture of hydrocyanic acid and sulphate of

* To prepare *the tincture of guiacum*, wash the tears of guiacum resin first with a little alcohol, and then dissolve the pure unoxidized resin by shaking up with a little fresh spirit.

The ethereal solution of hydroxyl is prepared by mixing together equal parts of ether and hydroxyl. The ether is not, however, necessary for the reaction.

copper; also by pus, saliva, and mucus mixed with carbolic acid or creosote, etc., etc.

Although the guiacum test is neat and beautiful, it should never be relied upon *by itself alone*, as positive proof of a stain being blood.

Teichmann's Test, as modified by Neumann.—Thoroughly rub together the dried blood and common salt. Treat the mixture with glacial acetic acid, and cautiously evaporate the solution until solidification commences. Cool the slide rapidly, and examine it with ¼-inch objective, when crystals of hæmatin and of the hydrochlorate of hæmatin (brownish black or reddish brown rhomboids or tabular crystals), together with crystals of sodic chloride (transparent cubes), will be apparent. (Plate II.)

The experiment may also be made without employing sodic chloride (Casper).

In the case of a stain, it should be placed on a glass slide and moistened with a solution of sodic chloride. It should then be covered over with a large thin glass, and glacial acetic acid allowed to run under the edge. The liquid is then to be heated to dryness at a boiling temperature, and the slide allowed to cool. When cold, rhomboidal crystals of hydrochlorate of hæmatin, together with crystals of sodic chloride dispersed through irregularly shaped albuminous masses, will be seen.

It is stated that the character of the network in which the crystals are dispersed, varies with different animals, forming characteristic pictures. ("*Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences*," LX., p. 572.)

C. *Spectroscopic Examination.*

[See Dr. Sorby's Papers in "*Med. Press and Circular*," July 26, 1871, and in various Journals and Transactions of Societies.]

(Confer Cases 79 to 82.)

The best instrument to use in examining blood spectra is the binocular micro-spectroscope invented by Dr. Sorby, and now made by Messrs. R. & J. Beck, of Cornhill.

The Spectra produced by Blood. (See Plate II.)

Of these the four following are the most important:—

(1.) *The spectrum of oxy-hæmoglobin* (*the colouring matter of arterial blood*).—The blue end darkened. Two absorption bands visible in the yellower half of the green. The band nearest the violet end is about twice the breadth of the other band.

(2.) *The spectrum of deoxidized hæmoglobin* (*the colouring matter of venous blood*).—The blue end darkened, but somewhat less than in the case of oxy-hæmoglobin. A single broad absorption band visible in the green.

(3.) *The spectrum of blood after short exposure to air* (*methæmoglobin*).—The blue end darkened. The two bands of oxidized hæmoglobin much weakened, whilst a third band is visible in the red.

(4.) *The spectrum of reduced or deoxidized hæmatin.*—The blue end darkened. Two well-defined bands visible in the green, somewhat nearer the violet than those of hæmoglobin. The band nearest the red end is the narrower, but it is intensely black, and has exceedingly well-defined edges. The band nearer the violet is nearly double the width of the other band, but the edges are less distinct. This band may possibly not be seen in very weak solutions.

Examination of a Recent or Comparatively Recent Blood Stain on a White Fabric.

Cut out a small piece of the stained fabric, and soak it for about ten minutes in a few drops of cold distilled water in a watch-glass. Squeeze the coloured fluid out, and stand the solution on one side, so that insoluble matters may be deposited. Introduce the solution by means of a fine-drawn pipette into an experimental glass-cell made of barometer tubing. Fill, if possible, several experimental cells with the solution.

(1.) *Examine the aqueous solution with the micro-spectroscope.*—If the blood be tolerably fresh, the spectrum of oxidized hæmoglobin with its two well-defined absorption bands in the green will be apparent. If such a spectrum be obtained it is certain that the stain was tolerably recent.

(2.) *Add to the solution in the cell first a trace of ammonia*, and then a minute fragment of the *double tartrate of potash and soda* (Rochelle salt). So far no change will be apparent. Now stir in a piece (say about the 1-40th of an inch) of the *sulphate of iron and ammonia* (avoiding as far as possible exposure of the solution to air) and cover the cell over with a piece of thin glass. The two bands will now be replaced by a single intermediate band, fainter but broader than those previously existing (spectrum of reduced hæmoglobin).

The hæmoglobin thus reduced, may be oxidized by exposure to air together with vigorous stirring, and again deoxidized by a further addition of the iron salt.

This deoxidation and reoxidation of the hæmoglobin constitutes a very characteristic reaction, and serves to distinguish blood from all other substances.

The reduction of the hæmoglobin may be effected spontaneously, and without the addition of any reagent, by merely covering the solution over with a thin piece of glass, and keeping it for some time in the sealed cell.

(3.) Stir into the solution contained in the experimental cell a minute fragment of *citric acid*. This converts the hæmoglobin into hæmatin. The bands of the oxidized hæmoglobin will now disappear, and if the solution be tolerably strong, a faint band become visible in the red. Add now an excess of ammonia. The band in the red, if present, will disappear, the original bands either not reappearing at all, or, at most, only appearing to a very slight extent. This is a most important change, since it shows that the acid has effected a permanent alteration in the original blood-colouring matter. Add now to the solution in the cell a very small particle of the double sulphate of iron and ammonia, and cover over immediately with a thin glass. After a variable time (say in about fifteen minutes), the excessively well-marked and unique spectrum of reduced hæmatin will become apparent, the band at the red end being the first to appear.

By exposing this solution of deoxidized hæmatin to the air, assisted by vigorous stirring, we may often succeed not only in bringing back the oxidized hæmatin band, but also (provided

the conversion of the hæmoglobin in the first instance was incomplete) the bands of oxidized hæmoglobin.

Examination of Old Blood Stains, and of Blood Stains on Coloured Fabrics.

If the blood-stain be *old*, either citric acid or ammonia (the latter by preference) should be used for dissolving the colouring matter. If the fabric be coloured, that reagent should be employed which possesses the least action on the dye. If the stain (as sometimes happens) be found insoluble both in ammonia and citric acid, it should first of all be acted upon with ammonia, and a moderate heat afterwards applied. The solutions obtained are then to be examined in the manner already described.

The presence of mordants frequently necessitates some alteration in our proceedings, the blood being very likely to become incorporated with the mordant, more particularly if the stained fabric has been wetted. In such case, filtration or allowing the subsidence of the deposit, is equivalent to removing the blood colouring matter. The same details must be carried out as have been already described, and the turbidity of the liquid overcome, not by removing the precipitate, but by increasing the intensity of the transmitted light.

Before leaving the treatment of recent and of old blood stains, I would direct attention to the method of procedure suggested by Dr. Richardson of Pennsylvania, which he describes as follows :—

" Procure a glass slide with a circular excavation in the middle, called by dealers a 'concave centre,' and moisten it around the edges of the cavity with a small drop of diluted glycerin. Thoroughly clean a thin glass cover about one-eighth of an inch larger than the excavation, lay it on white paper, and upon it place the tiniest visible fragment of a freshly-dried blood-clot (this fragment will weigh from one twenty-five-thousandth to one fifty-thousandth of a grain). Then with a cataract-needle deposit on the centre of the cover, near your blood-spot, a drop of glycerin about the size of this period (.), and with a dry needle gently push the blood to the brink of your microscopic pond,

so that it may be just moistened by the fluid. Finally, invert your slide upon the thin glass cover in such a manner that the glycerined edges of the cavity in the former may adhere to the margins of the latter, and, turning the slide face upwards, transfer it to the stage of the microscope.

"By this method, it is obvious, we obtain an extremely minute quantity of a strong solution of hæmoglobin, whose point of greatest density (generally in the centre of the clot) is readily found under a one-fourth-inch objective, and tested by the adjustment of the spectroscopic eye-piece. After a little practice it will be found quite possible to modify the bands by the addition of sulphuret of sodium solution, as advised by Preyer.

"In order to compare the delicacy of my plan with that of Mr. Sorby, a spot of blood one-tenth of an inch square may be made on a piece of white muslin, the threads of which average one hundred to the inch. When the stain is dry, ravel out one of the coloured threads and cut off and test a fragment as long as the diameter of the filament, which will of course be a particle of stained fabric measuring one-hundredth of the minimum-sized piece directed by Mr. Sorby. When the drop of blood is old, a larger amount of material becomes requisite, and you may be obliged to moisten it with aqua ammoniæ, or with solution of tartrate of ammonium and protosulphate of iron; but in the criminal case referred to, *five months* after the murder, I was able from a scrap of stained muslin one-fiftieth of an inch square to obtain well-marked absorption-bands, easily discriminated from those produced by a solution of alkanet-root with alum and those caused by infusion of cochineal with the same salt."

Of this process which I have carefully tested, I can say that it works well with fresh stains, but I have failed to obtain the satisfactory results by it with old blood stains that I have by following the processes suggested by Sorby.

Examination of Stained Fabrics that have been washed after staining, and the treatment to be adopted in the examination of the Water used for washing them.

Cold water, as we have already pointed out, may effect the

complete removal of a fresh blood-stain from a fabric, but not of an old one (p. 219).

In many cases, after a stained fabric has been washed with water, the blood will be found spread over a considerable surface. Under such circumstances a large piece of the material should be removed, and digested with a proportionately large quantity of ammonia or of citric acid, the solution being afterwards concentrated by evaporation at a gentle heat.

If the water used for washing such materials has to be examined, it should first of all be concentrated. If, however, it is found that any deposit forms in the water during concentration, this should be carefully collected, acted on with ammonia, and heat applied if it be insoluble in the cold.

If the recently-stained fabric, however, be washed with *soap and water*, the hæmoglobin will be rapidly converted (by the action of the alkali) into hæmatin. The probability is, therefore, that after a blood-stain has been washed in soap and water, there will be little difficulty in detecting blood on the fabric by ordinary means.

It may sometimes be necessary to examine the soap-water itself. This may be done as follows:—Agitate the soap-water with a large bulk of ether, and allow the mixture to stand until the ether has well separated. Remove the ether with a pipette, and again and again shake up with fresh ether until the aqueous solution is perfectly clear. The solution remaining is then to be concentrated, and examined as usual for blood.

Examination of Stains on Leather.

Blood-stains on leather, or upon any substance that contains tannic acid, require special management, owing to the certain precipitation of the colouring matter. Further, the serum frequently soaks into the leather, leaving the blood corpuscles on the surface. In such case, proceed as follows:—

(*a.*) Shave off a fine slice from the stained portion of leather so that there may be as much blood but as little leather as possible on the shaving. Bend this shaving so that the stained side only may be brought into contact with water placed in one

of the experimental cells. In this manner a solution of the blood-colouring matter may probably be obtained.

Dr. Sorby suggests, however, that if the leather has been washed after the blood has dried upon it, it would probably be impossible to obtain the blood-spectra by the method just described. The following process in such case has been found to work satisfactorily :—

(*β.*) Digest the stained leather in a mixture of 1 part (by measure) of hydrochloric acid and 50 of water for twenty-four hours. This will effect a solution of the mixed compound of the blood-colouring matter and tannic acid. The acid liquid is then to be poured off, but not filtered. The solution may appear almost colourless, or of a slightly yellow tint. Add to this an excess of ammonia, when the colour will become either a pale purple or a neutral tint, the tint-shade being considerably intensified on the addition of the ferrous salt and double tartrate, which are now to be added. The solution is then to be examined in an experimental cell, using a light sufficiently intense (such as the lime-light or direct sunlight) to penetrate the turbid solution. Under these circumstances, the spectrum of deoxidized hæmatin will become visible. If the liquid be too turbid to allow even a direct ray from the sun to be reflected through it, the cell should be placed for a few minutes in a horizontal position, so that a *little* of the deposit may subside, always remembering, however, that the removal of the deposit destroys the intensity of the spectrum, the greater part of the hæmatin existing as a compound insoluble in dilute acid.

Examination of Blood Stains on Earth and on Clothes soiled with Earthy Matters.

Digest the stained earth for some hours in a considerable quantity of ammonia. This solution is to be poured off and concentrated, the spectroscopic examination being conducted on the *turbid* solution, using for this purpose an intense light, such as the lime-light or direct sunlight. A similar process should be adopted in the case of *stained fabrics soiled with earthy matters.* This is important, inasmuch as the colouring-

matter of the blood is completely carried down by contact with earthy matter.

Examination of Urine for Blood.

The urine, if turbid, must be filtered. The matters on the filter paper, in order to prevent the loss of red corpuscles, should be thoroughly washed with cold distilled water. Either examine this latter filtrate by itself, or add it to the filtered urine. The urine is then to be placed in a glass tube six inches long and a quarter of an inch diameter, closed at both ends. The liquid must be diluted until the green of the spectrum can be distinctly seen through the micro-spectroscope. One drop of blood in a pint of urine may in this way be recognised.

One half of the matters on the filter paper should be acted on with alcohol acidulated with sulphuric acid, and the other half with alcohol acidulated with ammonia, and the solutions obtained examined separately in the manner already indicated. (See "*British Med. Journ.*," 1879, II., p. 85.)

General Precautions to be observed in conducting Microspectroscopic Observations.

We now add a few words of general advice, and a few precautions necessary to be observed, in examining blood stains by the spectroscope:—

1. If the fabric on which the blood-stain occurs be coloured, the spectrum produced by the colouring-matter extracted from unstained portions of the fabric should in the first instance be examined. Further, it is well to commence our investigations by placing a little blood on an unstained portion, and, when dry, examining the spectra. We shall thus determine, before commencing experiments on the stained portion, the spectrum of the dye itself, and any possible interference likely to result on the blood spectra.

2. On no account decide that an observed spectrum from a suspected stain is due to blood, unless it *exactly* coincides with bands produced by a known solution of blood, of equal strength, and treated in a similar manner. For this purpose it is advis-

able to have ready for use several hermetically-sealed tubes of deoxidized hæmatin, of different strengths.

3. In all cases examine the spectra both by daylight and by artificial light. We prefer artificial light for general work, but in every case it is advisable to try both means of illumination. Direct concentrated sunlight or the lime-light should be tried whenever the solution is thick and turbid.

4. Never be content with observing a single spectrum of blood. Remember, further, it is often impossible to obtain the unaltered blood spectrum. Hence, never satisfy yourself that a stain is not blood, until you have failed to obtain all the spectra produced by the action of appropriate reagents.

5. If the liquid under examination be *too strong*, so much light will be cut off that the absorption bands may be obscured. If the solution be *too weak*, the bands will become so faint, that they are likely to be overlooked. Practise in this matter to obtain the happy medium. Never, if it be possible further to confirm the result, be satisfied with the examination of a single solution, but examine several of different strength.

6. Use excessively minute quantities of the several reagents. Hæmatin produced by an acid is not very soluble in a strong solution of citrate of ammonia. If you add too much of an iron salt, the precipitate formed so obscures the field as to mask the absorption bands.

7. Adjust the width of the slit during the spectroscopic examination. All absorption bands are best defined when the slit is very narrow. If the bands are very faint, they may only be seen at the moment that the slit is being completely closed.

8. Remember that, with our present knowledge, the spectrum microscope affords no information whatsoever whether the blood comes from man or beast, nor the class of animals from which it is derived, nor, if human, does it enable us to hazard a conjecture as to its origin.

The following questions, are likely to be asked where the nature of stains is in dispute:—

1. *Are you certain these stains are blood?*

To this question the medical jurist should, as a rule, have no difficulty in returning an absolutely definite Yea or Nay.

Again I repeat, it is the spectroscopic test on which the chief reliance should be placed, all other tests being merely confirmatory. And, further, no one should venture to give positive evidence that a given stain is blood unless he has obtained the several spectra (and particularly the deoxidized hæmatin spectrum) characteristic of it.

It may be asked, Do no other substances give similar spectra to those of blood? Of the *oxidized* hæmoglobin spectrum, Sorby says—"I do not know of anything that gives exactly the same, but there are some things which give bands so far similar as to show the importance of studying the effects of different reagents." This statement, coming from so great an authority, needs consideration.

The colouring matter (a form of chlorophyll) from the petals of the red variety of *Cineraria* gives two bands, which, though dissimilar in relative width, are nearly alike in position to those of oxidized hæmoglobin. But with ammonia, the bands of blood remain unchanged, whilst those of the *Cineraria* colouring matter are completely altered.

The other reds likely to be confounded by the unpractised eye (certainly not by the practised eye) with blood, are *cochineal*, *lac-dye*, *alkanet*, *madder* and *munjeet*, dissolved in each case in alum. But if the spectra produced by these bodies be carefully examined side by side with blood, the bands, it will be seen are neither the same in position nor in character. None of them, further, will stand the action of ammonia, whilst they are all bleached with potassic sulphite, which has no action on blood.

All the supposed fallacies, however, at once break down if the various blood spectra with the several reagents described, can be obtained.

2. *Was the blood human?*

And to this question it is better, in the present state of science, at once to confess our inability to give a definite reply.

The most ambitious attempt in this direction is that of Professor Richardson, of Pennsylvania (See "*Lancet*," 1874, II., p. 210; 1875, I., pp. 321, 700), who relies on the diameters of the blood discs, using for their examination very high microscopic

powers, such as the $\frac{1}{25}$ or $\frac{1}{50}$th of an inch. Most interesting as his work is, it is as yet of scientific, rather than of practical importance. Even Dr. Richardson, regarding his own researches, himself admits: "That at present (1875) there is no method known to science for discriminating, microscopically or otherwise, the dried blood of a human being from that of a dog, monkey, rabbit, musk-rat, elephant, lion, whale, seal, or in fact any animal whose corpuscles measure more than $\frac{1}{4000}$ inch diameter."

One other suggestion deserves consideration, viz., the varieties in what have been called *Blood pictures*. "If the fluid blood, or dried blood redissolved in distilled water, be put on a piece of glass and carefully evaporated at a temperature of from 54° to 59° F. (12·2° to 15° C.), there will be received from the blood, either of man or animals under the microscope, entirely different pictures, which are in relation to each other of such great and striking variety, that human blood can be distinguished with the greatest exactness from the blood of animals, and the blood of one animal from that of another" (*A. Neumann*). Neumann's meaning (if I understand him aright) is, that the proportions of the corpuscles, of the fibrin, and of the salts in different bloods vary. When heat is applied to the blood, the corpuscles burst, their contents along with the fibrin and salts remaining on the glass plate. The variety in the "pictures" thus produced depends on the quantity of the corpuscles, and on the manner in which the salts and fibrin settle. Dr. Day apparently confirms these observations of Neumann. The results are curious and merit more attention than they have at present received.

3. *From what part of the body was the blood derived?*

To this question we must, as a rule, admit the practical impossibility of obtaining data on which to found an answer with any certainty. The only possible clue might be in the matters associated with the blood, such as the different forms of epithelium, &c.

4. *In the case of a blood stain being found on the clothes of a female, the question may arise whether or not the blood was menstrual?*

We urge the necessity for great caution in attempting to distinguish menstrual from ordinary blood. It has been stated—

(α.) That menstrual blood contains no fibrin.

(β.) That menstrual blood is acid, owing to its admixture with vaginal mucus; and,

(γ.) That menstrual blood is invariably associated with the pavement epithelium derived from the vaginal walls.

This last peculiarity is the only one of any practical importance, and admitting its truth, we doubt if in the present state of science we should be justified in venturing a *positive* opinion as to a stain being, or not being, menstrual from this circumstance alone.

5. *Was the blood derived from a living or from a dead body?*

The presence of coagulated fibrin in a stain is at all times strongly suggestive of the blood having been derived either from a living person or from a body within a short time after death; but even this is by no means an absolutely certain test. It is better to admit the impossibility of answering this question positively, although, should coagulated fibrin be found on the stained portion, it may be stated that there is a clear presumption that the blood was derived either from a living person or from one recently dead. (*Case* 78.)

6. *What is the probable age of the stain?*

On this point there is a great deal to be said. I have already mentioned certain well marked indications of the age of a stain, viz.:—its colour and solubility in cold water—in other words the chemical condition of the colouring matter, *i.e.* whether it be hæmoglobin, methæmoglobin or hæmatin. I have for a long time past been engaged in an extensive series of experiments for the purpose of determining the time required for the change of hæmoglobin into methæmoglobin and finally into hæmatin at different places and under different conditions. The details of these experiments will be published elsewhere, but to my mind they justify certain conclusions of importance, which may be thus summarized:—

(α.) That the conversion of hæmoglobin into methæmoglobin may take place within an hour in a room lighted with gas, or within twenty-four hours in the atmosphere of a populous town, or within four days by the seaside and for a few miles inland, whilst the change may be delayed for two, three or even six

weeks if the stain be merely exposed to pure country air free from all acid vapours.

(β.) That given a stain where unchanged hæmoglobin exists, it being proved that the stained body had been exposed to the atmosphere of a town (more especially if in a neighbourhood where manufactures are in operation), we should be safe in saying that the stain might only be a few hours, but that, at the outside, it was not more than two or three days old.

(γ.) That, given a stain on a fabric where the hæmoglobin remains unaltered, it being proved that the stained article had been exposed to pure country air only, we should be safe in saying that the stain, at the outside, was not more than six weeks old.

But we desire to add that in answering this question the greatest possible caution is needed. One step beyond the region of absolute and well-attested fact should, as a matter of evidence, be regarded by the medical jurist as unknown and untrodden territory.

SEMINAL STAINS.

In examining seminal stains we have to consider: (1) Their general appearance; (2) The action of heat; (3) Their chemical reactions; and (4) The microscopic detection of the spermatozoa.

1. *General appearance.*—A seminal stain is stiff and colourless. When seen by transmitted light, it presents a more distinctly greyish-brown tinge than stains produced by gum or albumen, with either of which it might be confounded.

2. *Action of heat.*—When a seminal stain is warmed, it becomes of a pale yellow tint. This constitutes a very characteristic reaction, happening with hardly any other discharge, healthy or morbid.

When warmed, or even when moistened with warm water, the stain evolves the odour peculiar to the seminal fluid.

3. *Chemical reactions.*—Cut out a small portion of the stained fabric. If the suspected stain be upon wood or stone, the material should be carefully scraped.

(α.) Digest a portion of the fabric (or scrapings) in a watch-

glass with a few drops of water for about ten minutes. Remove the fabric, and carefully squeeze out with the fingers the water absorbed. Place the glass in a good light on a piece of white paper, and add to the solution a drop of nitric acid on a glass rod. If the stain be seminal, the liquid will turn of a yellow colour, but there will be no precipitate.

(β.) Lassaigne suggests that, in order to distinguish between an albuminous and a seminal stain, it should be moistened with a solution of lead oxide in liquor potassæ, and dried at 68° F. If it be albuminous (that is, if it contains sulphur), it turns of a yellow colour, but if it be seminal, no change will be apparent, unless, as sometimes happens, the semen be diluted with an albuminous secretion.

(γ.) In pure seminal stains the guaiacum test gives no blue reaction. (Page 221.)

The above tests, however, are rendered practically worthless if the garment on which the stains occur be dirty or coloured. Under such circumstances we must rely entirely on the microscopic examination. And it is to be further noted that we should in no case be justified in pronouncing a stain to be seminal, unless the results of the microscopic examination were conclusive.

4. *Microscopic Examination.*

This consists in the search for the characteristic seminal animalcules (spermatozoa, zoosperms). Admitting, as Casper proved, that semen may be found without spermatozoa, we consider there are no known data justifying a positive opinion that a given stain is seminal unless we are able to detect them.

In examining a Suspected Seminal Stain, carefully, and with as little handling as possible, cut out the stained portion. Place it in a perfectly clean watch-glass, with two or three drops (at most) of cold distilled water. Move the stained fabric about in the water with a glass-rod. Having allowed it to soak for about ten minutes, squeeze out the water with the end of the glass-rod, and examine several specimens of the liquid and of the deposits, under a quarter-inch power.

Another process has been suggested, which we believe to be of value. The suspected stain is to be steeped for 36 to 48

hours in an ammoniacal solution of carmine. The fibres of the fabric are then to be unravelled, each fibre being examined separately in glycerine under the microscope (500 diameters). The advantage claimed for this process is that vegetable fibrillæ are not tinted by the carmine solution, whilst the heads of the spermatozoa become of a full red colour. This process is more particularly valuable where the stains are old and the spermatozoa adhere tenaciously (as is often the case) to the fibres of the material. (See *Report of Dr. Longuet to the Société de Méd. Leg., Paris.*)

The human spermatozoon has a flattened and almost oval head, with a long slender filamentous tail. The entire length varies, according to Mr. Curling, from the $\frac{1}{500}$th to the $\frac{1}{600}$th of an inch. Some, however, are to be found that do not exceed the $\frac{1}{1000}$th of an inch. The tail is usually five or six times the length of the head, which is about $\frac{1}{9000}$th of an inch in diameter, and may roughly be regarded as about one-third the size of a human red blood corpuscle. Tailless spermatozoa have also been described. (*Dr. H. Gibbes*, "*Quart. Journ. of Micros. Science*," July, 1880.) Their shape varies in different animals.

In fresh semen, and very frequently in semen for some hours after emission, as well as in that taken from a body some time after death, the vibratile, undulating movements of the animalcules, principally executed with the tail, betoken life. A case is on record ("*Beale's Archives*") in which active spermatozoa were found in the mucus taken from the vagina of a little girl fourteen days after she had been raped. But even after the spermatozoa are dead and the stain dry, they may be easily distinguished by their peculiar shape. We have more than once seen them in stains six months old; whilst some have asserted they have been able to discover them after five or six years *(Ritter and Bayard)*. They have certainly a remarkable power of resisting putrefaction, having been observed by several microscopists in semen after it had become putrid. Their movements, when alive, are not checked by admixture with other secretions. Their activity is stimulated by alkalies, but arrested by weak acids. A temperature above 120° F., however, kills them in a very short time.

With what may these Seminal Animalcules be confounded?

(1.) *Minute fragments of linen fibre* might be mistaken for the tails, and the *minute ovoid granulations* present in vegetable fibrillæ for the heads of spermatozoa. Hence it is a safe rule: *admit nothing to be seminal, unless some complete spermatozoa can be detected.* On the other hand, the presence of complete spermatozoa is to be regarded as unquestionable proof of the seminal nature of a stain.

(2.) *Granules* are to be found in all semen, that might be mistaken for the heads of the animalcules. These granules, however, are of considerable size. The rule we have just laid down will prevent any error arising from this cause.

(3.) M. Donné discovered and described an animalcule, not unfrequently found in the vaginal mucus of patients where cleanliness is not observed, called by him "*Trichomonas Vaginæ.*"

The microscopic differences between these trichomonads and the seminal animalcules are very definite:—

(*α.*) The heads of the trichomonads are at least three times the size of the heads of spermatozoa.

(*β.*) Internally, the trichomonads appear to be granular, whereas the spermatozoa are transparent and structureless.

(*γ.*) From the head of the trichomonad several ciliæ are apparent, whilst none are visible from the spermatozoon.

(4.) Certain *fungi* are said closely to resemble spermatozoa, but their tails are clumsier, and they refract light differently. They may also be seen, under favourable conditions, to grow on the glass slide.

The following stains derive their chief medico-legal interest from the fact that they are liable to be mistaken for blood. Independently however, of this, they may also prove important as connecting links between a prisoner and the crime with which he is charged. For both these reasons they deserve attention.

Grease Stains. The use of a pocket-lens will usually distinguish these from blood-stains, with which, more especially on dark fabrics, they are likely to be confounded. Their nature

may be easily determined by putting a piece of white blotting-paper over the stain, and pressing a hot iron upon it, when the grease stain will more or less completely disappear. They are also known by their ready solubility in ether, benzene, and chloroform.

Tar and Pitch Stains. These may be known by their colour, also by the peculiar and distinctive odour they omit when warmed. They are also readily soluble in turpentine and in alcohol, neither of which solvents have much effect on blood-stains.

Tobacco Stains. These when warmed emit a strong nicotine odour.

Iron Moulds, or Red Paint made from Iron. These are insoluble in cold water, but soluble in hydrochloric acid. (Care must be taken that the acid used is itself free from iron.) The acid solution gives a dark blue with *potassic ferrocyanide*, and a bright red with *potassic sulphocyanide* provided there be no excess of acid. In cases where a stain is believed to be due to an iron-mould, the dye of the fabric should, in the first instance, be examined for iron.

Rust Spots on Steel Instruments. Treat the spot with pure distilled water (avoiding the use of all acids) and filter. The water will remain uncoloured, the rust spot being insoluble. If there be any precipitate on the filter-paper, it will probably be soluble in dilute hydrochloric acid.

Spots of Lemon or of Orange Juice on Steel. In this case a citrate of iron is formed, which is soluble in cold water, the solution being of a light yellow colour, and having an acid reaction. The tint is unchanged either by the action of ammonia or by boiling. It may be proved to be an iron salt by the general tests for iron.

Madder. The colour of Madder is not destroyed by heat, whereas that of blood is. On adding a solution of alum, it turns yellow, whereas the red colour of a blood-solution would merely be rendered more dilute.

Sanguinaria. The red colour is destroyed by ammonia.

Brazil Wood. The red colour is turned crimson by ammonia.

Logwood. The solution is reddened by sulphuric acid, and blackened by iron sulphate.

Camwood and Red Saunders. These colours are insoluble in cold water, but very soluble in alcohol and ether. They are both turned crimson by ammonia.

Archil, fruit stains, flower stains, &c. These vegetable colours are for the great part turned either blue or green by the action of ammonia.

Anatto. The colour of anatto is soluble in water, and is not altered by the action of ammonia. It turns a dark blue tint on the addition of sulphuric or of nitric acid.

Catechu (Cutch), Rhatany, and Kino. These bodies are soluble in water, but are not altered by the action of ammonia. The first two become black, and the third a greenish black, on the addition of a salt of iron.

XIII. Handwriting.—Variety of Inks.

It is seldom that medical men are called upon professionally to give evidence as to handwriting, experts or the cashiers of banks, or intimate friends or relations being generally summoned for this purpose. Occasionally, however, if forgery or erasure be suspected, the scientific chemist may be consulted, whilst the variety of ink used in a certain document and its similarity to the ink found in the possession of a prisoner, has on more than one occasion furnished important evidence of identity.

Sympathetic Inks. A great many sympathetic or invisible inks have been from time to time suggested. Some of these are indicated in the following table.

Ink.	Developer.	Colour.
Solution of galls.	Dilute solution of an iron salt.	Dark brown or black.
Dilute solution of ferrocyanide of potassium.	As above.	Rich blue.
Chloride of cobalt.	Heat.	Blue. Colour evanescent, but can be restored by reheating.
Mixed chlorides of cobalt and nickel.	Heat.	Green. Colour evanescent, but again appears with heat.
Dilute solutions of gold and silver salts.	Exposure to light or heat.	Brownish black or purple tint.

WRITING INKS.—*Black Inks.* Nearly all the black writing inks in common use contain gallate or tannate of iron, held in suspension by gum. Cloves, carbolic acid, and other antiseptics, are employed to prevent it from becoming mouldy. The following table from Watts' "*Dictionary of Chemistry*" shows the composition of various inks :—

Ingredients. per 1,000 parts.	*a*	*b*	*c*	*d*	*e*	*f*	*g*	*h*	*i*	*j*	*k*	*l*	*m*
Galls	225	187	133	125	66	62	31	50	174	50	60	42	33
Green Vitriol	75	73	55	24	22	31	19	32	87	16	20	21	11
Gum	25	73	55	24	19	31	8	9	43	47	20	16	11·5
Logwood	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	100	20	21	33
Vinegar	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	125	135	—	—	—	—
Sugar	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	23	10	16	—

The sugar in *j*, *k* and *l* admits of a copy being taken by pressing a moistened sheet of paper upon the writing (copying inks).

The so-called Alizarin inks contain a little free acid, and generally some sulphate of indigo. Such inks become very black by exposure to ammoniacal fumes. Extract of logwood mixed with potassic chromate makes a good black ink, which does not mould. It is, however, apt to get viscid and gelatinous.

Nearly all the inks mentioned may be removed by chlorine, or by a solution of oxalic acid, or by dilute hydrochloric acid. If Indian ink be added to them this possibility of removal is prevented. Traill's indelible ink is prepared by dissolving wheat gluten in vinegar, after steeping it for 24 to 36 hours in water, and rubbing up the resulting fluid with Indian ink or lampblack. Another indelible ink is formed by mixing a *decoction of galls with vanadate of ammonium.* Chlorine destroys the black colour, but does not remove the ink. Acids turn it blue. Some of the *silver* inks (permanent marking inks) are almost indelible, but cyanide of potassium dissolves them.

An aniline black ink and other aniline inks are now often used.

Blue Inks. Composition : Prussian blue 30 parts, oxalic acid 4 parts, water 1,000 parts. Another variety of blue ink contains : Prussian blue 12·5 parts, oxalic acid 25 parts, water 1,000.

Red Inks. 1 part of good carmine dissolved in 120 parts of strong ammonia, with 1·5 parts of gum Arabic. A cheaper

form consists of 12 parts of powdered cochineal, 4 parts of ammonic carbonate, and 32 parts of hot water. Digest and decant. A third variety is prepared by boiling together to one-half 2 lbs. of Brazil wood, 1½ lb. of Rupel or Roch alum, and 2 gallons of good vinegar.

Yellow and Green Inks. The former is a decoction of saffron, and the latter a solution of indigo-carmine mixed with picric acid.

Printers' Ink. This is a mixture of boiled linseed oil, yellow soap, drying ingredients, and lamp-black.

Vermilion, ultramarine, and lead-chromate respectively, are used for red, blue, and yellow printers' inks, instead of lamp-black.

Erasures. Before making any experiments with or manipulating paper on which an erasure is suspected, it is well to have it photographed. The character of the paper (noting whether it be hand or machine made, and whether it be glazed on the surface only or all through) deserves careful study. The water-marks of the paper and its texture, which latter is best demonstrated by the microscope, have often proved highly important. The paper should now be minutely examined with a lens, and any peculiarities of character or of surface recorded. Any variations in the translucency or transparency of different parts should be accurately noted. Again, it is often a good plan to wet the paper, placing it for this purpose on a glass plate, to note whether the water is more greedily absorbed at the spot of the supposed erasure than elsewhere. The use of paraffin, turpentine, benzol, etc., for this purpose, instead of water, have been recommended when the paper is very thick.

Forgers not unfrequently gum, varnish, or glaze the spot that they have scraped or erased. Size and other animal gelatines used for this purpose may be known by turning brown when treated with a weak iodine solution, and starch by its turning blue. Gum is soluble in water, but is precipitated from the solution on the addition of alcohol. Resinoid bodies are soluble in alcohol, but are re-precipitated by water.

In the vast majority of instances where an erasure has been attempted, the application of a solution of galls will at once reveal the remains of the iron of the original writing-ink.

It is frequently of use, before applying the galls, carefully to pencil over the erasure a weak solution of ammonia. Sometimes the application of a ferrocyanide of potassium solution gives good results bringing out strongly the blue colour of iron-inks, but in such case no ammonia should be used.

When chlorine or solutions of the hypochlorites have been freely applied to paper on which there has been writing, the colour of almost all inks, excepting those that contain carbonaceous matter will be destroyed.

If an acid has been used to remove the ink, its presence may be detected by the use of litmus, unless an alkali has been afterwards employed to neutralize it. Papers tinted with ultramarine are so changed in colour by the action of acids, that they are not very likely in such case to be used for purposes of erasure, but if the paper be coloured with smalt or Berlin blue, it admits of acids being used as bleaching agents. The use of an ammonia solution as a means of detecting erasures, is most applicable to iron-inks that have been bleached by acids.

XIV. The Limits of Sight, and Questions relating to Vision.

What are the limits of healthy Sight unassisted by Instruments?

The shape of the earth sets a certain limit to vision, even as regards very large and lofty objects. This will be seen by the following table taken from Carr's "*Synopsis of Practical Philosophy.*"

Table showing the distance in miles of the farthest visible point that can be seen from the top of a given height, taking into account the effects of refraction.

Height in Feet.	Distance in miles.	Height in Feet.	Distance in Miles.	Height in Feet.	Distance in Miles.	Height in Feet.	Distance in Miles.
5	2·96	60	10·25	500	29·5	5,000	94·0
10	4·18	70	11·1	700	30·5	6,000	102·0
15	5·12	100	13·2	1,000	41·8	7,000	110·0
20	5·91	150	16·2	1,500	51·0	8,000	118·0
25	6·61	200	18·7	2,000	59·0	9,000	125·0
30	7·25	250	20·9	2,500	66·0	10,000	132·0
40	8·37	300	22·9	3,000	72·0	15,000	162·0
50	9·35	400	26·4	4,000	83·0	20,000	187·0

It follows from this, that a man of ordinary height can be seen on level ground at a distance of about three and a half miles on a clear day.

In the case of hypermetropic, myopic and presbyopic persons or of patients with other varieties of imperfect sight, lenses are needed, or allowance must be made.

We here speak merely of *sight*. This is vastly different from recognition in order to secure personal identity.

The following conditions must be present for the recognition of an object at the distances stated:—(1.) Normal vision. (If abnormalities of vision exist, these must be compensated.) (2.) Sufficient light. (3.) Sufficient size of object.

1. *Normal vision.* This consists in the sight of both eyes being perfect. The loss of one eye can scarcely be called "*deprivation of sight*," but it certainly is "*deprivation of normal sight*."

Again, the eyes must be normal in their power of discerning colour. *Colour-blindness*, or *Daltonism*, has been the cause of many railway accidents, owing to coloured lights or signals not being recognised. Even in war a red uniform has been confounded with a grey, and thus friends have been fired upon as if they had been foes, and foes allowed to escape as though they were friends.

A valuable contribution to our knowledge of colour-blindness has been made by Dr. de Fontenay, of Copenhagen ("*Nordiskt Mediciniskt Arkiv*," 1880). He follows the classification proposed by Holmgren: 1. Total colour-blindness; 2. Partial colour-blindness: (*a.*) Complete blindness of red, green, or violet; (*b.*) Incomplete colour-blindness; (*c.*) Feeble sense of colour. The last (*c*) is not Daltonism properly so called, and is omitted in the statistics. The examinations were made by means of Holmgren's coloured wools, and in some of the cases in which colour-blindness was detected, the results were controlled by various additional tests.

The total number of persons examined was 9,659, of all ages from eight years upwards; 6,945 being above the age of sixteen, and 2,714 below that age. Of the whole number, 217, or 2·25 per cent., were colour-blind. Of 4,492 adult males, 165,

or 3·7 per cent., had colour-blindness. Among these, 1,001 belonged to the upper classes, and showed a percentage of 3·09; while in 3,491 artisans, labourers, etc., the percentage was 3·87.

Occupation. The percentages of colour-blindness varied greatly with the *employment of the individual.* Thus, of 2,737 railway officials, 3 per cent. were colour-blind; of 183 post-office officials, 9·28 per cent.; of 930 artisans of various kinds, 3·22 per cent. It is not certain how far these proportions are accidental, or how far the greater prevalence of colour-blindness in the lower orders may be due to defective cultivation of the sense of colour, or to heredity. In any case, Dr. de Fontenay's observations agree with those of Holmgren, Magnus, and others.

Age and Sex. Of 6,945 adults above the age of sixteen (4,492 males and 2,453 females), 176, or 2·56 per cent., were found to be colour-blind. Among the females, there were only 11 cases of colour-blindness, or 0·45 per cent. Adding to these the female children who were examined, a total is obtained of 3,819, among whom there were 16 colour-blind individuals, or 0·42 per cent.; while, in a total of 5,840 males (adults and children), the number of cases of Daltonism was 201, or 3·44 per cent. All the sixteen colour-blind females belonged to the working classes. Among the 2,714 children, aged from eight to sixteen, 41 or 1·51 per cent., were colour-blind—viz., 1,348 boys, with 36 colour-blind, or 2·67 per cent.; and 1,366 girls with 5 colour-blind, or 0·37 per cent.

Varieties of Colour-Blindness. Two cases of violet-blindness which were incompletely examined being excluded, there were found to be 56 cases of red-blindness, 24 of green-blindness, and 135 of incomplete colour-blindness. In all the cases, both eyes were examined separately, and found to be affected. As regards the relation between the colour of the eyes and colour-blindness, Dr. de Fontenay does not find any special predominance in dark or in fair individuals.

Heredity. With regard to the hereditary transmission of colour-blindness, exact information was obtained in 34 cases, in 27 of which heredity was denied. In two of the remaining cases, the fathers were colour-blind in the same way as the subjects

examined. The parents of another had normal vision; but a paternal uncle, two brothers, and the son of the person examined were colour-blind. In the parents and grandparents, and in the son of another person, the colour-sense was normal; but his brother and three maternal uncles had colour-blindness. In another case, the perception of colours was normal in the father, mother, brothers, and sisters; but the maternal grandfather, a maternal cousin (male), and the son of a female cousin on the mother's side, were the subjects of Daltonism. Another of the colour-blind persons had four relatives who were similarly affected, viz., a maternal uncle and cousin, his mother's grandfather, and a brother. There was no instance of consanguineous marriage among Dr. de Fontenay's cases of colour-blindness.

Dr. de Fontenay says that the increased attention paid to colour-blindness within the last few years, has been attended in Denmark with some important results. All the *employés* of the public (State) and private railways have been examined, in order to ascertain their sense of colour (except in the case of one private company, which did not think such an examination necessary); and henceforth all candidates for situations on railways are to be tested. Candidates for admission to the school of naval officers also submit to an examination.

Herr E. J. Mellberg, principal teacher of physics in the Lyceum at Helsingfors, has also examined the colour-sense of the 227 pupils in that institution. Among them, he found ten cases of Daltonism, or 4·4 per cent.; four of red-blindness, two of violet-blindness, and three of incomplete colour-blindness. In addition, among the boys whose sense of colour was stated to be normal, there were three who confounded light yellowish-red with rose-colour; eighteen who could not distinguish between bluish green and pure green; fourteen who failed in both these respects; and nine in whom the perception of colours was weak. The age of the subjects varied from nine to twenty, but only one case of colour-blindness was met with in those above the age of seventeen.

The *effects of age* on the acuteness of vision is considered by Dr. De Guéret to be, on an average as follows:—

The acuteness of vision at	50 years	is diminished	$\frac{1}{5}$*
„	60	„	$\frac{1}{4}$
„	70	„	$\frac{1}{3}$
„	80	„	$\frac{1}{2}$

In other words, if a man of forty could distinguish and recognise an object at 100 feet distance, at sixty years of age he could not recognise the same object further off than 75 feet. It would be interesting to know precisely how these results were obtained, and whether care was taken to exclude all cases of incipient cataract.

2. *Sufficient Light.*—(*a.*) *Moonlight.* The best known person cannot be recognised by the clearest moonlight at a greater distance than 15 to 16 métres (16 to 17 yards). The light of the moon, however, is very variable, whilst on a bright night the shadows produced are often intense, well-defined, and lengthy.

(*β.*) *Starlight.* By star-light only, the best known person cannot be identified further off than 3 to 4 métres (10 to 13 feet).*

(*γ.*) *Flash of Lightning* (*Case* 72). The light emitted from a flash of lightning is said to have sufficed to enable a lady, on her passage home from India, to see distinctly, and afterwards identify, a man robbing her trunk in the cabin of a vessel on a dark night. (Montgomery, "*Cyclopædia of Practical Medicine*," art. Identity quoted by Guy.) The author has experimented many times on this point, and entirely agrees that a flash of lightning is in *many cases*, but by no means in all, amply sufficient for purposes of identification. Thus, he was able on one occasion to detect a black hair pin on the ground by a flash of lightning, and to pick it up when the next flash came.

(*δ.*) *Flash of firearms.* It may be asked :—"Is the light resulting from the flash of a pistol or gun sufficient to enable one to see clearly the face of the person firing?" In May 1808 the Sieur Labbé was riding, accompanied by the widow Beaujean, along the high road, one hour and 43m. before the rising of the moon, when the servant of the former was wounded in the hand by a gun fired through a hedge. Both swore that they recog-

* See also "*De l'acuité de la vue pour les grandes distances*," par le Dr. J. Gayet; "*Annales d'oculistique*," Sept.-Oct., 1875, p. 171.

nised the assassin by the light of the discharge. (*See* Guy, p. 7, and Taylor, *Med. Juris.*, I., p. 684.) The accused, being sentenced to death on this evidence, appealed to the Court of Cassation, and many experiments were made by Guineau, Dupuis, Caussin, and others, which seemed to negative this possibility. In their own words: "The light was so fuliginous and so transient that it was scarcely possible to see distinctly the form of a head, and that of the face could not be recognised." The sentence was reversed. Foderé afterwards contested this decision, and a subsequent case, confirmed by the experiments of Desgranges of Lyons, showed the possibility of such recognition.

In England, similar evidence has been received in several cases. In one case (*R.* v. *White*, Croydon Autumn Assizes, 1839), the accused was acquitted. In a second (*R.* v. *Stapley*, Lewes Lent Assizes, 1862), the evidence of a game-keeper, who identified his assailant by the flash of the gun, was received, and the prisoner convicted. In Paris and Fonblanque's case in 1799 (*R.* v. *Haines*), a police officer deposed that the highwayman rode a dark-brown horse of remarkable head and shoulders, and wore a rough brown great coat. These statements were received as satisfactory, though they were made out entirely by the light emitted by the flash from his pistol. He stated that he had since identified the horse in a stable in London.

M. Cauvet (Constantinople) who has lately investigated this point (Dec., 1873) concludes: — (1.) That recognition of a person firing is possible if the observer be within five paces of the discharge and at the side of the line of fire; or (2.) If the discharge occurred in a close place of small dimensions, and the observer occupied a stooping posture. (3.) Recognition is affected by the quality of the powder used, the best English powder being that from the explosion of which recognition is the most certain.

Our own experiments on this point lead us to believe in the possibility of recognition in the majority of cases, that is, given a moderate distance, a dark night, and the absence of any artificial light, and that the smoke produced by the explosion is not great. Given the reverse of these conditions, viz., a considerable distance, a weak flash and much smoke, and

we are of opinion that the chances of identification would be doubtful.

Dr. Taylor also agrees in the possibility of recognition under such circumstances.

(ε.) "*Seeing Sparks.*" The possibility of recognising an assailant by the subjective sensation of flashes of light (vulgarly called "seeing sparks") produced by a blow on the eyeball is not worth serious discussion. (Müller's "*Physiology*"; Schilbach and Krügelstein in Henke's "*Zeitschrift der S.A.*," 1842., I., 197, and 1845, III., 172.) Such sensations are not uncommonly felt by those who are totally blind.

We are astonished that medical jurists should have deemed this matter worthy of notice.

3. *Sufficient size of object.* With respect to the smallest objects recognisable by the unassisted sight, there has been much difference of opinion. Carpenter states (apparently on the authority of Ehrenberg) that the smallest square magnitude, black or white, which can be seen on a ground of the reverse colour, is about the $\frac{1}{400}$th to the $\frac{1}{500}$th of an inch, whilst particles that powerfully reflect light, such as gold dust of the $\frac{1}{1125}$th of an inch, can be seen with the naked eye in common daylight. Bergmann found that black and white chequers of $\frac{1}{25}$th of an inch square could be discerned at such a distance that the retinal image of each square could not have exceeded half the diameter of one of the cones of the bacillary layer, which are said to have a diameter of $\frac{1}{4166}$th of an inch. Dr. Vincent de Guéret (of Creuse) in "*La France Médicale*," (No. 57, for 1875), states that objects to be seen at all must have a diameter of the $\frac{1}{6250}$th of an inch.

Lines are more easily perceived than *points*. Thus opaque threads of the $\frac{1}{4000}$th of an inch (*i.e.*, about half the diameter of a silk-worm's fibre) can be discerned by most people with the naked eye when held towards the light. Volkmann (quoted in Funke's "*Lehrbuch d. Physiologie*") considered that parallel black lines could be seen when only the $\frac{1}{1000}$th of a millimètre apart($=\frac{1}{8250}$th of an inch).

Passing from microscopic objects, we note that at a distance of one foot a person with normal sight can scarcely see an object

less than the $\frac{1}{25}$th of an inch. At greater distances, the size must increase comparatively.

The recognition of individuals depends on various points. The features, the colour and arrangement of the hair, prognathism, the colour of the eyes, etc., in the case of people comparatively near, are the important means of identification; whilst beyond a certain distance, stature, gait and general peculiarities, such as unusual actions, etc., are no doubt the primary means by which we know one person from another. Naturally, therefore, the more marked the peculiarities of the individual, the more easily he may be recognised at a distance.

From experiments on recognition, Guéret concludes that the best known persons, even those possessing well-marked personal peculiarities, can only be recognised, and that with difficulty, in broad daylight at a distance of 100 mètres (a little over 109 yards). Beyond 150 mètres (164 yards) he believes recognition to be perfectly impossible. Less known and less remarkable people can only be recognised in broad day-light at a distance of from 60 to 100 mètres (65 to 109 yards). In the case of people who have no personal peculiarities, and are almost strangers, he regards 25 to 30 mètres (27 to 33 yards) as about the limit for recognition.

XV. The Velocity of Sound. The distance at which sounds are audible. Limits of hearing.

There are a few questions relating to sound that may possess a certain medico-legal importance:—

1. *Velocity.* The velocity of sound in air is 1090 feet per second at 32° F. (0° C.). At lower temperatures the velocity is less, and at higher temperatures greater. It may be taken that the velocity increases about 2 feet for every 1° Cent.

The velocity of sound depends on the elasticity of the air in relation to its density, it being *directly* proportional to the square root of the elasticity, but *inversely* proportional to the square root of the density. The law of Marriotte proves that in air density and elasticity vary in the same proportion. Hence density neutralises elasticity, and consequently the velocity of sound in air becomes independent of density. But for this law

to hold good the dense air and the rare air must have the same temperature. This fact may be important. Given, the *same temperature* at the top of a high mountain and in the valley, the velocity of a sound (say, of a pistol-shot) would be alike in both; but, given a *lower temperature* at the top of the mountain (which is usual) than in the valley, and the velocity of the sound on the mountain would be less than in the valley.

In water the velocity of sound is four times, and in iron seventeen times greater than in air. In wood the velocity will depend on the variety and on the direction of the fibres, there being marked differences in different directions of grain.

2. *Intensity.* At great elevations, the loudness of a given sound suffers sensible diminution. In *free* air, intensity diminishes as the square of the distance from the source of sound increases. Thus, the firing of a pistol would sound *four* times as loud to a person at 100 feet, as it would to a person 200 feet distant. This law, however, does not hold good when the sound wave is generated in a confined space, where lateral diffusion is limited, more particularly if the interior surface of such space be smooth.

Intensity depends, not on the density of the air in which the sound is heard, but on the density of the air in which the sound is generated. If of two sounds of like intensity the one be generated on a mountain and the second in a valley, the sound generated in the heavy valley air may be heard on the mountain, whilst that generated in the light mountain air might not be heard in the valley. Again, if a pistol be fired at a spot midway between the valley and the mountain top, the sound might reach an observer on the mountain and an observer in the valley with a similar intensity, although in one case it had to travel through the rarer mountain air, and in the other through the denser valley air.

3. *Limits of Hearing.* With even the normal sense there are distinct limits to the power of hearing. Savart fixed these as between 8 complete vibrations per second and 24,000, whilst Helmholtz regards the limits as between 16 and 38,000, or 11 octaves. The practical limit, however, is between 40 and

4,000 vibrations per second, or a range of about 7 octaves. But different people have in this respect vastly different powers, some being able to recognize low sounds but not high, and others high sounds but not low.

Further, every individual has a certain power of altering his special limits of sound-appreciation (more particularly for low sounds) by altering the tension of his tympanic membrane, either by forming a partial vacuum, or by compressing the air, in the cavity behind the tympanum. As an illustration, the sense of hearing low sounds may be almost entirely quenched by stopping the nose and mouth and expanding the chest as in the act of inspiration.

TABULAR STATEMENT OF THE DETAILS TO BE OBSERVED AND NOTED IN THE EXAMINATION OF PERSONS, OR OF BODIES, OR OF BONES, RE IDENTITY.

I. General.

1. *The surroundings of the body.*
   Note—(α.) Clothes.
   (β.) Jewellery.
   (γ.) All articles found on the body or in the coffin.
   (δ.) Hairs grasped in the hands or free about the body.

2. *The probable business or trade at which the person worked.*
   Note—(α.) Condition of the hands (horny or soft).
   (β.) Any special injuries to nails.
   (γ.) Any special stains (such as silver and dye stains).

3. *The height of the person.*

4. *The weight of the person.*

5. *Age.*
   Note—(α.) The amount and colour of the hair.
   (β.) The teeth.
   (γ.) The condition of the alveolar processes.
   (δ.) The condition of the fontanelles.
   (ε.) The points of ossification.
   (ζ.) The condition of the epiphyses.
   (η.) The size of the bones.

6. *Sex.*
   Note—(α.) The genital organs.
   (β.) The breasts.
   (γ.) The general conformation.
   (δ.) The length of the back hair and the nature of the hair generally.
   (ε.) The pelvis.
   (ζ.) The markings on the bones.

7. *Deformities.*
   Note—(α.) Shortening of legs from disease of hips, etc.
   (β.) Spinal disease.
   (γ.) Talipes.
   (δ.) Large wens.
   Etc.

8. *Marks, growths, etc., on the skin.*
Distinguish between those arising—
(α.) From *disease* (such, *e.g.*, as scrofulous ulcers, small pox, diseased teeth, syphilis, skin diseases, etc.).
(β.) From *operations.* (Major operations. Also bleeding and cupping, leech bites, setons, etc., etc.)
(γ.) From *tattooing or flogging.*
(δ.) From *natural causes.* (Discoloration; nævi; moles; warts.)
(ε.) From *violence.*
(ζ.) From *stains* (such as blood, etc.).

9. *Injuries.*
Note—(α.) Fractures.
(β.) Dislocations.
(γ.) Wounds. Consider—(1) their probable origin; (2) position; and (3) extent.
Etc.

Examine now in detail the various parts and organs of the body:—

10. *The Head.*
Note—(α.) Complexion. (Fair, dark, sallow.)
(β.) Shape and general type of face and head. (European, Mongolian, etc.)
(γ) Forehead. (Low, high, prominent.)
(δ.) Eyes. (Large or small, sunk or prominent.)
(ε.) Nose. (Short or long, flat and broad, broad or well formed nostrils, etc)
(ζ) Ears. (Lobules well formed or continuous with the cheeks:—pierced or not.)
(η.) Mouth. (Large or small; note scars on the roof:—the condition of alveolar processes.)
(θ.) Lips. (Large or small. Cicatrices.)
(ι.) Teeth.
Number.
Regularity.
State of decay.
Any special parts where they are more than usually worn.
Whether there are false teeth, or indications exist of their having been worn.
(κ.) Chin. (Full, round, double, pointed or receding.)
(λ.) Hair.
Amount, colour and length of hair on head, lip and chin.
Whether the colour be natural. (Test if necessary.)
Whether it has been recently cut.

11. *The Neck.*
Note.—Its characters. (Short or long:—thin or thick. Cicatrices.)

12. *The Chest.*
Note.—(α.) Formation. (Well formed or pigeon shaped.)
(β.) Shoulders. (High or sloping.)
(γ.) Sternum. (Flat or sunk, etc.)

13. *The Pelvis.*
Note.—(α.) The Genitals; normal or otherwise.
(β.) In females the question of pregnancy.
(γ.) In the case of a skeleton, decide whether the pelvis be that of a male or female?

14. *The Extremities.*
Note.—(α.) The Arms. Size and length generally.
The Fingers, short or long.
Whether they are of proper proportional length.
Any peculiarities of the nails.
The Hands, roughened or not by hard work.
Whether marked or not by stains.
(β.) The Legs, whether uniform or not in length.
Anchylosis of joints.
Whether bowed or not.
Whether in-kneed.
The ankles and feet.

II. In the Case of Mutilated Remains.

In addition to what has been stated, note:—

1. *The degree of accuracy with which the parts fit together, as follows:—*
(α.) Bones.
(β.) Muscles.
(γ.) Blood-vessels.

2. *The nature of the mutilation:—*
(α.) Whether the muscles are hacked, or have been divided by a sharp knife.
(β.) Whether the bones have been chopped or cut with a fine or coarse saw.

3. *The after treatment to which the parts have been subjected:—*
(α.) Whether they have been acted upon by lime or other chemicals.
(β.) Burning.
If the bones be entire examine as usual.
If only an ash be found, examine this for phosphate of lime.
(γ.) Boiling.

III. In the Case of the Discovery of a Skeleton or of Individual Bones.

In addition to the points already indicated, note :—

1. The extent to which the soft parts have disappeared.
2. The extent to which separation of the bones has taken place.
3. The colour of the bones.
4. Their state of preservation.
5. Are they human or not?
6. The sex as determined from the pelvis and the characters of the bones generally.
7. Do the bones belong to one or to more than one body.
8. Carefully examine the pelvis and the parts around for the remains of fœtal bones.
9. Examine carefully for any evidence of disease of the bones. (Spinal disease, anchylosis, rickets, syphilis, softening, etc.)
10. Existence of injuries.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. R. v. Raynon.—(*Taunton Spring Assizes*, 1841.)—Prisoner charged with wounding. A cut on the thumb of the prisoner, stated by him to be three weeks old, was proved by medical evidence not to have been inflicted longer than two or three days, a period that coincided with the time of the alleged assault. Prisoner convicted. (Pages 147, 180, 183.)

2. R. v. Henry Reed and Eliz. Donelan.—(*Chelmsford Spring Assizes*, 1842.)—In this case the prosecutrix accused the prisoner of inflicting a wound on her nose with a sharp instrument, causing profuse bleeding and a fracture of the bridge. The prisoners were convicted, no medical evidence being offered in defence. A short time after the trial, and within six months of the alleged assault, the prosecutrix was examined, and no scars were found. An eminent surgeon to whom the case was referred decided that no injury such as that described by the prosecutrix could have been inflicted, or a scar of some kind would most certainly have been visible. (Pages 147, 180, 182.)

3. Smyth v. Smyth.—(*Gloucester Summer Assizes*, 1853.)—The plaintiff, as a lost heir, claimed certain estates. The real heir, it was proved, had certain marks on his hand and wrist, caused at birth by instrumental delivery, and the claimant asserted that such marks in his case were visible. The case of the claimant broke down on other points, but it was evident that the marks on the hand and wrist exhibited by him were merely the puckered cicatrices of scrofulous ulcers, similar scars also existing on the neck. (Pages 147, 175, 180, 186.)

4. R. v. Castro, alias Orton, &c.—The Tichborne Case.—(See "Guy's Forensic Medicine," p. 686.)—A man, believed to be Arthur Orton, the son of a Wapping butcher, claimed to be Sir Roger Tichborne, and heir to the baronetcy and estates. Roger was believed to have perished at sea in 1854.

In this case much depended on the following facts: –

(*a.*) *Marks and Scars.*—(*a.*) The real Roger had had an issue in one arm that had been kept open a long time, and was almost certain to have left an indelible scar. Some said he had also had a seton. The claimant had no corresponding mark. (*b.*) The real Roger had been bled frequently in both arms, in both ankles, and in one temple. There were no marks indicating bleedings on the claimant. (*c.*) There was evidence to show that the real Roger had been tattooed with Indian ink. There were no signs of

tattoo marks on the claimant. (*d.*) The claimant had a brown mark on his side; but there was no evidence to show that the real Roger had a similar mark.

On the claimant a mark was found just above the left wrist, of the origin of which the claimant professed ignorance. The theory of the prosecution was that this was the mark of caustic used to efface the letters A. O. (Arthur Orton) once tattooed there.

(β.) In this remarkable case *the question of age* was not of much importance, there being a difference of only five years between the age of Orton and that of Roger.

(γ.) *Personal appearance* was an important element. Could Roger, who at 21 was slim, 5 feet 8½ inches high, and 9 stone in weight, having narrow hips, thin straight legs and long bony fingers, become, after twelve years of active Australian life, the huge man the claimant was?

The *type of face* was important. Roger, it was proved, had a flat broad nose with large nostrils, the central groove joining the nose to the upper lip being wide. The lobules of the ears were badly formed, and continuous with the face. His eyes also were blue, with long black lashes. The claimant had a straight aquiline nose with round end and well formed nostrils, the central groove joining the nose to the upper lip being narrow. He had well marked lobes to his ears, and brown eyes and lashes.

Roger's brows, it was further proved, were wide apart, and the eyes tended *upwards* from the nose. The claimant's brows were near together, and the eyes from the nose had a tendency *downwards*.—(*Piercy.*)

(δ.) The claimant knew no French, whereas Roger knew French better than English. (Could Roger have entirely forgotten it after twelve years?) Further, the claimant had forgotten many facts very familiar to Roger, and claimed to remember many less striking facts. Thus he claimed to remember the name of a dog, but did not remember the Christian names of his mother.

The claimant was found guilty of imposture. (Pages 146, 147, 173, 180, 190.)

5. Edin. Med. Journ., 1875, Vol. XXV., p. 391.—(*Dr. Littlejohn.*)—Identification of the bodies of infants:—

(1.) Identification proved by means of a small blister the size of a pea, situated about a quarter of an inch from the semi-cicatrized umbilicus. This blister had attracted the attention of a nurse on the only occasion that she had dressed the child.

(2.) Identification proved by a patch of downy hair on the upper part of the child's sacrum.

(3.) Identification proved by the similarity existing between a piece of thread used to tie the umbilical cord of an infant, and certain thread found in possession of the mother.

(4.) Identification proved by the severed end of that part of the funis attached to the infant, fitting precisely to the corresponding portion attached to the afterbirth. (Pages 144, 175, 186.)

5a. Med. Times and Gaz., Aug. 19, 1871, p. 222.—In the gun-cotton explosion at Stowmarket the identity of one of the sufferers was clearly proved by a scar on the ankle. (Pages 147, 180.)

6. Douglas Peerage Case.—In this case family likeness was insisted upon and accepted as evidence of relationship. (Page 145.)

7. Foderé, Traité de Méd. Légale, Vol. I., chap. 2.—(From the Causes Célèbres before the Parliament of Toulouse, 1560. For details see Guy, p. 28, and Beck.) Martin Guerre had been away from home for eight years. An adventurer called Armand Dutille, who appears to have exhibited the closest possible resemblance in features and person to Guerre, passed himself off as Guerre, and was accepted by Guerre's wife as her husband. She had children by him, and he took possession of Guerre's property. He lived three years in the family, with four sisters and two brothers-in-law of Guerre's, without exciting their suspicions. At last, his claims were disputed. The matter came to trial, when the re-appearance of the real Martin Guerre, and the full recognition of the true man by the brothers and sisters, led the judges to pronounce Dutille an impostor. Dutille had lived some years with Guerre, by which means he not only became conversant with many family secrets, but had received from Guerre, at a time when he thought he was on the point of death, several family relics. (Pages 143, 145.)

8. Foderé, Traité de Médicine Légale, ch. 2.—(*Zacchias.*)—Cassali left his country when young, and was supposed to have been killed in battle. He returned after an absence of thirty years, and claimed the property appropriated by his heirs. He was imprisoned as an imposter, but was afterwards restored, chiefly on the opinion of Zacchias, that the changes stated to have occurred might have resulted from age, time, hardship, diet, disease, etc. Further, the relations could not prove the death of Cassali. (Pages 143, 145, 147, 173.)

9. Dover Standard, Dec. 25, 1875.—"On the morning of the 9th instant the body of a man, in a somewhat mangled condition, was discovered about half a mile distant from the Addison-road station, and two days later was identified by a woman named Triggs, of Cumberland-place, Hammersmith, as that of her husband. Further identification was forth coming also in the testimony of one of Mrs. Triggs' children, and of the supposed employer of the deceased man. An inquest was held at the Kensington Workhouse, and a certificate for burial granted by the coroner. Within an hour of the interment, and as the hearse was nearing the door of Mrs. Triggs, to the surprise of all parties the latch was lifted, and William Triggs, the husband supposed to be dead, entered the house, and gave a satisfactory account of his absence." (Pages 143, 145.)

10. Case of Baronet.—(Foderé "Traité de Méd. Légale," ch. ii.)—Baronet

was born in 1717, in the diocese of Rheims, and left his home at the age of twenty-five to get his living as a domestic. He returned after twenty-two years' absence to claim a little property, the whole of which, however, his sister had spent. In order to meet this difficulty, she persuaded a neighbour, named Babillot, to claim her brother as his son. He did so at first, but afterwards recanted. However, as his sister denied him, Baronet was sent to the galleys. After a few years, public opinion changed, and the parliament of Paris was appealed to. Among others, Louis, the great surgeon, was consulted. He inclined to Baronet's side, and the man was restored to his liberty and legal rights. Amongst other differences, Baronet was sixty, Babillot being only forty-six, and the latter, according to the father of Babillot, had a nævus on his thigh, whilst Baronet had no such mark. (Pages 143, 145, 173, 175.)

11. Annales d'Hygiene, Jan., 1847.—A robber discovered by certain blood spots on the snow, traced from a house where a burglary had been committed. The blood marks were on the *left* side of the footprints. A portion of skin was found in the snow, corresponding to an injury on the *left* hand of the accused. The prisoner afterwards confessed his guilt. (Pages 147, 178.)

12. Indian Med. Gazette, Jan., 1875, p. 5.—(*Dr. Meredith.*)—Male, æt. 9. Identity determined from a skull, five ribs, and five vertebræ. The teeth and the peculiar shape of the skull were the important data in this case. (Pages 150, 206.)

13. R. v. Elizabeth Ross. — (*C.C.C.*, 1831.) — Murder of Caroline Walsh.—(For details see "Taylor's Med. Juris.," Vol. I., p. 149.) The question in this case was one of identity. A certain woman (named Caroline *Walsh*) disappeared. It was believed that she had been "burked" for an anatomical school. The woman Ross was tried for the murder. On the same day that Walsh disappeared, a woman (named Caroline *Welsh*) was found in the street with her hip broken. The contention of the defence was that Welsh was the woman Walsh that the prisoner was accused of murdering. It was proved that :—

Walsh came from Kilkenny, was 84 years of age, tall, of sallow complexion, having grey hair, and very perfect incisor teeth.

Welsh came from Waterford, was 60 years of age, tall, of dark complexion, and had no front teeth, the alveolar cavities having probably been absorbed for some time.

The prisoner was convicted. (Pages 145, 146, 209.)

14. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 66.—A medical student of the name of Downie, who died about two years afterwards, had, in company with some others, disinterred a body from the churchyard of Newhills. On the night after that of the disinterment, they were bringing it to town from a place where it had been temporarily concealed, near Donmouth They had scarcely, however, moved from the spot when the Coastguard

suddenly came upon them. Downie's companions fled, leaving him with he body, which he attempted to defend, but was overpowered and captured. The Coastguard brought the body to town with the prisoner, whom they lodged in gaol. A day or two after this the wife and sons of a weaver in the "Spital," who had been some days missing, came forward and claimed the body as that of their relative. But as this person had been in good health at the time of his disappearance, and as no reason was known for his absence, the relatives of the weaver, who had sworn most positively to the identity, accused Downie of having enticed him away and murdered him.

Downie, seeing the serious nature of the charge thus preferred against him, found it necessary to state where he had actually procured the body in question. A party was then sent out to Newhills, to search the grave there, which they found empty.

But here a new difficulty arose. The relatives of the Newhills dead person, when shown the body, offered to make oath to it, while the Spital people refused to acknowledge their mistake.

At this stage of the proceedings, however, the case assumed a new aspect. The Spital weaver reappeared in life, but so incredulous were the people of the neighbourhood, that he had to be paraded through the streets to satisfy them, and many even then would scarcely believe the evidence of their senses, but insisted that it was only a figure dressed up in the weaver's clothes that was shown them.

Downie was tried for the violation of the churchyard, and fined heavily. (Page 143.)

15. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 67.—In the "Edinburgh Monthly Journal" for February, 1854, Dr. Kinloch has related a case of mistaken identity under the following circumstances:—The body of an old man was found on the bank of the Dee, at Drumoak. The left ear and the first finger of the left hand were wanting—the mutilation apparently of long standing. Two young women claimed the body as that of their father, who had been in the habit of leaving home for weeks at a time, and who had lost his left ear and left forefinger. On the return of the daughters and friends of the supposed party from his funeral, the boatman of a ferry which they had to cross, asked them for whom the were in mourning, and on receiving their answer, laughingly informed them that he had only half an hour before ferried their father over alive and well, which, on reaching home, they found to be true. Whose the body was which they had interred was not discovered. (Pages 143, 147.)

16. Beck's Med. Juris., p. 377.—J. Parker, living at New York in 1804, was mistaken for a man named Hoag, and charged with bigamy. He resembled Hoag in having a scar on his forehead, a mark on his neck, and a lisp in his speech. He differed from him, however, in having no scar on his foot. Further, an alibi in the case of Parker was distinctly proved. (Pages 147, 180, 181.)

17. Gazette Médicale, March, 1847.—(*Case before the Court of Assizes at Brabant*, 1846.)—A question arose as to whether a certain prisoner was the same man that had been convicted of forgery eighteen years previously (1828). The man convicted in 1828 had on his arm a brand-scar (**D**) made with a red-hot iron. The accused had no such mark. M. Vandelaer contended that the absence of the mark was no proof of non-identity, considering the length of time that had elapsed, and the probable use of artificial means to effect its removal. Others differed from his conclusions, but the Court decided in favour of the identity. (Pages 147, 180, 185, 188.)

18. Case of Stuart.—(*Old Bailey*, 1834.)—The non-identity of a prisoner proved by the absence of a cicatrix denoting the removal of a wen from the hand. This mark was known to have existed in the case of the true culprit. Mr. Carpue stated in evidence that "it was impossible, in his opinion, to remove such a wen without leaving a cicatrix." (Pages 147, 180.)

19. Beck's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 655.—A child (F. N.) was lost when it was about 4 years old. Two years after it had been missed a child was discovered, which was believed, by the voice and general appearance, to be the one lost. Proof of identity was attempted by a cicatrix produced by the operation of bleeding on the right arm (the child lost having been bled when 16 months old) and the cicatrix of an abscess on the left knee (also known to have existed). The child found, however, was marked with small pox, from which the child lost had not suffered. The surgeons moreover differed as to whether the mark on the arm was due to bleeding or to the opening of an abscess. The Court decided against the identity. (Pages 147, 173, 180.)

20. Ann. d'Hyg., 1855, Vol. I., p. 201.—(*M. Tardieu.*)—A man (Aubert) in 1843 was charged with a robbery. His defence was that at the time it was committed he was undergoing imprisonment under the assumed name of Solignon. On searching the records it was found that a man named Solignon was in prison at the time named, and was described as tattooed with certain characters on both arms. Aubert stated that he also was tattooed but had removed the marks by chemical means. Tardieu discovered on very minute examination slight signs of tattoo marks, but found that they did not correspond with the marks recorded as existing on the arms of Solignon. (Pages 147, 192.)

21. Ann. d'Hyg., 1870, Vol. II., p. 459.—(*Dr. Horteloup.*)—A man was tattooed when 18 years old with China ink. At the age of 30, a bar of white-hot iron fell on the tattooed portion of the arm. Twelve years afterwards a white cicatrix only was found to exist where the iron fell. Although the tattoo was obliterated, faint white lines existed which clearly showed the original design. (Pages 147, 193.)

(For a similar case see "Ann. d'Hyg.," 1872, Vol. I., p. 423, by M. Bois de Loury.)

22. Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences, Vol. LXXV., p. 44.—(*Dr. Maury and Dr. Dulles of Philadelphia.*)—A series of fifteen cases recorded where syphilis followed tattooing. The professional tattooer moistened his pigments and needles by placing them in his mouth. The reporters do not suggest that it was the saliva which was the medium of inoculation, inasmuch as syphilitic ulcers were found in and around the tattooer's mouth. (Page 190.)

(See also "Ann. d'Hyg.," 1855, p. 175.)

23. Lancet, 1872, Vol. I., p. 701.—(*Dr. Gascoyne.*)—Report of a man tattooed over his entire body. He paid £40 to have the operation performed. (Page 147.)

24. Lancet, 1872, Vol. I., p. 166.—Male, æt. 40.—Tattooed in Vienna over his entire body as a punishment. (Page 147.)

25. Brit. Med. Journ., 1877, Vol. II., p. 834.—(*Dr. Horace Jeaffreson.*)—Tattoo marks caused by coke-dust accidentally getting into wounds. (Page 189.)

26. Case of Gottlieb Ebermann.—(*Casper*, Vol. I., p. 81; *Vierteljahrss.*, 1872, Vol. I., p. 274, and 1853, Vol. I., p. 338; "Med. Times and Gazette," Dec. 11, 1852.)—A man was found murdered in the neighbourhood of Berlin, and the body was believed to be that of Gottlieb Ebermann, who at that time was missing. It was stated, however, that eight years previously Ebermann had been cupped and also tattooed, although, strange enough, neither his wife nor his three sisters knew of the tattoo. A man of the name of Schall was accused of the murder, and the question of identity was the only missing link. Casper was consulted, and gave as his opinion that cupping and tattoo marks were not indelible. The man was convicted. (Page 147.)

27. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 69.—The body of an idiot boy was disinterred for dissection by some medical students. After a considerable portion of the body, including the face, had been dissected, it was discovered by his relatives that the body had been carried off from the churchyard; and a search having been established, it was traced to the custody of the students. They were accordingly brought to trial. The body of the boy, when found on the dissecting-table, was so disfigured that there was only one means left of proving its identity. The boy had a whim during life of permitting his nails to grow, and had not allowed them to be cut for many years previous to his death. They had consequently curled round the tips of his fingers and toes till they had thus come to extend along the palmar and plantar surfaces in a strange way. The counsel for the prosecution availed himself of the knowledge of this fact; and his proof seemed to be complete, when a late shrewd and intelligent member of the profession came forward and gave in evidence that it was not an unusual circumstance for the nails to grow for several

inches after death. This astounding statement so nonplussed the judge that the case was allowed to drop as not proven. (Page 146.)

28. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 70.—(Case of Auguste Dautun.)—On the 18th of November, 1814, Auguste Dautun was assassinated in Paris by his own brother. On the day following, some boatmen found in the Seine a human head wrapped in a dishcloth, in the corner of which were the letters A.D. Other portions of the victim, with two entire thighs and legs, were discovered the same day near a public *fosse-d'aisance.*

It became of importance to ascertain if the person thus discovered were actually Dautun, and as that individual had been lame, it was necessary to demonstrate that one limb was shorter than the other, which could not readily be known from the appearance of the fragments.

The examiners, of whom the celebrated Dupuytren was one, after describing the height, the complexion, the colour of the hair, the teeth, the wounds present, and the situation of a wart on the face, carefully inspected the lower extremities, and especially the bones and soft parts entering into the formation of the hip-joints, from which they were led to draw the following conclusions:—1st, That the man examined must have had, when a child, disease of both hip-joints. 2nd, That these diseases, although at a remote period, and cured, must have left a remarkable degree of deformity of the hips and pelvis; must have led to difficult progression, and probably lameness; and certainly to a painful and disagreeable waddling of the body on the lower limbs. An exact comparison of the two limbs in regard to their length, and an examination of the soles of the feet, led them to believe that the right lower extremity was shorter than the left, and that the individual must have supported the weight of the body in progression and in standing on the ball of the toes, not on the whole sole. (Pages 147, 148, 175.)

29. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 72.—The body of a lad, æt. 16, was recovered from the water after having been drowned ten days previously, and afterwards exposed to a tempestuous sea. His father could not identify the body as that of his son, but the mother did from the existence of two pimple-looking projections on the front of the chest, which proved to be supplementary mammæ. (Pages 145, 147, 174, 175.)

30. Beck's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 662.—The identity of a girl (Salomé Muller) taken as a slave was proved after an interval of fifteen years by two moles the size of coffee grains on the inside of the thigh. (Page 147.)

31. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 131.—(Case of the woman Brown, murdered by Greenacre, 1837.)—Various parts of the body were found at different intervals of time in different parts of London, and when put together were found to fit exactly. The fifth cervical vertebra had been entirely, and the femurs partially, sawn through. The parts of the thigh-bones not sawn had been broken about an inch below the trochanters. Identity was established by this and by the peculiarity of a malformed uterus. Further

the hands were horny, as of one used to hard work, whilst the head exhibited the peculiarities of the lower orders of the Irish. (Pages 145, 146, 147, 148.)

32. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 131 (1839).—The arm and scapula of a child were found in a dusthole, and the head and body minus an arm, in a ditch at some distance off. The identity of the several parts as belonging to the same individual, was established by the absolute correspondence between the muscles, vessels, etc., when fitted together. (Page 148)

33. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 131.—The head and mutilated body of a female were found in various places about Brighton. The identity of the several parts was established from the precise fitting together of the vertebræ, four cervical vertebræ being attached to the trunk and three to the head, and also by the exact correspondence in the case of the divided vessels of the neck and of the tracheal rings. (Page 148.)

34. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 131.—("Guy's Forensic Med.," p. 32 ; *Report of the Trial of Professor Webster, by Dr. Stone, of Boston.*)—(The murder of Dr. Parkman, Boston, U.S., 1850.)—In the vault of Professor Webster's laboratory, a pelvis, right thigh, and left leg were discovered. In the cinders of the furnace were also found portions of (apparently) cranial bones, fragments of vertebræ, blocks of artificial teeth (recognised by a dentist as the teeth he had made for Dr. Parkman) and some gold plates that had been heated, but corresponded to a block in the possession of the dentist, and was of peculiar shape, owing to a great natural irregularity in the jaw of the murdered man. The gold in the act of heating had imparted a pink colour to the teeth. In a box, imbedded in tan and minerals, were found the entire trunk of a human body, with the left thigh from hip to knee. All the parts found, when put together, corresponded. There were no duplicate parts, but the head, arms and hands, and the feet and right leg from knee to ankle were missing The parts found resembled in all points the body of Dr. Parkman There were other points that confirmed the scientific evidence. Thus the facts proved :

1. That the skeleton was that of a male between 50 and 60. (Dr. P. was 60.)
2. That the portions found, extending from the seventh vertebra to the outer malleolus, measured 57½ inches. On an average the measure from the sole of the foot to the outer malleolus is 3 inches (=60½ inches), and from the top of the head to the sixth cervical vertebra 10 inches (=70½ inches). Thus 70½ inches was the estimated height of the man of whom these were the remains. (Dr. P. was 71 inches high.) (Pages 148, 149, 155, 169, 209.)

35. (The murder of Harriet Lane.)—(The Whitechapel Tragedy.)—In November, 1875 (*C. C. C.*), Henry Wainwright was tried and found guilty of the murder of Harriet Lane, a woman with whom he cohabited. Two bullets were found in the brain, and a third amongst the hair, flattened by

forcible contact with the skull, proving she had been shot; but in addition it was also evident that her throat had been cut, one carotid artery having been severed. The crime was discovered by a workman, who noticed a mutilated hand protruding from a badly-smelling bundle, wrapped in American cloth. The prisoner was removing this and another bundle in a cab, and was smoking to hide the odour. A *danseuse* of his acquaintance was in the cab with him. When a policeman could be found to stop the cab it was discovered that one parcel contained the decomposed trunk of an adult female body. The contents of the second bundle disclosed the head of a female so covered with lime [and chlorinated lime] that it was difficult to guess her age. The arms and legs were also in the parcel. In the Whitechapel premises a new spade, soiled with lime, etc., and a grave under the floor containing disinfectants, were discovered. The poor woman had disappeared nearly twelve months previously (September, 1874). She had had two children. The body was identified by some jewellery found on the premises, It was partly mummified, and partly converted into adipocere, and had been cut into ten different portions. It was very roughly dismembered, so that a part of the pelvis was connected with the thighs. The medical witnesses supposed her to be about twenty-five years of age, and five feet high. There were two distinct fractures of the skull, due to the two bullets. Mr. Larkin, the medical witness first called, said that one of the bullets had entered during life. This he judged from the extravasation of blood underneath the scalp for a considerable distance around the wound. There was also extravasation *within* the skull, following the direction of the bullet. A *scar* was noticed on the right leg. "It was an elongated scar as big as a shilling, but the puckering or drawn skin was much bigger. It was such a scar as a burn, say from a red-hot poker, would produce." He also deposed, that owing to the extravasation of blood in or about the parts, the throat must have been cut either just before or immediately after death. The bullets were flattened, but had been conical. One weighed 66 grains, one 78, and the third 72 grains. *The hairs on the shovel were proved by Mr. Bond to correspond with those of the deceased.* "The throat wounds were either homicidal, or had been inflicted suicidally by a left-handed person." Mr. Larkin gave it as his opinion that the deceased had had children, partly from the *lineæ albicantes*, and partly from the appearance of the uterus.) ("British Medical Journal" for December 11th, 1875, No. 780.) (Pages 146, 147, 148, 149, 195.)

36. Dr. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 133.—("Med. Gazette," October 31, 1857, p. 445.)—(Waterloo Bridge Case, Oct. 1857.)—Examination of the remains of a body (23 portions in all, weighing 18 lbs.) found in a bag on one of the buttresses of Waterloo Bridge. The parts accurately fitted one another. The bones had flesh adhering to them, and the limbs had been both cut and sawn asunder. The head, 7 cervical and 7 upper dorsal vertebræ, the hands, the feet, and some portions of the left side of the chest were missing.

Dr. Taylor arrived at the following conclusions:—1. That the remains were those of a person of the male sex, of adult age, and of at least 5 feet 9 inches in stature; 2. That the parts found presented no physiological or pathological peculiarities by which they could be identified as belonging to any particular individual. The only fact observable under this head was, that the portions of skin remaining were thickly covered with dark hairs, and that the deceased was probably a dark hairy man; 3. That the remains presented no appearance of disease or of violent injury inflicted during life, with the exception of a stab in the space between the third and fourth ribs on the left side of the chest. This stab was in a situation to penetrate the heart and to cause death. It had the characters of a stab inflicted on a person, either living or only recently dead; 4. That these remains had not been dissected or used for the purposes of anatomy. All those parts of the human body which are useful to an anatomist had been roughly severed and destroyed by a person or persons quite ignorant of their anatomical relations. They had been probably cut and sawn before the rigidity of death had ceased, *i.e.* within from eighteen to twenty-four hours after death; and in this state had been partially boiled and subsequently salted (placed in brine) The body of deceased had not been laid out or attended to like that of a person dying from natural causes, whose body might be lawfully used for anatomical purposes; 5. That the person of whose body these remains were a part, may have been dead for three or four weeks prior to the date at which they were examined. (October 21, 1857.)

The murderer was not discovered. (Pages 145, 147, 148, 149.)

37. R. v. Sheward.—(*Norwich Lent Assizes*, 1869.)—Examination of certain portions of the mutilated body of a female adult. The medical evidence fixed the age at from 16 to 26. It turned out, however, that the woman was 54 (according to the man's own confession), and that he had mutilated after murdering her. Some portions of the body had been afterwards boiled. (Taylor, "Med. Juris.," Vol. I., p. 149.) (Pages 145, 148.)

38. The Thames Mystery.—(For details see "Daily Telegraph," and other newspapers of September 5 to 20 inclusive.) Fragments of a woman's body were discovered in various parts of the Thames, from Wandsworth to Woolwich. Each leg had been divided into three parts, thigh, leg, and foot. The shoulders had been cut by sawing through the clavicle and scapula, and were taken by the police for thighs. The arms had been divided into three. The scalp, face, etc., were skinned; the right and left breasts, the left half of the pelvis, the lungs, etc., were all discovered separately. The mutilation generally was done with want of skill. Whilst some joints had been cut through, other parts had been severed with a fine saw. Smears of tar were found on some parts of the body. Correspondence of parts was proved, and enough was found to make it probable that the woman's age was about forty. There was a scar on the left breast, 3 inches by 2, a light brown mole on the inner side of the right nipple, a small mole on the right

side of the neck ; and a large wound on the right temple caused by a blunt instrument. There was rather short and black hair on the head (8 or 9 inches long), and a thin dark moustache. There was a large bruise on the front of the right thigh. On the front and inner surface of the right arm, near the elbow, there was a small scar, but near the right knee a large white scar, two inches in diameter was apparent. The surgeon who examined these remains came to the conclusion that the body had been cut up whilst warm, and that the bruises were inflicted during life. The height he fixed at about 5 feet 3 inches.

[It might have been thought that these scars and moles were ample means of identification. However, the mystery was never solved, and an open verdict of "Wilful murder against some person or persons unknown" was returned. The tar made some think that a bargeman had committed the crime ; whilst others thought the fine saw pointed to a cabinet maker or carpenter. It could not be attributed with any show of probability to a medical student, as it was during the recess, and the mutilation was far too clumsy for any one possessing the least knowledge of anatomy.] (Pages 147, 148.)

39. Daily Chronicle, Jan. 14, 1880.—(Mutilation Case at Hendon.)—(*Mr. Bond and Dr. Andrews.*) Case of self-mutilation, the large blood vessels beingcut through. The person afterwards committed suicide by drowning.

40. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 136.—In 1838 a portion of a body was found in a dust bin in the City, and believed to be a human hand. It was afterwards proved by Mr. Solly to be the fin of a turtle. (Pages 149,

41. Guy's Forensic Medicine, p. 31.—(Taylor's "Med. Juris," Vol. I., p. 137.)—(Case of widow Houet, from Briand.)—Body exhumed after eleven years. It was reduced to a skeleton, but the third to the sixth cervical vertebra and the right clavicle were held together by a dark mass of decomposed flesh, surrounded by twists of a small decayed cord, which suggested that she had come to her death by strangulation. The bones were clearly shown to be those of a female. The length and colour of the hair and the state of the teeth were satisfactorily established, and identity further proved by a ring carved in facets on one of the finger bones. There were several small, well-formed finger-nails remaining. (Pages 146, 149, 150, 153, 156, 195.)

42. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 137.—(Case of Guérin at Versailles, 1829.)—Body exhumed after three years' interment. Identity proved by the disposition of the teeth, a malformation of the spine, and bowed legs. Death was believed to have been caused by blows on the head, inflicted homicidally. (Pages 150, 151, 155, 156, 209.)

43. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 137.—(Trial of Eugene Aram for the murder of Clarke, 1758.)—The body was exhumed thirteen years after

interment, and the cause of Clarke's death found to be fracture of the temporal bone. In this case the prisoner (Eugene Aram) contended that it was impossible to identify a skeleton after thirteen years, and that the fracture of the skull might be the result of accident during exhumation, or, at any rate, since death. The prisoner was convicted. (Pages 151, 155.)

44. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 159.—(Recorded by
Identity established in the case of a skeleton, after two years' burial, by a peculiarity of the right hand and right foot, corresponding with a sixth finger and toe. (Pages 150, 152, 156.)

45. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 159.—(From *Briand.*)—Identity established in a skeleton by the diseased condition of the spine and pelvis, together with other peculiarities connected with the legs and jaw. (Pages 150, 152, 156.)

46. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 160.—In the case of the skull of an exhumed infant it was at first supposed that the child had suffered murderous violence, from certain holes found in the skull. These, however, were manifestly dependent, as was afterwards proved, on deficient ossification. (Pages 151, 152, 156.)

47. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 157.—An English gentleman residing in India, 1833, was charged with the murder of a native, Meer Khan. The evidence against the prisoner was of a twofold character: 1, that which preceded death; and 2, that which followed it. With regard to the first, it will be only necessary to refer to it briefly. There was great discrepancy in the statements of the witnesses, as to the manner in which the deceased was alleged to have been destroyed. It was shown that the deceased had received a beating at the hands of the accused, but it was not proved that the man had died in consequence of the beating. There was no effusion of blood; there were no marks of violence of any kind upon the body before or after death, unless, indeed, we except a burning of the skin of the legs, which was alleged to have been produced by burnt paper or straw, but the evidence respecting this was anything but coherent and conclusive. Be that as it may, however, there was no evidence to prove that the alleged burning was the cause of the man's death. Two of the men (natives) who said they had carried the dead body to be buried at midnight, testified to the presence of marks of burning, but contradicted each other respecting the appearance of the legs; one swearing that they were covered with plasters, the other that the wounds and burns were not covered. The latter witness prevaricated, and, when asked how he knew that the legs were burnt, replied that he judged so from their being *white.*

The testimony respecting the degree and effects of the violence applied to the deceased during life being so inconclusive, it was left to the jury to decide whether a quantity of human bones produced were those of the deceased, as it was alleged by the witnesses for the prosecution, or whether

they belonged to the skeleton of some other person. According to the depositions, they were found in the following manner. *Three months* after the burial, one of the witnesses who had assisted in burying the deceased, after some search, discovered, as he supposed, the grave, on the verge of the bank of the river Damoodah. The body, it seems, had been buried pretty deeply in the sand, above the common water-mark, at the distance of sixty or eighty yards from the bed of the river, at a place which the waters had never reached, or could reach only on extraordinary occasions. The bones were uncovered, but not removed until five days afterwards. It does not seem to have been clearly made out whether other bodies were ever interred at that spot or not, nor was the grave properly identified as that of the deceased. The bones were subsequently examined by Mr. Cheek, a medical officer attached to the station of Bancoorah. He stated in his evidence that twelve of the vertebræ, six of the ribs, and the sacrum were wanting: that the whole of the bones found were clean and dry, and free from periosteum. ligaments, and cartilage; that *one rib was broken*, and apparently had an osseous callus (new bone) formed upon and around the fractured ends. The witness gave it as his opinion that the fracture must have occurred at least seven or eight days before death; he had never heard of an instance of exhumed bones being deprived of soft parts and ligaments by natural decomposition in three months. He should not expect the cartilages and ligaments to be separated from the bones within a year of the interment; he considered it, therefore, extremely improbable that these were the bones of the deceased, or of any person who had died within three months from the time of examination.

From this evidence, as the reporter of the case remarks, several considerations suggest themselves; as, for example, the identity of all the bones as those of one individual, the age of the person, the nature of the bony excrescence or callus found on the broken rib, the time necessary for the formation of new bone in order to settle the period at which the fracture took place, the time required for the total spontaneous destruction of the muscles, tendons, ligaments, and viscera; also the time required for the spontaneous separation of the sacrum from the other bones in a man of the age of fifty or sixty. Many of these points, important as they were, were altogether passed over. The witness gave it as his opinion, that they were the bones of a *male* subject; but of this, he said, he could not be quite certain, as the sacrum was wanting. No opinion was asked or given as to the supposed *age* of the person to whom the bones belonged. Only one bone was produced in Court, viz., the broken rib, with the deposit of callus (new bone) at its extremity. From the state of this callus there could be no doubt, supposing the bone to have belonged to the deceased, that the *fracture* must have been produced about eight or ten days before death; therefore at some time previous to the violence employed by the prisoner. The non-identity of the bones as those of the deceased seems, however, to have been clearly established by the condition in which they were dis-

covered. Even in a tropical climate the period that must elapse before the total destruction of the soft parts of the body in a grave so that nothing but the bare bones shall remain, must be considerably greater than three months. In one instance, in which a body was exhumed four months after death, the soft parts were still present.

Another curious feature in the evidence was the separation of the sacrum from the bones of the pelvis. The junction of these bones by ligaments and fibro-cartilage is perhaps one of the strongest in the body. In the skeletons of the young these bones are rather difficult of separation; but in the old, in whom anchylosis (or bony union) in general takes place to a greater or less extent, the difficulty of separating them becomes incomparably greater. It may be readily conceived, then, that the entire separation of this bone by decomposition would require, even in a hot climate, an extremely long period in a body interred in the ground—probably from three to ten years. Now, when we consider that the deceased had not been buried above three months, it is clear, both from the entire destruction of the soft parts, and the separation of the sacrum, that the bones discovered on the bank of the river could not have belonged to the deceased, but must have been part of the skeleton of a person whose body had been buried in the spot many years before. There was, therefore, a complete failure of identity, and the accused was discharged. (Pages 147, 149, 156.)

48. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 128.—(*Mr. Harris, of Redruth.*) —Remains of a male, æt. 24, identified by his brother, after twenty-six years' submersion in water in a Cornish mine. The means of identification were the skeleton, portions of clothes, the buttons, and the boots. All the soft parts were destroyed, but the skeleton was firm. (Pages 149, 153.)

49. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 138.—(*Mr. Perfect.*)—Two brothers lived together. One brother suddenly disappeared, and the other brother left the house. Some years afterwards, when alterations were being made in the house, a skeleton was dug up from under the floor. The surviving brother was charged with the murder of his brother, but it was proved that the bones found were those of a female, of short stature, and aged. (Pages 150, 169.)

50. R. v. Platts.—(*Derby Lent Assizes*, 1847.)—The complete skeleton (excepting three ribs and a few vertebræ) of a person who had been dead about eight months was found in a cesspool. The identity was established by certain articles of dress (coat, hat, trousers, neckerchief, and two garters of different colours.) The flesh readily came off the bones, and fell into the soil. Medical evidence was given that the bones were those of a male, of from 23 to 30 years of age; that the skull had been fractured in several places (one on the forehead, a second over the left eyebrow, and a third across the base of the skull); and further, that the fractures were inflicted by some sharp-edged instrument during life, and that they were sufficient

to cause death. The prisoner was convicted on this, and other evidence of a general character. (Pages 149, 150, 151, 153, 155, 156.)

51. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 140.—(Case of Elizabeth Hunter, July, 1863.)—The body of a female child, æt. 8, that had been missing for sixteen months, was found in a nursery-ground at Islington. The bones in the first instance were believed to be those of a dog, until the skull, with hair upon it, and the lower jaw were discovered. The medical evidence fixed the age, but not the sex. The soft parts and also some of the bones were destroyed, but this was accounted for by their having only been superficially covered with earth. Identity was established principally by the clothing. (Pages 147, 149, 150, 153.)

52. Supposed Murder of Lydia Atlee by Weekly Ball.—(*Northampton Lent Assizes*, 1864.)—(For details see "Taylor's Med. Juris.," Vol I., p. 151.)—In this case a body was dug up after fourteen years' interment. It was believed to be that of Lydia Atlee. There was some doubt, however, of the identity, the woman having been proved to have been at the time of death far advanced in pregnancy, whilst no fœtal bones or hair were found in the body exhumed. The medical man said that the bones of a fœtus, containing so much more animal matter than adult bones, might decompose, although he would not say they would entirely disappear in fourteen years. Dr. Markham thought some of the fœtal bones ought to have been found, although the hair might have disappeared. It was proved that the deceased had had a tooth (first molar on the left side) removed a fortnight before death, and this was found wanting in the jaw recovered. The cavity was partly filled up, which might be explained by the tooth having been extracted without the removal of its fangs. Accused discharged. (Pages 150, 151, 209.)

53. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 69.—The body of an infant found in a servant's box. It was dry and shrivelled. The sex could not be determined, but from the ossification of the lower epiphyses of the femur it was clear that it was a child born at or near full time. (Page 150.)

54. R. v. Varney.—(*Oxford Assizes*, 1837.)—A woman, proved to have given birth to a child, charged with burning its body in the grate. A few remains only of the bones were found in the ashes. Convicted of concealment of birth. (Page 151.)

55. R. v. Berryman.—(*Guildford Assizes*, 1854)—Charge of child murder against a mother. The delivery was proved. She said she burnt the body *after* its death and then buried the remains in the garden. The remains were found, but there was difficulty in proving that these remains corresponded with a fœtus born at term, and not to an older child. Prisoner acquitted because of the doubt. (Pages 151, 153.)

56. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 161.—A fireman engaged in the

engine-room at a coal-pit was missing. Blood being found on the door of the furnace, together with burnt portions of dress proved to belong to the deceased, suspicion arose that he had been murdered and his body burnt. Dr. Edwards examined the ashes of the furnace and found:—1. Portions of the occipital bone of a human skull; 2. Base of a skull and two fangs of teeth, viz., a fang of an incisor and a fang of a molar tooth; 3. Portions of arches of the dorsal vertebræ; 4. A portion of the lumbar vertebræ; 5. A portion of a head, body, and humerus; and 6. A portion of the head and joint of the femur or thigh-bone. These bones had been heated to a high temperature, which had destroyed their internal structure, but the external form was well preserved. They were human bones! A chemical and microscopical examination of some of the clinkers showed that there was blood upon them, *having the character of human blood!* There was no doubt that these were the remains of the missing man. He was last seen alive at eight in the evening, and at four the following morning nothing remained of him but the few bones above mentioned. (Page 151.)

57. R. v. Hanson. — ("Taylor's Med. Juris.," Vol. I., p. 509.) — (*Bodmin Lent Assizes*, 1856.)—Certain hairs were discovered on a stone picked up near the deceased, and the hair was found to correspond with that of the deceased. The prisoner had been seen with a stone in his hand resembling the stone on which the hair was found. He was convicted. (Pages 146, 195.)

58. R. v. Harrington. — (*Essex Lent Assizes*, I., p. 509.) — In this case a razor was found, and proved to belong to the prisoner, on which were certain cotton fibres embedded in blood. In cutting the throat of his victim the murderer had also cut through the cotton strings of her night-cap. The similarity of the cotton fibres on the razor belonging to the prisoner and those of the strings of the deceased woman's night-cap was fully established. (Page 195.)

59. R. v. Steed.—(*Maidstone Assizes*, 1863.)—Certain hairs and also certain red woollen fibres, matted in blood, were found wedged under certain of the nail-heads in the boots of the prisoner. The hairs were proved to correspond with the hair of the deceased, and the fibres with those of a red woollen comforter worn by him at the time of his death. (Pages 146, 195.)

60. R. v. Cass.—(*Carlisle Summer Assizes*, 1860.)—Mixed up with the dried blood on a knife belonging to the prisoner were certain dark woollen fibres, resembling those from the coat of the deceased. (Page 195.)

61. R. v. Teague.—(*Cornwall Summer Assizes*, 1851, p. 476.)—A hammer discovered, on which were two white hairs, stated in evidence to be the hair of the eyebrows of the deceased. In defence it was stated that they were hairs of a goat.—("Med. Gaz.," 1851, Vol. xlviii., p. 731.) (Page 195.)

62. R. v. Devine.—(1864.)—Certain grey hairs, corresponding to those on the head of the deceased, were found on a poker that it was believed had been murderously employed. (Pages 146, 195.)

63. Case of Rosetta Bishop.—("Taylor's Med. Juris.," I., p. 512).—In this case Dr. Harley found certain hairs on a hatchet, but no blood. The hairs were similar to those on the head of the deceased, whilst the absence of blood was explained by the circumstance that the injuries on the skull were contused wounds only. (Pages 146, 195.)

64. Frazer v. Bagley (Feb., 1844).—In this case the wife of the plaintiff had had criminal intercourse with the defendant, and the two children last born were stated to be the offspring of the latter. The plaintiff, his wife and all the children had dark hair, except the two youngest, and these had red hair, and the defendant also had red hair. This circumstance was regarded as indirect proof of the paternity of the younger children. (Page 205.)

65. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 60.—A man (Benoit), suspected of having committed a murder, was proved to have had black hair at a given time, and fair hair three or four hours afterwards. A hairdresser said it was impossible to effect such an alteration of colour, but Orfila proved the possibility of rendering the hair light-coloured by chemical processes. (Pages 146, 206, 207.)

66. British Med. Journal, 1879, II., p. 346.—Female, æt. 17. Lost the whole of her hair in the course of five days after a severe fright. (Page 204.)

[For cases of complete loss of hair see "Medical Times and Gazette," 1870, II., pp. 518, 551, 575.]

67. Lancet, 1873, p. 675.—(*Note of Abbé Lefevre.*)—A case of hair turning white in one night, said to be the result of a terrible dream. (Page 205.)

68. British Med. Journal, 1873, I., p. 102.—(*Mr. E. Wilson.*)—Loss of hair after a fright. The hair afterwards grew of a white colour, but ultimately turned black. (Pages 204, 205.)

69. New York Med. Journal, X., p. 412.—A change in the colour of hair from a dark brown to red, after twenty years' burial. (Pages 206, 154.)

70. New York Med. Journal, IX., p. 111.—Case of death from the use of lead hair dye and carbonate of lead face powder. (Page 207.)

[See also "Med. Times and Gazette," 1877, Vol. II. p. 480.]

70a. Medical Times and Gazette, 1877, II., p. 480.—Cases recorded of the danger of lead hair dyes. (Page 207.)

71. New York Med. Record, Aug. 18, 1877.—See also "Med. Times and Gazette," 1877, II., p. 485.—(*Dr. Caldwell*, of Iowa.)—The author states that he was present in 1862 at the exhumation of a body which had been buried for four years. He found that the coffin had given at the joints, and that the hair protruded through the openings. He had evidence to show that the deceased was shaved before burial, nevertheless the hair of the head measured 18 inches, the whiskers 8 inches, and the hair of the breasts 4 to 6 inches. (Pages 146, 208.)

[A second similar case is also mentioned by the reporter.]

72. Echo, Aug. 22, 1876.—(Thames Police Court.)—A sergeant of police swore to having seen three lads ill-use an old man, and that he was able to recognise them although he had only seen the assault by a brilliant flash of lightning. Mr. De Rutzen committed the prisoners for trial. (Page 246.)

73. New York Med. Journal, XXII., p. 444.—(From "L'Union Med.")—(*Dr. Dumas.*)—Girl born with two teeth (lower middle incisors). (Page 211.)

74. Lancet, 1875, I., p. 880.—(*M. Mattei.*)—Child born with two teeth (lower middle incisors). In this case the mother had also been born with one tooth. (Page 211.)

75. Med. Times and Gazette, 1879, I., p. 495.—(From the "Boston Med. Journal," March 6, 1879.)—Male, æt. 24. Had never had any teeth. (Page 211.)

76. Med. Times and Gazette, 1875, II., p. 676.—(From "Gaz. des Hôpitaux," Aug., 1875.)—(*M. Echerac.*)—A third dentition. Six teeth cut by a male, æt. 73. (Page 212.)

77. Boston Med. and Surg. Journ., Jan. 10, 1878.—(Referred to in "Med. Times and Gazette," 1878, I., p. 194.)—Third dentition in a male, æt. 77. (Page 212.)

78. R. v. Gibbings.—(*C. C. C.*, Aug. 20, 1846.)—In this case the prisoner was tried for the murder of his wife. Much turned on the nature of certain stains on the clothes of the prisoner, the wall, etc.

On the (α) jacket and (β) waistcoat, certain spots were found having the appearance of blood. Under the microscope blood-globules, *imbedded in coagulated fibres*, and mixed with epithelium scales similar to those on the human scalp, were discovered. A brown hair was also found imbedded in one of the spots. The stains were first of all digested in distilled water. A pink solution was obtained, in which flocculi of fibrin were found floating. The solution—

(1.) Had a pink colour, which did not subside on standing. It was slightly darkened both by acids and alkalies, proving it was not a vegetable colouring body.
(2.) Frothed considerably when shaken.
(3.) Turned a greenish tint on the addition of chlorine water.
(4.) Deposited flocculi of albumen on the application of heat.
(5.) Gave a precipitate with nitric acid.
(6.) Gave coagula with mercuric chloride.
(7.) Gave a precipitate with argentic nitrate.

(γ.) The spots found on the wall afforded evidence of *blood globules*, *fibrin* and *albumen*.

(δ.) A large spot found on a piece of matting afforded evidence of blood-globules and epithelial scales (probably from the scalp), but no fibrin.

By chemical tests this spot was proved to be blood.

(ε.) A spot was also found on the stairs. It had the appearance of a smear, or else of a blood-spot that had been wiped. It was proved to be blood, but the presence of fibrin was doubtful.

(ζ.) Spots on certain pieces of beading taken from the window were examined. They had the appearance of smears made by a bloody hand. The markings of the cuticular ridges of the fingers were clearly defined. Examined by the microscope little transparent spots that might be mistaken for shrivelled blood discs were found.

The spots when digested in water formed a reddish solution, but the colour subsided on standing in the form of a powder. The precipitate dissolved in HCl, and when potassic ferrocyanide was added to the solution Prussian blue was formed.

The following were Dr. Letheby's conclusions from his experiments in this case :—

1. That the spots on the (α) jacket, (β) waistcoat, (γ) wall, (δ) and matting, (ε) and the smears on the stairs were blood.

2. That the blood when spilt on the (α) jacket, (β) waistcoat, (γ) and wall was probably (from the presence of fibrin) *living* blood; whilst the blood when spilt on the (δ) matting and (ε) stairs (from the absence of fibrin) was probably dead blood.

3. That from the appearance and shape of the spots α, β and γ, the probability is that the blood spurted upon them in jet-form from a living vessel, whilst in the case of ε, the blood stain was a smear by a bloody hand, or, a spot that had been wiped whilst wet or after it was dry with a wet cloth.

4. That the blood, judging from the character of the epithelial scales, probably came from the scalp.

5. That the spots on the beading (ζ) were not blood. (Pages 213, 233.)

79. R. v. Müller.—(Case of Mr. Briggs, murdered by Franz Müller in a railway carriage on the North London Line, July, 1864.)—This was the

first case where spectroscopic evidence was relied upon in a Court of Law in proof of certain stains being blood. (Dr. Letheby.) The prisoner was convicted, and ultimately confessed his guilt. (Page 213.)

80. Eltham Murder Case, 1871.—In this case Dr. Letheby relied partly on the microscopic, but chiefly on the spectroscopic, appearances of the stains in proof of their being blood.

Dr. Letheby's notes on this case [which, with his other papers are in my possession,*] is an admirable example of a medico-legal report for counsel:—

Memo.—Wednesday evening (May 3, 1871) received from Inspector Mulvany a brown paper parcel containing a pair of dark trowsers, a man's shirt, and a man's wide-awake cap.

On the evening of the following day (Thursday, May 4, 1871), I received from Mr. Mulvany a brown paper parcel containing a lock of hair, also a pair of man's boots, and a plasterer's hammer wrapped up in brown paper, and a vessel containing the uterus of a woman.

These were submitted to examination on Friday, the 5th of May.

(1.) I examined the *trowsers*. They were dark cloth trowsers, with white calico linings. I found a hair 7½ inches long upon the inner side of the left leg, a little above the knee. It was a human hair, of a brown colour, and similar to the hairs from the lock given me by Mr. Mulvany. (Produce it.)

I next found a number of spots, like blood spots, upon the front, and near to the bottom of the same left leg. I cut out several of them (perhaps six or seven), and have ascertained, from microscopic and spectroscopic examinations, that they are blood.

There were several stains on the right leg. One of these I cut out, but am not convinced it was blood. I do not think it was.

(2.) The *shirt* had been much worn, for it was very dirty, and had a stain of perspiration under the right arm. It was marked in the usual place with "E. W. Pook. 6." Upon the upper part of the wristband of the right sleeve, close to the edge, there was a blood-stain consisting of six small spots, one of which had gone through the fabric. I cut one of them out, and ascertained that it was blood.

(3.) The *cap or wide-awake* was made of felt, with stiff brim and soft crown. It was lined with silk, which was very dirty, and had Royal arms and the words "Best Quality" stamped or printed upon it. I observed three spots upon it like blood spots; one was on the right side of the upper part of the brim towards the back; a second was on the brim, in front and a little to the left, and a third was on the upper edge of the band, about two inches behind the bow, on the left side. I subsequently found another spot

* I publish this report, having received his permission to use his manuscript notes after his death in such manner as I might deem desirable.

on the upper part of the brim at the back and to the left side. These were examined under the microscope and by the spectroscope, and found to be blood spots.

(4.) The *boots* did not show anything of importance.

(5.) The *plasterer's hammer* was covered with a thin coating of rust, as if it had been exposed to wet or to a damp atmosphere. At the hammer end, and between the cross notches, which were filled with mud, I saw three hairs. I scraped out the mud from between the notches and found five other hairs, from ¼ to ½ inch long. They were human hairs, and very similar in colour and structure to the hair given to me by Mr. Mulvany. (Have kept them.)

In a notch on the under side of the blade of the hammer, I found a clot on each side. One of these I have examined and found to be blood, the other I have kept. The blood was not soluble in water, but was soluble in citric acid, and gives the spectrum of hæmatin.

(6.) The *uterus* contained the membranes of a fœtus in the eighth or ninth week of pregnancy.

On Friday evening, the 5th of May, I gave all the things back to Mr. Mulvany, except the lock of hair and the uterus. At that time I had not completed the examination of the spots which I had cut out of the trowsers.

On Friday, the 12th of May, I received from Mr. Mulvany a brown paper parcel, which was sealed with seals of Metropolitan Police, and which he left at my house for me. The parcel contained the cap which I wished to examine, and a coat that I also desired to see. I found another spot upon the brim of the cap, and ascertained that it was blood. I could not find anything on the coat. On Saturday morning, May 13, I gave these articles back to Mr. Mulvany.

Examination of a piece of blue cloth given to me by Inspector Mulvany, on Monday, July 17, 1871 :—

It was a piece of blue cloth about 3 feet long and 19 inches wide. It had been hemmed on three sides (the fourth side being a selvedge), but had become unsewn on two of the three sides. There were several holes in the cloth ; and it was stained in many parts of a dirty red colour, and in a great many other places with some white material. I ascertained that most of the red stains were blood stains of rather old date, although not so old as to have become entirely insoluble in water. The stains were evidently produced by the cloth having been used to wipe some bloody surface, and not by the spurting of blood upon it.

I find that the white material is white paint. (Page 213.)

81. R. v. Wheeler.—(St. Alban's Murder Case.)—(*Chelmsford Assizes*, Nov. 1880.)—In this case I gave evidence on certain stains found on the clothes of the prisoner, proving them to be blood from their spectroscopic appearance. I also fixed the probable age of the several stains from the

condition of the blood-colouring matter. (C. Meymott Tidy.) The prisoner was found guilty, and ultimately confessed. (Page 213.)

82. R. v. Day and the Tedbury's. — (Hungerford Murder Case, February, 1877.)—In this case, where three men were charged with the murder of a gamekeeper, I gave evidence that certain stains found on the prisoners' clothes, from their spectroscopic reactions, were blood. The two men on whose clothes the blood stains were found were convicted, and ultimately confessed their guilt. (C. Meymott Tidy.) (Page 213.)

CHAPTER IV.

THE CAUSES OF DEATH.

Sudden Death—The Modes of Death—COMA—SYNCOPE—Anæmia—Asthenia—APNŒA.

SUDDEN death (as the records of inquests a few years ago might have led us to suppose) does not necessarily result from heart disease. Various observers (prominent amongst whom has been Dr. Ogston)* have pointed out the large number of causes that may account for unexpected death, and how far these are capable of discovery and proof by post-mortem examination.

Amongst the causes of sudden death (excluding violence and poison) we may mention :—

1. Disease of the heart, especially fatty and brown degeneration; angina pectoris; aortic regurgitation; interstitial abscess; rupture of the heart or of its valves; diseases of the pericardium.

2. Diseases of the blood-vessels, especially aneurism and thrombosis. [The forms of aneurism most likely to end suddenly are intra-cranial, intra-pericardial, abdominal, and pulmonary.] Injuries to arteries such as occasionally occur from angular curvature, &c., have been known to cause sudden death. [See "*Gazette Hebdom.*," 1859, p. 524, "Sudden death in a case of angular curvature from perforation of the aorta" (M.

* See "*British and Foreign Medical Chirurgical Review*," Vol. XLIV., p. 452, etc. [Ogston describes thrombosis of the heart and great vessels as present in 10 per cent. of his cases of sudden death.] *See* also Beck (*loc. cit.*, p. 510), who gives numerous references; also Dr. Christison's paper on Latent Diseases in "*Cyclopædia of Practical Medicine*," Vol. IV.; and Herrich and Kopp's "*Der Plotzliche Tod aus inneren Ursachen.*" Regensburg, 1848. Also a paper by M. Devergie in "*Annales d'Hygiène*," Vol. II., p. 145. 1838.

Fuller). Also "*Gaz. Hebdom.*," 1861, p. 76, Sudden death in a similar case from perforation of the vertebral artery (M. Legouest).]

3. Large effusions of blood in the brain or its membranes. (Cerebral and meningeal apoplexy.)

4. Pulmonary apoplexy and hæmatothorax.

5. The sudden bursting of visceral abscesses.

6. Ulcers of the stomach, duodenum, or of other parts of the alimentary canal.

7. Extra-uterine fœtation; peri- and retro-uterine hæmatoceles; apoplexy of the ovary; rupture of the uterus.

8. Rupture of the urinary bladder, or of the gall-bladder, or of some other viscus from accidental violence or other cause.

9. Cholera, and certain zymotic diseases at times kill very rapidly.

10. Large draughts of cold water taken when heated. (The sudden effects resulting from imbibing large quantities of spirit come under the head of alcoholic poisoning.)

11. Mental emotions.

12. The accidental swallowing of foreign bodies, so as to cause blocking of the pharynx and obstruction of the glottis.

Such a list as the above, detailing some of the causes of unexpected death suggests the remark, that because a person dies suddenly, there being no evidence of violence or of poison, the action adopted by many coroners in not requiring a post-mortem examination, leaves the most important witness—the dead body itself—unheard, and the inquest so far valueless!

Many cases of sudden death, which fifty years ago were considered inexplicable, can now be ascribed to the sudden blocking up of a large blood-vessel. This may occur *in situ* in the right or left cavities of the heart or in the arteries, veins, or sinuses *(thrombosis)*. Or, again, the formation of a solid plug having taken place at one portion of the arterial or venous system (notably in the auricles and ventricles, or upon the surface of the cardiac valves), the force of the current may cause its dislodgment and projection into the course of the circulation, until it becomes impacted in a vessel too small to allow its pas-

sage *(embolism)*. When sudden death occurs from *arterial* embolism, it is usually one of the great arteries of the brain that is thus obstructed. A clot detached from any portion of the internal surface of the left cavities of the heart, finds a ready passage by the internal carotid to the arteries of the brain. This plugging takes place most commonly in the arteries of the *left* hemisphere. The symptoms produced are sudden inability to speak, paralysis of motion (usually of the right side), and, in fatal cases, coma. *Very* sudden death, however, in such cases, is rare, the symptoms usually continuing for at least two days.*

In obstruction of the *right* ventricle, or of the pulmonary artery by clot, death may be very sudden. For instance, it is recorded that a young woman who had been under treatment in the Hôtel Dieu at Paris for phlebitis of the left leg, was on the point of leaving the hospital, when she gave way to a paroxysm of laughter, and fell dead. The right ventricle and the pulmonary artery were found at the post-mortem to be plugged with fibrinous coagula, which were evidently fragments of similar clots occupying the diseased portions of the veins of the leg. In another case, death took place immediately after a paroxysm of anger and agitation—the pulmonary artery being found almost entirely blocked by coagula. The mere manipulation during a medical examination of a diseased vein, has been known to dislodge a clot which has plugged the pulmonary artery, and a similar accident has followed the removal of a bandage from the limb. (Massari, "*Wiener Med. Woch.*," 1875, No. 48.)

Phlebitis, leading to the formation and detachment of clots which may block the pulmonary artery, would seem to occur specially in gouty patients, and in pregnant and anæmic women. Thus it is recorded that in cases of gouty phlebitis of the femoral vein, the mere act of bending the thigh in getting into bed, has sufficed to detach a clot and determine the fatal issue. ("*St. Bartholomew's Hospital Reports*," Vol. X., 1874.)

The symptoms induced by plugging of the right chambers of the heart or pulmonary artery, are:—great dyspnœa (although air is observed to enter the lungs freely), pallor or lividity, with turgescence of the veins of the neck; coldness, and frequently cold

* Cf. Lancereaux, "*Anat. Pathologique*," p. 431.

perspiration; tumultuous and irregular action of the heart, with suppression of the sounds over the right cavities.

The Modes of Death.

The manner of dying is a subject full of medico-legal import. The uncertain, although at times valuable evidence of those who witnessed the death, and the positive or no less important negative evidence afforded by the post-mortem, furnish the data upon which the medical jurist will have to form his opinion. Respecting the evidence afforded by the post-mortem, this, as we have said, may be twofold—(1) *positive, i.e.*, where we can discover a definite cause of death, and (2) *negative, i.e.*, where, although a definite cause may not be recognisable, we are able to exclude certain diseases or injuries as even possible causes. And this latter use of a post-mortem is often as important as the former.

Adopting for want of a better the old classification of Bichat ("*Récherches sur la Vie et la Mort*," par Marie François Xavier Bichat: Paris, 1800), viz., (1) Death beginning at the head; (2) Death beginning at the heart; and (3) Death beginning at the lungs, we shall first of all tabulate the facts, and afterwards remark on certain details.

TABULAR VIEW OF THE MODES OF DEATH.

I.—COMA (*Death beginning at the head*).

Pressure on the brain or medulla oblongata (*Compression, Apoplexy, Hydrocephalus, etc.*).

Blows on the head causing cerebral disturbance (*Concussion, Shock, etc.*).

Action of narcotic poisons, from their specific action on the brain and nervous system (*Opium, etc.*).

Action of certain mineral poisons (*Barium, Arsenic*, etc.).

Certain discharges and hæmorrhages which, although incapable of producing syncope, paralyse the nervous centres.

Plugging of an artery supplying the brain by a clot or by solid material detached from any surface over which the arterial current has flowed.

Certain cases of kidney or of liver diseases. (*Uræmic poisoning, etc.*)

II.—SYNCOPE (*Death beginning at the heart*).

(1.) Anæmia (*A deficiency in the quantity of the blood*).

Injuries to the heart or to the larger blood vessels.

Hæmorrhages from lungs, uterus, etc. (*Death by depletion*).

Discharges other than blood, but which indirectly drain the blood (*Extensive suppurations, etc.*).

(2.) Asthenia (*A deficiency in the power of the heart*).

Starvation.

Exhausting diseases (*Phthisis, Diabetes, Dysentery, Cancer, especially of stomach and œsophagus, Tumours pressing on thoracic duct, etc.*).

Action of certain poisons.

Certain injuries (*Concussions of the spine, Severe blows on the epigastrium, etc.*).

Severe brain lesions.

III.—APNŒA (ASPHYXIA) (*Death beginning at the lungs.*)

This may be due to four causes :—

(1.)—A stoppage in the action of the respiratory muscles.

This may result from—

Exhaustion of the muscles (*Debility, Cold, etc.*).

Loss of nerve power (*Injury to the upper part of the spinal cord, or division of the pneumogastric or phrenic producing paralysis of the muscles of respiration*).

Mechanical pressure on the chest or abdomen.

Tonic spasm (*Tetanus, Hydrophobia, etc.*).

(2.) A stoppage in the action of the lungs themselves.

This may result from—

Mechanical obstacles (*Entrance of air into chest through wounds in the thorax; Abdominal viscera entering the thorax through wounds in diaphragm, etc.*).

Division or compression of the eighth pair of nerves.

(3.) The entrance of pure air into, or the escape of impure air from, the lungs being prevented.

This may result from—

Foreign bodies in the mouth, nose, larynx, etc.

Submersion.

Suffocation, Strangulation, Hanging.

Want of air (*as in very high altitudes*), or want of a

sufficient percentage of oxygen, although the diluent gas (like N or H) be inert.

Certain irritant gases (as SO_2, Cl, etc.) which produce spasm of the glottis.

(4.) **The supply of blood to the lungs being prevented, from plugging of the pulmonary artery by a blood-clot.** (*Embolism.*)

I. COMA.

(*Death beginning at the head.*)

The causes occasioning this mode of death are sufficiently indicated in the table. It is evident that accidents (as concussion), poisons (as opium), and disease (as apoplexy) may severally cause it.

Symptoms.—Stupor more or less profound. External impressions appear to be but feebly recognised. This loss of sensibility and consciousness gradually becomes complete, and deepens into death. The breathing becomes slow, irregular, and noisy (stertorous), and all voluntary control over respiration is lost. For a time, however, after consciousness has ceased, respiration may be imperfectly carried on. Finally, the chest no longer expands, the blood is no longer aërated, and, as a result, the post-mortem appearances in the thorax where death begins at the head (coma), may differ but slightly from those found in death beginning at the lungs (apnœa).

Post-mortem appearances.—The arteries and *left* side of the heart empty. The *right* side of the heart and lungs moderately full, but not so engorged as after death from apnœa.

Posibly effusion (apoplexy or cerebral hyperæmia) may be found within the head.

II. SYNCOPE.

(*Death beginning at the heart.*)

This, as the table indicates, may depend on two distinct causes :—

(1.) Where there is a want of blood, but no want of heart power (*Anæmia*).

(2.) Where there is a want of heart power, but no want of blood (*Asthenia*).

(1.) ANÆMIA.

Causes.—These are sufficiently indicated in the table. It is only necessary to mention that anæmia may result from disease (rupture of an aneurism, uterine and other hæmorrhages and discharges, etc.), or from accident (as on the battle-field from loss of blood). Very large losses of blood, whether external or internal, may prove almost instantaneously fatal.

Symptoms.—"A mortal paleness [or duskiness] in the cheek," and more especially in the lips. Cold sweats; dimness of vision; dilated pupils; vertigo (giddiness); a slow, weak, irregular, or fluttering pulse. Insensibility eventually sets in. There may also be nausea (or even vomiting), restless movements of the limbs (jactitation), and transient delirium, with frequent hallucinations of the sense of hearing, and flashes of light before the eyes. The breathing becomes irregular, with sighing, and at last gasping, There is often hiccup. Convulsions generally supervene, and may be repeated once or twice before death. In short the nervous system is paralysed, because the supply of blood to the brain is deficient.

Post-mortem appearances.—If the heart be examined very soon after death it will be found *contracted*, and quite or nearly empty. In other words, the heart only stops because no more blood comes to it. Transfusion of blood or saline injections into the veins, and the effects of stimulants and nourishment in a fluid form are to be regarded as influences in a direction the reverse to depletion.

(2.) ASTHENIA.

The causes of Asthenia are sufficiently indicated in the Table.

Symptoms.—The hands, feet, and surface generally become cold. The circulation in the extremities is usually arrested first, so that the fingers, lips, nose, and ears become livid. The pulse becomes feeble and frequent, and the muscular weakness extreme. The senses and intellect retain their full activity

(sometimes, as Sir Thomas Watson says, even more than their full activity) to the last.

This clearness of intellect distinguishes collapse (especially abdominal collapse) from concussion, in which consciousness is temporarily lost. Asiatic cholera in the algide stage often furnishes a striking example of this condition. Thus patients supposed to be dead are able to hear every word spoken by those around, and manifest consciousness by signs when unable to speak even in a whisper.

Post-mortem appearances.—In asthenia, the heart's cavities are not contracted, but are either more or less full of blood, or, if empty, dilated and flabby. The former was the case in Sir B. Brodie's experiments on animals with the *upas antiar.*

Syncope Proper.

In death by *Syncope proper* we have a combination of anæmia with asthenia.

In syncope (and in anæmia generally) the tendency to death can sometimes be arrested by position. Thus, in venesection (as Dr. Marshall Hall suggested) the patient should be bled while sitting, so as to be laid down the moment symptoms of faintness occur. The loss of large quantities of fluid, as from tapping, or from emptying a large hydrocele, or from passing a catherer when the bladder is much distended, have been known to produce syncope and death. It is important, therefore, that patients should be tapped whilst sitting up in bed, and the effects on the pulse watched.

Sudden death from what is called *shock* (including mental emotion, joy, grief, terror, &c., fatal concussion, blows on the epigastrium, lightning and electricity, and some suddenly fatal forms of apoplexy) is probably the result of syncope. Such causes as those enumerated act through the *nervous system* either on the cardiac ganglia of the sympathetic or on some other portions of that system, or upon certain definite tract in the medulla oblongata or brain. The very mention of these subjects will show the difficulties which occur to the systemonger, and prove that it is only those familiar with clini

and dead-house work that are competent in any case whatever to give an opinion as to the cause of death.

The general post-mortem appearances after death from syncope.—The right and left sides of the heart commonly contain an equal amount of blood.

The post-mortem signs of syncope are negative, death resulting from an arrest in the action of the heart, and consequently an arrest in the supply of blood to brain, lungs, and other viscera. As a rule, therefore, these organs and the capillary system generally are in a normal condition.

III. APNŒA [ἀ, and πνεω, to respire] (Asphyxia [ἀ, and σφύξις, pulse]).

(*Death beginning at the lungs.*)

Causes.—These are indicated in the Table.

Respiration is the natural means whereby that which is power is given to, and that which is poison is removed from, the blood.

As *anæmia* implies a deficiency in the *quantity* of the blood, but not necessarily any impairment in its quality, so *asphyxia* implies an impaired *quality* of blood, but not necessarily a diminished quantity.

Symptoms.—An intense struggle to breathe (sense of suffocation); vertigo; loss of consciousness; relaxation of sphincters; general convulsions.

[NOTE.—In apnœa, the difficulty of breathing precedes unconsciousness; but in coma, the unconsciousness precedes the difficulty of breathing.]

Post-mortem appearances.—The *right* side of the heart, veins, capillaries, and viscera are commonly engorged, whilst the *left* side of the heart and the arteries will be found comparatively empty.

In some cases of asphyxia, the right cavities of the heart have been reported as empty.—("*Lancet*," May 29, 1875, p. 776.)

There is always a danger in a post-mortem, especially after death by asphyxia, of the blood escaping from the heart when the head is opened before the thorax. It may therefore be well, where death by asphyxia is suspected, to examine the chest first.

In such case, the pericardium should be laid open and the heart examined *in situ.* The right cavities should then be exposed, by which means good and undoubted evidence of the actual state of the right heart will be secured.—("*Lancet,*" May 8th, 1875, p. 668, and July 5th, 1875, p. 809.)

It must be admitted that the determination of the immediate and precise cause of death is too complicated a subject of investigation to admit in all cases of an absolutely definite opinion being formed. It is often difficult to distinguish direct from indirect, and secondary from primary causes: or, given certain effects, to determine the precise cause for those effects. Nevertheless, admitting the truth of this, we must be careful not to overrate these difficulties. Thus the condition of the right heart and lungs occurring in apnœa would lead us to state positively that syncope in such case was not the cause of death. Again, given a large clot in the lateral ventricles of the brain, a sufficiently natural cause of death would have been discovered, which, although poison may have been taken or violence used, must lead us to regard both the poison and the violence in a very different light, as primary causes of death, to what we should if the clot were absent.

It is evident, however, that in many deaths a combination of causes may be found, and the pathologist may find it difficult to say which cause contributed most to the fatal result. Thus coma, syncope, and apnœa are often interdependent. The *nervous system* will be affected either by an injury to the heart, because the brain wants blood for its nourishment, or by an injury to the lungs, because it is necessary for the blood not only to be sufficient, but of good quality.

Again, the *circulatory system* will be affected by a want of nerve energy, for nerve force is required for the action of muscles whether of the chest or of the heart itself (innervation or paralysis of the heart and lungs), whilst the action of heart needs a stimulus, which, if the respiratory system be of gear, it fails to obtain.

Again, the *respiratory system* will be manifestly affected lesions in the circulatory or in the nervous systems.

Thus the Germans speak of various combinations o

three modes of death mentioned, of which comato-asphyxia, or a combination of death beginning at the brain and lungs, is the most important practically.

Admitting this inter-dependence of the nervous, circulatory, and respiratory systems, it is worthy of remark, that the inter-dependence is not uniform in degree, the respiratory and circulatory systems depending less on the nervous, than the nervous system depends on the respiratory and circulatory.

The question, how far the cause of death may be determined after the lapse of a considerable interval, needs consideration. It is certain, that the natural causes that show themselves only by minute pathological conditions, will in most cases disappear after prolonged burial. Again, putrefaction will prevent definite conclusions as to the precise cause and nature of contusions inflicted during life. But wounds (such as gunshot or penetrating wounds), or the presence of foreign bodies in wounds, or rupture of the larger blood-vessels or of the viscera, or the marks of hanging and strangulation, or possibly in infants some proof of infanticide (the lungs themselves ordinarily resisting decomposition for a long time, and putrefaction not materially interfering with their examination), or proof of the uterus having been pierced by instruments or otherwise injured, may each and all be discovered even when putrefaction has far advanced.

CHAPTER V.

THE POST-MORTEM.—A MEDICO-LEGAL ENQUIRY.

General Details to be observed in conducting a Post-mortem for Medico-Legal Purposes: I. Examination of the Surroundings of a Body; II. Examination of a Body before the Removal of the Clothes; III. External Examination of a body after the Removal of the Clothes; IV. Internal Examination.—The Cranium.—The Thorax.—The Abdomen.

Table of Weights of Viscera, etc.—Table showing Maturity at Different Periods of Utero-Gestation. (Pages 308, 309.)

IN all cases where dispute or question is likely to arise respecting the results of a post-mortem examination, it is advisable that it should be conducted by, or in the presence of, at least two experts. No one in the least degree inculpated or personally interested (even if a medical practitioner) should be present, but a suspected person should be represented at the examination (if he sees fit) by an expert of his own appointment.

A post-mortem should not be conducted by artificial light unless in case of great emergency. Certain characteristic tints, such as the yellow colour produced by nitric or by picric acid, would probably escape notice either by gas or candle light.

In the case of a frozen body, it should first of all be allowed to thaw. This should be effected by placing the corpse for some hours before the examination is commenced in a warm room, and not by immersion in warm water.

In all cases where microscopical or chemical examinatic are thought necessary, the parts to be examined should placed on one side during the autopsy, but submitted examination afterwards with the least possible delay.

The two essentials of a well-conducted post-mortem exam tion for medico-legal purposes are (1) *completeness* and *method*:—

(1.) The post-mortem must be *complete*, in order that the operator may be able to speak definitely as to what *is not* the cause of death, as well as what *is*. Because, on examining the brain, the medical jurist may find sufficient to account for death, he is not justified in omitting the examination of the thorax and abdomen. Or, again, because he finds in the lungs extensive and advanced tubercular disease, he is not thereby excused from examining the head and belly. Violence may coexist with disease, and the medical jurist must inform himself fully both of the extent of the violence and the nature of the disease. Every post-mortem should be so conducted that positive evidence can be given respecting the condition (normal or abnormal) of each part and viscus.

(2.) The post-mortem must be conducted with *method*. An unmethodical examination is not only likely to be incomplete, but is certain to be more or less imperfect, the condition of the parts being artificially and prematurely obliterated.

Every detail should be recorded in writing. The notes should be so written that they are clear and intelligible both to medicals and non-medicals, and in such form that they can be used in the witness-box to "refresh the memory." They should be dated and paged, the name and address of the deceased being written upon each page.

A post-mortem examination is best delayed until twenty-four hours after death, but the precise period at which it was conducted should in every case be recorded. Putrefaction or long burial affords no justification for refusing to make a post-mortem (pp. 109, 288). Much may be learned from an examination conducted at a long interval after death; such as, *e.g.*:—

(*α.*) Abnormalities.

(*β.*) Injuries to bones.

(*γ.*) Colour and amount of hair.

(*δ.*) Foreign bodies in various parts (such as bullets, etc.).

(*ε.*) Poisons ("*Indian Med. Gazette*," January 1, 1875, p. 4).

(*ζ.*) Sex.

(*η.*) If a female, the existence of pregnancy. If any soft parts remain, the question of recent delivery may also possibly be determined.

I. Examine the surroundings of a body.

If possible, make a sketch of, or at least describe accurately in words, the position in which the body was found when first seen, especially its position in relation to articles of furniture—to instruments of violence—to glasses, cups, and bottles, from which poison may have been taken (remembering that prussic acid is often given in beer and arsenic in tea)—and to blood-stains on the floor or elsewhere.

All articles likely to prove important should be marked, so that they may afterwards be recognised. They should be carefully preserved under lock and key.

II.—Examine the Body before the Clothes are removed.

Note :—

(1.) The attitude and position of the limbs.

(2.) The state of the clothes; *i.e.*, whether torn, or cut, or stabbed; whether marked with blood-stains, stains of acid, etc. [If the clothes be cut, the exact position of the cuts, and their correspondence or otherwise with injuries on the body should be recorded. The clothes must in such case be carefully preserved for evidence.]

(3.) The hands and nails. [Note and preserve any articles (hair, clothing, etc.) that may be found grasped in the hands. Record whether the hands are scorched or blackened from powder or otherwise injured from the recoil of a pistol, or stained with blood, etc.]

[From considerations 1, 2, and 3, some conclusion may be formed whether a struggle occurred before death.]

(4.) The colour, and any peculiarities in the growth of the hair on the head and face.

(5.) The teeth. (Are the teeth regular or irregular? What teeth (if any) are wanting? Note their state of preservation. The presence of false teeth, etc.).

(6.) The colour of the eyes. [The colour of the eyes at a post-mortem is as a rule (excepting when black) difficult to determine.]

[From considerations 4, 5, and 6, certain important details may be obtained which would be of use should any question of identity arise, or the body be that of a person unknown.]

(7.) Post-mortem rigidity.

(8.) The condition of the eyes and pupils. (Are the eyes "dreadfully staring" or "decently closed"? Are the pupils large, small, or unequal? Is the cornea transparent and tense, or opaque and loose?)

(9.) The mouth and tongue. [Is there any froth at the mouth, or any peculiar smell, such as the odour of prussic acid, chloroform, etc., discernible? Has the tongue been bitten? Is its position natural?]

(10.) The colour and expression of the face. [The face will generally be found livid after death from apoplexy, or from suffocation (hanging, etc.), or where much struggling has preceded death, or after natural death in which the lungs, right heart, and venous system are much gorged. It is usually pale after death from the action of acids (even of prussic acid), alkalies, most vegetable poisons, blows upon the epigastrium, and injuries to vital organs. On the other hand, after poisoning by alcohol, opium, the oxides of carbon, and chloroform, it may be either pale or red. In most violent deaths, the features exhibit manifest signs of having been convulsed. After death from hæmorrhage and apoplexy, also after poisoning by opium, carbonic acid and other narcotics, the face is placid, and in cases where there has been great loss of blood usually presents a waxy appearance. Corrosive poisons, especially such as produce severe abdominal symptoms, frequently cause a pinched and anxious expression, like the facies hippocratica.]

All the clothes are now to be removed.

III.—Examine the Body Externally.

Note any circumstances tending to throw light on the *time* of death. Such as—

(1.) Temperature.

(2.) Presence and extent of rigidity.

(3.) Degree of putrefaction.

Note further—

(1.) *Height* and *Weight.*

(2.) *Probable age.*

(3.) *Sex.*

(4.) *Development* (muscular or not).

(5.) *General condition of body* (ill or well nourished). [Care must be taken not to mistake dropsy or gaseous distension for fat.]

(6.) *Colour of skin* generally, and *marks or scars* on the skin (*e.g.*, ulcers, cicatrices of burns, tattooes, etc.)

(7.) *Abnormalities* (*e.g.*, spinal disease, club foot, excess or deficiency of limbs, etc.).

(8.) *Stains* (*e.g.*, blood, fæces, semen, etc.).

(9.) Determine *the presence or absence of foreign bodies* in the mouth, nostrils, and anus, and, in the case of females, in the vagina.

(10.) *Injuries*, such as *contusions* (not to be confounded with post-mortem hypostases), and *wounds.* [To distinguish between a life bruise and a post-mortem hypostasis, make an incision through the skin. In a life bruise the true skin is red and blood-stained, extravasation occurring in the subcutaneous tissue, but in a post-mortem hypostasis the discoloration is superficial. If any wounds exist, note *their extent, depth,* and *direction*;—in other words, are they deepest from right to left, or *vice versâ.* Determine, if the wounds were prolonged in the same line, where the knife, bullet, or other weapon causing them would emerge? If necessary, dissect carefully *(but do not probe)* to see what parts are implicated. Note the condition of the edges of wounds. Wounds inflicted after death generally discolour rapidly around the edges, and acquire a dry, brownish, parchment-like appearance. Note if there be any marks of a cord round the neck. If a cord be found, record the position (front or back) of the knot.]

Should injuries exist on a body, and a weapon be found supposed to have caused the injuries, the medical jurist must consider—

1. Whether the injuries could have been caused by the weapon produced?

2. Considering the nature and direction of the injuries whether or not they could have been self-inflicted?

If no weapon be produced, and injuries exist on the body, he must then consider—

1. What kind of weapon was probably used to inflict them?

2. In what manner was the weapon used, and in what direction was it held for the purpose?

(11.) [In the female.] Note with great precision all injuries about the genitals, and the presence or absence of the signs of virginity.

In New-Born Children determine Maturity. (See Table II., p. 309.)

For this purpose note as follows:—

(*a.*) Length and weight.

(*b.*) Presence or absence of the membrana pupillaris.

(*c.*) Length and state of the hair.

(*d.*) Length and condition of the nails.

(*e.*) The Genital organs:

(*α.*) *in males*, the condition of the scrotum, and the position of the testicles.

(*β.*) *in females*, the condition of the external organs of generation.

(*f.*) Centres of ossification.

[Here note especially the condition of the inferior epiphysis of the femur and the upper epiphysis of the tibia. For this purpose open the knee joint by a transverse cut below the patella.]

(*g.*) Condition of the umbilical cord.

(*h.*) Size of the fontanelles.

(*i.*) Condition of the cartilages of the nose and ears.

IV. Examine the Body Internally.

And here two remarks are suggested :—

(1.) Avoid mistaking post-mortem hypostases for morbid or abnormal conditions of the several viscera and tissues.

(2.) If there be any suspicion as to the cause of death, that cavity is to be first opened, and that viscus first examined, in which it is expected the chief changes will be apparent (page 287.) Failing this the order as described is to be followed.

(A.) THE BRAIN AND SPINAL CORD.

To make an examination of the head in a systematic manner proceed as follows :—

If the hair be thick, it may be well in a doubtful case of injury, to remove a portion, or even to shave the head. This is, however, very seldom necessary. Make an incision down to the bone across the head from ear to ear, and reflect the scalp. Note the amount of blood in the scalp, and look for fractures or injuries to the outer table of the skull. Saw carefully round the skull about half-an-inch above the meatus auditorius externus. Remove the calvaria, and note the condition of the dura mater. The dura mater should now be carefully cut round with probe-pointed scissors or a bistoury, and the condition of the arachnoid and pia mater noted.

(1.) The Brain.

Remove the brain carefully;—Note the condition of its base and of the sinuses. This done, proceed to slice it from above. The principal appearances to look for are general congestion, extravasations (such as apoplectic clots), effusion of serum or of blood, lymph, and pus, hydatids, aneurism or blocking of vessels and tumours (malignant or simple).

Note therefore :—

(1). The thickness of the bones of the skull and the extent of diploë.

(2.) Fractures: (Carefully follow the line and extent of all fractures.)

(3.) The condition of the dura mater, (*i.e.*, whether adherent or firmly detached, congested, or diseased) and of the pia mater and arachnoid.

(4.) The consistence of the brain substance.

(5.) The colour of the brain substance.

(6.) Whether serum be present or absent in the lateral ventricles and at the base.

(7.) Morbid growths or conditions: Distinguish between—

(*a.*) Disease of blood vessels (*e.g.*, atheroma leading to rupture and apoplectic hæmorrhage), and

(*b.*) Disease of the brain tissue.

Remove the dura mater, and examine the bones of the base and lateral portions of the skull for fractures.

(2.) Spinal Cord.

To examine *the spinal cord and its membranes*, the vertebral laminæ are to be sawn through on each side of the spinous processes, keeping as near to them as possible in order that the cord may not be injured during removal. This done, the cord is to be removed with the dura mater unopened. By drawing the finger along it, its increased or diminished resistance (which diminished resistance not unfrequently occurs in diseased conditions), can be appreciated. Sections are now to be made. After injuries, although nothing may be visible externally, nevertheless, on making longitudinal sections into the cord, hæmorrhage may be found to have taken place in the grey matter.

All extravasations of blood, injuries to bones, intervertebral cartilages, &c., are to be recorded.

(B.) THE THORAX AND ABDOMEN.

In all ordinary cases, after the inspection of the head the thorax is to be examined, and then the abdomen.

In cases however where the cause of death is believed to be due to asphyxia, the advisabilty of examining the condition of the heart before opening the head has been already discussed (p. 287). It is scarcely possible to judge correctly the condition of the right side of the heart when the head has been opened first.

In new born children, again, it is advisable to open the abdomen before the thorax. In such case proceed as follows:—

Make a long incision, and reflect *the skin only* from a little above the top of the sternum down to the pubes. This done, carefully reflect the muscles and integuments necessary to lay open the abdomen completely. Note if any fluid or gas escape. Note three things:—

(1.) *The position of the diaphragm* with reference to the corresponding ribs. (This must be determined with the hand.)

(2.) *The position of the abdominal organs.*

(3.) *The colour of the abdominal organs.*

These three points being determined, the examination of the thorax is to be proceeded with.

[The object of *opening* the abdomen before the thorax in order to determine the position of the diaphragm (a matter of importance in deciding whether the child has or has not breathed) and the position and colour of the abdominal organs, is because these points can only be determined accurately before the thorax is disturbed. For as the thoracic viscera are removed the diaphragm becomes loose and as a consequence the abdominal viscera more or less displaced. Again, as regards the colour of the abdominal viscera, it is well to note that it is impossible at a post-mortem in any case to distinguish between arterial injection and venous hyperæmia, all the blood in the dead body (save, perhaps, a little in the lungs) being of a dusky hue. By exposure, however, a certain absorption of oxygen

results, with a brightening of the colour-tint. Hence a part affected with mere venous congestion may by exposure assume the appearance of arterial injection.

But, having noted these three things, we then proceed with the examination of the thorax, leaving the further examination of the abdominal organs until this part of the post-mortem is complete. If this be not done, the blood is certain, as the abdominal vessels are severed, to run out of the right auricle. If the examination of the heart be made after the examination of the abdomen, we should be almost certain to find it in a state of collapse, induced probably by our method of procedure.]

(C.) THE THORAX.

With the thumb on the back of the knife, and its edge lateralised, cut carefully through the sterno-clavicular ligaments and cartilages of the ribs. In very old people, or in cases where calcification of these cartilages has occurred, cutting pliers or a saw may have to be used. Note if blood flows freely from the cut integuments. Be very careful not to wound the large veins of the neck, etc. Reflect the sternum.

Record as follows:—

(*a.*) Are the lungs adherent?

(*b.*) Are they collapsed, or do they fill the chest, or (as in emphysema) do they project when the sternum is removed?

Now open the pericardium and pleural cavities:—

(*c.*) Record *immediately* the presence, the amount, and the nature (serous, sero-purulent, or purulent, etc.) of the contents of these sacs.

(*d.*) Record *immediately* the general position and colour of the thoracic viscera.

[*Immediately*,—that is, before removing either heart or lungs. For not infrequently, in removing the sternum, certain large veins (such as the internal mammary, internal jugular, and innominate) are injured, and the blood finds its way into these sacs.]

(*e.*) Record if any tumours be found in the thorax.

(1.) **The Heart:—**

Before removing or opening the heart, note :—

(*a.*) Its *size.*

(*b.*) The *fulness of the coronary vessels.*

Each auricle and ventricle of the heart is now to be opened while the heart is in situ. Note :—

(*c.*) The *contents of each cavity* (*i.e.* the quantity of blood and the extent to which it is coagulated).

Remove the heart. Note :—

(*d.*) Its weight.

(*e.*) The condition of the tissues (*e.g.*, fatty degeneration, etc.).

[An examination of the tissue, if necessary, must be conducted microscopically.]

(*f.*) The thickness of the walls of the ventricles (hypertrophy).

(*g.*) The capacity and size of the valves.

(*h.*) The condition of the valves. [Look for tufts of fibrin on the edges of the valves (inflammation), atheromatous degeneration, etc.]

(2.) **The Aorta :—**

Examine for :—

(*a.*) Atheroma.

(*b.*) Aneurism.

(3.) **The Lungs :—**

Record—

(*a.*) Colour (Dark-red, grey, black, etc.).

(*b.*) Nature of surface (Mottled, any signs of inflammatory exudation, etc.)

(*c.*) Capacity for air.

Long incisions are now to be made into the lungs. Note :—

(*d.*) The character of the lung tissue generally (Dense, friable, indurated, carnified, crepitant, etc.).

(*e.*) The character of the fluid that exudes on pressure.

(*f.*) The condition of the bronchial tubes and pulmonary artery (? obstruction). [It may be necessary to follow these vessels by dividing them with scissors, even to their finer ramifications.]

(*g.*) The presence of foreign matter in the air passages: — [For the purpose of determining the nature of this foreign matter the microscope may be needed.]

(*h.*) Pathological conditions.

The lungs in the case of new-born children are to be examined whether or not respiration has taken place. And this leads us to consider—

The appearances of the lungs before respiration has been established. These may be stated as follows:—

(*a.*) They do not nearly fill the chest nor cover the pericardium.

(*b.*) Their colour is dark maroon, and no bright vermilion spots are visible on their surfaces. (For these spots search especially on the edges and the concave surface of the upper lobe of the right lung.)

(*c.*) The margins are sharp and well defined.

(*d.*) The lungs are dense, firm, and non-crepitant when incised.

(*e.*) When incisions are made in them under water and they are submitted to pressure, no bubbles of air escape.

THE HYDROSTATIC TEST.

This test is to be conducted as follows:—

(*α.*) Remove the lungs and heart entire, securing all the larger vessels to prevent loss of blood. Note if they float when placed in water *en masse*, using for this purpose a *large* vessel, filled (by preference) with rain water.

(*β.*) Test each lung separately in a similar manner.

(*γ.*) Cut each lung into ten or twelve pieces, and note whether the separate portions sink or float.

(δ.) Each piece of lung is now to be wrapped in a cloth. The cloth is to be placed on the floor and covered over with a piece of board, and pressure applied by a person standing on the board for a few minutes. The several pieces, after this treatment, are again to be tested whether they sink or float.

[Conclusion.—If the lungs float by all four tests as described above, there is strong presumptive evidence in favour of respiration;—and conversely, if they sink there is strong presumptive evidence in favour of non-respiration.]

Note whether any morbid products (tubercle, etc.) or foreign substances (meconium, mucus, etc.) are present in the air cells and passages.

(4.) The Thymus Gland.

(5.) Larynx and Trachea. Pharynx and Œsophagus.

Prolong the incision up to the chin, and reflect the skin as far back as possible. The knife is now to be plunged just under and below the symphysis of the jaw (so that it may *emerge in the mouth*), and carried along close to the inner surface of the lower jaw on each side as far as the bone extends. This done, seize the tongue from below, and divide the velum pendulum palati, dragging the tongue forward all the time. Then separate the pharynx, etc., and continue to make traction on the tongue till the pharynx, larynx, trachea, and œsophagus have been removed. Open the larynx and trachea, and also the bronchi if necessary, and look for foreign bodies, false membranes, marks of corrosion, etc.

If it be supposed that death has resulted from strangulation or suffocation, record :—

(*a.*) Whether there be any injury to the internal coats of the carotids. (For this purpose they must be carefully slit open.)

(*b.*) The condition (congestion, etc.) of the deep muscles of the neck.

(*c.*) The state of the cervical vertebræ.

In the case of children the condition of the œsophagus must be carefully noted.

(D.) THE ABDOMEN.

[Note carefully all signs of peritoneal inflammation, also all tumours, cancers, or enlargement of any of the organs.

It is advisable for cleanliness sake to leave the examination of the stomach and intestines until the other abdominal viscera have been examined.

Examine the various viscera in detail. If blood be found effused within the abdominal cavity, careful examination should be made for lacerations of the liver, spleen, kidneys, etc.

Carefully note if there be any strangulation of the intestines intussusceptions, internal herniæ, etc.].

(1.) **The Liver.**

Note:—

(*a.*) Its weight.

(*b.*) Its colour and appearance on section, as follows:—

(1.) Normally, a uniform purple-brown.

(2.) *Nutmeg* (*i.e.* some parts being dark purple and others buff-colour), indicating congestion.

(3.) *Cirrhosis.*—Dense and tough.—Surface irregular.

(4.) *Fatty.*—Soft and pale yellow.

(5.) *Amyloid* (lardaceous).—Smooth, enlarged and brown, with a glaze upon it.

(Note the presence of cancer, abscess, etc.).

(2.) **The Kidneys.**

Note:—

(*a.*) The weight of each.

(*b.*) Whether or not the capsules peel off readily.

(*c.*) Appearance on section, as follows:—

(1.) *Inflammation.*—Large, soft, and congested in the first stage, but paler in the after stage.

(2.) *Granular.*—Capsule adherent. Weight below the normal. Cortical structure diminished, but firm and tough. Perhaps cysts may be found under the capsules or in the tissue.

(3.) *Amyloid.* — Capsule easily detached. Viscus large, smooth, and glistening on section. (Changes to a violet-brown with tincture of iodine.)

[Note the presence of tubercle, abscess, cancer, etc.]

(3.) The Spleen.

Record :—

(*a.*) Its weight.

(*b.*) Its appearance on section.

(4.) The Bladder, Ureters, and Urethra.

Note the size of the prostate and the condition of the urethra.

[N.B.—Carefully preserve any urine in the bladder for chemical analysis.]

(5.) The Vagina, Uterus, and Ovaries.

[The vagina is to be examined before the uterus]

(A.) *Vagina.*—Note its colour, the presence of rugæ, the condition of the hymen, etc.

Record :—

(B.) *Uterus* :—

(*a.*) Its size externally.

Open by an incision from fundus to cervix:—Note

(*b.*) Its size internally.

(*c.*) The condition of its mucous membrane and muscular tissue as follows :—

(1.) Normal.

(2.) Congested.

(3.) Covered with mucus.

(4.) Very dark coloured (as after abortion).

(5.) Presence of decomposing tissues ; remains of decidua, etc.

(6.) Tumours, cancer, etc.

(*d.*) Condition of the cervix as follows :—

(1.) Hypertrophied.

(2.) Ulcerated, etc.

(C.) *Ovaries.* Note:—

(*a.*) Their size.

(*b.*) Condition of the surfaces (Irregular, etc.).

Make a section of the ovary, and note as follows:—

(*c.*) The state of the Graafian vesicles.

(*d.*) The presence of true and false corpora lutea.

(*e.*) Diseased conditions. (These require accurate description.)

The condition of the ovaries and uterus in the case of females must be recorded with great minuteness. Young women sometimes die suddenly of apoplexy of the ovary, or of pelvic hæmatoceles.

Fatal injuries may be inflicted through the anus or vagina, and poisons have also been introduced through these channels. ("*Edin. Med. and Surgical Journal*," Vol. XXXV., p. 85.)

If a fœtus be discovered, a careful examination must be instituted to determine its age. (Table II., page 309.)

In the case of a woman who has died in childbed, the condition, size, and contents of the veins and lymphatics in the walls and on the inner surface of the uterus and its appendages, should be noted. Careful examination must also be made for marks of injuries on the mother or fœtus arising from instruments, whether used scientifically or otherwise.

(6.) The Stomach and Intestines.

(A.) *Stomach:—*

Place one ligature around the œsophageal end of the stomach close to the diaphragm, and two ligatures around the first part of the duodenum. Remove the stomach, cutting between the two ligatures last tied.

Open the stomach carefully, and note the colour, appearance, smell, and reaction of the contents. This done, they are then to be preserved in a clean bottle or jar for further examination.

The inner surface of the stomach should be carefully examined with a lens for solid particles of phosphorus, arsenic, corrosive sublimate and other poisons; also for seeds and portions of leaves, crystals, pigments, and articles of food. Careful note should be taken of the condition of the mucous membrane.

Note further the permeability or otherwise of the gall duct, and the nature of any matters present in it.

The intestines should now be removed, a ligature being placed around the rectal end of the colon. They must be examined from end to end, and the contents (if necessary) preserved in a clean bottle.

(B.) *Intestines:*—

In examining the intestines note particularly:—

(*a.*) The condition of the agminate and solitary glands and of the villi and valvulæ conniventes.

(*b.*) The condition of the vermiform appendage.

(*c.*) Any loss of substance, ulcers or erosions.

The condition and contents of the Rectum and the appearance presented by the anus, are to be accurately recorded.

The appearances (if such exist) indicating syphilis, tubercle, typhoid fever, etc., should be duly recorded. Ulcers and perforations must be most carefully described, both in respect of their position and appearance. We may remark that any person familiar with the post-mortem room can scarcely mistake the rounded and thickened edges of chronic ulcers for the thinned and frayed perforations caused by corrosive fluids and irritant poisons. Great care should be taken not to cut or tear the organs in removing them.

Portions of the liver, of the heart (the preservation of which in certain cases, such as in strychnia poisoning, is of the utmost importance), and other organs, should be preserved for analysis if necessary.

All bottles, into which viscera are placed should be stoppered, sealed with a private seal, and duly labelled, the label stating the date of the death and of the autopsy, and the name of the deceased person. It should also be signed by the medical man

that conducted the post-mortem. The bottles should be delivered personally by him, or at any rate by a responsible officer, to the chemist for analysis.

In any case that may specially call for it, some of the blood (taking care that it is as free from foreign matter as possible) should be preserved in a separate bottle for general, spectrum and microscopic analysis.

Where trichinosis is suspected, portions of the muscular tissue of the diaphragm, and of the pectoral and the recti muscles of the eyeballs, should be carefully preserved for microscopical examination.

TABLE I.*

	Weight.		Measurements, Contents, etc.
	Male.	Female.	
Brain...	49½ ozs.	44 ozs.	15 to 18 inches long.
Spinal Cord	1 oz. to 1¼ ozs.		
Thymus (at birth) ...	½ oz.		
Thyroid body	1 oz. to 2 ozs. (largest in females).		
Lungs { right	24 ozs. } =45 ozs.	17 ozs. } =32 ozs.	
Lungs { left	21 ozs. }	15 ozs. }	
Heart	9½ ozs.†	8½ ozs.†	About the size of the closed fist (5 in. × 3½ in. × 2½ in.) Circumference 9·2 inches at widest part.
Orifices of the eart—			
Mitral	... ...		4 inches in circumference.
Tricuspid	... ...		4½ ,, ,,
Aortic	... ...		3½ ,, ,,
Pulmonary	... ...		3½ ,, ,,
Stomach	4½ ozs.	Slightly under 4½ ozs.	Length 10 to 12 inches. Diameter at widest part when moderately full 4 to 5 inches.
Liver...	50 to 60 ozs.	45 to 55 ozs.	12 in. × 4 in. × 2 in.
Spleen	5 ozs. to 7 ozs. (May vary even in health from 4 to 10 ounces.)		
Pancreas	2½ ozs. to 3½ ozs.		
Kidneys { right ...	4½ ozs.	3⅞ ozs.	
Kidneys { left... ...	5½ ozs.	5 ozs.	
Supra renal capsules (each)	1 to 2 drams.		
Ureters	.. ..		Length 14 to 16 inches.
Prostate gland	6 drams.		
Testicles (together)...	¾ oz. to 1 oz.		
Uterus (unimpregnated)	.. .. ..	7 to 13 drams.	3 in. × 2 in. × 1 in.
Ovaries (together) ...	.. .. ..	120 to 200 grains.	
Bladder	.. . ...	.. ..	Size subject to great variation. Probably rather greater in females than males.

* The weights are to be regarded as averages only.

† The weight of the heart bears a direct proportion to the weight of the body generally, and especially to the development of the muscular system. Thus a perfectly normal heart may weigh considerably more or considerably less than the weight stated.

TABLE II.

Appearance of the Fœtus at different periods of Utero Gestation

	End of 1st Month.	End of 2nd Month.	End of 3rd Month.	End of 4th Month.	End of 5th Month.	End of 6th Month.	End of 7th Month.	End of 8th Month.	End of 9th Month (full time).
Length ..	3 to 5 lines.	16 to 19 lines.	2 to 2½ inches.	5 to 6 inches.	6 to 7 inches.	9 to 10 inches.	13 to 15 inches.	14 to 16 inches.	17 to 21 inches.
Weight ..	—	150 to 300 grains.	480 to 720 grains.	2½ to 3 ozs.	5 to 7 ounces.	1 lb.	3 to 4 lbs.	4 to 5 lbs.	5 to 9 lbs. (average weight 6.5 lbs.)
Membrana pupillaris ..	—	—	Visible.	Present.	Present.	Present.	Beginning to disappear.	Has probably disappeared.	Entirely disappeared.
Hair	—	—	—	—	Begins to appear.	Hair white or silvery.	Hair.	Hair.	Head more or less covered.
Nails	—	—	—	Begin to appear.	Very distinct.	A free border projecting from dermis visible.	Do not reach extremities of the fingers.	Reach extremities of the fingers.	Fully developed.
Development of genital organs ..	—	Penis or clitoris visible.	Penis or clitoris very long.	Genital organs and sex distinct. Formation of scrotum and prepuce.	Commencement of limitation of the uterus and vagina.	Testes near the kidneys. Walls of the uterus thicken.	Testicles further off the kidneys than at the 6th month.	Testicles descend into internal ring.	Testes have passed inguinal ring, and are often to be found in the scrotum.
Points of ossification .. (See p. 158)	—	5th week— Clavicle. Lower jaw. 7th week— Ribs. Scapula and humerus. Femur and tibia. Palate and upper jaw. 8th week— Frontal bone.	Occipital. Sphenoid. Squamous portion of the temporal.	Superior part of the sacrum and pubis.	—	Four divisions of the sternum visible.	Astragalus.	Last vertebra of sacrum. [*No centre of ossification in the cartilage of the inferior extremity of the femur.*]	—
Other points to be noted	Two black spots indicating eyes. Liver occupies the whole abdomen.	Rudiments of nose and lips. Placenta begins to assume a regular form.	Fingers begin to separate. Two ventricles of the heart distinct. Eyelids in contact by their free margins.	—	Meconium in commencement of large intestines. Germs of permanent teeth appear.	Meconium in the large intestines. Skin assumes the appearance of fibrous structure.	Meconium occupies the whole of the large intestines. Eyelids no longer adherent. Bile in gall bladder.		Meconium in rectum, or at least in sigmoid flexure. Eyelids open.

CHAPTER VI.

SEX.—MONSTROSITIES.—HERMAPHRODISM.

Sex.—The Male and Female Pelvis.—Monstrosities.—The Shape of Mankind.—Acardiac, Acephalous, Anencephalic and other Monsters.—Redundancy of Genital Organs.—Euthanasia.—Hermaphrodism.—Homologous Organs in the Male and Female.—Varieties of Hermaphrodites.—Spurious and Real Hermaphrodism.—Androgynæ—Androgyni.—Sexless Beings.—Concealed Sex.—Conclusions.—Examination of Cases of Doubtful Sex.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, p. 336.

SEX.

IN cases where isolated bones or complete skeletons are submitted to the medical jurist to determine whether they belong to a male or female, it is important to remember that until puberty little difference is to be noted in the general characteristics of the sexes, although, age for age, male children have an undoubted advantage, both in height and weight, over female.

Omitting for the moment the examination of the pelvis, the following general distinctive characteristics of the skeletons, and individual bones of adult males and females, may be noted:—

In the male the shoulders are broader than the hips. The muscles being more developed, the bones usually present rougher and more prominent markings than those of the female. In hard-working women the bones, however, are often strongly marked. The male skeleton, as a rule, exceeds the female both in height and weight. (*See* Tables, pp. 167, etc.)

In the female the hips are broader, the thighs shorter and bigger, and the tuberosities of the ischia and the acetabula wider apart. It is said that "the female *skull* is smaller, more ovoid, more bulging at the sides, and larger behind the foramen

magnum than the male. The face is more oval, the frontal sinuses less strongly marked, the nostrils more delicate, the jaws and teeth smaller, and the chin less prominent. The *chest* of the female is deeper than that of the male [?], the sternum shorter and more convex; the ensiform cartilage thinner and ossified later in life; the ribs smaller, and the cartilages longer. The *vertebral column* is longer and the bodies of the vertebræ are deeper in the female than in the male." [Dr. Guy.] As regards the clavicles and scapulæ, and the bones of both upper and lower extremities, and particularly the hands, those of the female are *generally* smaller and lighter than those of the male.

It is scarcely possible, however, considering the close resemblance between the bones of men and those of hard working women, to form a definite opinion as to the sex of the person of which they are a part from any one or two bones, unless we can examine the pelvis.

We must therefore now consider, as the most important question connected with the determination of sex,—

The differential characters of the male and female pelvis.

The *male* pelvis presents a narrow but deep excavation with small apertures. Its bones are thick, its muscular impressions well marked, its angles abrupt and prominent, whilst its general appearance is that of a strong framework, adapted to afford leverage to powerful muscles.

The *female* pelvis is not so deep as that of the male, but exceeds it considerably in its transverse and antero-posterior dimensions. Its cavity is more capacious, its apertures larger, its walls less massive and rough, whilst its general contour is less angular and abrupt. The alæ of the ossa innominata spread further outward; the anterior superior spinous processes, and the tuberosities of the ischia and the acetabula (whence the prominence of the hip of the female) being removed to a greater distance from the median line. The sacrum is wider and less curved, and consequently the sacro-vertebral angle is less prominent than in the male. The obturator (or thyroid) foramen is somewhat triangular in form, and of a smaller size than in the male;—the ischiatic spines project less into the pelvic excavation;

—the coccyx is more moveable,* and the symphysis pubis less deep. The upper aperture is more nearly circular, and its margin smoother and more rounded. The pubic arch is wider and more curved, and its rami are everted so as to present shelving surfaces (rather than angular edges) to any object descending through the perineal strait. By these several peculiarities of form and structure, the female pelvis is adapted to permit the expansion of the uterus during pregnancy, and the passage of the child in parturition.

The general measurements of the male and female pelvis may be stated as follows :—

	Male.		Female.			
	Inches.	Lines.	Inches.	Lines.	Inches.	Lines.
Between the antero-superior spinous processes of the ilia	7	8	8	6 to	10	0
Between the middle points of the cristæ of the ilia	8	3	9	4 to	11	1
The transverse ... „ oblique ... „ antero-posterior } diameter of the abdominal strait of the true pelvis ...	4	6	5	0 to	5	6
	4	5	4	5 to	5	5
	4	0	4	0 to	4	4
The transverse ... „ oblique ... „ antero-posterior } diameter of the cavity of the true pelvis	4	0	4	7 to	4	8
	5	0	5	2 to	5	4
	5	0	4	7 to	4	8
The transverse ... „ antero-posterior } diameter of the perineal strait of the true pelvis...	3	0	4	0 to	4	5
	3	3	4	4 to	5	0

If mutilated portions of a body not skeletonised be presented for report, certain further peculiarities must be recorded :—

(*a.*) If the *genital organs* be found, there will be no difficulty in determining sex, unless in cases where the sex is doubtful, with which cases we shall afterwards deal in detail.

(*b.*) *The breasts* of the female are as a rule, more developed than those of the male. There are many instances, however, of male

* During the last months of gestation the joints of the female pelvis acquire an increased mobility. This change is at first temporary, but after frequent child-bearing becomes permanent. The coccyx is sometimes anchylosed to the sacrum by bony union, and may become fractured during childbirth.

breasts being very large, whilst some women have scarcely any development of mammary glandular tissue. (*Case* 136.) (See a series of cases of developed breasts in males in a paper in the "*Lancet*," March 14, 1874, on "abnormalities in 25,000 recruits.")

(*c.*) *The hair and position of the umbilicus.* The pubic hairs of the male extend higher towards the umbilicus than those of the female. The distance in males between the pubes and the navel is shorter than between the navel and the scrobiculus cordis, the reverse being the case in females. (Dr. Handyside.) The male has more hair on the body, but less and shorter hair on the head.

(*d.*) Other distinctive peculiarities to be noted are (1.) that in the male the pomum Adami is more developed than in the female, and the larynx larger. (2.) That the average male head is larger, and the brain heavier. (3.) That the blood of males is said to be richer in red corpuscles than that of females.

One other point, *re sex*, is worthy of repetition here. It is well known that the uterus resists decomposition after death in remarkable manner. In fact, it may be found comparatively fresh when recognition of all the other organs has become impossible from decomposition (see p. 108).

MONSTROSITIES:—HERMAPHRODISM.

Exceptional cases occur where the subject of monstrosity and the determination of sex become questions of the gravest difficulty to the medical jurist, and of the most supreme importance to relatives and friends.

If a child be born without "the shape of mankind," he cannot inherit. The law, however, does not define the phrase "shape of mankind," but it is certain that it implies far more than mere bodily deformity. The question therefore becomes one of great importance, *viz.*, what degree of monstrosity or unshapeliness must exist to prevent legal rights? In a case of this nature, the duty of the medical jurist would in our judgment be best performed, by describing with the greatest detailed accuracy in

what respect the individual in question differs from the normal, leaving the Court to say whether it be "without the shape of mankind or not."

Supposing, however, that it be proved to the satisfaction of the Court that the individual in question is possessed of "the shape of mankind" and therefore capable of inheriting, the further question arises, "Is it male or female, or both in one (hermaphroditic)?"

Thus when a title or entailed inheritance of land is in question, the sex as well as the capability to inherit, must be determined. Thus, an estate may be settled on heirs (male or female) of a particular family limited by entailment. If only one child be born, and that hermaphroditic, it will then be necessary to decide "the sex that doth prevail," for "according to the sex that doth prevail, so will it succeed." Or, perhaps two children may be born, the first being hermaphroditic, and the second a well-formed male. On the death of the father, the question arises, as to which shall succeed to the title; because if the first-born (*i.e.* the hermaphrodite) have male peculiarities prevailing over the female, he succeeds to the title, but if the female peculiarities prevail over the male, then the next born, being a male, succeeds.

Again the sex of a child may be important with respect to its future business or profession. For instance, a girl cannot be admitted to holy orders.

Again, the live birth, even for a few seconds, of a living child of a certain sex, may be important in cases of "Tenancy by courtesy." Hence the accoucheur should always note the sex of the child he has assisted to bring into the world.

Again, in questions of divorce (the plea being a sound one) it may be urged by a husband that his supposed wife, or by a wife that her supposed husband, is so constituted as to be anatomically incapable of acting in his or her proper sexual relationship. Marriage is a contract, and a contract is void unless both parties to the contract are capable and willing to fulfil its provisions. Thus as early as 1654 a divorce was granted because the wife was a reputed hermaphrodite. ("*Edin. Med. Journ.*," Vol. XII., p. 767).

And again, where questions of legitimacy and paternity concern hermaphroditic individuals, a third question presents itself to the medical jurist, *viz.*, whether a being of this nature, admitting that "a certain sex doth prevail," be it male or female, is capable of procreating its kind?

A still further difficulty may occur. The law is that an hermaphrodite succeeds "according to the kind of sex which doth prevail." But supposing neither sex prevails? And of such sexless beings we have recorded instances.

It will be seen, therefore, that the subject of monstrosity and hermaphrodism practically resolves itself into the three following questions:—

1. Has this monster the shape of mankind or not?
2. Is it male or female, or a mixture of the sexes?
3. If male or female, is it capable of procreating its kind?

1. Has this Monster the Shape of Mankind or not?

Deformities* may be considered under three heads:—

(A.) *Acquired deformities and diseased growths.*

This class need not detain us, since deformities of this nature are not likely to become matters of legal enquiry, except in questions of divorce where they interfere with sexual connection.

(B.) *Congenital deformities arising from a deficiency of structure, with arrested or defective development of parts.*

Of these we may consider the following:—

(*a.*) *Acardiac monsters* (without a heart). (*Cases* 1 and 2.)

An acardiac fœtus is always one of a twin birth, the other

* Consult on these subjects Geoffrey St. Hilaire, "Histoire Générale et particulière des Anomalies de l'Organisation chez l'Homme et les Animaux." Förster, "Die Missbildungen des Menschen." Sir James Simpson's Article on Hermaphrodism in Todd's "Cyclopædia of Anat. and Phys." Vrolik in 4th vol. "Cyclopædia of Anatomy," and also his "Vrucht van den Mensch en ven de Zoogdieren." Dr. Allen Thompson on Double Monsters, "London and Edinburgh Monthly Journal," 1844. B. T. Lowne, "Descriptive Catalogue of the Teratological Series in the Museum of the Royal Coll. Surgeons of England, 1872," and the "Edinburgh Medical Journal," and other medical periodicals for the last half century (British and Foreign).

child—so far, at least, as the heart is concerned—being perfectly developed. At birth the acardiac fœtus it is true may show signs of maturity, but it is also certain that the circulation during intra-uterine life must have been maintained by the heart of the normal fœtus. ("*British Med. Jour.*," Aug. 23, 1879, p. 303. "*Edin. Med. Jour.*," XXIII., p. 46 [Professor Simpson]. See Dr. Ogle's paper on the Circulation in the Acardiac Fœtus, "*British Med. Jour.*," Oct. 28, 1871, p. 490. "*British Med. Jour.*," July 20, 1871, p. 525 [Dr. Johnson]. See also a reference to the alleged Viability of an Acardiac Fœtus in the "*British Med. Jour.*," June 3, 1871, p. 598.) It follows therefore, that the acardiac fœtus, cannot have an independent existence. Such monsters are, consequently, not likely to become subjects of legal enquiry, either civil or criminal.

β. *Acephalous monsters* (without a head). (*Cases* 3 to 7.)

In none of the recorded cases of headless monsters was any sign of life exhibited. Hence, in such cases litigation is scarcely likely to occur.

In *Cases* 8 and 9 two illustrations are recorded of microcephalic children. Both were born alive, but seem to have been idiotic and ape-like in their characters. It would be impossible, however, to deny such beings human shape.

γ. *Anencephalic monsters* (without a brain.) (*Cases* 10 to 24.)

In these cases, the forehead, cranial vault, and brain are entirely wanting. Sometimes the child seems well-developed (*Cases* 10, 11, 20, etc.), but more often other deformities exist. For example, the entire spinal cord may be wanting (*Case* 17), whilst at other times the medulla oblongata and cerebellum may exist without a trace of cerebrum (*Case* 11). Some anencephalic children seem at birth to be well-matured (*Cases* 10, 13, 18). The important fact, however, is that such children may be born alive. Thus, in *Case* 16 the child was recorded as living when two months' old, and in *Cases* 10, 22, and 24, periods of more or less active life of $1\frac{1}{2}$ hours and under are mentioned.

δ. *Cases* 25 to 38 represent deformities the result of structural deficiency of various kinds, such as the absence of arms, nose, one or both eyes, ears &c.

(C.) *Congenital deformities arising from a redundancy of parts, or from the union of two or more embryos.*

Children born with supernumerary toes, fingers, and nipples (all of which characteristics may prove of the utmost importance in establishing identity) need scarcely detain us in considering the medico-legal aspects of monstrosity. Under this heading, however, we have to consider cases of

DOUBLE MONSTERS.

Of double monsters we have two distinct classes:—

(1.) *Where the children are more or less distinct above and below.*

The parts united in these cases vary, but the following are those in which union most frequently occur:—

(*a.*) Union by a band of greater or less width extending from the thorax and abdomen of one child to the thorax and abdomen of the other. (*Cases* 50 to 58.)

(*β.*) Union in the back and pelvis. (*Cases* 59 to 64.)

(γ.) Union of the heads and scalps. (*Case* 65.)

In all these cases the invariable teratological law holds good, that the parts of one child are conjoined to the same parts of the other child—bone to bone, muscle to muscle, organ to organ. Exceptions, however, occur in the case of dwarfed parasitical twins. (See "*British Med. Jour.*," 1869, I, p. 231.)

(2.) *Where the union of the twins is deep and intimate, and more or less complete.*

Of this class there are three subdivisions:

(*a.*) Where the children are single above and double below. (*Cases* 66 to 74.)

(*β.*) Where the children are double above and single below (*Cases* 75 to 83.)

(γ.) Where the bodies of the two children are so connected that they form a single body, with a head at each end. (*Case*

Having now briefly referred to the various classes and subclasses of so-called monsters, we are in a position to discuss the medico-legal aspects of monstrosity.

(1.) *What is implied by the phrase, "not possessing the shape of mankind"?*

A consideration of the recorded cases and of the specimens in our museums justifies the assertion that none of the so-called human monsters *that have lived to adult age* can be denied human shape. This, however, can scarcely be so positively stated in the case of certain human births where there has been distinct evidence of life for a brief period only. (*Case* 37.) Still, it would in our judgment constitute an almost unrecorded case where the jurist would be justified in saying without reserve that a child born alive had not the shape of mankind, implying as the phrase does far more than mere deformity. Hideous as the appearance presented by anencephalic monsters is (*Cases* 10, &c.), curious as are the so-called human syrens or dolphins (that is, children where the lower legs are completely united—*Cases* 35 and 36), and inhuman-looking as certain microcephalic (ape-like) and pig-faced children may appear (*Cases* 8, 9, 38), the medical jurist should, even in such cases, hesitate before he asserts positively that they lack human shape. We repeat that in such births, involving questions of law, it is better for the medical witness to describe to the Court the exact deformity, and leave the responsibility of deciding whether it be a monster in the true legal sense to others.

(2.) The law knows no such principle as that involved in the term "*Euthanasia.*" The words of Mr. Justice Hawkins (R. *v.* Paine, tried for the murder of Miss Maclean, C.C.C., 1880) are on this point explicit: "It is equally criminal to accelerate by one hour the death of a person as to cause it." No degree of monstrosity or unshapeliness sanctions the destruction of life born of woman, either by medical attendant or friend. This question of monstrosity, therefore, does not arise in criminal cases (as in trials for infanticide, abortion, &c.), but in civil actions only. It is true that in a French case for child-murder, the prisoner was acquitted because the fœtus was acephalous (?) ("*Brit. and For. Med. Rev.*," Vol. XXIV., p. 563), but no such case is recorded in the practice of our English courts.

And again we doubt in cases where a certain blending of the

sexes occurs, whether operative interference on the part of the surgeon could be justified. Thus, to remove two imperfectly-formed testes in a girl-like boy, in order to develop more completely, as the child grew up, the girl-like character (however successful the operation), would not be easy to defend. (*Case* 105.) (See "*American Jour. Med. Sciences*," Oct., 1852.)

(3.) A further medico-legal question may arise in certain cases where the birth has been unusual, of which *Case* 15 is an illustration. A child was exhumed, and from the appearance of the head was believed to have come to its death unfairly. It was proved, however, to be anencephalic, a condition that might easily give rise to a suspicion of violent treatment. In such case, however, it must not be hastily assumed that the anencephalic monster has *not* come to its death unfairly (seeing that such children are not unfrequently born alive), considering the horror that such a birth is likely to arouse in the minds of the parents and friends. The secret burial of such a child would, moreover, rather promote than allay the suspicion of foul play. On the other hand, some allowance must be made in all such cases for the natural desire of privacy, sufficient to account for the secret interment of such progeny without any criminal violence having been committed.

(4.) And here a further question arises, viz., how far is the division of united twins a justifiable operation? It is certain that there is in most of these cases independent action. (*Cases* 52, 53, 60, 61, 67, 77.) Two cases of successful surgical interference are recorded—the one operated on by Dr. Boehm ("*British Med. Jour.*," March 13, 1869, p. 229), and the other by Kœnig ("*British Med. Jour.*," Feb. 13, 1869, p. 141). Still it is open to grave question, in the event of such an operation ending fatally, how far the surgeon might not be placed in a difficult position. If, however, one of the children die, operative interference may then be called for, although prudence would suggest that the surgeon should not undertake the task of separation on his individual responsibility.

2. Is the monster male or female, or both in one (hermaphroditic)?

And here it is to be noted that the differentiation of the sexual organs does not begin until a certain period after conception. Early in the existence of the fœtus, the cloaca divides, the posterior division becoming the outlet of the alimentary canal, and the anterior the genital fissure. In the female the anterior fissure remains fissured, and constitutes the labia externa or majora. In the male coalescence takes place, whereby the scrotum is formed for the reception of the testicles. From the front of the fissure a bud-like furrowed projection forms, developing into a penis in the male, and into a clitoris in the female. About the fourteenth week the margins of the furrow of this projection unite in the male to form the urethra, whilst in the female the lower surface merely remains grooved, the non-coalescent margins constituting the labia minora. In that abnormal condition occurring exceptionally in the male known as *hypospadias*, the margins of this fissure remain non-coalescent. Hence the urethra in such cases is deficient, and a condition simulating feminine development results. Further, in hypospadias the cloaca as a rule remains ununited and the penis small and undeveloped, rendering it clitoris-like in character, the bulb being represented by two folds like labia minora. With all this, the internal organs are male (transverse hermaphrodism). Sometimes, moreover, a cul-de-sac (simulating the vestibule of the female) exists between these representatives of the labia minora, apparently made to meet a vagina which is absent.

In the female occasionally, nevertheless very rarely, certain canals passing from an ovary to an enlarged clitoris, have been found, representing the vasa deferentia of the male. These canals are persistent Wolffian ducts, which, although present in the embryos of both sexes, physiologically belong to the male, for in the male sex only are they, as a rule, developed. In the female these ducts usually disappear altogether. (See Watson's paper, in the "*Journal of Anatomy and Physiol.*," Vol. XIV., October, 1879, p. 50.)

In the male, on the other hand, the "sinus pocularis" is the homologue of the uterus. Thus, in exceptional cases, an organ resembling a uterus, or sometimes both uterus and vagina, is found in the male occupying the place of the sinus pocularis. ("*Cyclop. of Anatomy*," Art. Hermaphrodism. Scanzoni, "*Beiträge zur Geburtskunde*," iv., p. 25.) These formations are developed Müllerian ducts, embryonic structures, destined to become the vagina, uterus and Fallopian tubes of the female, but in the male under ordinary circumstances to disappear, save as mere remnants of embryonic life without special function. (*Case* 47.)

Thus male and female, as it were, start together with Wolffian and Müllerian ducts and with divided cloaca, the sex depending on the turn that takes place in the after development. There are it is evident, therefore, in both male and female certain analogous and homologous parts. To complete what we have said as introductory to the subject of hermaphrodism, a tabular statement, in which such homologous parts are arranged as far as possible opposite one another may be advisable :—

I. External, or so called non-essential organs :—

MALE.	FEMALE.
Mammæ.	*Mammæ.*
Penis.	*Clitoris.*
Spongy portion of urethra.	*Urethra.*
Scrotum.	*Labia majora and minora.*

II. Middle, and more essential organs :—

MALE.	FEMALE.
Cowper's glands.	Duvernay's or Bartholini's glands.
Membranous and spongy portion of urethra.	
Sinus pocularis.	*Vagina, with body and cervix of uterus.*
Vasa deferentia, ejaculatory ducts, and vesiculæ seminales from Wolffian bodies.	
Epididymis.	*Par-ovarium* or organ of Rosenmüller.
Hydatid of Morgagni.	Fallopian tubes and upper portion of uterus from Müller's ducts.
Gubernaculum testis.	Round ligament of uterus.

III. Internal, or essential organs :—

MALE.	FEMALE.
Testes.	*Ovaria.*

[For paper on the homology of male and female organs, see '*Lond. Med. Rec.*," Nov. 17, 1879, p. 429. See also a review of Ord and Rémy's paper on "The Homology of the Sexual Organs," "*Journal of Anatomy and Physiology*," Vol. XIV., p. 50, Oct., 1879), and the "*L.M.R.*," Dec. 15, 1879, p. 478.]

Having seen that the parts in the male may by an arrest of development simulate those of the female (*Case* 90), and that those of the female may by excessive development simulate those of the male (*Case* 120), it follows as an important question, What is to be regarded as *the* distinctive sexual characteristic? To this there can be but one answer, and that is the *genital gland.* This is *the* reliable—and, we may add, the *only* reliable —test of sex. If the genital glands be testicles we must regard the individual as a male: and if, on the contrary, the genital glands be ovaries we must regard the individual as a female, independently in either case of anatomical conditions or characteristics. Nor are two testicles or two ovaries necessary. Given one testicle, no matter how imperfect or blended the genitals, or given one ovary, even if there be an absence of uterus or other sexual organs, the nature of the single gland must be accepted histologically as the test of sex. But to determine during life the co-existence of distinctive genital glands, or even to differentiate the genital glands, is, to say the least, always difficult. The testicles may not have descended, whilst the ovaries even under normal conditions (at any rate, so far as accurate observation is concerned) are out of reach. Hence although the nature of the genital gland is the true groundwork for a definite opinion, and as such not to be forgotten, it is manifest that it would be impossible during life to limit our observations to, or even to form our opinions in all instances upon, this alone. The case is different in the post-mortem room.

The true definition of an Hermaphrodite * is *the co-existence in a single individual of completely developed ovaries and testicles, or of one at least of each gland.* It is scarcely open to question that, in the strict sense, a true human hermaphrodite has never existed, more especially if we regard as essential that

* From Hermaphroditus, a person said to have been endowed with male and female powers.

the individual shall be able to perform the functions of either sex indifferently and effect self-impregnation.

But in the less strict sense, in which we commonly use the word hermaphrodism, viz., to imply the co-existence in a single individual of certain of the genital organs, or the blending of the sexual characteristics and instincts of both male and female, we have abundant illustrations. Thus we may have beings where the male organs and male instincts preponderate, although certain peculiarities or anatomical conditions peculiar to the female present themselves. On the contrary, we may have beings where the female genitals are predominant, although certain of the male organs with the proclivities of the sex are also to be found. And of these two classes the degrees of admixture are endless. (See *Illustrative Cases.*)

Such "a meeting of the sexes" occurs in plant and animal life generally. In the vegetable world it is the rule for male and female organs (stamens and pistils) to be united in the same flower, whilst in the lower forms of animal life this union of the sexes is not infrequent. Thus every mature joint of a tape-worm possesses both male and female organs of generation, internal as well as external. The same is true of slugs, snails, and many other molluscs, and of animals included in Cuvier's Radiata and Articulata. And even when we come to vertebrate animals we get occasional mixtures of the sexual characters, although less frequently as we ascend the scale of life. Thus when a cow has twins apparently of opposite sexes, the bull-calf is generally perfect, but the cow-calf never propagates its kind, appears to have no sexual instincts, grows larger than either bull or cow, and fattens better. To such the name of *Freemartins* is given. Some of these have testes in lieu of ovaria, but occasionally both testes and ovaria appear to be present. The rest of the organs of these animals present a mixture of the characters of both sexes. ["*John Hunter's Works*," Vol. IV., pp. 41, 42.] In Vol. XLII. of the "*Medico-Chirurgical Transactions*," Mr. W. S. Savory describes and figures an hermaphrodite sheep, which was regarded during life as a ewe. The external orifice led into a vagina three inches long, beyond which was a two-horned

uterus, two-thirds the usual size. In place of the ovaries were two testes, each surmounted by a small epididymis.*

Regarding hermaphrodism, therefore, in the less strict sense we have indicated, we may consider the subject for purposes of convenience under the following divisions :—

CLASS A.—SPURIOUS HERMAPHRODISM.

(*In this class no anatomical admixture of the sexes occurs.*)

SUBDIVISIONS.—(1.) Manly women (Androgynæ).
(2.) Womanly men (Androgyni, Gynandri).

CLASS B.—TRUE HERMAPHRODISM.

(*In this class the co-existence of certain of the genital organs and the characters of both sexes more or less prevail.*)

SUBDIVISIONS—(1.) Cases where the male organs are more or less developed on one side of the mesial line, and the female organs on the other. (*Lateral hermaphrodism.*)
(2.) Cases where the external organs indicate the one sex and the internal organs the opposite. (*Transverse hermaphrodism.*)
(3.) Cases where two ovaries and two testicles or other combinations of the generative organs of the male and female co-exist in the same individual. (*Vertical or double hermaphrodism.*)

---

* These strange beings are well described by Ausonius in these words —

"Nominis ut misti, sic corporis hermaphroditus,
Concretus sexu, sed non perfectus utroque,
Ambiguæ veneris, neutro potiundus amori."

And by Ovid :—

"Nec duo sunt, sed forma duplex, nec femina dici,
Nec puer ut possit, neutrumque et utrumque videtur.

CLASS A.—SPURIOUS HERMAPHRODISM.

Cases of spurious hermaphrodism present no real difficulties to the medical jurist.

(1.) **Manly women** (Androgynæ).

In some cases the growth of the hair and the development of beard, whiskers, and moustache may suggest a question as to sex. Such a freak of nature, however, is consistent with perfect womanliness, as in the case of Julia Pastrana. (See *Case* 119.) In the insane, and in old women, more especially in those where a certain degree of uterine absorption has taken place, and who have been unaccustomed to sexual intercourse since the change of life, such hirsute appendages are far from infrequent. ("*Lancet*," Jan. 25, 1873, p. 130.) *Per se*, therefore, excessive hair development has no real importance in determining sex.

Still it is unquestionable that in many cases where a certain manliness of the feminine character and instincts exist, combined with genital irregularities, such a development of hair constitutes one of the data upon which to base our decision as to sex. Thus, in *Case* 120, the growth of hair co-existed with certain other peculiarities that rendered the sex undefined.

We have now to consider some of the anatomical conditions which in the female may suggest a doubt as to sex :—

(*a*.) In most cases where females have been mistaken for males, *the enlarged clitoris* is the prominent feature. (*Cases* 49, 109, 110, 115 to 118, 120, 124, 130, 133.) This condition, uncomplicated with other malformations, such as adhesion of the labia and prolongation of the urethra, can scarcely constitute a real difficulty. It would appear that in the tropics, an enlarged clitoris is of more common occurrence than it is in temperate climates. Frequently, but by no means necessarily, such increased development is the result of libidinous practices.

It is important to note the points of dissimilarity between an enlarged clitoris and a penis. The absence in the clitoris of the corpus spongiosum is the first distinguishing feature. Further, the clitoris is an imperforate organ, although exceptional cases are recorded where a female is said to have

menstruated through an opening in it. (*Case* 112.) Neither however, can the imperforate condition of the organ, nor the uncovered state of the glans, nor the hoodlike preputium clitoridis, be relied on as distinctive of the clitoris, because we meet with practically identical appearances in the penes of hypospadians. In addition to which the urethra in such cases also terminates anteriorly to the gland, in some instances grooving the under surface of the penis, a state of parts found by no means unfrequently in the clitoris. (See *Cases* 109, 117.) It is evident, therefore, that in considering whether the organ in question be a penis or an enlarged clitoris, general considerations, rather than special anatomical conditions, must constitute the data upon which our opinion should be based.

(*b.*) *Prolapsus* (*procidentiæ*) *of the uterus.* (See *Case* 121.) This condition could scarcely deceive a medical man.

(*c.*) *The loss of one or both ovaries.* This may produce a more or less manly appearance, a certain change of voice, &c.

(*d.*) *The absence or non-development of the uterus or of the ovaries, or of both.* There are several cases on record in which no trace of either uterus or ovaries could be found, and we have ourselves seen such cases. (*Cases* 104, 133.)

(*e.*) *Prolapse of the ovaries may simulate testes.* This was originally suggested by Velpeau). (See "*Lancet*," Vol. IX., p. 169.)

(2.) **Womanly Men** (Androgyni).

These cases are commonly more obscure and difficult than the former. We shall consider in the first place:—

(*a.*) *Cases of delayed manhood.* There is a class of cases where the disposition of parts proves beyond a doubt the male character of the individual, whilst there is nothing anatomically to indicate a mixture of the sexes. Nevertheless, the genital organs may remain of very small size, the boyish voice continuing, and neither face nor genitals exhibiting any appearance of hair growth with advancing age. A smooth plumpness and softness of skin and muscular development, a womanly nervousness, and the absence of sexual instincts or desires, may raise doubts, more especially if married, whether the individual be normal. This condition may last through life, whilst at other times a sudden manly development takes place. (*Case* 85.)

It is to be remarked that in some of these cases the power of coitus, and even of prolific coitus, has been proved to exist.

(*b.*) Again, *mere adhesion of the penis may deceive parents.* Mr. Brand, in 1779, operated on such a case in a boy of seven, who, until then, had been regarded as a girl. (Brewster's "*Edin. Encyclopœdia*," Art. Hermaphrodites.) It has been said that a similar *liberation* has occurred to the male organ of a supposed girl from the effect of jumping! Such cases are related by Livy, Shenkius, Montaigne ("*Essais*," I., 20), and Ambrose Paré (case of Marie Germain).

(*c.*) *The entire absence of a penis, or the presence of a rudimentary penis only,* may prove causes of doubt. (*Cases* 27, 34.)

(*d.*) A very feminine appearance may result *from non-descent of the testes* (or even of a testis), more especially if atrophy of the organ has taken place (*Case* 97). Early castration may produce similar results. Of course a careful examination would at once dispel in such cases any idea of hermaphrodism, because, although there may be no testicles and possibly an ill-developed penis, sufficient indications of sex would be certain to be discovered. (*Cases* 88, 90, 93, 100, 108, 124.)

At the same time it is to be observed that where the Turkish method of making eunuchs be adopted (viz., by making a clean sweep of the genital organs), a hasty inspection of the parts might lead to a wrong conclusion as to the sex of the individual.

CLASS B.—TRUE HERMAPHRODISM.

By true hermaphrodism is implied the co-existence of certain of the genital organs, and a blending of the anatomical peculiarities of the two sexes, in a single individual.

Here the difficulties of classification specially present themselves, the sub-divisions merely indicating for the most part the existence of an extreme degree of genital deformity of one kind over other genital deformities. The lines of demarcation are however, far from being well marked.

The class of so called true hermaphrodites may be considered under three subdivisions :—

(1.) *Cases where male organs (especially a testicle) are more or*

less developed on one side, and female organs (and especially an ovary) on the opposite side. (Lateral Hermaphrodism.)

Case 130 (where the general configuration was masculine), *Cases* 125, 128, and 129 (where the general configuration was feminine), and *Case* 126 (where the general configuration was of a mixed character) supply illustrations of lateral hermaphrodism.

Thus a testicle with its vessels and other male organs may be found on the left side, and an ovary with its vessels and other female organs on the right side (*Cases* 125, 126, and 129) or *vice versâ* (*Cases* 128). In some cases of lateral hermaphrodism, spermatozoa have been found in the seminal fluid, whilst in others a periodic menstrual discharge has been recorded (*Case* 125), such conditions at once indicating the prevailing sex. In *Case* 109, however, not only were spermatozoa discovered in the secretion of the testicle, but regular menstruation from the age of ten was said to have occurred. The case is complicated, moreover, by the existence of double sexual instincts.

(2.) *Cases where the external organs indicate the one sex, and the internal the opposite.* (Transverse hermaphrodism.)

Thus we have recorded instances where the external organs of generation resembled the male, and the internal the female. (*Cases* 111, 115 to 118, 120, 123, 124, 127, 137.) The enlarged clitoris in most of these cases seems to have been the principal cause of the masculine appearance, for internal organs left no doubt of the individuals being females. It is worth remarking that in a case on record two children born consecutively of one mother possessed this peculiarity. (*Case* 116.)

Again, the external organs may resemble the female, and the internal the male. Many instances of this kind where doubt has arisen as to sex have been cases of hypospadias, the anatomical characteristics of which have already been described in detail. (Page 320.) (*Cases* 85 to 103, 107, 114.) The prominent feature of a hypospadiac is (as we have said) a cleft scrotum, a small imperforate penis, the opening of the urethra being underneath. Various other conditions, however, are recorded. Thus sometimes each half of the scrotum contains a testicle. (*Cases* 86, and 101 to 103.) At other times, and most commonly, a testicle is found

on one side only (*Cases* 85, 87, 88, 91, 93, and 94), whilst occasionally no solid body can be detected on either side of the cleft scrotum, the testicles being retained in the groin or abdomen. (*Case* 92.)

These cases constitute a source of great trouble to friends. In many instances the children are named, baptised, and brought up as girls, years passing by before the mistake is discovered. In many cases (*Cases* 85, 87, 99, 100, and 103) it would seem that the fact becomes apparent when the child is about 15 or 16, not unfrequently from the descent of one of the testicles causing a lump in the groin (*Cases* 87 and 101.) But there are cases where the error remains uncorrected for a longer period. Thus in *Cases* 89 and 90 the individuals were 26 and 33 respectively before the true sex was discovered. And more remarkable still is *Case* 102, where a person at 60, who had all his life passed and even been married as a female, possessed well-formed testicles, a true vas deferens and vesiculæ seminales.

That in many of these cases there is a certain blending of the sexes is certain, although, at the same time, much allowance in this respect must be made for education and associations. In *Case* 91, for instance, it is stated that the hypospadiac had menstruated, had well-developed breasts, and was of feminine appearance. (See *Case* 103.)

It would seem that cases of hypospadians are amenable to surgical treatment. (*Cases* 95, 96, and 98.) (See "*British Medical Journal*," Oct. 4, 1879, p. 554.)

Cases of *epispadias* (*i.e.*, where the glans is split on the top, the bladder also as a rule being divided), need not detain us. It may be well to note that Professor Billroth states that he has seen two cases of double clitoris in female epispadians, both combined with prolapsus vesicæ. ("*Medical Times and Gazette*," March 12, 1870, p. 278.) (*Cases* 134 and 135.)

3. *Cases of complex hermaphrodism* (Vertical or Double Hermaphrodism).

This division comprises the many cases not included under lateral and transverse hermaphrodism. In certain rare instances (1) ovaries are associated with both male and female passages,

In other also very rare cases, (2), testicles are similarly associated (*Case* 111), whilst in a third subdivision, (3), both ovaries and testicles co-exist in the same individual. (*Cases* 112, 113, and 126 to 130.)

In *Cases* 109 and 113 periodic menstruation and a seminal secretion containing spermatozoa are recorded as occurring in each case.

It is neither easy, nor as a rule necessary, for the purpose of the medical jurist, to classify the cases of doubtful sex. It may be taken as a general fact that external malformation invariably indicates some internal defect or irregularity.

Sexless beings.—Individuals are occasionally found presenting precisely opposite characters to that of hermaphrodites—namely, beings that have the essential features of neither males nor females:—in other words, where neither sex doth prevail. Of such individuals *Cases* 131 and 132 present illustrations.

In *Case* 40 the sex of a living child was doubtful, both penis and vagina being absent. In *Cases* 39 and 41, where there was an entire absence of the lower part of the abdomen, it was impossible to form any opinion of the sex of children born apparently at full term. In *Cases* 35, 42, and 46, the genital organs were said to be wanting in children live-born. *Cases* 43, 44 (where again the genital organs were absent) and 45, are also illustrations of almost sexless individuals.

Again cases are recorded where, although there may be be no admixture of the generative systems, a considerable difficulty arises from a want of completeness in the sexual organs. Thus in *Case* 48, the sexual desires were distinct, a vicarious menstruation occurred, vagina and ovaries were present, nevertheless the uterus was wanting.

On one point we may in such cases be quite certain, viz., that a true sexless being cannot contract a marriage. A matrimonial separation has been sought on this ground. (*Case* 132.)

Concealed sex (*Cases* 105, 106, 122).—These cases on examination present, as a rule, no difficulty. For some reason the individual has chosen to conceal his or her sex, and to pass off as

belonging to the opposite sex to that to which he or she belongs. In many cases this is to be accounted for by addiction to gross forms of immorality. In my own experience of two cases this was clearly the object in view. It may, however, in some instances be mere eccentricity.

3. If the individual in question be male or female, or both in one, is it capable of procreating its kind ?

The question of sterility and impotence will be more fully discussed hereafter. We need only remark here that although there can be no doubt that the great majority of so-called hermaphrodites are sterile, yet that spermatozoa have been found in the seminal secretions of certain of these individuals.

Mr. Savory's sheep, to which reference has already been made, is almost eclipsed by Sir Everard Home's bull ("*Phil. Trans.*," 1799). This animal had begotten five calves. It possessed ordinary male organs, and had the general appearance of a male except in the flanks and hind quarters. It possessed, however, in addition, an udder and teats affording milk, and a small vagina capable of admitting the male organ.

Conclusions.

1. Given the presence of testicles or of a testicle, wherever they or it may be placed, and of a single opening communicating with a bladder and not with a uterus, more particularly if there be seminal emissions containing spermatozoa and an absence of periodic hæmorrhages, the individual in question is to be accounted as belonging to the male sex, and that independently altogether of anatomical malformations, such as the presence of an imperforate penis, or even the entire absence of a penis, or the existence of feminine configuration and instincts.

2. Given the presence of ovaries or of an ovary, more particularly if there be periodic hæmorrhages, the individual in question is to be accounted as belonging to the female sex, and that independently altogether of anatomical malformations, such as

the existence of a penis-like body, or of male configuration and instincts.

3. Given the presence of glands that may be either ovaries or testicles, and the precise nature of which there is a difficulty in deciding:—or, given the absence of both ovaries and testicles, together with, in either case, the absence both of seminal emissions and of periodic hæmorrhages—then the presence of a uterus, and of a second opening below and distinct from the opening to the bladder, must be sought for. If a uterus or a second opening of the nature described be found, the individual is to be accounted as belonging to the female sex, and that independently of anatomical malformations, or of male configuration and instincts. But if, on the contrary, there be no uterus, and no second opening below and distinct from the opening to the bladder, then the male sex is strongly indicated.

4. When the anatomical conditions are so evenly balanced that neither sex seems to prevail, the existence of periodic hæmorrhages are to be regarded as strongly indicative of the sex being female, whilst, on the other hand, the existence of emissions are strongly indicative of the sex being male. In the latter case, however, if spermatozoa in such emissions can be detected, the proof that the individual is of the male sex is complete.

5. The sexual inclinations, the habits and tastes, and the general conformation of the body should in all cases be considered. If they support the conclusions based on the principles laid down in the preceding paragraphs they may be regarded as valuable confirmatory evidence. But if, on the contrary, they fail to confirm, or even appear at variance with, such conclusions, they may then be entirely disregarded.

EXAMINATION OF CASES OF DOUBTFUL SEX.

(*a.*) In the case of *infants*, inform the parents and friends at the earliest possible moment after birth that certain abnormalities exist, rendering the sex of the child doubtful, but give no decided opinion as to the sex that doth prevail until, at least, the child arrive at puberty. It is well that the name in which the child is baptised should be one that would answer for either sex.

(*b.*) Watch the infant closely year by year, noticing particularly (1) its physical development, and (2) moral characteristics (viz., tastes, habits, and propensities).

(*c.*) Remember that the recorded cases of a similar kind show that the probabilities are greatly in favour of the child belonging to the male sex.

(*d.*) In the case of adults the medical jurist should believe nothing but what he can absolutely prove. Mere statements, whether from friends or from the individual, as to seminal emissions or menstruation, are not to be trusted.

(*e.*) So-called "*seminal emissions*," in the absence of a well-marked male organ, and particularly in the absence of spermatozoa, constitute evidence of no practical value as indicative of the individual in question being a male.

(*f.*) So-called "*menstrual discharges*," unless such discharges can be proved to be periodic, constitute evidence of no practical value as indicative of the individual in question being a female.

(*g.*) But, independently altogether of anatomical peculiarities, it is certain that the emission of a fluid containing spermatozoa affords the strongest possible evidence of the individual in question being a male, and that in like manner periodic hæmorrhages from any opening about the genitals afford the strongest possible evidence of the individual being a female. Such emissions and discharges must, however, be most minutely and

personally investigated by the jurist, and not received on the testimony of others.

(*h.*) Carefully note the general conformation of the individual as follows :—

(*a.*) The width of the shoulders and hips.

(In the male the shoulders are usually wider than the hips, whilst in the female it is the opposite.)

(*β.*) The development of the muscles.

(γ.) The distance between the pubes and umbilicus, and between the umbilicus and scrobiculus cordis.

(In the male the distance between the pubes and umbilicus is shorter than between the umbilicus and scrobiculus cordis, the reverse being the case in females.)

(δ.) The extent to which the sexual hairs extend towards the umbilicus.

(The sexual hairs extend higher towards the umbilicus in the male than in the female.)

(ε.) The general development of the hair of the face.

(ζ.) The development of the breasts.

(Here note not so much the size or adipose growth of the breasts, as the development of the glands and nipples.)

(*i.*) The precise position of the orifice through which the urine passes :—

If a penis-like body exists, the questions to be considered are —(1) Whether it be perforate or imperforate ? (2) Whether it has a free and distinct prepuce, or whether the hood-like cover of the organ is connected (as is usual in cases of enlarged clitoris) with what answers to the nymphæ ? (3) Whether the corpus spongiosum is or is not developed ?

There yet remains two further anatomical characteristics, to which it is needful in deciding questions of sex to give the greatest possible attention :—

(*k.*) *The presence of a Vagina and Uterus.*

All openings about the genital organs must be carefully sounded in order to determine their precise depth and direction.

Mr. Curling points out that one of the chief diagnostic signs

on which to rely in determining sex in the living, is the presence of a second canal below the urethra and in front of the rectum, either opening separately in the perinæum, or branching off from a common canal opening externally. Mr. Curling states that a second canal "is never met with in any malformation of the male organs," and if present "is sufficient to enable the practitioner to decide satisfactorily on the sex being feminine." ("*Medical Times and Gazette*," Vol. XXV., p. 85.)

(*l.*) *The presence of Ovaries or Testicles.*

As we have already said, the genital glands are the only real test of sex. Hence, it is most important to examine these organs with the utmost care to determine if possible their precise nature. Virchow has pointed out that the softer the body, the more likely it is to be a testicle.

In the ovary, the firm basis of connective tissue preponderates greatly over the gland-like structure of the Graafian follicle. In feminine hermaphrodites the ovaries are often imperfect, and appear as small, hard atrophied formations, without follicles. Such a condition of the ovaries may occur, too, at early periods of life in virgins, as well as at later periods from inflammation.

To decide that a given body is a testicle, one would demand at any rate that some solitary seminal tubule should exist, seeing that in the normal testicle these tubules are present in such numbers that on section the organ appears almost to be made up of them and nothing else. No doubt in cryptorchids the testicles may become diminutive, but they never become hard and fibrous like the ovaries, but more often soft and relaxed.

(*m.*) Lastly, it will be necessary to note carefully the sexual inclinations and desires of the individual. These, however, are not to be over-estimated, seeing that sexual feelings may arise between individuals of the same sex. And so far as habits are concerned, education and general bringing up must be allowed their full value. Thus, a girl brought up as a boy will necessarily be more boyish than girlish in her habits and tastes, and *vice versâ*.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

ACARDIAC, ACEPHALIC, MICRO-CEPHALIC, ANENCEPHALIC AND OTHER CASES.

1. British Med. Journ., Aug. 23, 1879, p. 303.—Twins. One child was healthy and well developed, and the other acardiac. The acardiac twin weighed between 3 and 4 pounds. It presented at one spot a quantity of hair, although the cranium was only partially developed. There was one projection corresponding to an upper, and a second corresponding to a lower extremity. The spinal column, ribs and pelvis were well developed. Well developed blood vessels existed in the extremities. The fœtus presented the normal colour of a newly-born infant, showing that it must have been alive nearly up to the time of birth. (Page 315.)

2. Edin. Med. Journ., Vol. XXIII., p. 46 (with drawing).—(*Professor Simpson.*)—A twin birth, the one child being acardiac and the other well developed, although of small size. Portions of the intestinal canal were the only viscera present in the acardiac twin. (Page 315.)

3. British Med. Journ., 1873, I., p. 431.—(From "*Records of the Hôpital des Cliniques.*")—Twin birth. One child perfect, the other consisting only of an ovoid trunk without neck, head, legs or arms. (Page 316.)

4. British Med. Journ., May 30, 1874, pp. 712 and 809.—(*Dr. Godson.*)—A twin acephalous fœtus. It was born between the fifth and sixth months of utero-gestation, but showed signs of not more than three months' development. There was no trace either of head or of the upper extremities. (Page 316.)

This abnormality was probably the result of amputation.

5. British Med. Journ., 1870, II., p. 115.—(*Dr. Greene.*)—An acephalous fœtus, stillborn. Weight 10 lbs. (Page 316.)

[This was said to have been the third time that the woman had given birth to a similar monster.]

6. New York Med. Journ., VIII., p. 104.—A remarkable fœtus described as consisting merely of parts below the umbilicus. (Page 316)

7. British Med. Journ., 1876, II., p. 8.—(*Mr. Tinley.*)—A full time acephalous fœtus, with spinal malformation. Weight 2½ lbs. (Page 316.)

8. New York Med. Journ., Vol. XI., p. 458.—Æt. 6½. Height 3½ feet. Head 13½ inches circumference, and 6½ inches transversely from ear to ear. Brain almost entirely wanting. The child could neither walk nor speak. Its movements were swinging and ape-like. (Pages 316, 318.)

9. New York Med. Journ., Vol. XI., p. 458.—Æt. 3. Head 16½ inches circumference, and 10 inches transversely. Brain almost entirely wanting. Movements ape-like. (Pages 316, 318.)

10. British Med. Journ., Aug. 17, 1872, p. 183.—(*Dr. Kennedy.*)—Female. Lived for 1½ hours, and cried loudly. Generally it appeared to be well developed, but was totally devoid of brain. Its expirations were somewhat convulsive. It moved its limbs freely, and was acutely sensitive to impressions made on the surface of its body. It was difficult to say whether it could see, hear, or swallow. (Pages 316, 318.)

11. Lancet, April 23, 1881, p. 683.—(*Dr. MacDonald.*)—Female. Lived for a few minutes. Well-developed face, but an absence of forehead and cranial vault. The medulla oblongata was intact, and a trace of cerebellum also existed. (Page 316.)

12. Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences, Vol. LIV. (1867), p. 281.—(*Dr. Moore.*)—The entire occipital bone (excepting the basilar process), and also the parietals and the frontal to the superciliary ridges were absent. There was no trace of brain. (Page 316.)

13. Lancet, 1879, I., 503.—*Dr. Stephens.*—A monoptic anencephalous fœtus of large size and perfect formation. (Page 316.)

14. Lancet, 1878, I., 456.—(*Dr. Highet.*) - One-half of the cranium was absent, and the brain (such as existed) was a dark, putty-like mass The frontal bone was larger than usual, and curving inwards, was attached to the anterior portion of the upper vertebræ. (Page 316.)

15. Lancet, 1876, II., p. 488.—(*Dr. Waghorn.*)—An anencephalic fœtus The child was buried by the parents, but afterwards exhumed. The parents were charged with murdering the child by battering its head. (Pages 316, 319.)

16. Edin. Med. Journ., Vol. XIV. p. 564.—(*Dr. Inglis.*)—An anencephalic fœtus. The child was alive and thriving when two months old, but was blind and unable to shut its mouth. (Page 316.)

17. Med. Times and Gazette, 1875, II., p. 693.—(*Mr. Oliver Barber.*)—An anencephalic fœtus without spinal cord. (Page 316.)

18. Lancet, 1872, I., p. 465.—(*Dr. Joy.*)—An anencephalic male

41. British Med. Journ., 1875, I., p. 275 (with plate.)—(*Dr. Sheehy.*)—Sex doubtful. Breathed during labour, but was stillborn. Weight 9 lbs. 7 ozs. The thorax was well developed, but the lower part of the body was imperfect, without abdominal walls. (Page 330.)

42. Amer. Journal of Med. Sciences, Vol. LIII., p. 418.—(*Dr. Getchell.*)—Sex (?); lived 30 minutes; all the abdominal organs were external, covered only by a thin serous membrane. There were neither arms nor genital organs. (Page 330.)

43. British Med. Journal, 1877, II., p. 748.—(*Mr. Brereton.*)—Seven months' child: lived 9 minutes. Penis of abnormal shape without glans, the orifice being very large. Scrotum and testicles absent. (Page 330.)

44. Edin. Med. Journal, Vol. XVIII., p. 415.—(*Mr. Imlach.*)—Absence of genital organs, with deficiency of anterior abdominal wall. (Page 330.)

45. Edin. Med. Journal, Vol. XVI.—(*Dr. Matthews Duncan.*)—An ascitic fœtus. Scrotum present, but testicles and anus absent. (Page 330.)

46. Edin. Med. Journal, Vol. XVI., p. 938.—(*Dr. Matthews Duncan.*)—An eight months' fœtus, without genito-urinary organs. Lived for 48 hours. (Page 330.)

47. British Med. Journal, 1879, II., 654, and Lancet, 1879, II., 697.—(*Dr. Ord.*)—Male: æt. 36. On the right side there was found a surviving Müllerian duct, the testicle on that side not having descended, with incomplete development of vesiculæ seminales and vas deferens. On the right kidney a small gland was found, which Dr. Ord suggests was a Wolffian body. (Page 321.)

(For a case of the persistence of Müller's canal in a boy æt. 6, see "British Med. Journal," Sept. 6, 1879, taken from "Journal de l'Anat. et de la Phys.," by M. Rémy.)

48. Amer. Journal of Med. Sciences, Vol. LXIV., p. 575.—(*Dr. Brown of Baltimore.*)—Female; æt. 19.

Post Mortem. Vagina (without clitoris or hymen) about 2 inches long, ending in a cul-de-sac. There was no uterus, the bladder and rectum being in contact. The ovaries were present, and the mammæ well formed.

Sexual desires during life were said to be distinct. Vicarious menstruation occurred by epistaxis. (Page 330.)

49. London Med. Record, 1874, p. 521 (from the Berliner Klinisch. Wochens., June 15, 1874.)—Great hypertrophy of the preputium clitoridis. (Page 325.)

UNITED TWINS.

50. British Med. Journal, 1875, I., p. 508.—(*Dr. Hadley.*)—Female

twins united in the median line by a band extending from the lower part of the sternum to the umbilicus. One was stillborn, but the other breathed during birth. (Page 317.)

51. British Med. Journal, 1880, I., p. 698.—(*Dr. Murphy.*)—Female twins, united by the front of the thorax and the upper part of the abdomen. Lived a few minutes. (Page 317.)

52. British Med. Journal, 1880, I., pp. 982 and 897.—(*Dr. Thompson, of Bideford.*)—Female twins united from the umbilicus to the ensiform cartilage. Weight 12 lbs. Well developed. They lived 10 days, one dying a little before the other. Each enjoyed independent individuality. (Pages 317, 319.)

53. British Med. Journal, Feb. 13, 1869, p. 141; 1874, I., pp. 352, 359, 459, and other medical papers.—(Case of the Siamese twins, Chang and Eng.) Lived to adult life. They were united by a band stretched from the ensiform cartilage to the umbilicus. One umbilicus only. Neither the circulations nor the respirations were synchronous. They were dual in mind, and the urines of the two were found at times to be chemically different. They died in 1874, one surviving the other about two hours. (Pages 317, 319.)

54. London Med. Record, 1874, p. 572.—Twins united at the epigastrium. One was dead, and the other alive when born. The dead twin was removed, but the second child only lived for three days after the operation had been performed. (Page 317.)

55. London Med. Record, 1875, p. 354.—(*Professor von Buhl, of Munich.*)—Twins, united from the sternum to the umbilicus. (Page 317.)

56. London Med. Record, 1877, p. 207.—(*M. Blot.*)—Twin females born at full term. One child only alive at birth. They were united from the umbilicus to the upper portion of the chest. (Page 317.)

57. British Med. Journal, 1874, I., p. 495.—(*Dr. Heywood, of Maryland*).—Female twins. Weight 14 lbs. Well formed. United from below the nipples to the umbilical cord. (Page 317.)

58. British Med. Journ., 1872, II., p. 658.—(*Dr. Sangalli*).—Twins united by the thorax and abdomen. (Page 317.)

59. British Med. Journ., 1873, I., p. 39.—(*Mr. Houel.*)—Female twins, stillborn. United by the pelvis. (Page 317.)

60. British Med. Journ., 1873, I., p. 294, and 1871, I., p. 562.—(*Account by Virchow.*)—(Case of Miss Millie Christine, the two-headed Nightingale.) In this case the approximation of the spinal columns begins at

the second umbar vertebra and is complete in the sacral region. There are two heads and four legs, but a single anus and vaginal orifice. There appears to be perfect independence of thought, and motion. (Pages 317,

61. Med. Times and Gazette, 1880, II., p. 651.—(*Dr.*
Twin females (æt. 3), well formed. The pelvis common to both. Vagina double, but a single anus and urethra. All other parts double. The sensations distinct except at the pelvis. (Pages 317, 319.)

62. British Med. Journ., 1873, I., p. 262.—A fœtus with a single trunk, but two heads and four legs. (Page 317.)

63. British Med. Journ., 1878, II., p. 341.—(*Mr. J. E. Eaton.*) A five months' fœtus. Two heads and four legs, but a single body, the union commencing at the top of the sternum. (Page 317.)

64. Medical Record, 1874, p. 16.—(*Dr. Bent, of Argyle, N. S.*)—A twin male monster. Born alive. Three legs in perfect use. Two sets of genitals. Two perfect and two imperfect arms. One fairly developed and a second undeveloped head, the latter placed half way down the left side of the neck. (Page 317.)

65. Lancet, 1876, II., p. 313.—(*Dr. Tweedy.*)—Twins joined together at the vertex of the cranium. One fœtus was small, without legs or pelvic portion, and merely terminating abdominally in a bloody mass. The other was large, with arms, but without well-developed legs. They lived for five minutes after birth. (Page 317.)

66. British Med. Journal, 1877, II., p. 934.—(*Dr. Heschl, of Vienna.*) (Case of Blanche Dumas.) Female æt. 17. The lower half of the body double, the spinal column dividing at the second lumbar vertebra. Two pelves and two sets of genitals. The left anus somewhat imperfect. Urination and menstruation take place from both sets of organs. (Page 317.)

67. Lancet, 1874, I., p. 352.—(*Dr. Balle, of Faculté de Médicin, Paris.*) —Female æt. 14 when examined. Single above, but double from the waist downwards. Each part acts independently. (Pages 317, 319.)

68. New York Med. Journal, VIII., p. **102.**—(*Profs. Jones and Eve of Nashville.*)—A twin female. Was alive and well when five weeks old. Single above, but double below, the division commencing about the junction of the spine and sacrum. Double anus and double organs of generation. (Page 317.)

69. Lancet, 1879, I., p. 143.—(*Dr. Webb.*)—Female. Two heads fused into one, with a single face. Single above the umbilicus, but double below. (Page 317.)

70. Lancet, 1876, II., 525.—(*Dr. Clarke.*)—Stillborn. United from pubis upwards, the two heads being amalgamated. Genital and anal orifices double. (Page 317.)

71. British Med. Journal, 1879, II., p. 628.—Stillborn. The upper part of the fœtus single, but with two faces. The lower part double. (Page 317.)

72. British Med. Journal, 1880, I., p. 971.—(*Dr. Maclaurin.*)—One head and a single body as low as the umbilicus. Below this the fœtus was double. (Page 317.)

73. Med. Press and Circular, 1880, I., p. 518.—(*Dr. Chalmers.*)—Twin birth. The upper part single with one head, and the lower part double. (Page 317.)

74. American Journal of Medical Sciences, Vol. LXI., p. 299.—Twin females. Weight 10 lbs. Single above the pelvis and double below. (Page 317.)

75. British Med. Journal, March 13, 1869, p. 230.—Case of Rita Christina. Female. Double above, single below. Lived eight months. (Page 317.)

76. British Med. Journal, 1871, II., p. 268. (From "Boston Herald.")—A two-headed child with four arms and two legs. Lived for nine months, the one half dying three hours before the other half. (Page 317.)

77. Med. Times and Gazette, 1878, II., p. 577.—(*Mr. MacCullum, of Canada.*)—United female children, living, intelligent and well-formed. The union commences at the lower part of the thorax. There is but one abdomen, but distinct spinal columns, one navel, one set of genitals, and two legs, the pelvis being common to both. Neither the cardiac, digestive, spinal, nor respiratory movements appear synchronous, and sensation is independent. (Pages 317, 319.)

78. New York Med. Journ., Vol. VIII., p. 571.—Stillborn, but mature. The mother states she felt the child alive the day before its birth. It had two heads and two necks, between which a large third arm projected. Single below. (Page 317.)

79. Lancet, 1872, I., p. 538, (with plate).—(*Mr. Muggeridge.*)—A female, stillborn. Two-headed. (Page 317.)

80. London Med. Record, 1878, p. 311.—(*Dr. Tischler.*)—A fœtus double above the loins, single below. (Page 317.)

81. Edin. Med. Journal, Vol. XX., p. 702 (with plate).—(*Dr. Macdonald, of Edinburgh.*)—Female eight months' fœtus; weight 3½ lbs.

The trunk and extremities normal, except spina bifida. The face double, there being one eye to each face and one large compound eye in the median line with two eyeballs. (Page 317.)

82. British Med. Journ., 1875, I., p. 412.—(*Mr. Thompson.*)—Male, double above, with two well-formed heads. Male genitals perfect. Three lower extremities. (Page 317.)

83. Lancet, 1872, I., p. 886.—Two heads and a single trunk with two legs, and one supplementary leg. One portion of the body was said to have lived thirty hours after birth, whilst the other part died after five hours from convulsions. (Page 317.)

84. Medical Times and Gazette, July 27, 1872, p. 99 (with drawing).—(*Mr. Wasdale Watson.*)—A double monster; weight 8¼ lbs. Length 22 inches. A single body, with no noticeable mark indicating where the union was situated, a head being placed at each end of the trunk. There were three legs situated at the side of the trunk. Both heads cried vigorously. Two vaginæ. One child died six hours after birth, the other twenty-six hours. The details of the post-mortem are given. (Page 317.)

CASES OF HYPOSPADIAS.

85. Berlin Klin. Wochens, July 5, 1875, and Lond. Med. Rec., 1875, p. 525.—(*Dr Schæneberg.*)—Æt. 16 when the subject of the memoir first came under observation. Up to this time the parents had regarded him as a girl, although the general conformation, indicated by the undeveloped breasts, small pelvis, harsh voice, and prominent larynx were masculine.

A testicle, round, movable, tender, and the size of a hazel-nut, was present in the [supposed] right labium. The penis was 2½ in. long, imperforate, but with a well-formed glans. The urethral orifice was some distance below the penis, and further back was a shallow depression about 5 centimetres deep surrounded by a ring, and partly closed by a sort of hymen, not unlike a vaginal orifice. No internal genital organ except the testis could be made out.

At 20 years old male characteristics, such as a growth of beard and sexual excitement with a fluid discharge when in contact with females, developed themselves. (Pages 327, 328, 329.)

86. Med. Times and Gazette, Feb. 7, 1852.—(*Mr. Fletcher.*)—*A* weeks when the child came under observation. A small spherical body like a testis was observed in each half of the cleft scrotum. There was a very small imperforate penis, with glans and prepuce. The prepuce was slit from above downwards, forming two folds of membrane (like labia minora), which were continued from the root of the organ along the floor of the

fissure ending on each side of a circular orifice, placed midway between the lower end of the labia majora, and which led to the bladder. There was no passage inferiorly. (Pages 328, 329.)

87. Edin. Med. Journ., Vol. XLIII., p. 313.—(*Dr.*
Supposed to be a girl until 16. One testicle was found on the right side of the scrotum and the other in the right groin, supposed by the parents to be a rupture. (Pages 328, 329.)

88. Cormack's Monthly Journ., April, 1845, p. 307.—(*Mr. Terry.*) A child believed to be a female until two months old. One testicle only had descended. (Pages 327, 328, 329.)

89. Cormack's Monthly Journ., July, 1845, p. 531.—A person regarded as a woman until 26 years of age. Testicles present in the scrotum. (Pages 328, 329.)

90. Edin. Med. Journ., No. 123.—(*Dr. Handyside and Dr. Bach of Dresden.*)—Case of Gottlieb Göttlich, born in Saxony in 1798, and baptised as Marie Rosine G. He was employed as a female servant for some years, his sex not being suspected till the spring of 1831, when he fractured his left femur, and was admitted into a hospital at Dresden. At this time, first the left and then the right testis descended, and being accompanied with a strangulated hernia on each occasion, necessitated an operation which led to the discovery of the true sex. His semen had spermatozoa, and he had strong sexual desires. The scrotum was cleft; the penis one and a half inches long, and imperforate. The general appearance was masculine. (Pages 322, 327, 328, 329.)

91. Amer. Journal Med. Science, July, 1847.—(*Dr. Barry.*)—(Case of *Levi Suydam*). In the spring of 1847 Suydam presented himself as a free*man*, to vote in a contested election. Dr. Barry found him to be a hypospadiac, with a cleft scrotum and a small but perfect testis in the right half. He pronounced him a male, and entitled to vote. A few days after, it was discovered that Suydam regularly menstruated, and had done so for years. His figure was feminine, and the breasts well developed. On passing a sound into the urethra, instead of its reaching the bladder, it passed into a cavity like a vagina three or four inches deep. It was said that this urethra had been made by the accoucheur who attended at his birth! (Pages 328, 329.)

92. Amer. Journal Med. Sciences, Vol. LIV., p. 282.—(*Dr. Barton of Ohio.*)—A cleft penis. The testicles had not descended. The urine passed through an orifice in the right inguinal region. The child lived for seven or eight days. (Pages 328, 329.)

93. British Med. Journal, 1876, I., p. 656.—(*Dr. Gwynne.*)—Small and imperforate penis, with absence of C. spongiosum. Left testis absent. The parents were anxious about the sex when the child was three weeks old. (Pages 327, 328, 329.)

94. British Med. Journal, 1876, II., p. 386.—(*Mr. Franklin.*)—Æt. five months when it first came under observation. The penis had a glans, but no C. spongiosum. There were two slits on each side, but the urethral orifice was below the glans, and to the right of the mesial line. No left testicle. (Pages 328, 329)

95. London Med. Record, 1877, p. 427.—(*Dr. Lücke.*)—Male, æt. 19. (Operation for hypospadias successful.) (Pages 328, 329.)

96. Lancet, 1879, II., p. 727.—(*Mr. Pickering Pick.*)—Æt. 13. Fine grown, healthy and well formed hypospadiac. (Operation proved successful.) (Pages 328, 329.)

97. British Med. Journal, 1877, I., p. 392.—(*Mr. Porter.*)—Æt. 45. Testicles indurated and converted into a cheesy mass. (Page 327.)

98. British Med. Journal, 1875, I., pp. 221, 688.—(*Mr. John Wood.*)—Notes of successful operations on two hypospadiacs. (Pages 328, 329.)

99. British Med. Journal, 1876, II., p. 683.—(*Dr. Cooper Rose.*)—Æt. 15. A hypospadiac brought up and baptised as a girl. (Pages 328, 329)

100. British Med. Journal, 1872, II., p. 667. Edin. Monthly Journal, Vol. XVIII., pp. 612, 733.—(*Dr. Graham.*)—Regarded as a girl until 15. The left testicle undescended. The habits (from circumstances) were those of a girl, but the voice was rough. (Pages 327, 328, 329.)

101. British Med. Journal, Oct. 25, 1873, p. 503.—(*Dr. Holdsworth.*)—When 13 months old the mother brought the child to the hospital to be treated for what she supposed was a hernia. The parts resembled those of a female, but the supposed vaginal passage ended in a cul-de-sac. There was a rudimentary penis attached to the inner side of the left [so called] labium. There was a testicle in each labium, with a glans and a ridge where the urethra should be. (Pages 328, 329.)

102. Med. Times and Gazette, June 22, 1872, p. 722.—(*Mr. John Wood.*)—Æt. 60. A hypospadiac. Passed as a female all his life, and as such was married and had been deserted by the husband. The general appearance was feminine, and the mammæ were well developed. Pelvis transversely female; antero-posteriorly male. Labia majora large; each containing a well-formed testicle. There was a penis or clitoris in the median

line of considerable size. Below it and between the rectum and a well-formed prostate was a cul-de-sac an inch in diameter and 1½ in. deep. There was a true vas deferens which ended in the urethra and vesiculæ seminales. (Pages 328, 329.)

103. Med. Times and Gazette, May 21, 1853, p. 538.—(*Mr. Waters.*)—Æt. 15. A patient in the general ward of a Manchester hospital. Fair. Never menstruated. Countenance feminine, with a slight development of hair on the face and upper lip. Mammæ not developed. Scarcely any development of the mons veneris. The clitoris-like body was 2½ inches long and was covered by a distinct prepuce, under which was an imperforate but grooved glans. In the ordinary position of the external opening of the vagina was an aperture through which a finger could be passed leading upwards and backwards. This canal terminated in a cul de sac, below which was the opening of the urethra. In each so-called labium a movable body was found, which could be pressed upwards as far as the external abdominal ring. It had at its upper part a structure presenting the characters of an epididymis. Leading from it was a cord which gave the fingers the sensation of the spermatic cord. No pain resulted when these parts were pressed. Mr. Walters believed the bodies in the labia to be true testicles, and the case one of extreme hypospadias. (Pages 328, 329.)

104. Amer. Journal of Med. Sciences, Oct., 1852.—(*Dr. Hartshorne.*)—The child was regarded as a girl until two years old, when she commenced showing male proclivities.

Examination: There was neither penis nor vagina. The labia (?) were well developed, each containing a well formed testicle. There was no indication of uterus or vagina. Dr. Gross removed the testicles, thinking it better for the future happiness of the child to do so (!!!). So far as giving her girlish likes and proclivities the operation was successful. (Pages 319 326.)

105. Medical and Phys. Journal, Feb., 1833, p. 168.—The case of Eliza Edwards (æt. 24) who, although a male, passed for a female, and was attended by an eminent physician in his last illness without any suspicion of the truth. The body was sent to Guy's dissecting room as a female. (Page 330.)

106. Case of Da Costa v. Jones.—(*European Reports, Vol.* II., *p.* 729.)—The celebrated Chevalier d'Eon, long believed to be a female, was compelled to wear feminine apparel for many years by order of Louis XV. of France. The plaintiff in this case claimed £300 of the defendant (money owing as a bet), provided the Chevalier proved to be a female, the plaintiff having already paid 75 guineas to the defendant on this understanding. The verdict was given for the plaintiff—*i.e.*, a decision that the Chevalier was a female. This was set aside in the Court of King's Bench on the ground

that the law did not allow wagers on subjects leading to the introduction of indecent evidence (*contra bonos mores*), nor upon such subjects as were calculated to have an injurious effect upon the interest and character of a third person. Sir Anthony Carlisle afterwards examined the Chevalier, and found perfect testicles, and satisfied himself and all others that he was of the male sex. (Page 330.)

107. Rees' Cyclopædia.—(*Quoted from the "Journal de Medicine."*)—An individual supposed to be a woman and living with a husband. Bust, hair and general development masculine. There was an imperfect penis, two well-formed testicles, and imperfect vesicula seminales. There was an appearance of vulva, the urethra opening at a cul de sac representing the vagina. (Page 328.)

108. Taylor's Med. Juris., II., p. 278.—A boy until thirteen years old brought up as a girl owing to the testicles not having descended, when change of voice and development of masculine habits showed the mistake. (Page 327.)

109. Virchow's Archiv. XLV. (1868.)—*Archives Générales*, March, 1869.—*Medical Times and Gazette*, June 28, 1873, p. 691.—(Case of *Catherine Hohmann.*)

The subject was a domestic, forty-three years of age, born of parents perfectly developed. She had four brothers and sisters who were in all respects perfect. The midwife who attended at her birth detected a malformation of the genital organs, but thought it not worth while to inform the parents, the result being that the infant was brought up as a girl. She began to menstruate regularly about the age of ten. In 1866 the flow was arrested for some months, after which the interval of menstruation was reduced to three weeks, the average duration of the discharge being four or five days. For some days previous to the flow she experienced pain and swelling in the breasts, uneasy sensations in the lower part of the abdomen, and nausea. She also occasionally had epistaxis during the periods. The voice resembled that of a woman up to the age of twenty-six. At this time she suffered from pain in the throat, accompanied with difficulty of deglutition, and aphonia. The voice returned shortly afterwards, but it was then a male voice and deep-toned.

The hair of the head is long like that of a woman, and of dark colour. The chin and upper lip are covered with a number of stiff, harsh hairs, several millimetres in length, the lower extremities being also covered with short hairs in great number. The features are those of a man. The larynx is large, and the pomum Adami prominent. The limbs are bony, and the muscles well outlined. The thorax and pelvis has the male conformation. Respiration is quiet and diaphragmatic. The breasts and nipples are developed like those of a woman.

The genital organs are abundantly covered with hairs. Above is a penis with glans and prepuce. The penis is about three inches in length from the root to the tip of the glans, the glans itself measuring about one inch. In the place of the meatus urinarius there is a depression from which starts a furrow, which passes down on the inferior surface of the penis, like an unclosed urethra, to within six millimetres of the root of the penis. From this point there is a short urethra, with an opening near the root of the penis. On the dorsal surface of the penis are two soft cutaneous folds, which start on a level with the root of the penis, and then, separating somewhat, are lost towards the prepuce upon the lateral surfaces. These folds are apparently the analogues of labia minora. The scrotum is well developed and formed of two unequal halves, the right one being of good size, whilst the left is small, shrivelled up, and resembles a labium. In the right half, which is pendant, there is a well developed testicle of normal size and consistence; and one can trace very distinctly the epididymis and vas deferens. There is, without doubt, a cremaster muscle, for the least mechanical irritation of the scrotum provokes reflex contractions. At the bottom of the left side of the scrotum there is a hard, ill-defined mass, resembling cicatricial tissue, and which may possibly be a degenerated testicle.

In the left inguinal region there exists a flat body the size of a bean, the nature of which it is difficult to determine. We might, strictly speaking consider it an atrophied testicle.

"On passing a sound into the urethra, which is of the size of that canal in an adult man, the bladder is readily reached, no obstacle being met with. On a number of occasions when using a sound of smaller size, and carrying it along the posterior wall of the urethra, it happened that the instrument passed into a sac-like cavity, situated behind the urethral orifice. The sound was readily moved in a lateral direction, and the cavity, considered in relation to its position and form, was held to be that of a well-developed uterus. In following by the rectal touch the movements of the sound, Professor Friederich was convinced that the instrument passed into a cavity near the posterior wall of the urethra, and by passing in a second instrument above the first and making it penetrate the bladder, the extremities of the two instruments were felt to be separated from each other by a wall about one inch in thickness. Neither the rectal touch nor the most careful examination of the parts situated on the sides of this pouch showed the existence of any organ which could be considered either as an ovary or a second testicle. It was also impossible to recognize the existence of a prostate.

"The attractions of this person, Catherine H., were always for women. In the presence of men she experienced a certain degree of repulsion, and she had rejected a number of offers of marriage which had been made to her. In the presence of men she never had erections, which were very frequent when she approached women. She confessed to having had

frequent sexual intercourse with a female domestic, for whom she had conceived a deep love. She also acknowledged to having frequently admitted men to her embraces, without, however, having formed for them any attachment.

"She had seminal emissions following lascivious dreams. The fluid discharged was found on microscopical examination to contain spermatozoa, which were normal in movement and appearance. During her stay at the clinique she had one of her periodical flowings, and the blood was seen escaping both in drops and in a continuous flow from the canal of the urethra.

"Her general health was perfect, all other functions being performed with regularity." (Pages 325, 326, 328.)

110. Cincinnati Lancet and Observer, Sept., 1875. London Med. Record, Jan. 15, 1876.—(*Dr. L. Rodgers.*)—An unmarried person (woman) æt. 38. The person was hermaphroditic. The mons veneris, labia majora and minora are recorded as well developed. Vaginal orifice small, scarcely admitting a female catheter. A penis-like body 3 in. long and 1 in. thick curving downwards, without prepuce was noted. A web-like membrane extends from the glans along the under side, which when an erection occurs draws the penis down to the upper junction of the labia majora. A tumour was found attached by a long pedicle to the root of the penis, and on removal was found to present all the appearances of a testicle. (Pages 325, 330.)

111. American Journ. Med. Sciences, Vol. XXVI., p. 65.—(*Dr. Blackman.*)—Æt. 30. Male appearance, excepting developed breasts. Scrotum cleft. Menstrated monthly. Male desires. (Page 328.)

112. American Journ. Med. Sciences, Vol. XXVI., p. 367.—(*Dr. Burnett.*)—Æt. 26. Formation male, but no testicles found in the scrotum. The individual is said to have menstrated monthly through the penis, and ultimately to have died from cerebral congestion during one of these periods.

P.M. A testicle and an ovary with Fallopian tubes found on each side. A prostate gland and uterus also present.

(See Journal, p. 367 for detailed P.M.)

[See remarks on this case in Amer. Journ. Med. Science, 1871, Vol. LXII., p. 123, by Mr. Woodward, who states that the ovary was a mass of adipose tissue, and that there were no Fallopian tubes. The so called uterus and vagina in the case represent in his opinion the united vesiculæ seminales, the conformation of which is irregular in consequence of the arrest of development due to the non-descent of the testicles.] (Pages 326, 330.)

113. Med. Press and Circular, Vol. I., 1877, p. 214.—(*Dr. Ceccherelli.*)—An hermaphrodite; æt. 14. Mammæ well developed; female organ

of generation complete; menstruated regularly. Had had connection with males.

This individual has a testicle, and according to Virchow seminal vesicles which contain spermatozoa. (Page 330.)

114. British Med. Journ., June 2, 1877, p. 685.—(*Dr. Fothergill.*) —(*Also "American Journal of Obstetrics," Feb.* 1876.)—Case of Hoffman. This being cohabited with a male from 19 to 46, when a change of life occurred. He then felt a preference for females, and had connection indifferently, ultimately taking a wife and dressing as a man. (Page 328.)

115. Med. Gazette, Vol. XL., p. 562.—(*Dr. Harris, of Clarksville.*)— No testicles. A short but naturally formed penis existed, through which the being regularly menstruated. There was a rudimentary vagina, and the general development was that of a female. (Page 328.)

116. Med. Times and Gazette, Jan. 24, 1852, p. 84.—(*Mr. Curling.*) —(1.) A case of twins. In *both* children folds of skin existed resembling a scrotum before the descent of the testicles, divided by a cleft, without any trace of opening or of vagina. There were no signs of testicles. There was a body resembling a penis, with a well-formed denuded glans, but without any corpus spongiosum below the glans. In one, the urethra terminated at the root of the glans (hypospadias), in the other the meatus did not reach so far. One died at the end of seven weeks, and the other at the end of nine weeks. The post-mortem revealed properly formed ovaries and a uterus, and also a vagina which gradually contracted and terminated anteriorly in a short canal, opening into the urethra close to the neck of the bladder at the part corresponding to the veru montanum, there being a similar eminence in the urethra. A probe introduced at the aperture of the urethra passed both into the bladder and through the short narrow canal into the vagina. There was also a body not unlike a prostate, but not glandular in structure (Specimen in R. C. S. Museum.)

[In this case Curling advised that names should be given the children applicable to either sex, but the parents baptized them as boys.]

The mother, eighteen months afterwards, was confined of another child similarly malformed, except that the penis-like body was more evidently a clitoris than in the previous cases. It died after four months. The mother was again confined a third time, when she was delivered of a well-formed male child.

(2.) A child æt. two-and-a-half years, the second child of well-formed parents, and baptised as a boy. It had a fair-sized penis, slightly curved downwards, and lodged in the upper part of a cleft. The glans (formed probably by the expansion of the erectile cavernous bodies constituting the clitoris), was denuded, the prepuce being thrown back like a hood. There

was no appearance of corpus spongiosum. No meatus urinarius was apparent, but a faint groove existed which ran down and terminated at an oval aperture, which led to the bladder, in the middle of the cleft. Below this was another opening, into which a catheter passed for about an inch. Besides these, there were no other openings, either in the centre of the cleft or in the perinæum. There were no testicles, and the swellings at the side of the cleft resembled labia.

[Mr. Curling believes the lower opening above referred to communicated with a vagina and uterus, and that the penis-like body was a clitoris. He advised dilating the lower orifice by passing a bougie daily. Ultimately the enlarged clitoris was excised.] (Pages 325, 328.)

117. British Med. Journ., Jan. 3, 1880, p. 20.—(*From Virchow's "Archiv Band,"* LXXV.)—Æt. 16. Menstruated at 14½. Developed breasts. No hair on the face, but long brown hair on the head. There was a penis-like body, with a prepuce and urethral furrow two inches long and erectile, curved backwards. There was a uterus and vagina, but no prostate nor vesiculæ seminales. Bodies were present which Virchow considered to be ovaries. (Pages 325, 328.)

118. British Med. Journ., Jan. 27, 1877, p. 108.—(*Dr. Griffith.*)—A child in whom certain scrotal appendages were found to be labia. The apparent penis not perforated, but a urethral orifice found beneath. At the post-mortem both uterus and ovaries were found. (2.) A child registered as a male found to be a female. The mother attributed the deformity to a fright in the monkey-house at the Zoological. (Pages 325, 328.)

119. Lancet, May 1, 1852, p. 421.—(*Dr. Chowne.*)—See also "Lancet," Oct. 11, 1851, p. 335, and Jan. 15, 1853, p. 66; "Med. Times and Gazette," Jan. 15, 1853, p. 71.—A female (Joseph Boisdeclince), in all respects well and properly developed, save in great development of beard and whiskers. She was born with hair on her chin, and her beard was two inches long when she was eight years old.

See also—**British Med. Journ., 1874, II., p. 659.**—Account of two women living at Constantinople (æt. 20 and 24) who had long flowing beards and whiskers. **London Med. Record, 1877, p. 292.**—(*Dr. Duhring.*)—Female, 23, married, with moustache and beard. This growth of hair did not seem associated with any sexual irregularity. She was the mother of two children. **Lancet, 1873, II., p. 756.**—(*Dr. J. E. Wilson.*)—Female, 32, unmarried; beard and whiskers more than three inches long. The hair commenced growing at the time she first menstruated. No sexual malformation or irregularity. **British Med. Journal, 1877, I., pp. 411, 471.**—Female; æt. 40, married; no children; great growth of hair on the face. (Page 525.)

120. Lancet, Vol. I., 1873, p. 129.—(*Dr. Hills.*)—The case of a dressmaker, aged 42, in the Norfolk Asylum, with broad shoulders, undeveloped breasts, thick moustache, and a full beard. The clitoris was very large with a distinct prepuce. There were no signs of testicles, and she had menstruated three times imperfectly at an early age. The lower part of the body was feminine, so far as regards vagina and uterus. She evinced strong sexual passions, and behaved indecently to the attendants The voice was feminine. (Pages 322, 325, 328.)

121. Beck's Med. Juris. p. 77.—Case of Margaret Malaure, a reputed hermaphrodite owing to the existence of prolapsus uteri. (Page 326.)

122. Taylor's Med. Juris., II., p. 286.—Dr. James Barry, late Staff-Assistant-Surgeon and Inspector of Hospitals, who had served many years in the army, and had fought at least one duel, was found to be a female. (Page 330.)

123. Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences, 1872, p. 512.—(*Dr. Flunce.*)—External organs and bodily formation in this case were masculine. At the post-mortem a uterus, ovaries and Fallopian tubes were discovered. The individual had never menstruated. (Page 328.)

124. Med. Times and Gazette, Feb. 18, 1860, p. 177.—(*Spencer Wells, Wilks, and Curling.*)—An adult, unmarried, supposed through life to be a male. No suspicion was excited until circumstances necessitated the surgeon passing a catheter. The characters externally were those of a hypospadiac male with undescended testes, but internally the female characters predominated, and there were no testes. The apparent penis was an enlarged clitoris. There was a small uterus and one ovary. The vagina terminated near the external opening of the urethra. There was some doubt whether or not the vagina terminated in a cul-de-sac. The urethra was about three inches long, some dense fibrous tissue being present at the neck of the bladder, resembling in shape and appearance the prostate, but about half its usual size. There were no traces of vesiculæ seminales nor of vasa deferentia.

[The question of duality of sex in this case arose from the co-existence of prostate and uterus. The Committee of the Pathological Society, to whom the specimen was referred, did not regard the body as a true prostate, no sinus pocularis nor veru montanum nor follicles corresponding to the prostatic being visible. Nor again on section of the organ near the mucous membrane were any ducts visible, neither was there any secretion resembling what is seen in the perfect gland.] (Pages 325, 327, 328.)

125. Liverpool Med. and Surg. Reports, Oct. 1867, and British Med. Journ., June 6, 1868.—(*Dr. Rawdon.*)—Case of lateral hermaphrodism. A Fallopian tube, round ligament and par-ovarium (but no testicle or ovary)

were found in the left broad ligament, whilst in the right was a Fallopian tube and a testicle with its epididymis and vas deferens. The vagina and uterus were present, and the person was said to have menstruated regularly. (Page 328.)

126. Taylor's Med. Juris., II., p. 280.—(*Mentioned by Briand.*)—Æt. 18 at death. In configuration partly male and partly female. From external appearances no conclusion could be formed, but on making a post-mortem a testicle was found in the left [so-called] labium, with an epididymis and spermatic cord attached, whilst on the right side there was an ovary, Fallopian tube and rudimentary uterus. (Page 330.)

127. Centralblatt Med. Wissenschaft, June 3, 1871.—(*Dr. Heppner.*)—Case of bilateral or transverse hermaphrodism. Child two months old. The external genitals were male and the internal female. Testicles were said to have been found as well as ovaries, but neither vasa deferentia nor vesiculæ seminales. (Pages 328, 330.)

128. Medical Gazette, Vol. XIX., p. 135.—(*Prof. Mayer of Bonn.*)—Æt. 55 at death. General configuration that of a woman. (During life celebrated anatomists had formed different opinions as to the sex.) At the post-mortem there were found on the right side a withered testicle, a penis and a prostate gland, and on the left an ovary, uterus, vagina, and Fallopian tube. (Pages 328, 330.)

129. Beck's Med. Juris., p. 70.—(*Communicated by M. Maret.*)—Case of Hubert J. Pierre. Died at the age of 17. No down on chin or lip. Breasts of middle size with large areolæ. The bust was feminine, but the hips were imperfectly developed. Penis four inches long with prepuce, but imperforate, a little indentation occurring at the ordinary spot of passage. Under the penis was a fissure resembling that between the labia. The left labium contained a testicle with spermatic vessels, whilst in the right a body descended when the abdomen was pressed which proved to be an imperfect uterus with Fallopian tube and ovary. A rudimentary vagina one inch long was also present. (Pages 328, 330.)

130. Dictionnaire des Sciences Médicales, art. Hermaphrodisme.—The case of Lefort puzzled some of the best anatomists in Paris and London. The chin, chest, and extremities were covered with hair ; the breasts were elegantly and perfectly formed. There was a small clitoris, with an imperforate glans. Below were five small openings, through which urine passed. A probe revealed something like a vagina, and she was seen to menstruate. She was supposed to have one ovary and one testis. (Pages 325, 328, 330.)

131. Cormack's Monthly Journ., July, 1845, p. 492.—(*Mr. Grigor.*)—A case where both testicles and ovaries were wanting, and no essential features of either sex prevailed. (Page 330.)

132. Ann. d'Hyg., 1872, 2, 149.—(*M. Tardieu.*)—At 25 the being referred to was married. After 2 years steps were taken for a separation. She had neither breasts, vagina, uterus, nor ovaries. She had never menstruated. There was neither penis nor testicles, but the pelvis was male rather than female in conformation. (Page 330.)

133. Med. Times and Gazette, Feb. 21, 1852, p. 187.—(*Dr. Broadhurst.*)—A girl æt. 16, fair, broad-built, and of feminine features. The mons veneris was covered with hair when she was 4 years old. At 10, the mammæ were well developed, the voice girlish, and the pelvis broad. Springing from between the labia majora was a clitoris 3 in. long and 2 in circumference, the dimensions increasing under excitement. The labia by their expansion resembled a small scrotum. The meatus, which was double its usual capacity, was half an inch below the clitoris in the median line. The bladder only could be felt per rectum, and it was the general opinion that both vagina and uterus were absent. (Pages 325, 326.)

134. British Med. Journ., 1873, II., p. 366.—(*Dr. Lichtenberg.*)—Æt. 9. Epispadias. Penis small, but prepuce large. Both testicles were in the scrotum. (Page 329.)

135. London Med. Record, 1876, p. 562.—(*E. Küster.*)—Æt. 1½. Epispadias. Penis small. (Page 329.)

136. Lancet, 1875, II., p. 27.—Male. Right breast very large with brown areola. No secretion at any time was observed from it. The nipples were of usual size. Genital organs well developed. (Page 313.)

137. British Med. Journal, 1879, I., p. 630.—(*Dr. H. S. Wilson.*)—A stillborn fœtus. Female external genitals simulated those of the male. (Page 328.)

CHAPTER VII.

EXPECTATION OF LIFE.

PRESUMPTION OF DEATH AND OF SURVIVORSHIP.

Expectation of Life.—Life Insurance.—A Medical Examination.—Unusual Risks.—Insurance against Accident.—*Presumption of Death.*—*Presumption of Survivorship.*

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 395.)

I.

THE EXPECTATION OF LIFE: (*Insurance.*)

LIFE INSURANCE is a contract. *On the one part the insured* pays the insurers a certain amount, either in a lump sum or in yearly or quarterly instalments (called *the premium*), and *on the other part the insurers* agree to pay a certain sum of money to the executors or assigns of the insured at death, or to him at a certain age agreed upon, or if he die before this time to his executors.

Sometimes insurances are effected for a limited number of years, payment of the sum assured to be made only if the person die during the period of the insurance. Various other special contracts may also be entered into.

The writing by which all these contracts are made is termed *a policy.*

In the remarks we have to make, we shall use the word *applicant,* to signify the person who makes an application to insure a life—the *insured,* to signify the person on whom the policy is granted—and the *insurers,* the office that grants the policy.

Nothing is more uncertain than the duration of a single life, and but few things less uncertain than the average duration of a

Table of the Expectation of Life.

Age.	Healthy Lives, Male.	Healthy Lives, Female.	Healthy Lives, Male and Female.	Diseased Lives, Male and Female.	Age.	Healthy Lives, Male.	Healthy Lives, Female.	Healthy Lives, Male and Female.	Diseased Lives, Male and Female.
	Years of Life.	Years of Life.	Years of Life.	Years of Life.		Years of Life.	Years of Life.	Years of Life.	Years of Life.
0	58·43	55·53	57·64	55·56	50	20·30	21·60	20·51	18·29
1	57·43	54·53	56·64	54·56	51	19·63	20·94	19·84	17·73
2	56·43	53·53	55·64	53·56	52	18·97	20·18	19·17	17·13
3	56·31	52·53	55·09	52·56	53	18·29	19·60	18·50	16·52
4	55·31	53·04	54·83	51·56	54	17·60	18·86	17·81	15·93
5	54·31	52·04	53·83	50·56	55	16·93	18·17	17·14	15·45
6	53·76	51·04	53·08	49·56	56	16·32	17·53	16·53	14·84
7	53·13	50·90	52·67	48·56	57	15·69	16·88	15·90	14·20
8	52·13	49·90	51·67	47·56	58	15·07	16·16	15·26	13·74
9	51·13	49·18	50·80	46·56	59	14·44	15·56	15·64	13·23
10	50·29	48·18	49·89	45·56	60	13·80	14·85	13·99	12·62
11	49·69	47·78	49·38	44·56	61	13·23	14·21	13·42	12·19
12	48·69	46·78	48·38	43·56	62	12·66	13·50	12·83	11·60
13	47·88	45·78	47·50	42·56	63	12·09	12·92	12·26	11·09
14	47·05	44·78	46·60	41·56	64	11·54	12·38	11·72	10·64
15	46·24	44·27	45·90	40·56	65	11·01	11·78	11·17	10·26
16	45·34	43·82	45·14	39·56	66	10·49	11·24	10·65	9·85
17	44·34	43·11	44·23	39·09	67	9·98	10·63	10·12	9·38
18	43·53	42·20	43·39	38·09	68	9·46	10·10	9·61	8·99
19	42·79	41·42	42·64	37·09	69	8·99	9·60	9·13	8·56
20	42·09	40·87	41·98	36·80	70	8·54	9·12	8·68	8·16
21	41·33	40·17	41·23	36·16	71	8·02	8·61	8·16	7·67
22	40·62	39·40	40·51	35·73	72	7·52	8·09	7·65	7·18
23	39·87	38·61	39·84	35·15	73	7·12	7·58	7·24	6·77
24	39·18	37·95	39·15	34·84	74	6·69	7·27	6·83	6·32
25	38·44	37·40	38·44	34·01	75	6·42	6·99	6·56	6·10
26	37·64	36·80	37·65	33·47	76	6·03	6·57	6·17	5·90
27	36·90	36·21	36·93	32·87	77	5·69	6·29	5·85	5·69
28	36·14	35·69	36·18	32·36	78	5·33	5·92	5·48	5·38
29	35·42	35·07	35·47	31·64	79	5·00	5·86	5·22	5·21
30	34·68	34·55	34·75	31·03	80	4·71	5·56	4·93	4·98
31	33·96	33·90	34·04	30·46	81	4·40	5·17	4·61	4·60
32	33·21	33·27	33·30	29·81	82	4·14	4·90	4·36	4·52
33	32·48	32·75	32·59	29·13	83	3·90	4·35	4·04	4·17
34	31·75	32·04	31·86	28·43	84	3·79	3·92	3·84	3·52
35	31·03	31·43	31·15	27·76	85	3·51	3·71	3·58	3·01
36	30·28	30·80	30·41	27·11	86	3·34	3·62	3·44	2·87
37	29·55	30·21	29·69	26·51	87	3·13	3·51	3·26	2·69
38	28·83	29·55	28·97	25·75	88	2·87	3·40	3·05	2·99
39	28·12	28·88	28·27	25·13	89	2·81	3·14	2·94	2·78
40	27·42	28·24	27·57	24·49	90	2·35	3·33	2·68	4·05
41	26·69	27·59	26·85	23·82	91	1·91	3·88	2·46	3·05
42	25·96	26·97	26·14	23·15	92	1·55	3·72	2·25	2·90
43	25·24	26·30	25·42	22·51	93	1·40	3·71	2·34	3·50
44	24·50	25·68	24·69	21·80	94	2·21	3·25	2·90	2·50
45	23·79	24·96	23·98	21·11	95	1·21	2·25	1·90	1·50
46	23·08	24·26	23·27	20·95	96	·50	1·25	1·06	·50
47	22·37	23·68	22·57	20·26	97	—	1·00	1·00	—
48	21.68	23·02	21·89	19·57	98	—	·50	·50	—
49	20·98	22·34	21·20	18·92					

DECLARATION OF THE PERSON TO BE ASSURED.

ARRANGED BY DR. DOBELL.

QUESTIONS TO BE REPLIED TO BY THE ASSURER WHOSE NAME IS HEREUNTO AFFIXED BEFORE EXAMINATION. The Directors wish to impress upon the Assurer the necessity of giving *full* and *correct* answers to the following questions:—

1.—Age *next* birthday? .. ..
Married or single?.. .. ..

2.—What is your occupation? Is it active or sedentary? .. ..
How do you bear unusual fatigue? .. ..

3.—If now and generally in good health? .. ..
(*a*) State your Height.....feet.....inches Weight.....stones.....lbs.
(*b*) Are you increasing or decreasing in weight? .. ..

Particular attention is directed to this point.

4.—Are your habits of life sober and temperate? .. .. ..
Have they *always* been so? .. ..

5.—Have you had the small-pox or been vaccinated? (state which)

6.—Have you ever been bled or cupped, or undergone any Surgical Operation? If in the affirmative state particulars .. ..

IF THE ANSWER IS AFFIRMATIVE, GIVE PARTICULARS.

7.—Have you ever suffered from:—
Varicose Veins? .. ..
Rupture; if so, is a truss constantly worn? .. .. ..
Delirium tremens, apoplexy, fits of any kind, paralysis? ..
Any head affection? .. ..
Spitting or other discharges of blood? (describe fully) ..
Cough; if so, its character and duration? .. .. ..
Any affection of the chest, or throat? .. ..
Cancer, scrofula, jaundice, or dropsy? .. .. ..
Gout, when, and in what part? .. ..
Rheumatic fever, when, and its duration, and was your Heart affected by it? .. ..
Rheumatism? .. ..
Any affection of the stomach or bowels? .. .. ..
Piles or fistula, which? .. ..
Any affection of the kidneys or bladder? (state particulars)
Have you had any illness not already stated? .. ..

N.B.—Much trouble and after correspondence will be spared by distinct information as to the causes of death.

When there is any doubt about the cause of death (or when it is said to have been connected with childbirth), state DEFINITELY whether the person was, or was not Consumptive.

8.—Family History.
Father alive, aged.....Health .....
Mother alive, aged.....Health .....
Father died, aged.....Cause of death .....
Mother died, aged.....Cause of death .....
.....Brothers alive, ages and health .....
.....Sisters alive, ages and health .....
.....Brothers died, ages and causes of death .....
.....Sisters died, ages and causes of death .....

9.—Has any member of your family not mentioned above, suffered from Consumption or insanity? if so, give particulars. (This refers especially to Uncles, Aunts and first Cousins.) ..

10.—Have you ever resided abroad, where, and for what period? If so, was your health affected thereby? .. .. ..

11.—Do you know, have you been informed, or do you suspect that disease or disorder of any kind exists in your constitution?

12.—Are you aware of any circumstance not already stated, connected with your family, or your own constitution, health, or habits, tending to render an assurance on your life more than usually hazardous? .. ..

13.—IF A WOMAN—
(*a*) What is the condition of the uterine functions at present? and in general? .. ..
(*b*) If married, how long? .. ..
(*c*) Have you ever had any children or miscarriages, and have your confinements proved favourable or not? .. ..
(*d*) State whether pregnant or not? .. ..

I hereby declare that the answers to the above questions are to the best of my knowledge and belief in all respects true.

*As Witness my hand this..... day of.....*18

Signature of the Assurer.....

Signed in the presence of the Medical Examiner whose name is hereunto affixed. .....

This Signature must be witnessed by the Medical Examiner.

number of lives. Given, therefore (1) a healthy life, and (2) the absence of any unusual risk, the age of the applicant is practically the only matter for the consideration of an insurance company in granting a policy.

First, then, as to the age of the applicant. Certain well-known tables of the expectation of life at different ages, constitute the basis on which the charge to be made is calculated. Of such tables that on page 357, collected by the Institute of Actuaries, has been selected.

The expectation of life, by which is implied the number of years that, on an average, a healthy person will live at that age, is capable of reduction to a mathematical formula. Thus excluding all persons under 25 and over 75 years of age from our calculations, the formula of Willich, in which x represents the expectation of life, and a the age of the person, nearly represents the facts:—

$$x = \tfrac{2}{3}(80 - a)$$

The next question for consideration is—Is the life of the applicant a healthy one? To test this, he is required:—

(1.) To give the names of the different medical men that have attended him from time to time.

(2.) To answer a series of questions, of which the declaration on page 358 may serve as an illustration.

(3.) The person whose life is to be insured, is required to submit himself for examination by the medical adviser of the office.

The Medical Examination.

In conducting a medical examination the physician should first of all read over the applicant's statement respecting his family history and previous health. Strict inquiry should then be made respecting habits of life, the amount of stimulants commonly taken, &c. If there be heat of skin, the temperature should be observed before he is undressed.

Investigate, in turn, the following systems:—

(1.) *The Nervous and Muscular Systems.*—(Note that tremor of the muscles is generally of nervous origin, and that their tonicity is greatly dependent on the nervous system.)—Under

this heading, paralyses, the increase or loss of sensibility (hyper- and an-æsthesia), affections of the senses (sight, smell, hearing, &c.), are to be included. Particular inquiries should be made as to family neuroses, such as chorea, epilepsy, insanity, &c.

(2.) *The Respiratory System.*—Since about one in every six of the deaths in this country is caused by a disease of the lungs or air-passages, it is clear that too great attention cannot be given to the condition of the respiratory system. Healthy respiration should be quiet and easy, in the ratio of one to four or five of the pulse, and not exceeding twenty per minute in adults. The chest should expand freely in all directions, the muscles of the neck and arms (auxiliary muscles) taking no very visible part in the act of breathing. The respiratory murmur should be neither harsh nor noisy. Drawing a full breath, and holding it for a few seconds, should cause no distress. An adult should be able to count aloud, rather slowly, from twenty to thirty without drawing fresh breath. If the blood be well aërated, the lips, ears, and tips of the fingers should present no appearance of a purple or livid tint.

(3.) *The Circulatory System.*—Since diseases of the heart have, practically, only two terminations—the one, *Sudden death* (a common ending to fatty and brown degeneration, dilatation and atrophy, aortic regurgitation, disease of the coronary arteries &c.), and the other, *Dropsy* (a common ending to almost every form of disease of the heart and its appendages), Insurance Offices attach great importance to the condition of this organ. Experience proves, however, that many cases of valvular disease of the heart may attain a good age if the surroundings are favourable, and the patients themselves careful. Dr. Begbie ("*Edin. Med. Journ.*," Dec., 1874), for example, found, from the experience of the Scottish Widows' Fund Life Assurance Society (1815 to 1873,) that one-third of the cases of heart disease actually lived longer than the average expectation of life, the remaining two-thirds, however, bearing out the general idea of the greater risk. Thus heart diseases constituted 14·202 per cent. of all the deaths (800 in 5,633) during the period named.

In forming an estimate of the condition of the heart, the fol-

lowing are the chief data :—The pulse should be regular and not jerking;—it should neither be too compressible nor too hard. Its beats should be about four or five to each respiration; and in the case of adults, sitting, should not be below 70, or above 85 per minute. (Exceptional cases of very slow and of very rapid pulse, with good health, are met with, but they are rare.) Change of posture should not make a greater difference than about ten beats per minute. The beats of the heart should be clear and unattended by any murmur, or by any blowing or rubbing sounds. The first sound should be the louder, longer, and lower-pitched. The apex-beat of the heart should be ¾ inch within, and about 1½ inches below, the left nipple (*i.e.*, in the fifth costal interspace), and the impulse, whilst plainly perceptible, should neither be jerking nor too widely diffused.

(4.) *The Digestive System.*—Although people with feeble digestions often live a long time, yet it may be laid down as a practical fact that those who have good digestions will, *cæteris paribus*, live the longest, bear most fatigue, and stand the risks of heat, cold, and exposure to contagion best. It is in this direction, too, that habits of intemperance (chronic alcoholism) make themselves most felt. The principal points for investigation under this heading are—the state of the tongue and mucous membrane of the mouth; the appetite; the regularity of the bowels; the presence or absence of symptoms of dyspepsia; the size of the liver; the colour of the skin and conjunctivæ; the presence or absence of abdominal tumours, &c.

(5.) *The Genito-Urinary System.*—A sample of the urine should in all cases be examined. The following are bad indications, and suggest special enquiries:—Puffiness of the eyelids, backs of the hands, and dorsum of the feet; œdema of the scrotum or vulva; nocturnal micturition; morning sickness (apart from pregnancy), a symptom common in dram-drinkers; lumbar pains; dysuria; the presence in the urine of albumen, sugar, pus, and blood: also, if persistently or in any quantity, of phosphates, uric acid, urates and oxalates: also of bile-pigment, cancer-cells, epithelial and other tube-casts from the kidneys, and a very high or very low specific gravity, with any

marked increase or decrease in the quantity of urine. It is well known that albuminuria and granular or contracted kidneys, are unfavourable prognostics for the success of operations, or for recovery from accidents and diseases.

[Note.—The sp. gr. of healthy urine varies from 1015 to 1025. The quantity normally secreted is from 40 to 60 ozs. daily, which should contain from 400 to 500 grains of urea. The colour should be pale amber, the reaction faintly acid, and the odour not disagreeable. It should be clear when passed, and only deposit a slight cloud of mucus after standing from ten to twelve hours.]

As regards the generative organs, sexual incapacity in males is an early symptom of diabetes and of many neuroses. It must be remembered, too, as regards females, that the uterus and ovaries are favourite seats of cancer and of cystic disease respectively. In the male, stricture of the urethra should be regarded as an element of danger.

The medical adviser having completed his Examination, is required to fill up for the guidance of the Board in assuring the life some such form as that on page 363.

Unusual Risks.

The age being proved, and the life judged a good one, the third and last question is the matter of risk. Speaking generally, the following lives are considered more than usually hazardous :—

(1.) *Those addicted to the use of alcohol, opium, &c., or whose occupations expose them to risks of poisoning.*

Amongst poisons, *Alcohol*, undoubtedly, in questions of insurance, holds the first place. Many Insurance Offices decline altogether the lives of publicans, hotel-keepers, and all employed in the manufacture, sale, and distribution of alcoholic beverages. Policemen, soldiers, sailors, butchers, watermen, &c., are liable to special temptations to drink from the nature of their callings.

The question whether the habitual use of opium has a tendency to shorten life, has also been raised. Granting that many opium eaters achieve longevity, it cannot be doubted that the habitual use of any such drug must tend to injure health.

CONFIDENTIAL REPORT BY THE MEDICAL EXAMINER, WHOSE NAME IS HEREUNTO AFFIXED.

ARRANGED BY DR. DOBELL.

On the Life of .....*of*.....

1.—Was the declaration already given signed in your presence? ..
Is the Assurer known to you? and what opportunities have you had of becoming acquainted with health, habits and constitution? .. ..
Describe the present appearance .. ..
Is the aspect healthy? .. ..

If the applicant has ever suffered from Rheumatism, or Rheumatic Fever, please to direct especial attention to the heart.

2.—What is the *actual* rate of pulse (standing)? .. .. ..
Is the pulse normal in rhythm, volume and force, &c.? ..
(*If the answer is in the negative, give particulars.*) ..
Are the pulsations and sounds of the heart quite normal? ..
If not, state defects .. ..

Attention is particularly requested these questions, as Phthisis is one of the principal causes from which Insurance Offices suffer loss.

3.—Are the proportions and development of the chest normal? ..
Is the general character of respiration normal? .. ..
Do the subclavian regions expand normally in respiration?
Is the respiratory murmur above and below the clavicles normal? .. ..
Can you detect by percussion or auscultation at any part of the chest, any abnormal sign not mentioned above? ..
What do you consider to be the condition of the lungs? ..
(*If there is anything abnormal, give particulars.*) ..

4.—What is the condition of the tongue?

5.—Have you any reason to suspect disease of the urinary or generative organs? .. ..
If you suspect disease of the kidneys, say is the urine coagulated by heat and nitric acid .. ..

6.—Are there any traces of (*a*) paralysis, (*b*) syphilis, (*c*) jaundice, (*d*) gout, (*e*) rheumatism, (*f*) scrofula, (*g*) dropsy, and is there any reason to apprehend (*h*) an apoplectic seizure? ..

7.—If there is rupture, what is its nature and duration? .. ..
Is it constantly and efficiently supported by a truss? ..

Attention is particularly requested to this int.

8.—Have you reason from any source whatever to suspect the proposer *is now* or *has been* of irregular or *intemperate* habits, *or addicted to any habits or pursuits likely to shorten life*?

9.—Is any circumstance known or suspected by you not already stated, that might render the life more than usually hazardous? .. ..

CONFIDENTIAL OPINION.

I hereby certify that the answers given by me above are according to the best of my knowledge and belief, and, after a careful consideration of the personal condition and of the personal and family history, I am of opinion that the life should be placed in the :—

1st CLASS.—AVERAGE LIVES Such as have either no unfavourable circumstances of health or family history, or in which the unfavourable circumstances are so slight as to form no impediment to Assurance at the usual rate .. .. ..

2nd CLASS LIVES.—Such as require an *addition* to the premium, to cover increased risk. State how many years should be added to the present age of assurer to cover the risk.

3rd CLASS LIVES.—Such as should be declined.

Signed.....

(*Case* 37.) It should, however, be noted that opium has anti-periodic qualities, and that therefore in malarious districts it might tend to prolong life. The *law of tolerance*, moreover, must not be forgotten. If, however, opium be dangerous, the far too common use of chloral hydrate, of chloroform, and of ether, must be regarded as fraught with even greater danger—for in such cases the danger is of sudden death, which seldom happens to the habitual opium eater as a direct consequence of his indulgence.

Again, it must be evident that those engaged in chemical manufactures, or in works where lead, arsenic, copper, mercury, phosphorus, and the mineral acids are employed, are exposed to special dangers.

(2.) *Those exposed to the action of sewer-gas, or to emanations from decomposing animal and vegetable matters*, e.g., *scavengers, the makers of blood-manure, &c.*

(3.) *Those exposed to accidents from gunpowder or other explosives, or to the falling in of rocks, &c.*, e.g., *miners, quarrymen, excavators, bricklayers, builders, plasterers, &c.*

(4.) *Those whose work is very dusty, such as millers, furriers, &c., also those employed in grinding cutlery; also mill-stone dressers, stonemasons, &c.*

(5.) *Those whose habits are sedentary, or who work in badly-ventilated, close, and dark rooms, or whose hours of work are long*, e.g., *factory hands, clerks, drapers, millinery assistants, shoemakers, tailors, printers, bakers, the employés in theatres, music halls, &c.*

(6.) *Those whose occupations specially expose them to accidents or to mechanical violence or to injuries purposely inflicted*, e.g., *soldiers, sailors, policemen, firemen, grooms, and all who have to do with horses.* (These classes also are, unfortunately, much given, as a rule, to alcoholic liquors.)

(7.) *Lastly, in the case of those in the army and navy, an additional premium is charged on account of increased risk when actual service commences.* (A policy is void if a person not in service, and insured at ordinary risks, afterwards enters the army or navy, and meets with his death on duty.)

The Influence of Climate on the duration of life must not be overlooked. In general it may be said that Europe, North America (including the Northern parts of the United States), the North of Asia, Southern Australia, New Zealand, the Cape Colony, the south of South America, and most islands are fairly healthy. To this general statement we must except low-lying districts, especially those on the sea-board and the estuaries of large rivers—certain cities and towns—marshy and undrained lands where ague predominates—and special localities, such as certain districts of the Alps renowned for goitre and cretinism, etc., etc. Again, what are generally known as "the tropics" (in other words, the district between 23° 28′ N., and the same distance S. of the equator), are, with few exceptions, more unhealthy than temperate climes, from the prevalence of sunstroke, plague, yellow fever, cholera, dysentery, small-pox, leprosy, and other diseases. Indeed, this remark may be extended beyond the true tropics, for nearly the whole district between 45° of North latitude and 25° of South latitude must be considered risky. Here again certain exceptions must be made, such as the hill country of Hindostan, and certain parts of Persia and Africa.

The Influence of Pregnancy and Childbearing on life, may be important in the insurance of females. Very few married women, it is true, die whilst actually pregnant, but it must not be assumed that pregnancy is a shield for any longer period than that of actual gestation. A considerable number of women die during their confinement. Again, the observations of obstetric authorities* show indisputably how much greater is the risk run by primiparæ than by multiparous females. Thus of 10,382 women confined for the first time, 168, or one in every 62, died; whilst of 26,394 multiparæ, 213, or 1 in every 124, died. Ignorance and carelessness are, we fear, to blame for much of this mortality, the great bulk of which ought to be prevented.

The last question that may arise is, Should the life examined

* "*Medical Examinations for Life Insurance*," by J. A. Allen, M.D. (New York, 1872), p. 175.

be not healthy, how many additional years' premium will, in the judgment of the medical examiner, cover the risk?

On this point much must be left to the individual judgment. Dr. Sieveking's remarks are extremely pertinent. He says, "At present the suggestions offered by gentlemen of limited experience often show that they by no means appreciate the real question at issue, inasmuch as they state circumstances that materially affect the applicant's liability, and suggest additions to the tabular rate quite incommensurate with the manifestly increased risk to the office." The question to be considered is, How much is defect in the family history or disease of an individual likely to diminish his longevity, as compared with a person without such flaw in his antecedents?

Insurance against Accident.—In insurance against accident, the agreement stipulates that the insured shall receive a certain sum or sums, if he meet with an accident disabling him entirely or in part (the amount to be paid being dependent on the degree of the disablement), and that a fixed sum shall also be paid his executors if the accident prove fatal. At the present time, insurance against accident has assumed considerable importance. (*Cases* 51 to 57.)

The first question that arises is, *What do we mean by accident* in its relationship to personal insurance? An accident may be defined as an event occurring to an individual without his expectation, and without the possibility of his preventing it at the moment of its occurrence.

In Case 51 it was decided that death from sunstroke was not death from an accident. In this case Cockburn C.-J. made the following remarks:—"We think we may safely assume that by the term 'accident' as so used, some violence, casualty, or vis major is necessarily involved. We cannot think disease produced by the action of a known natural cause can be considered as accidental. Thus disease or death engendered by exposure to heat, cold, damp, the vicissitudes of climate, or atmospheric influences cannot, we think, properly be said to be accidental, at all events unless the exposure is itself brought

about by circumstances which may give it the character of an accident."

It sometimes happens that a person insured against death by accident, receives an injury whilst suffering from some disease. Had he been well at the time, the accident might have caused temporary inconvenience only, but on account of his state of health it results in death. Provided the injury would under any circumstances, whatever the state of health, have caused death, it is certain that the mere fact that the person injured had at the time some disease which only accelerated the fatal effects of the accident, does not interfere with his executors' claim to the money. Further, if the insured whilst suffering from disease is accidentally injured, such accident occurring by reason of his diseased condition, and supposing further that the accident results in death, his executors will nevertheless be entitled to recover, except where the policy provides against such a contingency, *e.g.*, death resulting from injuries received whilst drunk. (*Case* 53.) The real distinction, however, which makes such a case an exception to the general rule is not so much the medical question involved—viz. the relation of the accident to the state of health of the insured —as the legal one, viz., whether the insured by losing control over himself, and in this condition incurring an injury, has not *ipso facto* deprived the injury of its accidental character.

In Case 54 the question was raised whether the accident resulted from circumstances over which the insured had no control —viz., a push in a crowd—or was the natural effect of intoxication. The verdict was against the Company.

With regard to policies of insurance against death from accident, there are two further points to be noticed :—

(1.) *First*, the medical jurist may be called on to pronounce from which of two causes a person died. For instance, in Case 56, the deceased insured his life against death by accident. Whilst fording a shallow brook he was seized with an epileptic fit, fell into the water, and was drowned whilst suffering from the fit. The first question to be determined was—did the death arise from drowning? This being fully established by medical evidence, it was then held that the fact that the fit

caused the accident was no defence, although the policy contained a clause providing that the insurance should not extend "to any injury caused by, or arising from, natural disease, or weakness or exhaustion consequent upon disease."

(2.) *Secondly*, The medical jurist may be consulted as to the degree of the relationship between the accident and the death. Thus in Case 57, the assured accidentally cut his foot against the broken side of an earthenware pan on Saturday, the 24th of April. On the Thursday following erysipelas supervened, of which he died on Saturday, the 1st May. The medical evidence proved that the erysipelas was caused by the wound. The policy contained a proviso that it was not to insure "against death arising from rheumatism, gout, hernia, *erysipelas*, or any other disease or secondary cause arising within the system of the insured before, or at the time of, or following, such accidental injury, whether causing such death directly or jointly with such accidental injury." It was held that the insurers were protected by the above condition, and were not liable. It would, however, be absurd to suppose, remembering how often erysipelas follows an injury, that a company can shield itself from its responsibilities under the plea that the death was the result of erysipelas, if that erysipelas was the result of an accident.

In all accident insurance cases, where disease and accident seem closely connected, the real questions for the consideration both of the Court and of the medical jurist, must always be somewhat as follows:—

1. The state of the person's health before the accident.
2. The relationship, in point of time, between the accident and the setting in of the disease.
3. The connection between the special disease from which the person suffers, and the accident stated to have occurred.

Insurable Interest.—A person insures his life either for the benefit of others at his death or of himself at a given age. When a man insures his own life, the insurers possess the most certain proof possible, that he (the insured) has "*a real insurable interest*," or "a lawful pecuniary interest" in its

preservation. And this is a necessary condition of all life assurance. (*Cases* 38 and 43.)

But occasionally the insurance on one person's life is effected by a second person. Thus, if x insures a's life, the question is —what real insurable interest has x in a's life? Thus 14th George III. c. 48, enacts that "No insurance shall be made "on the life or lives of any person or persons, or on any "other event or events whatsoever, wherein the person or "persons for whose use, benefit, or on whose account such "policy or policies shall be made, shall have no interest." One person, however, may insure another person's life, provided it can be shown that his money advantage is greater by the person whose life he insures living, than what would accrue by his dying. (*Case* 2.)

Another difficulty however occurs here from the negotiable nature of policies. A policy may, and frequently does, fall into the hands of one who knows nothing whatever of the insured, but who is nevertheless bound, lest the policy lapse, to pay the premiums regularly so long as the insured lives. Thus the purchaser of the policy seems to have, and as a fact has, a real insurable interest in the *death* of the insured. Such a bartering in life policies is most objectionable. If the assignment of a policy to another party be permitted, it should, to prevent crime, be limited (as it is when an insurance is primarily effected) to those only whose interest is in the life of the insured.

Life Insurance Payable at Death.—In such cases the onus of proving the death rests with the executors, or with those who benefit by the death. In *Case* 1 the plaintiffs failed to prove the death, and consequently lost their case.

Proof of death being complete, the death is regarded as due to natural causes unless the contrary can be shown. Thus the onus of proving that the death was not natural rests with the insurers if they allege such to be the case, the other side not being called upon to prove that it was natural, save as a means of defending the action. Further, the proof that it was other than natural must be by direct, and not by mere inferential evidence. (*Cases* 45, 48.) It is clear, therefore, that in this respect the representatives of the insured have a decided advantage over the insurers.

As a rule, if a person is not heard of for two or three years, offices pay the insurance. In *Case* 67 a claim was resisted after an eight years' absence, the judge in the inferior court directing the jury that they must find for the company, unless they were satisfied that the insured had not been heard of for *seven* years. This the superior court overruled, and stated that the jury should have been directed to find for the plaintiff, unless the defendants (the insurers) adduced sufficient proof of the insured having been seen or heard of during the preceding seven years. Thus, after seven years, the onus of proving that the insured is alive, rests with the insurers and not with those who claim the money. (See page 381.)

In all contracts, each party must comply with the conditions of the contract. The conditions usually required of an applicant, and on the fulfilment of which the insurers assess the life and grant a policy, are as follows:—

(1.) *That the applicant shall not conceal from the insurers any disease from which he knows himself to have suffered or to be suffering, and shall not conceal any symptoms of which he is cognisant, indicating a possible attack of disease—in other words, any tendency to disease.* (*Cases* 3 to 27, 35.)

The directors of the company, in order to convince themselves on these points, require that the applicant shall furnish them with the names of all his medical attendants, from whom they may learn details respecting his past health, and also that he shall undergo an examination by their own medical officer, who may advise them as to his present condition.

It may be worth remarking here, that where a medical man is appealed to by an insurance company respecting the health of one of his patients desiring to insure, that, leaving the insurers out of the question, justice to the insured, to the survivors, and to himself, demands that he should report without a shadow of concealment. Unless he is prepared to do this, he had far better decline to report altogether. Further, he is not justified in reporting as the private medical adviser of the person whose life is in question, unless he has the authority of his patient to do so.

The phrase "*any other disease or disorder tending to shorten*

life," or similar words commonly added to a list of specifically mentioned diseases, respecting each and all of which the private medical adviser is asked to say whether the applicant has suffered, is a frequent source of litigation. The Courts, however, have generally held that this phrase is to be taken to include only the diseases that as a rule *do* shorten life, and not those that under some remarkable or exceptional conditions, *may* shorten life. Thus, as the learned judge (Chambre) in *Case* 18 remarked, "All disorders, even the most trifling, have a tendency to shorten life—for instance, corns may end in mortification." Because a man who had dyspepsia had not declared it, the policy was not, therefore, rendered void.

But the applicant is required to do more than merely declare his state of health on the day he makes application. He must also state any illness he may have had in the course of his life, and any tendency to disease, or symptoms indicating disease, of which he is cognizant. Thus a man may have had a lung complaint from which for a time he seems to have recovered. During this interval of health he might have effected an insurance. If hereafter phthisis suddenly developed itself, the policy would be void unless he had mentioned his previous lung complaint. This, however, must not be taken to imply that every little trivial illness is to be stated. (See form of Report.)

Although a failure to disclose the symptoms of existing disease renders a policy void, when the policy is granted on the accuracy of statements made by the applicant or his friends (*Cases* 58, 59), the onus of proof as to the fraudulent nature of the suppression on the part of the insured, rests with the insurers. (*Case* 13.) And further, the Court requires that the evidence proving such fraudulent suppression should be more than mere probable or presumptive evidence. (*Cases* 4, 11.) Provided a man at the time of insuring be "in a reasonably good state of health," the existence of some latent disease unknown to himself would not invalidate the policy. Thus in the case of gout, (as the Lord Chief Justice remarked in *Case* 15, and Lord Mansfield again in *Case* 14), it must be sensible gout, and not some mere suspicious symptoms; only possible of detection by a more than ordinarily shrewd observer. It

was held by Cockburn, Chief Justice, Crompton, J., Blackburn, J., and Mellor, J., that on the construction of the particular declaration in *Case* 15, the policy would not be rendered void by a misrepresentation, unless such misrepresentation was wilful and designed.

Lastly, the suppression of the mention of a disease from which the insured is suffering invalidates the policy, equally whether the person die of the disease or not. Thus in *Case* 6, the person died of apoplexy, but the Court declared the policy void, because the insurers had not been informed of epileptic fits from which the deceased had suffered previously to the insurance being effected. (See p. [illegible])

(2.) *That the insured neither conceal, nor misdescribe, his or her actual bodily condition.*

Thus in *Case* 3, the life of a speechless person was insured, the cause of the inability to speak being certain cerebral conditions which had not been stated. In this case the plaintiff elected to be non-suited. In *Case* 23 again, the concealment of incontinence of urine, which had existed from boyhood, resulted in a verdict for the Company, whilst in *Case* 7 the concealment of prostatic disease and of incontinence of urine, was decided against the Company. It was argued in the latter case that so far from prostatic disease diminishing the chance of life, it was usually a disease of old age.

Under the head of the concealment of bodily condition, may be included certain obstetric concealments. Thus in *Case* 21, the concealment of a lacerated perinæum and of a uterine displacement invalidated a policy. In *Case* 20 the concealment of the previous birth of a child constituted the ground of an action, the insurers again obtaining a verdict in their favour.

(3.) *That the insured state accurately the names of one and all the medical men that have attended him.*

A policy would be vitiated by the insured saying he had had no medical attendants if he had. (*See Cases* 9 and 10.)

Again in *Case* 8, Lord Tenterden remarked that to refer to one medical man whom the insured knew would speak well of his health, and not to others whom he knew could not report favourably (although the insured did not die of the

disease for which they had attended him), would vitiate his policy.

Similarly, for the insured to refer to a practitioner who had attended him three years previously, and to omit to mention one who had attended him more recently (*Case* 33), or to refer the Office to a practitioner who had attended him many years for mere trivial complaints, and to omit one who had attended him, even though for a short period only, for a serious disease (*Case* 6), would equally render the policy void.

(4.) *That the insured detail accurately his applications, and the results of those applications, to other insurance offices.*

The insured must not conceal the results of his applications to other offices, whether they accepted him or not. If they accepted him he must state whether he effected an insurance, and at what rate, and if not why not. Thus in *Case* 15, the insured reported that he had been accepted by another office, whereas the truth was his life had been declined by the directors, although it had been recommended for acceptance by the medical referee. The jury in this case found that the reply was untrue. If an insurer, however, *withdraws* an application before it has been submitted to the board of a company, it is not then usual or necessary to mention it.

(5.) *That the insured describe accurately his business or profession.*

Different businesses and professions have different degrees of risk, and are therefore charged at different rates. In some cases, as has been already pointed out (pages 362, 364), a business (independently altogether of the state of the applicant's health) will be a sufficient reason for an office declining a life.

(6.) *That the applicant accurately state his age.*

(7.) *That the applicant conceal nothing respecting his habits.*

There must, it is understood be no concealment, although the special habit be not specifically included in the list of questions. Further, the true answers as to habits prejudicial to health, in many cases, are known only to the applicant.

Of these habits a few demand further consideration :—

Intemperance.—(*Cases* 26 to 34, 36.) It is difficult to say in words what constitutes intemperance. This difficulty of course

opens a door to much discussion and difference of opinion. (*Case* 31.) An occasional "drinking bout" does not make a man in strict phrase "intemperate." Again, a habit of indulgence which would constitute intemperance in one man, may not constitute intemperance in another. Hence for insurance purposes the true question is—not what constitutes intemperance generally, but—is there reason to believe that the applicant takes more alcohol than his constitution will bear? In this matter, *the general circumstances of a man's life* must be considered. Much beer and much exercise is a totally different combination to much beer and sedentary habits. Hence it is evident that in insurance cases, physician and jury must consider the word "intemperance" as a habit prejudicial to the life of the special individual, and not in any broad and general sense. If one man drinks a glass of wine daily and it makes him intoxicated, he is intemperate if he continues to drink that one glass of wine. But if another man drinks six glasses daily and they have no bad effect on him, but rather the reverse, he is not an intemperate man even if he continues to drink six glasses daily.

Again, intemperance may have remote and secondary, as well as immediate and primary, effects. These secondary results of intemperance have proved subjects of enquiry. (*Cases* 27 and 28.)

Can a man be intemperate and not ultimately suffer? This question may arise in cases where the insured takes out a policy just at the commencement of the period of his intemperance. And to it, there can be but one answer—No. In *Case* 31, the medical man stated that he did not mention occasional outbreaks of drinking, because he thought they had no bad effect on the applicant's health. He was manifestly wrong in concealing it.

Opium Eating is a habit which must be mentioned. (*Case* 37.) No doubt there have been cases where opium has been taken for a long time without its doing any manifest harm. Further, it is a habit which (unlike alcoholic intemperance) may not reveal itself to the professional examiner. (Page 363).

Total Abstinence, Excessive Smoking, and Vegetarianism (*Case* 17) are habits more or less unusual, and should be noted

by the applicant in his insurance paper to avoid possible discussion in the future.

In cases bearing on concealment of all kinds some such questions as the following are usually submitted to the jury for their consideration :—

(1.) Were the answers given untrue—(*i.e.*, either that material facts were suppressed or false statements made)?

(2.) Were the statements to the knowledge of the insured misrepresentations or suppressions?

(3.) Were they *material*—(*i.e.*, having regard to Lord Denman's ruling that a man is not bound to volunteer a statement of every circumstance that anybody might afterwards think likely to affect the risk of his life)? (*Case* 30.)

(4.) Was the policy procured by such misrepresentations? In all contracts there must be the most perfect frankness on both sides (*uberrimæ fidei*).

Insurance and Suicide.

Every policy of life insurance contains certain provisions, the exact words differing in different policies, but for the most part to the effect that the policy will become void "if the insured commit suicide," and in some cases is added "die by the hands of justice." (*Case* 44.)

If then a person be found dead, questions *re insurance* may arise as follows: Was the death (α) accidental or suicidal, (β) natural or suicidal, or (γ) homicidal or suicidal?

(α.) Was the death suicidal or accidental? *Case* 48, where death was the result of gunshot wounds, and *Case* 46, where death occurred from drowning, are illustrations of actions at law arising out of this question.

Case 50 illustrates how the act of suicide may be so arranged as to simulate homicide, and thus to defraud a Company.

(β.) Again, the question may arise whether a death be suicidal or natural? (*Case* 45.)

The onus of proof that the death was not natural, in other words (in the case we are considering) was suicidal, rests as we have said with the insurers. Further, they are bound to prove

that it was not natural by more than mere inferential evidence. *Case* 48.) Here, indeed, is a difficulty with which an insurance-office has to contend. Even the verdict of a coroner's jury in no respect binds either the insurance office or those who will benefit by the death. Thus because a coroner's jury finds a verdict of *felo de se*, a company is not excused from paying, any more than because they return a verdict of death from natural causes, can the relatives of the deceased necessarily recover. (Stormont *v.* Waterloo A. Co., 1 F. and F. 22.)

(γ.) Further, the question of suicide or murder may occur. Such a case, however, usually comes before the Court as a criminal charge against the person who both benefits by the death and is suspected of committing the murder, rather than as a matter of contention respecting the liability of the Company. (*Cases* 38 to 43.) If the insured be murdered, the office is clearly liable. In a French case (*Case* 42) however, although the prisoner was acquitted of murder, a verdict was for good reasons given for the office. In cases of this nature the chief question involved will be the pecuniary insurable interest of the person suspected of committing the murder, and to this point the evidence is usually directed. The interest may be direct, as when the murderer is the person who will receive the money, or it may be indirect, as when he acts as an agent for the person who will.

We now come to a far more difficult question. Given a case of suicide, was it the intentional act of a sane person, or the act of an insane person? The real difficulty lies in the circumstance that death from insanity does not exempt the insurers from paying, whilst suicide does. If then suicide be the result of insanity, are we justified in regarding insanity as the cause of death, and the suicide merely as one of the results of the insanity? (*Case* 49.)

The general ruling on the provisoes of English insurance policies may be thus stated: "If the insured destroy himself intentionally, whether he be sane or insane, the policy is void, but if he destroy himself unintentionally, whether he be sane or insane, the insurers are liable. The onus, however, to prove the

act unintentional, rests with those who will benefit by the policy."

This ruling however, suggests two questions :—

(1.) Does not suicide necessarily indicate insanity?

(2.) If the person be insane ought the policy to be forfeited?

(1.) *Does not suicide necessarily indicate insanity?*

On this point the law is clear. Suicide is a felony unless there is clear evidence of unsound mind. If two people agree to commit suicide and only one dies, the survivor is deemed guilty of murder. Thus it was ruled (R. *v.* May, *C. C. C.*, Nov., 1872) that "Any person aiding or abetting another in committing suicide is guilty of murder, and it cannot make any difference if the two agree to commit suicide together. In this case if one of the two causes his own death, and the other is present at the time aiding and abetting him, and attempts also to kill himself but fails, the second is guilty of murder, for the attempt at self-destruction of course does not affect the crime committed against the other."

It is clear therefore that the law does not regard suicide as necessarily a proof of a person being insane. With this, as medical jurists, we entirely agree.

(2.) *If the person be insane and commit suicide, ought the policy to be forfeited?*

As the law stands, *intentional suicide*, whether by a sane or by an insane person, vitiates the policy.

The words "sane" or "insane" are sometimes inserted, or the conditions otherwise worded, so as to include all cases of self-destruction, whether felonious or otherwise. And this is done because the conduct of insane persons seems in some degree to be under the control of their hopes and fears, and moreover their affection for others will often exercise a sway over their minds, when fear of death or personal suffering has no influence. Hence by imposing such conditions, the insurers place a certain restraint over the mind and conduct of the assured, whilst they do not exempt from a pecuniary interest in the continuance of his life, those on whose watchfulness it may depend.

In *Case* 46, where a man came to his death by drowning,

the proviso in the policy was, "Unless he should die by his own hands." The question before the Court was—Considering the act of the deceased in conjunction with his previous conduct, did he drown himself knowingly and intentionally (because if so the policy would be clearly void), or did he know right from wrong at the time that he committed the act? The jury found, "That he intended to destroy himself, but that at the time he did not know right from wrong." On this verdict, judgment was given for the plaintiff, but on application to the Court by the Insurance office, a rule *nisi* to allow the matter to be reconsidered was granted. The case was ultimately compromised.

In *Case* 47, the proviso named in the policy was "Suicide." The man poisoned himself with sulphuric acid, and the question arose whether or not he was sane or insane at the time? The judge (J. Cresswell) directed the jury that, "Even in this case, suicide would not vitiate the policy, unless at the time the person was an accountable moral agent and able to distinguish right from wrong." In other words, they were directed to distinguish between suicide, the act of an insane person, and suicide, "a felonious killing." On appeal however this view was reversed, the judges differing. *The one side* (the majority) were of opinion that suicide meant "intentional self-destruction," independently of whether the person was or was not sane, whilst *the other side* (the minority) were of opinion that, if the act was not the act of a sane and reasonable being, it was not suicide within the meaning of the proviso, but that the death was the result of disease affecting the reason, suicide being one of the results of the disease.

In *Case* 47, Pollock, C.B., made the following remarks:—"In the eye of the law a man is either compos mentis and responsible, or he is non compos mentis and not responsible. It is admitted that the act of a raving madman, or of a patient under the influence of disease, is protected by the policy, if the consequences are not foreseen and intended. So if insanity should produce delusion and deprive a man of the use of his ordinary senses, and the party should mistake a deadly weapon for an instrument of music and fancy he was playing upon it when he was destroying his own life, this would be committing suicide

within the proviso of the policy. But what if the delusion, instead of applying to a pistol or other instrument of death, applied to the man himself? Suppose he believed he was Marcus Curtius and ought to leap into a gulf, or that he was one of the Decii and must sacrifice himself for the benefit of his country? What if he fancied himself an apostle, and that it was his duty to die the death of a martyr? What sound philosophy is there in making a distinction between a delusion about a pistol and a delusion in respect of the man against whom it is to be directed?—or what distinction can be taken between physical blindness, which, leaving the man the use of his senses and a knowledge of the physical consequences of his acts, has deprived him of the judgment which should control and govern them, and the want of all sense by which to perceive their moral consequences? It may be said that when the delusion extends to the character, office, or condition of the party, so that he mistakes his identity, he does not mean to kill himself, and in such case the office would be liable. But how far is this to be carried? Suppose under a delusion he believed that he had committed a crime for which he ought to put himself to death, and this was the result of insanity; is this a mistake of his identity? In my opinion such subtleties as these ought to find no place in the decision of such a question as the present, in which is involved (from the present extensive practice of life insurance) the peace, the happiness, and the security of thousands of families. In my judgment, if death be the result of *disease*, whether affecting the *senses* or the *reason*, the insurance office is liable under this policy. The act which is not the act of a sane, responsible creature, but is the result of any delusion or persuasion, whether physical, intellectual, or moral, is not the act of the man."

Again in the case of "Horn *v.* Anglo-Australian Life Insurance Company" (30 *L. J. ch.* 511) it was held that the policy was not rendered void by the suicide of the insured while in a state of insanity; but in this case the policy contained no proviso that the assurance should be void in case of suicide.

It may be worth recording that in the case of "Dufaur *v.* Professional Life Insurance Company" (27 *L. J., ch.* 817), the

policy contained a proviso, that if the insured should commit suicide it should be cancelled by the return of the premiums, except the policy should have been legally assigned. It was held that to commit suicide was equivalent to dying by his own hand without reference to the moral state of the mind of the deceased.

It appears to us that if a person is clearly proved to be of unsound mind, and in that condition commits suicide, it is fair and reasonable to regard the suicide as one of the results of a diseased and unsound mind, and not as an act which is the exercise of an intention, or in any respect whatsoever of felonious killing. It would no doubt be right to require that the onus of proof that the man was insane at the time, should be thrown on those who would benefit by the death.

II.

Presumption of Death.

When a person goes abroad, and has not been heard of for a long time, the presumption of death arises at the expiration of seven years from the period at which he was last heard of. The same rule holds good generally with respect to a person who has gone away from his usual place of resort, and of whom no account can be given. (*Cases* 60 to 67.)

If it be contended that the individual was alive any day during the seven years, it is incumbent on the person who asserts it to establish the fact affirmatively. (*Cases* 64, 65, 81.)

The question, therefore, for those discharging the functions of a jury is, whether the evidence of the person having been seen or heard of within a certain time, is strong enough for them to say that such person was alive at that time, and the judge will direct the jury that if there is no evidence, or if they do not credit the evidence given of the person having been seen or heard of alive within seven years, the presumption of law that he is dead must decide their verdict. Thus the presumption of death

must depend on general evidence. The very word "presumption" implies supposition, as opposed to demonstration.

It will be remarked that in *Case* 63, the Court for Crown Cases Reserved held, that there was no presumption of law that life continued for seven years, or for any other period after the time of the latest proof of the life of the party, and that it was a question of fact for the jury under the circumstances of each case. The explanation of this apparent contradictory ruling is, that it was delivered in reference to a prosecution for bigamy. Now the gist of the offence of bigamy is, the contracting a second marriage during the continuance of the first, and it is for the prosecution to prove that the prisoner has done so. In this case evidence was given of the first marriage, but none that at the date of the second marriage, the prisoner's first husband was alive;—hence the prosecution failed to prove the facts necessary to support a conviction.

By 24-25, Vic., c. 100, s. 57, it is provided that a person cannot be convicted of bigamy, if such person proves that his or her husband or wife has been continually absent for the seven years then last past, and has not been known by such person to be living within that time. (*Cases* 61 to 63.)

In cases where questions of *heirship* and *property* are involved, the Courts have not considered even seven years' absence to be necessary. Thus in *Case* 68, probate of a will was granted after only two years' absence. This course is manifestly just. At the same time it is equally just, and the practice of the Courts, that a right to property once acquired should not be averted from the rightful heirs on *mere presumptive* evidence. (*Case* 73.)

In *life insurance cases* the presumption of death is often a point at issue. (*Cases* 67, 69, and 70.) As a rule, however, insurance offices pay policies after the lapse of a year or two. (See page 370.)

In the case of a missing ship (*re* Hutton), bound from Manilla to London, on which the underwriters had voluntarily paid the amount insured, the death of those on board was presumed by the Prerogative Court after two years, and administration was granted accordingly.

Although the presumption of life ceases at the expiration of seven years from the period at which the person was last heard of, nevertheless this presumption does not imply at what date during the seven years the death occurred. There are recorded instances where the Court has stated whether the presumption is in favour of death before or after a certain date. (*Cases* 66 and 79.) In such cases the state of health of the person when last seen, generally constitutes an important consideration. This would involve medical evidence as to the probabilities of life in a person afflicted with a disease from which the individual in question was known to have suffered. (*Case* 66.) Or, again, evidence being given that a person was in receipt of an annuity, which he had drawn regularly, until a certain date, after which nothing more was heard of him, the Court has held that the person may be presumed to have died before the date when the last portion of the annuity became due. (See *Cases* 66 and 79.)

III.

PRESUMPTION OF SURVIVORSHIP.

Cases are numerous where questions relating to "the presumption of survivorship" have come before the Courts. Father and son, for instance, perish by a common accident. The question which survived the other is important, because if it be the son, even if the survival be but for a moment of time, "his wife shall have dower for the lands descended the instant the father died." The question of survivorship on one occasion arose, say the matter of a father and son who were hanged together, will plaintiff in the action being the son's wife. (*Case* 83.) Similarly it may occur in the case of *partners*, where the interest of the deceased lapses to the survivor. Similarly, again, in the case of a testator and a legatee, for if the legatee dies first, the legacy lapses, but if the testator, the executors of the legatee

can claim. Again, a man who marries a woman possessed of freehold property (not specially settled by marriage articles) has no claim on the estate if she dies, unless he has a child by her capable of inheriting, and actually born during the life of the mother. (Tenancy by courtesy.)

This subject divides itself under two heads—

(A.) *Questions of survivorship where two or more persons have met their death by a common accident.*

(B.) *Questions of survivorship where the precise time and date of death of one of the parties is known, whilst that of the other is only presumptive.*

(A.) *Questions of survivorship where two or more persons have met their death by a common accident.*

The old Roman Law on this subject is important as more or less governing all the Courts (English and Foreign) even to the present day.—(*Domat, C. L.*, pp. 652-653; *Hunter, R. L.*, p. 745.) —The rule, subject to the exceptions to be presently stated, was that when there was no evidence to show which of two or more persons died first, the law would not presume that one died before the other.—(*D.* 34, 5, 18.) This rule operated therefore in favour of the person in possession—in other words, in favour of the person that did not require to invoke the aid of the law. *For example*, a gift (which was valid unless revoked in his lifetime) was made by a husband to his wife. Both husband and wife perished together. It was held that the gift was valid because the donor did not survive to reclaim the gift.—(*D.* 34, 5, 8.)

But to this rule there were certain exceptions that seem to have been dictated by a desire for the most part to prefer certain claimants to others:—

(1.) When a child above the age of puberty perished along with a parent, and there was no evidence to show which survived, it was presumed that the child survived the parent.—(*D.* 34, 5, 22.)

(2.) When a child under the age of puberty perished along

with a parent, the child was presumed to die first.—(*D* 34, 5, 23.)

(3.) A person is burdened with a trust if he dies leaving no child surviving him. Both he and his only son perished together. It was presumed that the son died first, and thereby the trust took effect. This is a presumption in favour of a trust.

In the case of husband and wife, the husband was presumed the survivor. Beck quotes the following from the "Digest," lib. xxxiv. tit. 5, *de rebus dubiis*:—"Cum pubere filio mater naufragii periit, cum explorari non posset, uter prior extinctus sit, humanus est credere, filium diutius vixisse. Si mulier cum filio impubere naufragio periit, priorem filium necatum esse intelligitur," &c. The decisions given by Zacchias and the older writers were essentially founded on the same principles.

The *French* law, as contained in the Code Napoléon, is as follows:—

I. If several persons, naturally heirs of each other, perish by the same event, without the possibility of knowing which died first, the presumption as to survivorship shall be determined by the circumstances of the case; and in default thereof, by strength of age and sex.

II. If those who perished together were under fifteen years, the oldest shall be presumed the survivor.

III. If they were all above sixty years of age, then the youngest shall be presumed the survivor.

IV. If some were under fifteen, and others above sixty, the former shall be presumed the survivors.

V. If those who perished together were over the age of fifteen, but under sixty, the males shall be presumed the survivors where the ages are equal, or the difference does not exceed one year.

VI. If they were of the same sex, that presumption shall be admitted which opens the succession in the order of nature. Of course the younger shall be considered to have survived the elder."

By Section I. of the French code, if definite evidence can be produced as to who was the survivor, the case is then decided on its merits, but failing this, Sections II. to VI. lay down the

precise conditions of age and sex on which survivorship is to be decided. Section II. to IV. relate specially to *age*. Sections II. and III. are (regarded medico-legally) undoubtedly sound, but Section IV. appears to be scarcely so satisfactory, because it draws no distinction between an infant of one year old, and a man of sixty-one years of age. The latter may fairly be supposed to have a better chance of life than the former, whilst Section IV. actually gives the advantage to the infant. Sections V. and VI. have special reference to *sex*.

The *Prussian* Common Law (Part I., tit. 1, § 39) and Civil Code (Arts. 720, 721, 722), quoted by Casper (Dr. Balfour's Trans., vol. i., p. 14); are identical in spirit with the Code Napoléon.

By the *Mahometan* law of India, when relatives perish together "it is to be presumed that they all died at the same moment, and the property of each shall pass to his living heirs without any portion of it vesting in his companions in misfortune."

The *English* law in these cases (which always leans towards the view that matters of this kind are questions of fact, to be decided according to the balance of evidence in each particular case, and not by any artificial or strictly formulated presumption), is now definitely settled by the decision of the House of Lords, in Wing *v.* Angrave (8 H. L. C. 183). In this case husband, wife, and children were swept off the deck of a vessel by one wave, there being no evidence to show that one was seen alive after the other. It was proved that the husband was a strong man and a good swimmer, and that the wife was a weak and delicate woman and could not swim at all. In spite of this, however, the House of Lords would not assume that one survived the other, but decided—

(i.) That there is no presumption of law as to survivorship arising from age and sex, as to persons whose death is occasioned by one and the same cause.

(ii.) Nor is there any presumption of law that all died at the same time.

(iii.) That the question is one of fact depending wholly on evidence. If the evidence does not establish the survivorship of any one, the law treats it as a matter incapable of being determined.

(iv.) That the onus probandi rests with the person asserting the affirmative.

On the other hand, although there may be no presumption of law as to the survivorship of persons killed by a common accident, based on age, sex, or health, yet these are matters of importance to be considered by those who have to discharge the function of a jury. And in thus deciding questions of survivorship the chief matters that ought to influence their decision are as follows:—

(1.) First in importance is the *Degree of Danger* to which the several persons were exposed.

(2.) Next to degree of danger, *the Age of the several persons killed* must be considered. (*Case* 85.) Thus—in the case of a parent and of a child under puberty dying by the same accident, the latter in civil law is supposed to die first. Two cases are recorded, the one (1) of a mother and infant being shipwrecked, and the other (2) of a mother and infant being killed by lightning, where the parents, in both instances, were deemed the survivors (*Zacchias*, Vol. I., pp. 440, 441).

In a case that occurred in France a woman and her two children (æt. eight and two years respectively) were murdered. The husband claimed the property, arguing that the children were the survivors. The Court agreed to this view of the case on the ground that the murderers would naturally first destroy the person who resisted the most, and that that person was probably the parent (*Foderé Causes Célèbres, II., p.* 218).

A remarkable case is recorded before a French Court in 1658. A father and his son (who had arrived at maturity) were killed in battle (Dunes). On the same day and at the same hour that the battle commenced, the daughter took the veil, by which act she became "dead in law." The question before the Court was—Did the father, the son, or the daughter survive? The

Court decided in favour of the son, on the ground that the daughter died instantly—her vow being voluntary—whilst of the father and son, both of whom probably struggled for life for a time from the wounds they had received, the presumption of survivorship was in favour of the son, considering his youth and strength.

Admitting that, given an equal degree of danger occurring to an adult between 25 (when adult vigour is reached) and 55 (when adult vigour commences to decline), and to one either above the age of 55 or under 25, the probability of survivorship will be in favour of the adult between 25 and 55, nevertheless we fail entirely to see any reason to presume survivorship on the ground of age alone (*i.e.* strength and power) in the case of adults between 25 and 55.

(3.) Again, the question of *Sex* must be considered. The male, as the stronger, is always supposed to have a better chance of life than the female "the weaker vessel." Thus in Selwyn's case (*Case* 75) where husband and wife died by drowning, the result of the same accident, it was decided that the husband, being the stronger of the two, survived. (*Case* 73.)

In *Case* 74 the decision was similar, notwithstanding that the wife was proved to be a robust woman and the husband weakly. Sir John Nicoll remarked that inasmuch as the presumption of law was always in favour of the heir-at-law with regard to freehold, and of next of kin with regard to personal property, it was incumbent upon the representatives of the wife to prove her survivorship, and repel the presumption of the husband being the survivor. This they had not done—hence the verdict.

Health, however, may not be an altogether unimportant matter to be considered in such cases. Thus a curious case is recorded by Beck, where both husband and wife were found dead (it was believed) from eating poisonous mushrooms. Zacchias (Concilium, No. 85) decided that the wife died first on the following grounds: "*The husband*, though *sixty years of age*, was robust and healthy, and from the depositions of the servants appears to have eaten but few of the mushrooms.

The wife, on the contrary, although *only forty*, was asthmatic, and subject to affections of the stomach, and moreover had eaten largely of the mushrooms and of other indigestible food. Zacchias contended that a poison which acts violently on the organs of respiration would soonest destroy one already diseased in these parts. Hence he decided in favour of the husband being the survivor, notwithstanding his age.

In *Case* 76 the evidence was of such a nature that the wife was declared to be the survivor. Here the evidence clearly indicated that the husband died first. (See also *Case* 82.)

Health, sex, and age, however, are so closely related that in considering a case of survivorship it is difficult, if not impossible, to separate them. A curious illustration of this is presented to us in *Case* 71. A gentleman with his wife and daughter were wrecked. If the husband survived, his nephew would be entitled to the property. If the daughter survived, the maternal uncle became the rightful heir. In this form the case came before the Court, a representative of the wife also putting in a claim. The maternal uncle argued that the husband was old and ill-prepared to battle with the storm, whilst the daughter was young and would probably fight for life. Hence the presumption of survivorship was, it was contended, in favour of the daughter. On the other hand, the nephew argued that the husband was a man of courage (a General in the army) and accustomed to danger, and in all probability outlived both wife and daughter. It was further suggested that the chances were that with manly courage he would have come on deck the instant danger was suspected, whilst the wife and daughter, with female timidity, would probably have remained in the cabin, their liability to perish being thereby increased. So close was the balance of dissimilar probabilities that Lord Mansfield advised a compromise, to which all parties agreed.

(4.) *The Cause of Death.*—This manifestly requires attention. We shall consider a few of these causes seriatim :—

(*a.*) *Drowning—Shipwreck, &c.* (*Cases* 71 to 75.)—Here sex, age, strength, and position must be considered. As regards *sex* a man is more likely to be able to swim than a woman,

whilst his clothes would be less embarrassing. At the same time a woman's breasts and particularly her clothes might buoy her up automatically when her strength was becoming exhausted. Of course, in the case of shipwreck, men are far more likely to be on deck than women, and therefore in a safer position in case of accident.

If the question of survivorship occurs in the case of two men similarly exposed and of similar strength, the presence of injuries must be carefully noted. Thus if wounds be found on the body of one, of such a nature as would interfere with his making efficient efforts to save himself from drowning, whilst there is an absence of wounds on the other, two questions will arise for consideration:—(1) Were the wounds received when the man first fell into the water? for if so, the presumption would be that he died first, the wounds adding to the chance of his dying rapidly, and preventing struggles for life; or (2) were the wounds the result of vehement and long-continued efforts to save his life? for if so, the probability then would be in his favour as survivor. Hence if wounds be found, it will be for the medical jurist to consider the nature and precise cause of the wounds, in other words how far they were caused by, or interfered with, the efforts of the man to save himself.

In ordinary cases of death by drowning, several lives are frequently lost, from one after another jumping into the water to save those already submerged. The question in such case, may arise as to the order in which the lives were sacrificed. If one of those drowned be known to be an expert swimmer, and there be found upon the body lacerations capable of explanation as resulting from violent attempts to save life, whilst a second is known to be unable to swim, the chances of survivorship are greatly in favour of the former. *Position*, again, may help our decision in such a case, more especially when the swimming capabilities of the persons respectively are known. For example, if two bodies are recovered, the one being that of a good swimmer and the other not a swimmer, and if in the hands of the swimmer, portions of the hair or clothes of the non-swimmer are found, or if the arm of the swimmer is found tightly grasp-

ing the non-swimmer, the presumption of survivorship is again greatly in favour of the swimmer, and of his death having been caused in his efforts to save the life of the other.

(β.) *Smothering.*—In cases where several deaths occur from smothering (*e.g.*, such an accident as the falling in of a house, embankment, &c.), age, sex, mode of life, the relative strength of the parties, but above all the position of the bodies and the marks of violence upon them, must be carefully considered. As regards *position*, those nearest the surface probably lived the longest (*Case* 84); whilst with respect to *wounds*, if a body is found having a severe wound upon it, itself sufficient to destroy life almost instantaneously, the presumption of survivorship is rendered less difficult. (*Cases* 84 and 85.)

It may here be added that in all disputed cases of survivorship, the presence or absence of wounds must be carefully determined, and their precise importance in the special case carefully considered. (*Case* 82.)

(γ.) *A want of oxygen, and exposure to noxious exhalations.*—If the question of survivorship occurs in the case of a number of persons who have met their death from being packed in an imperfectly ventilated room (such as the Black Hole of Calcutta), or in a room where poisonous gases have found entrance, the *muscular development and strength* of the several parties must be first of all considered. But here some care is needed in drawing conclusions. Although muscular power and strength may on the one hand enable a person to get the best place, (*i.e.*, where there is the most oxygen,) still we must remember that on the other hand the demand for, and effort to obtain air is probably in proportion to its want, whilst the want is rendered greater by the intensity of the effort. Thus the loss by quiet and inactivity, may far more than counterbalance the gain by unrest and activity. Again, the *position* of the bodies when discovered is important. For example, one person may be found lying on the floor, and another off the floor, *e.g.*, on a bed, or one person may have occupied a place near a window or door, and another some distance off. The advantages of position will in such cases require consideration. Again, the *sex* of the several parties will be of importance. For, as a rule, women consume less oxygen

than men, and therefore not only will the same quantity of air last them a longer time, but they will be able to breathe an atmosphere containing a less percentage of oxygen. Grey states that the proportion of females to males that are recovered after poisoning by carbonic acid, is as 15 to 14; whilst Devergie places it as high as 5 to 4.

Thus in any given case, speaking generally, those who require least air will live the longest. Women therefore have the advantage over men, and some say, (although I doubt its truth) children over adults. But those (whether male or female) nearest a place where fresh air finds entrance, are almost certain to survive the longest. (*Cases* 84 and 85.)

(δ.) *Cold.*—In cases where the question of survivorship occurs after the death of two or more persons from cold, the amount of clothing worn by each person and their physical conditions—*i.e.*, whether stout or lean—must be noted. Further, evidence must be sought as to the regularity of their lives, more especially with respect to the taking of alcohol. All these points being equal (viz., clothing, nutrition, and regularity of life), the presumption of survivorship will most certainly be in favour of adults over the extremes of age, and of males over female s Of the extremes of age, the very young suffer most from cold, and the very old from heat.

But in such cases there are two modifying conditions that deserve particular attention, *viz.*, poverty and intoxication. The injurious effects of cold on the badly fed is usually very marked, but its action is specially severe on those addicted to alcohol, on whom nervous energy has been diminished by a previous state of morbid excitement. Again, those who have taken narcotic poisons as a rule suffer intensely from severe cold. This circumstance is of importance, seeing that a person who has gone out on a cold night after having taken a dose of opium, which under ordinary conditions would produce little or no effect, might fall down comatose and die from the combined action of exposure to severe cold and the effects of the opium. In other words, the narcotic action of the opium would be intensified by the action of the cold, which itself acts as a powerful agent in inducing languor, loss of sensibility, and sleep.

(ε.) *Heat.*—No rules can well be laid down respecting survivorship in cases of death by heat, but it is just possible that as the young and the old suffer more from cold than adults, so they may be able to withstand a greater amount of heat than adults. General experience seems to prove this to be the case. (See *Index.*)

(ζ.) *Lightning.*—Possibly the proximity of certain bodies to dangerous places, and to substances that are conductors of electricity, may assist us in forming some idea as to the order of death. Collateral circumstances may also be worthy of consideration, such as the existence of metallic and other conductors about the body. If the clothes of a person be found torn to shreds, the body contused or lacerated, and metallic substances on the person fused and highly magnetic, instantaneous death is probable; whilst, on the other hand, if there is an absence of such conditions, a less rapid termination is indicated. But exceptions to this rule are, it must be admitted, numerous, and the question of survivorship in such cases is extremely difficult to determine.

(η.) *Poisoning.*—In these cases the general history, the kind of poison employed, the quantity taken, and the strength of the several persons poisoned, will be the chief points to be considered, but it is here more particularly (it has always appeared to me) that some definite law determining survivorship is required.

(θ.) *Starvation.*—In cases of starvation the presumption of survivorship would certainly be in favour of the aged,—who need less food and need it less frequently,—over adults, and of adults over children, who need most food and need it most frequently. In other words, death from starvation will supervene inversely to the urgency with which food is required—the child perishing before the youth, the youth before the adult, and the adult before the aged. For the same reason the female will probably outlive the male, seeing that women as a rule require less food than men.

Again, the proximity to, or the possibility of obtaining water must in these cases be considered. The presumption of survivorship is always immensely in favour of a person who,

although he can get nothing to eat, can get water, over one who can neither get food nor water. At the same time it must be remembered that too much water hurries on histogenetic changes. (See *Starvation.*)

Further, in starvation stout people have a manifest advantage over lean. The influence in such cases of certain diseased conditions must also be a matter for special consideration.

(*i.*) *Death by Parturition.*—If mother and child both die in childbed without witnesses, the presumption is that the mother survived the child. For, *first,* there is a prima-facie probability of the child being stillborn, and that a woman in childbed without attention or attendance will be unable to render her child the assistance necessary for its preservation. *Secondly,* a large child, or external marks of a difficult labour, or the absence of the signs of respiration, would suggest the death of the child as occurring before that of the mother. Thus from both points of view, the presumption of survivorship in those rare cases where mother and child both die, is in favour of the mother.

We agree with most medical jurists, that those who assert that the child survived the mother should be required to adduce definite evidence of their contention. At the same time, it must be remembered that although the child may die from cold, or from suffocation, or from its being of unusual size, or from protracted labour, or from labour complicated with convulsions, or from pressure on the umbilical cord, or from partial detachment of the placenta, and other causes, nevertheless that the mother runs the risk (and that risk a very dangerous risk) of hæmorrhage. Again, it is quite conceivable that a mother might give birth to a child and herself tie the cord, and then die of syncope from the exhaustion consequent on the effort, whereas the child would be temporarily safe. In a case decided by the Imperial Chamber at Wetzlar, in favour of the child being the survivor, it was urged that the mother sank exhausted by the pains of labour, and as a result that the child died for lack of nourishment.

(B.) *Questions of survivorship where the precise date and time of death of one of the parties is known, whilst that of the other is only presumptive.*

Of this nature *Cases* 77 to 80 are illustrations. We have only to remark that, in all such cases the decision must rest entirely on evidence. (*Case* 86.)

Case 76 is remarkable. An explosion occurred on a steamboat. The wife was seen alive, and was heard calling for her husband *after* the explosion, but the husband, on the contrary, was neither seen nor heard after the explosion. Thus at least, the earliest time of the wife's death was known. The judge decided that from the evidence the presumption was that she survived her husband.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. Hiorns and Drew v. Railway Passengers Insurance Company.—(*Exchequer*: *Guildhall, Feb.* 1862.)—Hiorns, single, æt. 26, insured his life against accident on Sept. 6, 1856. On Sept. 13th he went to Brighton, taking a return ticket. He had a bath on the morning of the 15th. In the evening of the 15th he parted from his friends, expressing his intention to go to his lodgings and to have a second bath before returning to London. He was seen to go towards the sea, but in spite of all endeavours was never heard of afterwards. A bundle of clothes was found on the steps of a bathing machine the day he was missed, which were identified as belonging to him. On October 30th (45 days after his disappearance) a naked body was washed ashore at Walton-on-Naze, 150 miles from Brighton. His brother (the plaintiff in the action) stated at the inquest that to the best of his belief it was the body of Hiorns, but that positive identity was difficult owing to the complete destruction of the features. The Coroner's jury found that the body was that of a person unknown.

The Company urged in defence at the trial that the whole thing was a fraud, and that Hiorns was alive. It was proved he was a bankrupt in 1855; also that he had effected several insurance policies in September, 1856, and made a will directing that the policies should after his death be realised to pay his debts. The jury were unable to agree. (Page 369)

2. Hebdon v. West.—(3 *B. and S.*, 579.)—An insurance was effected for £2,500 on the life of a Mr. Pedder. The defendant (the insurance company) contended that the plaintiff, who was a clerk in a firm to which he owed £5,000, had no insurable interest in the life of Pedder. Pedder (being a member of the firm) had promised the plaintiff that he should not be asked for the money owing so long as he (Pedder) lived. Hebden on this promise insured Pedder's life. It was held that the plaintiff had an insurable interest in the life of Pedder within 14 George III. 48, arising from the engagement by Pedder to employ him as clerk at a salary. (Page 369.)

3. Von Lindenau v. Desborough.—(*Atlas Office. Insurance on the life of the Duke of Saxe-Gotha. Oct.*, 1828. 8 *B. and C.*, 586. See *also* "*Med. Chir. Rev.*," Vol. XIV. p. 213; "*Lond. Med. Gaz.*," Vol. II. p. 669.)—The office (defendant) contested payment of insurance, on the ground that certain cerebral symptoms from which the Duke suffered had been concealed. Double the usual premiums had been charged because the Duke

was speechless, but he had previously had cerebral symptoms, which had not been stated. The insured ultimately died of tumour of the brain, &c. The plaintiff elected to be non-suited. (Pages 370, 372.)

4. Walters v. Barker.—(*Monmouth Assizes*, 1844.)—Payment of insurance contested on the ground that certain paralytic attacks, that had existed from an early age, had been concealed. No medical evidence was offered. Verdict for plaintiffs (executors of insured). (Pages 370, 371.)

5. Case of the Sœur Fried.—(See *Beck's Med. Juris.*, also *Tardieu* and *Ristelhueber's* "*Rapports et Consultations de Médecine Légale.*")—In this case the insured had suffered from hemiplegia and apoplexy ten years before insuring. This fact had been concealed from the office. The insured died from apoplexy two days after the insurance had been effected. The medical evidence was conflicting. (Page 370.)

6. Insurance Office v. Executors of Mrs. Ralston.—(*Glasgow*, 1837.)—(See *Taylor*, Vol. II., p. 618.)—Payment contested on the ground of the concealment of epileptic fits, etc. The insured died from apoplexy. Reference was given to a medical man who had attended her for ten years during which period her health had been good, but not to the physician in attendance for epileptic fits from which she was suffering at the time the insurance was effected. Verdict for the Company, on the ground of want of candour. (Pages 370, 372, 373.)

7. Ross v. Bradshaw.—(*Case of Insurance on the Life of Sir James Ross.*)—(1 *Black. Rep.* 312.)—In this case an insurance was effected for one year, a warranty being given of good health. The insured died within the year, of malignant fever. The office contested payment on the ground that the fact of partial paralysis, with incontinence of urine and fæces, arising from a wound in the loins received in battle, had not been mentioned. It was proved, however, that his last illness had no connection with this incontinence, and that it in no way affected the life. Verdict for the executors of the insured. (Pages 370, 372.)

8. Maynard v. Rhode and Others (Pelican Life Office).—Colonel Lyon's Case.—(*Dr. Taylor*, Vol. II., p. 617. 5 *Dowl. and Ry.*, 266).—Concealment of an illness and of the name of previous medical attendants who had treated the insured for certain active diseases, such as inflammation of the liver, fever, and determination of blood to the head. A verdict was given for the defendants on the ground of concealment, although the insured did not die of the disease concealed. (Pages 370, 372.)

9. Wilshere v. Brown.—(*Exchequer, Dec.*, 1842, *before Lord Abinger.*)—Concealment of previous illness, and denial by the insured that he had

consulted any medical attendant. Verdict for defendants (the office) on the ground of fraud. (Pages 370, 372.)

10. Palmer and Fish v. Irving.—Insurance on the life of one Howes. —(*Norwich Summer Assizes*, 1842 (?).)—Concealment of previous illness. The insured denied having ever had a doctor, whilst in fact three had attended him. Verdict for defendant (the office) on the ground of fraud. (Pages 370, 372.)

11. Geach v. Ingall.—(*Warwick Summer Assizes*, 1844.)—Alleged concealment of phthisis. Death four years after insurance. Verdict for plaintiff (the executor of the insured), chiefly on the ground that the Company's medical officer had examined him, and that the evidence of previous disease was at most presumptive. (Pages 370, 371.)

12. Case of Mrs. Elgie (April, 1824).—Alleged concealment of phthisis. Verdict for plaintiffs (executors of the insured), the jury being of opinion that the concealment was not material. The medical evidence was conflicting. (Page 370.)

13. Bailey v. Imperial Assurance Company.—(*Oxford Assizes*, 1869.) —Alleged concealment of phthisical symptoms, of which the applicant was said to have been informed one year previous to insuring. Verdict for plaintiff, chiefly on the ground that the medical man of the Company had failed to recognise symptoms of phthisis, and that the onus of proof that the insured knew of the phthisis when he applied rested with the Company. (Pages 370, 371.)

14. Willis v. Poole.—Life of Sir Simeon Sturt.—(*Park*, 935.)—Payment of policy contested by the Office on the ground of the concealment of gout. The insured died within one year of the policy being effected. Verdict for plaintiff (executor of insured). Lord Mansfield in this case said: "Such a warranty can never mean that a man has not in him the seeds of some disorder. We are all born with the seeds of mortality in us. A man subject to the gout is a life capable of being insured if he has no sickness at the time to make it an unequal contract." (Pages 370, 371.)

15. Executors of Fowkes v. the Manchester and London Assurance Company.—(32 *L. J., Q. B.* 153.)—Alleged concealment of gout. Verdict for plaintiffs, with point reserved. The life had been approved by the medical referee of another office, but was not *accepted* by that office as the insured declared. (Pages 370, 371, 372, 373.)

16. Sweet v. Fairlie (Globe Office).—(6 *Carr. and P.* 1.)—Life of one Abraham.—Concealment of previous determination of blood to the head, the person eventually dying of apoplexy. Verdict for plaintiffs (executors of insured). It was held that a policy is not vitiated by the insured failing to communicate his having been afflicted with a disorder tending to shorten human life, which was of such a character as to prevent the party from

being conscious of what had happened to him while suffering under it. (Page 370.)

17. Huntley v. the St. George Insurance Company.—(*Newcastle Assizes*, 1858.)—Insured was a medical man, and died three months after the insurance had been effected. Payment contested, because of the concealment of Bright's disease and of diseased heart. Vegetarianism was supposed to have caused his ill-health. Verdict for plaintiff. [The Lord Chief Baron suggested that in future insurance companies should ask intending assurers, "Are you a vegetarian?"! !] (Pages 370, 374.)

18. Watson v. Mainwaring.—(Equitable Insurance Company.)—(4 *Taunt.*, 763.)—Payment contested on the ground of the concealment of organic dyspepsia. Verdict for plaintiff. The jury decided it was not organic dyspepsia, nor was it excessive dyspepsia from which the insured suffered. Application for a new trial refused. (Pages 370, 371.)

19. Simcox v. Bignold.—(*Chitty's Med. Juris.*, I., p. 235.)—Death of the insured resulted four years after insurance, from a fungoid tumour in the left kidney. It was argued that the tumour was of five or six years' growth, and was an incurable organic disease, and that the insured had been treated for it two or three years before taking out the policy. The case was compromised by the defendants refunding the premiums received. (Page 370.)

20. Lefevre v. Boyd.—Two brothers, named Edwards, induced Jane Lydia Simpson, their half-sister, to insure her life. A previous pregnancy and birth of a child, who died with symptoms of syphilis, not declared. Verdict for plaintiff (the Office). The insured was pregnant by W. Reid Edwards, her half-brother! Medical evidence was given that the pregnancy was material under the circumstances. (Pages 370, 372.)

21. Brembridge v. Hoare.—(Sun Life Insurance Company.)—(*Court of Exchequer*, Feb., 1873).—£5,000, on the life of a Mrs. Formby.—Concealment of laceration of perinæum, and of uterine disease and displacement. Verdict for Office. The medical evidence in this case is voluminous. (See *Taylor*, Vol. II., pp. 619—621.) (Pages 370, 372.)

22. Case mentioned by Dr. Taylor (Vol. II., p. 617).—Alleged concealment of a scrotal tumour (? hernia). The insured died of strangulated hernia thirteen months after insurance. Verdict for plaintiffs (executors of insured) on second trial. Medical evidence conflicting as to whether at the time he insured the man suffered from a hernia or from varicocele, and his knowledge respecting it. (Page 370.)

23. Leete v. The Gresham Life Office.—Court of Exchequer, July, 1851 (15 *Jurist*, 1161.) £350, on the life of Giles Clement. Concealment

of urinary and prostatic disease existing from boyhood. Verdict for defendants. No medical evidence was offered on the part of the plaintiff, but counsel argued that prostatic disease did not shorten life, seeing that old men often suffered from it and yet lived on. (Pages 370, 372.)

24. Executors of a Clergyman v. Providence Insurance Company.—(*York Assizes*, 1835.)—Concealment of insanity. Verdict for plaintiffs. The jury found that insanity had no tendency to shorten life, a verdict entirely opposed to medical experience and known facts. (Page 370.)

25. Huguenin v. Rayley.—(6 "*Taunton's Reports*," p. 185.)—(*Sarum Assizes*, 1815.)—Concealment of the fact that at the time of insurance the applicant was a prisoner for debt. Non-suit on the ground that the omission by the medical men to state this was not by connivance. A new trial allowed on the ground that it ought to have been submitted to the jury whether such concealment was a material omission. (Page 370.)

26. Evans v. Cox.—(British Commercial Life Office.)—(*King's Bench, Feb.*, 1831.)—Insurance on the life of Ann Elsworthy.—Concealment of intemperate habits and of a previous attack of cholera. Verdict for plaintiff (executors of insured), but a fresh trial granted. (Pages 370, 373.)

27. Wiggins v. Gresham Life Office.—(*Bristol Summer Assizes*, 1872.)—Concealment of intemperance and of disease of lungs. Verdict for the Office on the ground of the suppression of material facts. (Pages 370, 373, 374.)

28. Pole v. Rogers.—(*Before Tindal, C. J., Feb.*, 1840.)—On the life of Peter Cochrane.—Concealment of intemperance, alleged to be the cause of hydrothorax, of which the insured died. Verdict for plaintiff (executor of insured). [See remarks of Solicitor-General. Taylor, Vol. II., p. 625.] (Pages 373, 374.)

29. Jay v. Gresham Life Insurance Company.—(*Before Baron Amphlett, Leeds Assizes*, 1874.)—Concealment of intemperance. Verdict for plaintiffs. (Page 373.)

30. Rawlings v. Desborough.—(3 *My.* and *C.*, 515.)—Life of John Cochrane.—Concealment of habits of intemperance. Verdict for plaintiff (executor of insured). Motion for new trial. The life had been declined by Mr. Travers for one office on the ground of previous delirium tremens. Lord Denman said a proposed insurer was not bound to volunteer statements of all sorts of things; but he was bound to conceal nothing when asked and to answer all questions truly. (Pages 373, 375.)

31. Southcomb v. Merriman.—(*Carr. and Mar.*, 286.)—The medical man admitted that the insured had had several outbreaks of intemperance,

which he did not state because he thought they had no influence on the health of the applicant. Verdict for plaintiffs (executors of insured), but a rule for a new trial obtained. Twelve witnesses proved the applicant to have been very temperate, and twenty-one that he was the reverse! (Pages 373, 374.)

32. Craig v. Fenn.—(*Dec.*, 1841.)—Case of Hon. H. G. Talbot.—Payment disputed on the ground of intemperance having been concealed. Verdict for Office. No answer being returned to question as to the temperate habits of the insured, the Office charged a higher premium; nevertheless it was held that the habits of deceased ought to have been mentioned. (Page 373.)

33. Hutton v. Waterloo Life Association.—(1 *F. and F.*, 735.)—Alleged denial or at any rate concealment of delirium tremens. Further, the insured did not give the name of his usual medical attendant, but only of one that had attended him three years before the policy was taken out. The Company's own medical man described him as a "first-class" life. Verdict mainly for defendants. (Page 373.)

34. Wheelton v. Hurdisty.—(26 *L. J., Q. B.*, 265, *and* 27 *L. J., Q. B.*, 241.)—Life of Mr. Jodrell.—Concealment of intemperate habits and of delirium tremens. Company's own medical examiner certified the insured as a "first-class" life. Verdict for defendants. On appeal it was held that the medical and private referees were not the agents of the assured, so as to make their fraudulent misrepresentation or concealment the act of the assured. "In cases where the representations of the referees are made the basis of the policy the answers of the referees are binding upon the insured." (Page 373.)

35. Chattock v. Shaw.—(Eagle Office.)—(1 *Moo. and Rob.*, 498.)—Life of Colonel Greswold.—The concealment of fits. Verdict for plaintiff. Where a policy of insurance contains a warranty that the assured has not been afflicted with, nor is subject to gout, vertigo, fits, &c., such warranty is not broken by the fact of the insured having had an epileptic fit in consequence of an accident. To vitiate such policy it must be shown that the constitution of the assured was naturally liable to fits, or had become so liable, by accident or otherwise. (Page 370.)

36. Case against the National Insurance Company.—(*Irish Rolls Court*, 1876.)—In this case the insured stated that he was in good health and not addicted to any habits tending to shorten life. The Company afterwards discovered he was intemperate, and had had attacks of delirium tremens. This he denied having occurred before the policy was taken out. Judgment for the Company, the policy being declared void. (This is the first case where a policy was declared void during the lifetime of the person.) (Page 373.)

37. Executors of Earl of Mar v. Edinburgh Life Assurance Company.—(*Jury Court, Edinburgh*, 1830.)—Payment contested on the ground that the insured was an opium-eater, and that he drank to excess, both of which circumstances had been concealed. Verdict for plaintiffs, chiefly on the ground that the Company were not careful enough in making inquiries. (Pages 362, 374.)

38. Wainewright v. Bland.—(1 *Moo. and Rob.*, 481.)—Insurance on the life of a Miss Abercrombie in the Imperial Assurance Company by Wainewright, her brother-in-law. Payment contested on the ground that the death probably arose from poison, that there had been misrepresentation, and that Wainewright had no lawful pecuniary interest in her life. Verdict for Insurance Office. Wainewright was afterwards transported for forgery. He is said to have confessed that he gave strychnine to Miss Abercrombie and to two others. (Pages 368, 376.)

39. Case of Dr. De la Pommerais.—(See *Tardieu and Sonnenschein*, p. 209.)—Dr. De la Pommerais insured the life of a woman (Pauw), and then poisoned her with digitaline. (Page 376.)

40. R. v. Cotton.—(*Durham Lent Assizes*, 1873.)—Tried for the murder of her step-son by arsenic. She was said to have killed twenty persons, all of whose lives she had insured in different offices. Prisoner found guilty, and executed.—(See Taylor, p. 645.) (Page 376.)

41. R. v. Palmer, 1856.—(*Central Criminal Court, May*, 1856.)—Insurances effected by Palmer on the lives of persons that he afterwards poisoned.—(*Taylor*, vol. i., p. 405 ; vol. ii., p. 642, etc.) (Page 376.)

42. Case related by Tardieu, Ann. d'Hyg., 1866, Vol. II. p. 410.—Case of J. P. Hoffstedt.—This man was insured by another person (Swensson). Swensson was prosecuted by the office on the ground that he agreed to give deceased brandy *ad lib.*, provided he took no other nourishment. It was also suggested that Swensson had given Hoffstedt arsenic. Prisoner was acquitted from want of direct proof, but a verdict was given for the Office, because the case was regarded as one of suicide through the agency of a person who would benefit by the death. (Page 376.)

43. Scotch Insurance Case.—("*Taylor's Med. Juris.*," Vol. I., p. 672, and Vol. II., p. 640.)—Death caused from pistol shots. Certain circumstances pointed to a murder having been committed by a certain medical man, who had insured the man's life. Prisoner was acquitted, on the ground that there were no circumstances directly fixing the crime on him. It was shown that the prisoner could have no lawful pecuniary interest in the life of the man he insured. (Pages 368, 376.)

44. Exors. of Fauntleroy v. The Amicable.—(See *Bolland* v. *Disney*, 3 *Russell's Chancery Reports*, p. 351; 4 *Bligh, N. S.*, 194.)—Payment disputed, on the ground that Fauntleroy was hanged for forgery, and that his death was as much his own act as if he had committed suicide. The Master of the Rolls decided against the Company, "because the act must be done fraudulently, for the very purpose of procuring the event." This was reversed on appeal to the House of Lords, on the ground that if the policy had, in express words, attempted to insure against death at the hands of justice, it would have become void, as against public policy. (Page 375.)

45. Kinnear v. the Rock Insurance Company.—(5 *Man. and Gr.*, 644.)—Probable suicide of insured from narcotic poisoning. Verdict for plaintiff on the ground that the suicide was not proved. Coroner's jury found "Death from natural causes." (See *Taylor, loc. cit.*, vol. ii., pp. 634—638.) (Pages 369, 375.)

46. Borrodaile v. Hunter and others.—(5 *Man. and Gr.*, 639.)—Suicide (?) of insurer, who was seen to go into the water, the question being was he sane or insane at the time. Judgment for plaintiff, but afterwards reversed—the case being compromised. (Pages 375, 377.)

47. Schwabe v. Clift.—(5 *C. B.*, 437.)—Suicide from taking sulphuric acid. The question in dispute was whether the man at the time was sane or insane. Verdict for plaintiff (executors of insured). A new trial granted, but the case eventually compromised. (Page 378.)

48. Case related by Tardieu, occurring in French Courts.—(*Ann. d'Hyg.* 1860, 1,443.)—The insured died from the explosion of a gun in his carriage as he was driving. Question—was it accident or suicide? Tardieu believed it suicide from the position of the gun and body and the direction of the wound. Verdict for the plaintiffs (executors of insured). The Company, it was decided, were bound to prove their case by more than mere presumptive evidence, and this the Court held they had not done. (Pages 369, 375, 376.)

49. Beake v. Nicholson and others.—(Mutual Life Insurance Company.)—Claim, £1,000. Disputed on the ground that the insured died by his own hands. The widow contended that he was under an insane delusion, not knowing what he was doing or the consequences of his act. [The deceased had thrown himself under an engine in motion at Battersea Station.] Verdict for plaintiff Rule *nisi* for new trial obtained, and afterwards rule made absolute. (Page 376.)

50. Case reported by M. Brierre de Boismont.—(*Ann.* 1866, 2, 397. *A French case.*)—Claim, 40,000 francs. Payment disputed

on the ground that the man had committed suicide by hanging. This was proved by a letter of the deceased in which he stated he had done it to preserve his family from ruin by obtaining the insurance money. Judgment for the Company. In this case a friend had agreed to cut the body down after the insured had hanged himself and place it in the high road, so as to present the appearance of the insured having been murdered. (Page 375.)

51. Sinclair v. the Maritime (Accident) Insurance Company.—(30 *L. J., Q. B.*, 77.)—Life of a Capt. Lawrence.—Payment disputed on the ground that "sunstroke" was not an accident. Verdict for the defendants, on the ground that "sunstroke" was a natural cause of death. (Page 366.)

52. Cross v. the Railway Accident Insurance Company.—(*Lewes Summer Assizes*, 1871.)—Payment disputed on the ground that, although the insured fell downstairs and was never well again, she died from disease and not from accident. Verdict for defendants, except £30 paid into Court. Medical evidence conflicting. It was deposed that she had Bright's disease and dropsy. (Page 366.)

53. Mair v. Railway Passengers' Insurance Company.—Before Mr. J. Denman. See "*Daily Telegraph*," April 19, 1877.—(37 *L. J.*, 356.)—The man received a push in a street brawl, and pitched on his head on the granite pavement, receiving injuries that terminated fatally. The Company stated he was very intoxicated at the time. Verdict for plaintiff. A rule obtained for a new trial, in which it was laid down :—In a policy of life assurance it is provided that the assurance shall not extend to any death or injury happening while the assured is under the influence of intoxicating liquors or occasioned by his wilfully exposing himself to any unnecessary danger or peril. Although in this case there was a conflict of evidence as to the fact of the assured being affected by the liquor he had taken, nevertheless it was proved that he had accosted a woman in the street, and persisted in doing so in the face of remonstrances, and was finally knocked down by the man in whose company she was at the time, receiving injuries from which he died. It was held that to enable the Company to take advantage of the above proviso it was not necessary that the assured should be under the influence of intoxicating liquor at the time of his death as well as at the time when the injury was sustained, but that it was sufficient to show that he was under such influence when he met with the injury from which death afterwards resulted. "Under the influence of intoxicating liquors" means under such influence as to disturb the quiet exercise of a man's intellectual faculties. (Pages 366, 367.)

54. Fitton v. Accidental Death Assurance Company.—(17 *C. B., N.S.*, 122.)—An insurance against accident, provided the accident operated

by external causes, was in this case held to cover an injury to the spine caused by lifting a heavy weight in the course of business. (Pages 366, 367.)

55. Martin v. Travellers' Insurance Company.—(1 *F. and F.*, 505.)—An insurance against accident contained an express clause excepting "death arising from gout, hernia, or other disease arising within the system." In this case the insured had a fall, which proved the primary cause of rupture and strangulated hernia, after an operation for which the assured died. It was held that his representatives were entitled to recover, and that the case did not come within the exception. (Page 366.)

56. Winspear v. the Accident Insurance Company, Limited.—(*L. R.*, 6 *Q.B. D.*, 42.)—W. effected an insurance with the defendants against accidental injury, and by the terms of the policy the defendants agreed to pay the amount to W.'s legal representatives should he sustain "any personal injury caused by accidental, external, and visible means," the direct effect of such injury being to cause death. The policy also contained a proviso that the insurance should not extend "to any injury caused by or arising from natural disease, or weakness or exhaustion consequent upon disease." During the time the policy was in force, and whilst the assured was crossing a stream, he was taken with an epileptic fit and fell into it, and was there drowned whilst suffering from the fit; but he did not sustain any personal injury to occasion death other than drowning. Held that W.'s death was occasioned by an injury within the risk covered by the policy, and to which the proviso did not apply. The reasons given in the Court of Appeal were, that the drowning was the cause of death, and the fit was only a cause of the cause of death.—(Trew v. Railway Passengers' Assurance Company, 30 *L. J., Eq.*, 317. 22 *L. T., N. S.*, 820, Reynolds v. Accident Assurance Company. (Pages 366, 367.)

57. Smith v. Accident Insurance Company.—(*L. R.*, 5 *Ex.*, 302.)—A policy of insurance against death from accidental injury contained a condition that it was not to insure against death arising from rheumatism, gout, hernia, erysipelas, or any other disease or secondary cause arising within the system of the insured before or at the time of or following such accidental injury (whether causing such death directly or jointly with such accidental injury). The assured on Saturday, April 24th, accidentally cut his foot against the broken side of an earthenware pan. On the Thursday following, erysipelas supervened, and he died of that disease on the next Saturday. The erysipelas was caused by the wound, and but for the wound he would not have suffered from erysipelas. In an action by his executrix to recover the amount insured, it was held (Kelly, C.B., dissenting) that the insurers were protected by the above condition and were not liable. (Pages 366, 368.)

58. Duckett v. Williams.—(2 *C. and M.*, 348.)—By a declaration [illegible] statement as to health signed by the assured previously to the effect a policy

on a life, it was agreed that if any untrue averment was contained therein, or if the facts required to be set forth in the proposal (annexed) were not truly stated, the premiums should be forfeited, and the assurance be absolutely null and void. The statement as to the health of the life was untrue in point of fact, but not to the knowledge of the party making it. Held that the premiums were forfeited and could not be recovered. (Page 371.)

59. Macdonald v. Law Union Fire and Life Insurance Company.—*L. R.*, (9 *Q. B.*, 328.)—A policy of insurance was granted by a company to the plaintiff on the life of T., containing a proviso that "if the declaration under the hands of the plaintiff delivered at the company's office as the basis of the insurance is not true in every respect, and if there has been any misrepresentation. . . . then the insurance shall be void." Held that an inaccurate statement of a material fact contained in the declaration rendered the policy void, though the statement was made bona-fide, and was not untrue to the knowledge of the plaintiff. (Page 371.)

60. Watson v. England.—(8 *Jur.*, 1062.)—M. B., then about sixteen years of age, and unmarried, left her father's house in the year 1814, and was never heard of afterwards as being alive. About the year 1839, however, her father told Deponent that he had intelligence by a man who came from London, that his daughter, M. B., was dead. The Master found that she was dead, but that sufficient evidence had not been laid before him to enable him to find when she died, or whether she died unmarried and without issue. An exception that the Master ought to have found that she died previous to the end of the year 1821 was overruled. An exception that the Master ought to have certified that M. B. had died unmarried and without issue allowed. (Page 380.)

61. Church v. Smith.—(*Exchequer, Dec.*, 1853.)—Fourteen years previously to the case coming before the Court, the husband deserted his wife, and she had not heard of him for twelve years. *Question:* Was she a widow, and able to sue in her own right?

She was nonsuited, however, by the husband appearing in the witness-box at the trial.

(The Chief Baron remarked, that but for this he should have directed the jury, if it had been proved that he had not been heard of for twelve years, to consider him dead). (Pages 380, 381.)

62. R. v. Briggs.—(*D. and B., C. C.* 98, 1856.)—The prisoner was indicted for bigamy, the first marriage being with J. Briggs, in 1844, at Altonbury, and the second in 1856, at Cambridge. The prisoner on both occasions was married by her maiden name, and the second husband swore that she had represented herself to him as a single woman. Altonbury and Cambridge are about twenty-four miles apart. J. Briggs was a labouring man, considerably older than the prisoner, living in lodgings, and working

at a farm about two miles from Altonbury, being occasionally absent from home for a month at a time. A witness said that the prisoner left him four months after the marriage, and that he had not seen her subsequently. The jury were asked whether, in their opinion, the prisoner knew her husband to be alive at the time she contracted the second marriage, and if not, whether she had the means of acquiring the knowledge. They were directed that, even if they thought her ignorant of her husband's being alive, she must still be found guilty if they also thought she had neglected to exercise such reasonable diligence in making inquiry as might have ascertained the fact of his existence. The jury said they had no evidence as to her knowledge; but that in their opinion she had the means of acquiring knowledge, if she had chosen to make use of them. Upon a case reserved after a verdict of guilty, it was held that the conviction was wrong, the verdict being imperfect, as the jury had not found that the prisoner knew her husband was alive. (Pages 380, 381.)

63. R. v. Lumley.—(38 *L. J., M. C.*, 86.)—The prisoner was convicted of bigamy. The first marriage was with Victor in the year 1836. The second marriage was with Lumley on the 9th of July, 1847. The prisoner lived with Victor until the middle of 1843, when they separated, and from that time no more was heard of him. There was no evidence as to his age. The judge at the trial directed the jury that it was a presumption of law that Victor was alive at the time of the second marriage. Held that there was no presumption of law that life continued for seven years, or for any other period after the time of the latest proof of the life of the party, and that it was a question of fact for the jury, under the circumstances of each case, whether a person be alive or dead at any time within the interval of seven years, at the termination of which the protection afforded by the statute in cases of bigamy comes into operation. The conviction was quashed. (Pages 380, 381.)

64. Doe v. Nepeun.—(5 *B. and Ad.*, 86, 1833.)—A person who has not been heard of for seven years is presumed to be dead, but there is no legal presumption as to the time of his death. The fact of his having been alive or dead at any particular period during the seven years must be proved by the party relying on it. (Page 380.)

65. In re Phene's Trusts.—(*L. R.* 5 *Ch.*, 346.)—If a person has not been heard of for seven years there is a presumption of law that he is dead, but at what time within that period he died is not a matter of presumption but of evidence, and the onus of proving that the death took place at any particular time within the seven years lies upon the person who claims a right to the establishment of which that fact is essential. There is no presumption of law in favour of the continuance of life, though an inference of fact may legitimately be drawn that a person alive and in health on a par-

ticular day was alive a short time afterwards. The testator died on the 5th January, 1861, having bequeathed his residuary estate equally among his nephews and nieces. One of his nephews, N., was born in 1829, had gone to America in 1853, had frequently written home until August, 1858, on which date he wrote from on board an American ship of war. From that time no letter had been received from him, and nothing was afterwards heard about him, except that he was entered in the books of the American Navy as having deserted on 16th June, 1860, while on leave. Held (reversing the decision of James, V.C.,) that his personal representative had not established a title to any share of the testator's estate, and it must be divided among the nephews and nieces who were proved to have survived the testator. (Page 380.)

66. **In re Beasney's Trusts.**—(7 *L. R. Eq.*, 498, 1869.)—A person who was entitled to the dividends on stock payable in April and October, applied for his dividends in April, 1860. He was last seen in August of the same year, when he was in a very bad state of health. He never applied for his half-yearly dividends in the ensuing October. It appeared that he was of very dissolute habits, and chiefly depended on the dividends for his maintenance. The question in this case was whether he died before November, 1860. Held that not having applied for the dividends due to him in October, 1860, and having regard to the state of his health when last seen, the presumption must be that he died before November, 1860. (Pages 380, 382.)

67. **Prudential Assurance Company v. Edmonds.**—(*L. R.*, 2 *App. C.*, 487.)—A policy on the life of R. Nutt was granted in 1863. An action was brought in 1874, the question being whether Nutt was then alive or dead. He had been absent from his former home more than seven years, having left it in 1867. His sister and brother-in-law, who lived where he had formerly lived, gave evidence of his absence, and said that they had not heard of him for more than seven years. On cross-examination, they admitted that a niece of his had said that when she was in Melbourne in December, 1872, or January, 1873, she saw a man whom she believed to be her uncle Nutt, but he was lost in the passing crowd before she was able to get to speak to him. No effort appeared to have have been made to find him at Melbourne, and the other relatives believed the niece to have been mistaken. The jurymen expressed a similar opinion. The Judge directed the jurymen that they "could not say that the man had not been heard of during the last seven years when one of his relatives declared that she had seen him alive and well within the last three years; and still less could they say that he had never been heard of when all the members of the family stated that they had heard what she had stated;" and "that the ground for the presumption of death from a man having been absent for seven years, was entirely removed by the direct evidence that every relative had heard that he was alive." And, lastly, his Lordship said to the jury, "under these

circumstances, unless you are prepared to find that he was dead in April, 1875, and find it upon evidence which tends to prove exactly the contrary, and in the absence of that evidence upon which alone the presumption should be raised of his death, your verdict ought to be for the defendants." The Court of Appeal considered this to be a misdirection, and had ordered a *venire de novo*. On appeal to the House of Lords, the Lords were equally divided, and so the decision of the Court of Appeal stood. Per Lord Blackburn :—When there is a case tried before a Judge sitting with a jury, and there arises any question of law mixed up with the facts, the duty of the Judge is to give a direction upon the law to the jury so far as to make them understand the bearing of the law upon the facts. Further than that it is not necessary to go. (Pages 370, 380, 381, 382.)

68. Re Davy.—(*Probate Court*, 1858.)—The testator (a master mariner) sailed for Melbourne in December, 1856. He was proved to have arrived at Calcutta in October, 1857, and to have left Calcutta for Port Louis in December, 1857. From that date nothing was heard either of the testator or of the vessel. Probate of the will granted although not more than two years had elapsed since the testator's departure from England. (Page 381.)

69. Macleane v. Insurance Company.—Macleane insured his life. On November 28th, 1777, he sailed from the Cape in a small sloop, and was never heard of afterwards. There was evidence to show that several vessels which sailed at or about the same time, and which were of a stronger build than Macleane's, were lost in a storm that occurred in January, 1778. A verdict was given for the plaintiff. (Page 381.)

70. Re Vital Douat.—In this case a man shortly before his bankruptcy insured his life in an Insurance Company of Paris for 100,000 francs. His bankruptcy was subsequently declared fraudulent. He then came to England, purchased a coffin, procured a certificate of death from the registrar, himself followed the coffin (which he had loaded with lead) to the grave in a churchyard in Essex, where it was interred. This done, his wife then went to Paris and presented to the Company copies of the registry of the death and the burial of her husband, and claimed the amount of the insurance. The coffin was exhumed, the man was taken into custody at Antwerp, and given in charge to the French authorities. [A register of death is no absolute proof of death !] (Page 381.)

71. R. v. Dr. Hay.—(*Beck*, p. 361.)—In 1766, General Stanwix and daughter set sail in the same vessel from Ireland for England. They were shipwrecked, and not a single person on board was saved. The representative to the personal estate of the father was the nephew, and the representative of the daughter was her maternal uncle. These parties brought the case into Chancery. On behalf of the nephew whom the general's sur-

vivorship would benefit, it was argued, that the ship being lost in tempestuous weather, it was more than probable that the general was upon deck, and that the daughter was in the cabin, and subject to more early loss of life than the General, who, as a man of arms and courage, was, it was asserted, more able and more likely to struggle with death than a woman. Further it was argued that he might probably have been assisted in his struggles by the broken masts and other parts of the rigging.

On the other side it was contended that the general was old, and consequently feeble, and by no means strong enough to resist the shock of such a terrible attack, whilst the daughter was of a hale constitution, and being younger than her father, was proportionately stronger. It was contended therefore that the probability of survivorship was infinitely in favour of the daughter.

A second wife of General Stanwix also perished with him, and her representative brought forward a separate claim to the disputed property.

The Court, however, finding the arguments on all sides to be equally solid and ingenious, waved giving any decision, and advised a compromise, to which the several claimants agreed. (Page 388.)

72. Taylor, Vol. i., p. 169.—Three persons, consisting of a woman aged forty-two in feeble health, a stout healthy daughter of twenty, and a son aged six, were drowned off the coast of Norfolk. It was contended that the probabilities were that the daughter, aged twenty, survived; but Dr. Lushington, in the absence of proof, ruled that they all perished together.

Dr. Taylor gives the following detailed account of this case :—"An officer in the army died in November, 1819, leaving a wife and two daughters, bequeathing property among them. In 1823 the widow married again, and by this second marriage she had several children: one of these, a son, survived. One of the daughters by the first marriage, Margaret, died in 1825, before majority, intestate, leaving only as next of kin her sister Johanna and her mother. In 1834 the mother, her daughter Johanna, and her son, the last surviving child of the marriage between her and her second husband, were drowned on the coast of Norfolk, in the cabin of a sailing-packet, while on their way to Scotland. The vessel filled with water from the skylights of the cabin during a storm. A few minutes before the catastrophe, all in the cabin were seen and spoken to, but not one of them was heard to speak or was seen alive after the cabin had become filled with water, which was said to have happened instantaneously. The deaths of the mother, daughter, and son, were supposed to have taken place at one and the same instant of time; at least it could not be proved by the direct testimony of any person that he saw any one of the three alive, or that he heard the cry or speech of any one of these three after the death of the other or either of them. It may be mentioned that the mother was corpulent, and by the ill-treatment of her husband a broken-hearted woman of about

forty-two years of age ; the daughter was a stout healthy girl of about twenty, and the son about six years of age. Physical and constitutional strength were thus decidedly in favour of the survivorship of the daughter Johanna, who was in right of considerable funds at the time of her death and she died intestate. A claim was made for her property by her nearest blood relation, her paternal uncle-german. Her mother's second husband being still alive, claimed the property, as the representative of his wife or his son, presuming that Johanna died before them, and that her property became vested in them. The opinion of Dr. Lushington being requested on this case, he stated that as to the question of survivorship, the pre-sumption of law, in the absence of evidence to the contrary, was that the mother, daughter, and son all died at the same moment. The consequence would be that none of the parties could transmit to the other. The paternal uncle would therefore be entitled to Johanna's property on the principle already applied in so many cases, that the property being vested in her those who desire to take it on a presumption, must produce evidence to show that she died before those persons through whom they set

"In this case there was not the least ground, medically assuming that either of these persons survived the other. evidence as to whether they were in different parts of the ca the water reached one before the other; and in the absen this kind, it would be an arbitrary assumption to assign sur.

(Page 388.)

73. Underwood v. Wing.—(4, *Dr. G. M. and G.*, 633.)—A testato will bequeathed personal estate to J. W. upon trust for his (the test wife absolutely, but in case his said wife should die during his lif he directed that all his estate should be held by his said trustee upon tain trusts (which failed), and subject to those trusts he bequeathed all h property to J. W. absolutely. Held—that the gift to J. W. was dependen on the event of the testator surviving his wife, and that J. W. did not become entitled from the mere fact of the gift to the wife failing to have practical operation. The testator and his wife were shipwrecked and drowned at sea, one wave sweeping both of them together into the water, after which they were never seen again. On the question being raised between the next of kin of the testator and J. W., who claimed under the limitations of the will, it was held—first, that the onus of proof that the husband was the survivor rested with J. W.; secondly, that it was requisite to produce positive evidence in order to enable the Court to pronounce in favour of the survivorship; and thirdly, that no such evidence having been produced, the next of kin was entitled. [By the law of England the question of survivorship, in cases of the above description, is matter of evidence, and not of positive regulation and enactment as in the French code, and in the absence of evidence there is no conclusion of law on the subject. The next of kin stands as to personalty in the same position as the heir at law as to realty,

and the person claiming against him must make out his title.] (Pages 381, 387, 388.)

74. Taylor and Others v. Deplock.—Case in Prerogative Court, Doctors' Commons, 1815 :—

Job Taylor, quarter-master sergeant in the Royal Artillery, had made a will, in which he appointed his wife, Lucy Taylor, sole executrix and sole residuary legatee. Having been for some time in Portugal on foreign service, he was returning home with her on board the Queen transport, when the vessel, in Falmouth Harbour, struck upon a rock, in consequence of the violence of the weather, and sunk almost immediately afterwards. Nearly three hundred persons on board perished, and among them Taylor and his wife. Taylor died possessed of property to the amount of £4,000, and a bill in Chancery was filed by the next of kin of the wife against those of the husband, to ascertain who was entitled to this property, but the proceedings were at a stand for the want of a personal representative of the husband. Both parties, therefore, applied to the Court for letters of administration generally, or that the Court would suspend granting any to either party during the dependence of the Chancery suit, and in the meantime grant a limited administration. This latter prayer was, however, abandoned, on understanding that the Court could not grant a limited administration where a general one might be granted and was applied for; and the present question, therefore, was to whom the general administration should be granted—whether the next of kin to the husband as dying intestate, his wife not having survived so as to become entitled under his will, or the representatives of his wife, as his residuary legatee, she having survived so as to become entitled under that character.

It appeared from the affidavits exhibited on both sides, that at the time the accident happened, Lucy Taylor was below in the cabin, and her husband on deck. The water was rushing in fast, and he offered large sums to any one who would go below and save her, but finding none would venture, he descended himself, and the vessel immediately afterwards went to pieces. The bodies of Taylor and his wife were found close together, and it further appeared that she was a woman of a very robust constitution, and in the habit of enduring great fatigue by the management of the officers' mess, as well as that of a great many of the soldiers; whilst he was rather sickly, and had been latterly much afflicted with an asthma.

It was contended on the part of the husband's next of kin, that by the principles of the Roman civil law, which had been adopted into the law of the country, and were in fact the only principles governing a case of this kind, it was laid down, that where two persons perished together in a common calamity, and it became a question which of the two was the survivor, the presumption of law should always be in favour of the person possessing the more robust constitution and greater strength, as being thereby the better fitted to struggle with the difficulties of his situation and

resist for a longer time the operation of death. Thus, when the father and son shall perish together, the presumption of the survivorship is in the favour of the son if above the age of puberty, but of the father if under: the same as to a mother and daughter; and as to husband and wife, the presumption is in favour of the husband. This, however, like all other legal presumptions, was liable to be repelled by evidence to the contrary, but in this case it was contended, from the situation of the wife at the time the accident happened, that it was most probable she had perished before her husband descended to her rescue. Upon both grounds, therefore, both of principle and of fact, the Court must conclude that the husband was the survivor, and accordingly grant the administration to his next of kin.

On the part of the wife's next of kin it was contended that the presumption of the law alluded to was only applicable to cases where parties perish together in such a manner as to preclude the possibility of obtaining any evidence as to which of them was the survivor. Where, however, evidence as to that fact was produced, as in the present case, the case must be decided upon that evidence only. Here it appeared the parties had perished by the same accident, and their bodies were afterwards found together; and that the common course of nature had in this instance been inverted, by the wife being the most strong and robust of the two. The Court must, therefore, necessarily conclude that she was the survivor, and accordingly grant the administration of her husband's effects to her representatives.

Sir John Nicoll observed that this case presented itself for decision under very singular circumstances. He recapitulated them, and observed that the question as to the limited administration had not been gone into; but that with respect to general administration, the counsel had argued upon the legal presumption of survivorship, and whether or not that presumption was sufficiently repelled by the facts in evidence. He agreed to the doctrine that had been laid down, of the presumption being in favour of the husband; but it was a necessary preliminary question upon whom the burden of proof rested. The administration to the husband being the point in issue, his next of kin had *primâ facie* the first right to it; but there being a residuary legatee, this right became superseded. The parties claiming under this latter character were not residuary legatees themselves specifically, but merely derivatively from one who was. They were, therefore, one step further removed from the property. The presumption of law was certainly always in favour of the heir at law with regard to freehold, and equally so of the next of kin with regard to personal property; the statute of distribution disposing of an intestate's property among his next relatives solely upon the presumption that such was his intention, unless the contrary should be expressed. It was, therefore, incumbent upon the representatives of the wife, in this case, to prove her survivorship, as the party in whom the property vested, and from whom in consequence they derived their claim to it. He then entered into an explanation of the

facts in evidence, and was of opinion that they were insufficient to repel the presumption of the husband's having survived the wife, which the Court was bound to assume, from the circumstance of their having been overwhelmed by one common calamity, and having perished together; observing in particular that though the wife might be very active and laborious in her domestic duties, yet the natural timidity of her sex might prevent exertion in the moment of danger; whilst the husband, on the other hand, though labouring under the bodily affliction of an asthma, might still retain his manly firmness in resisting impending destruction, particularly as, from his situation in life, he must have often faced death in various shapes. He was, therefore, in no degree satisfied by the proofs in the cause that the wife survived the husband, and should, therefore decree the administration to his next of kin. In thus deciding the law, however, he did not mean to affirm positively which of the two was the survivor, but merely that there was not sufficient proof that it was the wife to repel the presumption of law that it was the husband. The administration was accordingly granted to the husband's next of kin. (Pages 387, 388.)

75. Re Selwyn.—(3 *Hagg*, 749. *Prerogative Court*, 1831.)—Mr. Selwyn, of the War-office, with his lady, perished in the disastrous accident to the "Rothsay Castle" steamboat (1831). By his will he appointed Mrs. Selwyn his executrix, but in case she should die during his lifetime other executors were appointed. The circumstances of their death raised the question whether the contingency provided for in the will had occurred, and whether the wife's representatives or the executors named in the event of her prior death, were to take administration.

The case came before the English Prerogative Court, November 7, 1831. The Court said that in other similar cases it had been held, as both parties might be supposed to have perished together, that the wife could not have survived the husband; but in this case the words were "in case she should die in my lifetime." The presumption was that the husband, as the strongest of the two, survived the longest; and as it was the clear intention of the testator that the representatives of the wife should not take the adminstration, and as there was no attempt on the part of those representatives to establish an intestacy, the Court decreed probate to the executors (Pages 387, 388.)

76. American Journal of Med. Sciences, July, 1845.—On June 14th, 1838, Hugh Swinton Ball, his wife, and adopted daughter were lost on board the steamer "Pulaski," off the coast of America. An explosion took place at 11 P.M., the husband and wife being in different parts of the vessel. Mr. Ball *was not seen after* the explosion, although the exact time of his death was not known. Mrs. Ball *was seen afterwards*, rushing about frantically, and calling for her husband. She was soon missed, however, the deck where she was going under water. All were lost.

By will Mr. Ball had left his property to his wife, and her heirs now claimed it on the ground that she survived her husband.

The defendants argued that as the time of the wife's death could be fixed, whilst that of the husband's could not, it was fair to presume she died first.

Chancellor Johnson decided for the plaintiffs (*viz.*, that Mrs. Ball survived her husband). He admitted the onus was on the plaintiffs to prove that she survived, but he considered the fact that Mr. Ball did not appear after the explosion, whilst his wife was seen and recognised, was sufficient.

On appeal this decision was confirmed. (Pages 388, 394)

77. Ommaney v. Stillwell.—(23 *Bevan*, 328.)—(*Rolls Court*, 1856.)—This case arose out of the Franklin Expedition of 1845.

The question was,—Did James Couch or his son Edward die first?

The father died in January, 1850.

The son was mate (one of 133 persons of the expedition) on Franklin's ship "Erebus," which left England in 1845. Dr. Rae gave evidence that he was informed, in 1854, by certain Esquimaux, that in 1850 they saw a party of about thirty men pulling at a boat, one man (probably Sir John Franklin) acting as leader. The exact time was fixed as May, because they were seen to kill some birds that never visited the region before May. There was nothing, however, to show that Edward Couch was one of this party seen in 1850.

To avoid further litigation, however, and as one of the chief clerks had decided in favour of the son as survivor, the Court confirmed the chief clerk's report. (Page 394.)

78. Case before Scotch Court of Session, 1857.—Adam Fairholme, who died in May, 1853, left his property to his nephew, James Walter Fairholme, R.N., who went out as Lieutenant on board the "Erebus," in Franklin's Expedition (May, 1845). George Fairholme, another nephew, had instituted an action to have it found, under the destination of a codicil, that he was entitled to the whole of the testator's personal estate, valued at £37,509. This was opposed by other relatives, whose interests depended on whether or not James Walter survived his father. Proof by commission was taken with the view of legally establishing the questions raised in the case, and among those examined were Dr. Rae, Sir John Richardson, James Hargreave (chief factor in the service of the Hudson's Bay Company), Captain Penney, and others. Dr. Rae expressed his belief that those persons who were reported to have been seen in the spring of 1850, must have died in the May of that year, and these he believed to have been the last survivors of Franklin's party. James Hargreave thought that some of the party might have survived a single winter after they had been seen by the Esquimaux in 1850, but certainly not longer. Sir John Richardson said: "That if any of the party reached the country where they were said to have

been seen at the end of the winter of 1849-50, it was impossible for them to survive a single year with any means they could have at their disposal." Captain Penney remarked: "I do not think that any of the party could have survived 1852; they must either have perished from hunger, or the hostile attacks of the natives." The Lord Ordinary (Mackenzie) reported the whole circumstances of the case to the Inner House, expressing his own opinion that there was thus strong presumptive evidence that Lieutenant Fairholme perished, together with his companions, some time prior to the end of 1852, and consequently that he pre-deceased his uncle, the testator, who died in May, 1853. His lordship thought that, under these circumstances, the pursuer, George Fairholme, was entitled to a decree in his favour, but qualified by this condition, that before payment, he should grant a bond with sufficient security to warrant the defender against all hazard from any claim to the money decerned for by Lieutenant Fairholme or others in his right. (Page 394.)

79. Green v. Green.—(*Vice-Chancellor's Court, July*, 1861.)—Testator died in August, 1838, leaving by his will (dated April, 1838) £30 a year to his son James Green, and on his death the sum of £750 to his children, or if he had no issue to his brothers and sisters living at the time of James Green's death. James Green went to New South Wales in September, 1840. On February 1st, 1843, he wrote and acknowledged the receipt of his £30. So far as was known he died without issue. One of his brothers, Edward Green, died January 25th, 1846. The question before the Court was—Is it to be presumed that James Green died before or after his brother Edward Green? If before, Edward Green's children would be entitled to a share of the £750; but if after, they would not be so entitled.

The Vice-Chancellor ruled that the burden of proof lay on the plaintiff, who alleged that James was alive when his brother Edward died. The Vice-Chancellor decided that it must be presumed, seeing that nothing was heard of James after February 1st, 1843, that he died before Edward (January 25th, 1846.) (Pages 382, 394.)

80. Greetham v. Milnes.—(*Rolls Court*, 1871.)—A question arose in reference to the survivorship of one Hentig, who was a member of Dr. Leichhardt's exploring party in Australia. The party left Sydney for the interior in February, 1848, with the intention of traversing the continent, and were not afterwards heard of. The testator died in February, 1850, having bequeathed property to Hentig, who was his nephew. The heir at law of the testator claimed the property on the ground that Hentig died before the testator, who did not die until two years after Hentig was last seen and known to be alive. The heir at law of Hentig rested his claim on the absence of any proof of death at any time, and that the members of the expedition, including Hentig, might have survived at least two years in Central Australia. The Master of the Rolls said that the inference he must

draw from the established facts was that Hentig died within a year of the exploring party leaving Sydney, and that the heir at law of the testator was therefore entitled to the property. (Page 394.)

81. In re Lewis's Trusts.—(40 *L. J. Ch.* 602 ; *L. R.* 6 *Ch.* App. 356.)—[The death of a legatee is presumed after he has not been heard of for seven years, and there is no presumption of law that he lived beyond the first day of the seven years ; but the onus of proving that he survived a given day lies on those who claim under him.]

In this case the question was whether a legatee did or did not survive a testator so as to take a sum of £4,000 bequeathed to him under the will, dated 1858. The testator died on February 20, 1860. The legatee, Thomas Lewis, went to Australia in the year 1858, and the last that was heard of him was by a letter written to a cousin dated January 3, 1859. Seven years having elapsed he was presumed to be dead, but the question was whether he survived his father. The Vice-Chancellor said that the law in cases of this kind presumed the continuance of life until the expiration of seven years, when the contrary presumption of death arose. The case of "Phene's trust" (p. 406) (39 *L. J., Ch.* 316) had, however, displaced that rule, and had laid down that in all cases it was incumbent on a person claiming property by reason of a person being alive at any particular time to establish affirmatively that fact. It was manifest, therefore, that the representatives of the legatee, in order to claim their legacy, must show that the legatee survived the testator—the onus probandi being, according to the case cited, thrown upon them. They had not discharged, and could not discharge, that onus ; therefore, as he was bound by the case in the Court of Appeal, he must hold that the legacy was never validly given, and that the residuary legatee took the fund as part of the estate. (Page 380.)

82. Huelin v. Wilson.—(*Vice-Chancellor Malins, July,* 1871.)—The question was whether the deceased Huelin survived his housekeeper or not. He had made a bequest in favour of this woman. In May, 1870, Huelin and his housekeeper were found dead in a house at Brompton. They had obviously been murdered. The body of Huelin was found buried, while that of the woman was packed in a box, and had marks about it of more recent death. The medical and circumstantial evidence left no doubt that the murder of the woman had not taken place until after the death of Huelin the testator, and the Vice-Chancellor decided accordingly that she survived to take the bequest. (Pages 388, 390.)

83. Broughton v. Randall.—(*See Med. Jur., J. A. Paris, M.D., p.* 390.) *Crokes Elizabeth,* 502.)—A father and son, both of whom were hanged at the same time, were seised as joint tenants and to the heirs of the son. The son was held to have struggled the longest and therefore to have sur-

vived the father, the evidence being that a certain shaking of his legs and other signs of life were noticed in his case. The wife of the son on this evidence was held entitled to her dower. (Page 382.)

84. British and Foreign Med. Chir. Review, p. 189.—A large sugar-warehouse, situated in Alston-street, was suddenly destroyed as follows. A rise was expected in the price of sugar, and the firm to whom the establishment belonged, thinking to profit thereby, bought up and incautiously stowed on the second floor of the building innumerable large hogsheads of the said material. The floor thus immoderately strained, gave way, and in so doing pushed out the sides of the building, causing its utter demolition. The men who were employed on the premises at the time were of course involved, and it was found on removing the rubbish, with a view to saving such as still survived, that death, as a rule, prevailed in proportion as the *débris* was cleared away—in other words, those who had been at the top of the building, and who consequently were supplied with a certain amount of fresh air, escaped with more or less severe injuries; while those employed in the second and ground floors were, with few exceptions, found dead. The subject of one of the exceptions, according to his own account, had been struck down by a falling beam, which resting at an angle above him, at once protected him from descending splinters and the deplorable effects of suffocation. (Pages 390, 391.)

85. Beck's Med. Juris., pp. 211, 213.—A number of individuals perished by the fall of a building, and among them a father aged sixty, and his son aged thirty. The bodies were found ten hours after the accident. That of the father was uninjured, but on the head of the son there was a severe wound. The heirs of each put forth their claims, and Zacchias was consulted on the case. After a long comparison between the strength and state of health of the parties, he came to the conclusion that the son survived the father. Being aware, however, that the wound in question was supposed to have accelerated the death of the son, he endeavours to avoid the difficulty by suggesting that it was not necessarily mortal, nor of a nature to destroy his strength immediately; while the suffocation was so much the more urgent cause of death, that the father, from his valetudinarian state and his advanced age, would be first destroyed by it. (Pages 386, 390, 391.)

86. Medical Times and Gazette, July 15, 1876.—(*Before Vice-Chancellor Malins.*)—A solicitor died intestate in 1869, but possessed of large property. He had three children—an elder son, a daughter, and a younger son. His son was last seen in 1868, having been sent away from his father's house. At the father's death advertisements were issued for him unsuccessfully. The daughter married, and died before the case was heard, her son bringing the action. When this daughter married she made a

settlement that affected any money that came to her by her elder brother's death. Hence the real question at issue was—Was the brother alive when she died? because, if so, she could not deal with money over which she had no control.

(1.) Did the son die before the father? because, if he did, he could have no share in the property, and it would be divided between the two survivors. The Vice-Chancellor decided that he must be considered alive in 1869.

(2.) Therefore, the son being alive, was the property still to be held in reserve for him, should he turn up? This was 1876. Seven years had elapsed since he was last heard of. Therefore the Vice-Chancellor decided his share in the estate might be disposed of.

(3.) But the sister was also dead. Did the brother or sister die first? If the *sister*, the elder brother's share would be divided amongst the next of kin; if the *brother*, then it would be subject to the marriage settlement. The period of the sister's death was known, but not the brother's. The executors could not prove the date of the brother's death (even if he was dead), and this they were bound to do. The Vice-Chancellor decided that the elder brother having inherited, and by law presumed to be dead, his inheritance must be divided amongst the next of kin (viz., his younger brother and his nephew, the plaintiff). (Page 394.)

CHAPTER VIII.

HEAT AND COLD.

(CONSIDERED MEDICO-LEGALLY.)

The Temperatures of Health and Disease.—The Tolerance of the Body for Extremes of Heat and Cold.—(A) The Effects of Extreme Cold.—Symptoms.—The Treatment of Persons Suffering from Exposure to Cold.—Post-Mortem Appearances.—(B) The effects of Extreme Heat.—Thermic Fever.—Sunstoke.—Symptoms.—Treatment.—Post-Mortem Appearances.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 444.)

Extremes of Temperature considered generally.

IN health, the body has an average temperature in the mouth and axilla of 98·6° F. (37° C. or 29·6° R.), whilst in the rectum and vagina, the temperature usually is from 0·9° to 1·3° F. higher. The daily range (excursus) rarely exceeds 1·8° F.(= 1° C.) above or below the average stated. In other words, the axillary temperature may *fall* to about 97° F. (36·1° C.) without collapse, or *rise* to 100° F. (37·77° C.) without fever.*

Heat production in the body is admittedly a complex problem. At any rate all are agreed that the body temperature is of internal origin, external heat playing no other part than as an economiser of the heat generated within. And again, whatever other internal sources of heat there may be (such as muscular movements, capillary friction, etc.), the chief part results from tissue change, and the decomposition of nutritive substances.

Thus it would seem that the heat-regulating power of the human body suffices in health by the use of appropriate food,

* Even in children, where the temperature is very mobile, these limits are rarely exceeded.

clothing (*British Med. Journ.*, 1874, II., p. 824), and other means, to preserve the temperature within a very narrow range—age, sex, condition in life, season of year, climate, &c., apparently making little difference. (*Lancet*, March 13, 1880, p. 430.)

But in most diseases, and after accidents, the temperature usually rises or falls beyond the normal. On this fact the use of the clinical thermometer depends.

Thus the body temperature in cases of accident and in certain diseases may become very high, 108° F. being common in severe agues and in neuroses, whilst 115° F. has been attained in scarlet fever. Even a temperature of 122° F. is recorded by Mr. Teale, after injuries occasioned by a fall from a horse (Meeting of Clinical Society, Feb. 26th, 1875).

Or taking the opposite condition of very low temperatures, Dr. J. J. Reincke (*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*, April, 1876) records the case of a man, æt. 34, picked up in a state of intoxication at midnight (the thermometer in the air registering 30° F.), whose temperature in the rectum at 8 a.m. was only 75° F. After two hours it rose to 77° F., and at 12 noon reached 82° F. Reaction then set in, when the temperature rose above the normal. He recovered perfectly. In another case of alcoholism recorded by Magnall, where a man was exposed to a cold and damp atmosphere, his temperature sank as low as 78·8° F. (26° C.)*

But these cases of very high and of very low temperatures are exceptional. The high temperatures of fevers are often tolerated, and terminate favourably, because there are remissions. Many consumptives live for months with a temperature greatly above the average, because at some hour of the day or night (if not every day, at least every other day), it falls either to the normal, or very near it. But as general laws the two following statements may be received:—

(1.) *If the temperature of a warm-blooded animal be raised by*

* Very high, and sometimes very low, temperatures occur shortly before death. Very acute diseases, especially neuroses, such as tetanus, &c., and fevers (including cholera) are known to exhibit great heat just before and after death.

any means 11° *to* 13° *F.* (=6·1° *to* 7·20° *C.*) *above the normal for any length of time, death is inevitable.**

Bernard's experiments show that even 7° to 9° F. *plus* the normal heat, if continued, kills most animals. In such cases cadaveric rigidity sets in rapidly, is strongly marked, and lasts a long time.

(2.) *If a warm-blooded animal is kept in a cold so intense that its normal temperature is depressed for any length of time* 18° *to* 27° *F.* (= 10° *or* 15° *C.*), *death is inevitable.*

This was shown experimentally by Walther's experiments. In the case of rabbits, it has been found that they die immediately their temperature is reduced 16·2° F. (9° C.) below the normal. Artificial respiration may restore some which have not been quite so much cooled, but unless artificial respiration is used, it has been found that a long exposure to cold prevents their regaining warmth, even in a warm atmosphere. Some of the lower animals may no doubt be completely frozen, and yet recover; and stories of the resuscitation of frozen human beings are on record. On this point we may say, that we have no authentic case of recovery where the whole body has been frozen. No doubt parts of the body may be frozen without much harm resulting. Thus John Hunter and others showed that the ears of rabbits and the combs of cocks may be so frozen as to be rendered hard and brittle, and yet recover vitality with proper care.† Experience shows not only a wonderful *law of tolerance* as regards extremes of temperature borne by different nations, but also of tolerance in respect to individuals, e.g. aëronauts, Arctic explorers, &c.

* See Richardson (*Med. Times and Gazette*, Jan. 9, 1869), Bernard, Chossat, De la Roche, Berger (*Experiences sur les Effets qu'une forte Chaleur produit sur l'Economie*, Paris, 1805; *Journal de Physique*, t. 63, 71, and 77).

† See some experiments on toads, in the "London and Edinburgh Journal of Medical Science," Feb. 1843. For the effects of cold on cold-blooded animals, see a series of experiments by Doehnhoff, recorded in the *London Medical Record*, 1873, p. 387; also Experiments by Prof. Horvath, of *Kiew*, *British Med. Journ.*, 1873, I., p. 204.

This subject may become important in relation to questions of survivorship. Thus it may be necessary to consider which sex, and whether the young, the middle-aged, or the old, bear extremes of heat and cold best. Our answer to this question, so far as experience and experiments allow us to formulate a reply, must be as follows :—

(*a.*) *The very young, and the very old, have limited powers of heat-production. They, therefore, bear extreme cold badly. Young adults bear cold best, whilst young males bear cold better than females of the same age.*

Ricord has shown that the mortality from cold is twice as great in those under 20 years of age, as in those between 20 and 40, but that after 40 the power of resisting cold diminishes to such an extent, that the danger to life is doubled for every additional nine years.—("*Lancet*," 1874, II., p. 844. See also Dr. Buchan's Paper in the "*Medical Times and Gazette*," 1879, I., 93; "*British Med. Journ.*," 1875, II., p. 791.) (See page 425.)

(*b.*) *The young are said to bear extreme heat better than the middle-aged or the old.*

Beck states this on the authority of Burckhardt, but it requires in our opinion, further confirmation. Many of the victims of sunstroke are young people, and one of the earliest recorded cases was that of a child (2 *Kings* iv. 18).

From the facts we have noted—(1) of the narrow range of health temperatures, and (2) of the well-marked alterations of temperature in certain diseases—it follows that few things are more trying to the body, even in health, than rapid changes of temperature. Men live and thrive, it is true, both in the Tropics and in the extreme North and South; but those seasons and places in which there is a great diversity of temperature during the 24 hours, are deemed unhealthy. The one circumstance in which the various "health resorts" agree, (and they agree in nothing else, for some are very warm, and others very cold) is that the daily fluctuations of temperature are comparatively slight.

As regards *external* temperatures, it is not easy to fix any limit to the degree of either heat or cold, that may not be tem-

porarily borne by the human body, without its being frozen or burnt to death. The skin is a conductor of low power. It is, in fact, an apparatus of isolation and regulation, being braced up and tense in cold weather, and relaxed in hot. Hence, to keep the skin healthy in winter time (and to be healthy it must be clean), is as necessary as to keep it warm. It is impossible to fix the precise time required to transmit the external heat or cold through the skin to the structures beneath, so much depending, in this respect, on the vitality of the integuments; and it is no doubt because of this difference of transmission, that heat and cold are so differently borne by different people.

Extreme external cold with proper precautions may be tolerated. Thus Captain Nares and his men lived for some weeks in 100 degrees of frost. I have known an omnibus driver frozen to his seat, and the reins to his hands, and at the same time rendered partially insensible, by exposure to cold on a severe winter's night, and yet recover after treatment. (*Case* 2.)

When strong and healthy warm-blooded animals are immersed in ice-cold water, they rapidly sink even if they are swimmers, death as a rule being rapid and free from pain. It has been supposed that this result is due to cramp preventing them making exertion. Dr. Richardson thinks it due to peripheral nervous shock and sudden exhaustion of the nervous centres, by the direct extraction of animal heat.

Still, cases of an opposite kind are recorded. Thus Dr. Richardson states he has known a kitten recover after two hours' immersion in ice-cold water. A case is mentioned where a man immersed in water at the freezing point for twelve minutes was resuscitated (Dr. Belgrave). Richardson has shown how a carp, solidified by cold and apparently dead, may be restored to active life, by the cautious addition of warm water to the ice-cold water in which it was immersed. (See "*Med. Times and Gazette*," Feb. 18, 1871, p. 182.)

Equally remarkable are the extremes of heat that the human body will bear for a short time. Thus Chabert, the "Fire King," was in the habit of entering an oven, the temperature of which was from 400° to 600° F. (205° to 315° C.). In such cases the

skin no doubt becomes protected by a covering of steam from the vaporisation of the perspiration, the water gas formed being a bad conductor of heat, the evil effects that might otherwise occur being in this manner prevented.

A.—Effects of Extreme Cold.

The application of cold has on more than one occasion been employed homicidally (*Cases* 7 & 8). As a rule, however, death from cold is accidental, and is certainly not likely to be suicidal.

An extreme winter invariably increases the general rate of mortality, the increase being chiefly amongst children and the aged. Dr. Carpenter ("*Principles of Human Physiology*," 7th Ed., p. 497) quotes an interesting table from Quetelet's "*Essai de Physique Sociale*" (tom. I., p. 197), in which this fact is strikingly shown by the mortality at various ages in Brussels, during different months of the year. MM. Villerme and Milne-Edwards have given us similar statistics in respect to the mortality of children in French foundling hospitals. That a fall of temperature affects even the well-to-do classes in England, is shown by the "Deaths" column in the "*Times*" during the winter months.

It has been already noted that "although the surface may appear to be chilled by external cold, the underlying parts of the body are not, at first, necessarily lowered in temperature. If the skin be well developed, and possess the power to contract and maintain its tonicity, the resistance will be kept up sufficiently long to enable the organism within to accumulate heat for its maintenance at a natural temperature, so that when the skin relaxes, the surface will indicate by what we call 'a glow' the establishment of a defensive state. If cold be again applied, either by a blast of cold air or by the contact of wet clothing, the skin may again contract, when the process of heat-accumulation, with the local determination elicited by the stimulus to the nervous system, will probably be repeated; but, unless the skin happens to be structurally and functionally developed to an extent scarcely possible at any part of the surface which is habitually covered by clothing, there will rapidly come a time

when the external cold will no longer cause healthy contraction, and no reaction is likely to occur. When that moment arrives—and it may be very early in the case of weakly persons—the isolating properties of the integument will be exhausted, and either the body may be rapidly cooled, or a special call will be made on the apparatus of internal heat, leading to a rate of production which will establish what we call fever." ("*Lancet*," Dec. 6, 1879.)

It is of primary importance in considering cases of this kind that we should bear in mind that the evil effects of severe cold are greatly intensified by certain conditions. Thus fatigue, exhaustion from want of food (because internal warmth is not generated in sufficient quantity to make up for the loss) (see "*Edin. Med. Journ.*," XIII., p. 858), mental depression, habits of intoxication (*Case* 3), previous illness, in fact anything that tends to lower the physical powers, will predispose to the severe or fatal effects of cold. These two facts therefore are of importance to bear in mind forensically; (1) that a cold which would kill one person might do no harm to a second, and (2) that a cold which at one time might do no harm to a person, would, at another time, to the same person, prove fatal.

Again, a damp cold, such as wet clothing, a cold and damp atmosphere, partial immersion in water during cold weather, etc., is far more depressing and dangerous than a dry cold. A strong wind by accelerating evaporation has also a powerful influence in intensifying the injurious action of cold. [See Wunderlich on "*Temperature*," New Sydenham Society's Translation, pp. 128, 322, &c.; also a Lecture on the Effects of Cold by Prof. Parrot ("*Progrès Médical*," March 13, 1880).].

There are four cases in particular where exposure to cold may form the subject of legal enquiry; viz., (I.) *in new-born infants;* (II.) *in young children;* (III.) *in the insane; and* (IV.) *in those who have received serious wounds.*

(I.) *In New-born Infants.*—A living child, warm from the womb, soon succumbs if it is left unclothed, or if it is exposed to the air of a cold apartment, or if it is allowed to lie on cold stones, &c. A warm room and warm clothing are the indispensable requirements of a new-born child. (*Cases* 14 to 20.)

In cases where a mother is charged with causing the death of her child by its exposure, the medical jurist must consider four questions :—

(1.) Was the child mature, and was it born alive?

(2.) Does the post-mortem reveal either such diseased conditions or such marks of violence as may account for death? If not, are the appearances consistent with death from cold (see page 433), viz. :—

(α.) An arterial colour of blood.

(β.) An accumulation of blood on both sides of the heart, and in the larger blood vessels.

(γ.) An extreme pallor of the surface of the body, with congestion of the viscera.

(δ.) The existence of frost erythems.

(3.) Is the place where the body was found, the conditions under which it was exposed, and the temperature at the time of the exposure, such as would probably destroy the life of a new-born child?

(4.) Having regard to the history of the birth—was the exposure of the child (α) *accidental* (as in the case of rapid delivery whilst the mother is walking about and no one within hearing, syncope from loss of blood preventing her giving attention to the necessities of her offspring, or calling to others to assist her) (*Cases* 16 and 18); or (β) was it the result of *culpable negligence*, or (γ) of *reckless indifference* (such as the abandonment of the child), which constitutes *manslaughter* (*Cases* 14 and 15), (infanticide by omission)—or (δ) was the exposure an act of *wilful malice* (*murder*).

(II.) *In Young Children.*—A person may be charged with accelerating the death of a child by a course of treatment pursued ignorantly but with the best intention; whilst such treatment may be adopted by others in such manner as to escape the arm of the law, nevertheless with the certain object of getting rid of the child.

Although it is from the prolonged application of intense cold that dangerous symptoms usually occur, it is well to remember that not unimportant results may follow comparatively slight

chills. (*Case* 1.) A cold bath in winter (that is, water at the temperature of the day), considering that the internal heat of the body is practically the same winter and summer, is a "luxury" of very doubtful general advantage (*Cases* 11 and 21). It is strange to note the satisfaction and glee with which some parents will tell how their children (including an infant, may be of a few months old) go out, and that not unlikely in perambulators, every day in the winter, except when the weather is too bad;—or that they never miss their cold bath in the morning, breaking the ice for the purpose, as though there was some special virtue in such uncalled for ablutions;—or that they have never accustomed them to fires in their bedrooms, because they want them to grow up strong and hardy. Bare arms, necks, and legs may be a pleasure to the eyes of parents, but certain is it that they are not a luxury to the children, and far from seldom prove the starting point of many serious ills in after life. Given a temperature below 50° F., it is absurd to expose children to outdoor cold, if they are too young to walk or run. Perambulators were invented with far greater consideration for the feelings of parents and nurses than for the health of children. Admitting that with proper exceptions a cold sponge bath may be of service to adults, we doubt whether even in their case good can result from the daily total immersion of the body, whilst it is certain that in children such a course of treatment is dangerous in the extreme. "If the cold bath in winter be so used as merely to stimulate the organism to increased activity, and there could be some guarantee that the heat production corresponds to the heat parted with, it may be all very well. The proof of benefit is stimulation, viz., redness and steaming of the surface. But if stimulation be not induced evil must result, and the chances are too serious to venture."—*Lancet*," 1879, I., p. 129.)

No doubt children are to be met with of more than ordinary strength, where the rapidity and intensity of the reaction saves them from the evil effects of the cold bath, but the risk even then is far too great to justify its daily repetition. The morning's bath (needful as a matter of cleanliness and to keep the skin healthy), should be a thorough washing with water between 75°

and 80° F., reaction and healthy circulation being obtained by means of efficient friction.* The sleeping room for children should never be below 60° F., nor the living room below 65° F. Sufficient clothing, by which we imply coverings for the arms, legs and neck, should be provided. And all this is naturally suggested when we consider the necessity for maintaining warmth, more particularly in the case of children, and the danger certain to result from a prolonged application of intense cold to the entire surface of the body. That serious symptoms may arise from neglect of these precautions is certain, and the medical jurist may be called upon to consider how far they have been persevered in with criminal intent, under the plea of bringing up a child strong and vigorous.

(III.) *In the Insane.*—In mania the patient is frequently *insensible*, so far as his feelings are concerned, both to cold and heat; although he is equally, and perhaps even more *susceptible* to their effects than a person in health. Thus for all the madman cares he will lie naked out of doors on cold stones in the coldest winter weather; or, on the other hand, carelessly handle red hot coals. Should such a case become one of legal enquiry, it must be remembered that exposure to cold under circumstances of apparent barbarity, may be the act of a madman, and not one of cruelty forced upon him, either as a punishment by his keeper, or for criminal purposes by those whom it may be supposed have an interest in his death.

In Case 21 it would seem that a cold shower bath at 45° F. (7·22 C.), followed by a dose of tartar emetic, caused the death of a lunatic in 15 minutes.

* It is commonly supposed that if a person be heated and perspiring, a *cold bath* (as for example a sea or river plunge in summer time) is injurious. Undoubtedly it is, if the person stops in the water too long, but not otherwise. On this point we would urge that everyone must decide for himself what suits, and what does not suit, him; but speaking generally, we may say that such a cold bath is only dangerous when the person is cold, and not when he is hot, provided he does not stay in too long. Dr. Copeland calls special attention to the injurious effects of a cold bath when the body is much fatigued by muscular exertions, sexual excesses, and the like. For want of knowing or attending to this, Alexander the Great nearly lost his life.

(IV.) *In the case of the Wounded.*—The increased danger of wounds resulting from exposure to cold, may prove important medico-legally. Undoubtedly a wound from which a person would rapidly recover if the injury were properly cared for, might under circumstances of long continued exposure, assume serious importance, and even endanger life by inducing complications, such as tetanus. (See Paper by Professor Verneuil, "*Gaz. des Hôp.*," November 13, 1879; "*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1879, II., p. 601.) An important forensic question of this nature is possible, seeing how a comparatively slight wound administered without murderous intent, might in this manner prove fatal.

Beck has collected a number of cases of sudden death *from drinking cold water when heated.* We believe these cases do not strictly belong to the effects of cold, but are far more akin to *heat-apoplexy.* Many people drink freely of the coldest drinks, and partake of ices when very hot, with perfect impunity. When the use of ices first became common in America and England, there were dreadful prognostications as to their effects, which certainly have, for the most part been falsified. Still, cases of sudden death occur from time to time after the ingestion of great quantities of cold water by persons violently heated. Such results may be explained in various ways:—

(1.) That in most of the cases there has been extreme fatigue, and the body subjected to great heat. Death may therefore result from syncope, exhaustion, or solar apoplexy.

(2.) In others, the ingestion of a large quantity of water may cause the red blood corpuscles to swell inordinately, and so produce blocks (thrombosis) and consequent congestion in the capillaries of the lungs and other organs.

(3.) In a few, death may be due to the shock which the fall of temperature produced by the cold liquid has caused to the heart.

Symptoms produced by Cold.

The application of extreme cold to the surface of the body effects a manifest depression of the heart's action. The primary results are certain painful feelings, and a purple lividity of skin,

upon which blisters frequently form. These are succeeded by headache and occasional vomiting (*Case* 1), numbness, anæsthesia ("*Lancet*," 1873, I., p. 779, and "*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1879, I., p. 347), and a marked pallor of the skin. With the hyperæmic condition of the organs consequent upon the blood being forced inwards, we often find congestion of the genitals and priapism. A low temperature and a feeble weak pulse are commonly noted, but a high temperature has also been recorded. (*Case* 1.) Stiffness of the limbs, chiefly due to impaired contractile power of the muscles, torpor, and a condition of coma resulting from congestion of the nervous centres, and from which the sufferer can only be roused with great difficulty, follow in due course. (C. Bernard found that the blood absorbed less oxygen at a low temperature. "*Leçons*," 1859, p. 114.) Lastly, a complete suspension of respiration and of the heart's action ensue, and the victim perishes (*coup de froid*).

We are indebted to Lieut. Payer for an interesting account of the effects of an intense arctic cold. We must, however, remark that some of the symptoms detailed, read as though they were the results of scurvy, rather than the effects of severe cold pure and simple. (Geographical Society of Vienna —see "*London Med. Rec.*," July 15, 1875.) He states that the men were unable to touch a metal cup with their lips or hands, because it felt like red hot iron. He also remarks that the cold seemed to paralyse the will, so that the men, from the unsteadiness of their gait, stammering talk, and slowness of mental operations, seemed as if intoxicated,—effects no doubt due to congestion of the brain. Further, the cold created a tormenting thirst. If to relieve this, snow was put into the mouth, it speedily caused inflammation of the throat, palate, and tongue. The smell and taste, he remarks, were much enfeebled. If locomotion was stopped, owing to the sleepiness induced, the soles of the feet rapidly became insensible. The secretion of the eyes and nose was greatly increased, whilst perspiration almost entirely ceased. (A further account of the effects of severe cold and privations are recorded in *Case* 9.)

Further we may add that severe nervous symptoms, such as tetanic convulsions and delirium (*Case* 1), have been recorded.

Amongst *the minor effects of cold*, chilblains and sores on the extremities, which are often slow to heal, may be mentioned. (*Case* 10.) In what is called *frostbite*, the part which at first was livid, cold, and numb, becomes almost bloodless, of an ashy grey colour, perfectly insensible, and much reduced in bulk. The nose, ears or extremities are the parts most likely to suffer. ("*Lancet*," 1871, I., 26, 60.)

A case of gangrene of the lungs and death, following immersion in cold water, is recorded. (*Case* 11.)

Sometimes death from cold is very rapid (*Case* 21), whilst at other times it takes place after a considerable interval. (*Cases* 1, 13.) Severe cases not unfrequently recover if promptly treated. (*Cases* 2, 12.)

The period of reaction is not without its danger. As a fact the depression of the heart's action mentioned as resulting from the application of cold, is liable to increase rather than to lessen, as the cold is discontinued. (See Draper, "*Amer. Journ. of Science and Art*," IV., Dec., 1872.) Under ordinary conditions, a series of symptoms occurs during reaction, similar in many respects to those succeeding the shock resulting from a blow. (*Richardson.*)

If the parts already subjected to a great cold be warmed too suddenly, *gangrene* is apt to set in. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1871, II., p. 678.) No doubt in cases where the patients are otherwise out of health, this result is specially liable to occur. (*Case* 12.) Further, the condition of the shins and ankles of persons (more especially in the case of the old and ill-fed) who during or after exposure to severe cold have crouched over fires, is often of such a nature that it might be supposed they were suffering from contusions and bruises the result of violence. Baron Larrey ("*Méd. de Chirurg. Milit.*," tom. III., p. 60) records how during the French campaign in Poland, for a few days before and after the battle of Eylau (Feb. 7th and 8th 1807), there was a cold ranging from 10° to 13° below zero of Réaumur (=20° to 25° below freezing F.). Snow fell during most of the battle. But though the troops were day and night exposed to this most inclement weather, and the soldiers of the Imperial Guard in particular were nearly motion-

less for twenty-four hours, there were no evil results. But on the night of the 9th of February, a sudden thaw commenced, and immediately a great number of soldiers presented themselves at the ambulances, complaining of severe numbness, pain, and pricking of the feet. Some had merely symptoms like those of chilblains or frostbite, but many had gangrene, the toes having already become dry and black, whilst in some the entire foot had perished. Mr. Solly mentions a similar case. (South's "*Chelius*," Vol. I., p. 128; Druitt's "*Surgery*," ch. V., p. 156; Miller's "*Principles of Surgery*," p. 275.)

In Case 12 we have recorded some of the more severe effects of cold in the case of an unhealthy and diseased constitution.

During reaction a temperature indicating fever frequently results.

Treatment of Persons exposed to Extreme Cold.

The great principle of treatment, is *to restore the warmth of the part gradually*. To do this it should be rubbed with snow or iced water, substituting after a time cold water for the iced water, and at a later period dry friction. No fire should be in the room (if a small one) where the patient is, or if the room is large, he should be at a considerable distance from the fire. The limb, when a certain warmth has been attained, should be wrapped in some non-conducting material such as cotton wool. If the whole body be much chilled, the patient should be put to bed in a room of moderate temperature, and dry friction or stimulating embrocations employed. Hot coffee ("*Lancet*," 1876, II., p. 844), or hot wine and water should be administered, and for some reasons the former is preferable. Alcohol certainly should be avoided during exposure to cold, but may be advantageously given afterwards. ("*Lancet*," Jan., 1876.)

To guard against the evil effects of cold, the use of non-conducting clothing (furs, flannels, &c.), a tolerably liberal diet, and artificial warmth and exercise, are the chief means at our command.

We must not omit to mention the *uses of cold in surgery*, with which the name of Esmarch is especially connected. The physician is often taunted with employing both heat and cold in

the treatment of inflammation, using the one if the other fails. The key to this apparent paradox is to be found in the fact that the effects of extreme heat and of extreme cold on the body are in many respects very similar. (*Case* 11.) As an example, both produce vesications.

Post-mortem Appearances.

Rigor mortis (for which the stiffness of a frozen body must not be mistaken) generally sets in slowly, and lasts a long time.

If the medical jurist be asked whether, judging by the post-mortem in any given case, *exposure to cold was, or was not, the primary cause of death*, he should, we are convinced, rely rather on common sense than on any special post-mortem appearances. The absence of other signs and causes of death (especially the absence of marks of violence)—the season of the year—the place where, and the circumstances under which, the body was found—the external temperature, etc., must in such cases be specially considered.

Dr. Ogston, who has recorded the results of the post-mortem inspection (in all) of 16 bodies after death from cold ("*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*," 1855), states that, given the absence of any other obvious cause of death, and the presence of the following four post-mortem appearances, the medical jurist would be justified in stating, if not with absolute certainty at any rate with high probability, that death resulted from exposure to cold. He, however, remarks that in children the appearances were not so characteristic as in adults.

(1.) *An arterial hue of the blood generally*, except when viewed in mass within the heart. In two of the cases this bright colour of the blood was not observed by Ogston. This arterial blood tint is mentioned by Blosfeld of Kasan (Henke's "*Zeitschrift*," 1860) as occurring in his nine cases of death from cold, and by Dr. Hilty in his case (*Case* 3). Neither Krajewsky, however (Henke's "*Zeitschrift*") in his five cases, nor Dieberg (Casper's "*Vierteljahrss.*," 1864) in his ten cases, mention this peculiar blood colouration.

(2.) *An unusual accumulation of blood on both sides of the heart,*

and in the blood vessels of the chest.—Quelmalz (see *Case* 4), Blosfeld (as above), Dieberg (as above), and Hilty (*Case* 3) agree in this, but Krajewsky (as above) has not mentioned it as occurring in his cases.

(3.) *Pallor of the general surface of the body, and congestion of the viscera most largely supplied with blood.* (*Cases* 3, 5, 20.)—In three of Dr. Ogston's cases congestion of the brain, and in seven congestion of the liver, was only moderate. Pallor of the skin was remarked by Ogston in all the cases of children but one. In *Case* 4 the viscera were not materially congested, but this case can scarcely be regarded in the true sense as a death from cold. This condition of the surface and viscera is mentioned by Blosfeld, Krajewsky, and Dieberg as having been noted by them.

(4.) *Irregular and dusky-red patches on limited portions of the exterior, of the body, even in the non-dependent parts* (frost-erythems). These patches contrast strongly with the pallid skin. (*Case* 3.) This condition was noted by Ogston in all his cases occurring in children. Blosfeld, Krajewsky (who explains the existence of these patches by the removal of the corpse to a warm temperature), Dieberg (who accounts for them by the action of cold on the *dead* body), and Hilty, have severally recorded these frost-erythems as occurring in their cases.

Quelmalz records having found polypous concretions in the large veins and arteries in one case of death from cold. (*Case* 6.)

Certain parts and organs of the body may be found frozen. (*Case* 4.) But this, probably, as a rule is a post-mortem, and not a life phenomenon.

In *Case* 4 the post-mortem appearances did not correspond with death from the effects of cold. This suggests the remark, that because a body is found in the snow or in ice, death is not necessarily the result of cold. In the case in question, there is little doubt that a fit was the true cause of the fatal ending, and that the occurrence of this fit out of doors on a cold day was a mere coincidence. This would account, moreover, for the slight abrasions, found on the fingers in the case in question.

Putrefaction does not occur at a freezing temperature. If therefore, a *decomposed* corpse is taken out of the ice or snow,

it is practically certain, even supposing the person died from cold, that the body meantime had been subjected to a warmth sufficient to develop and assist the putrefactive process. Of course, the chances in such cases are that the person did not die from cold at all, but that some days after death (that is, after putrefaction commenced), the body had been brought from a warm place to the spot where it was found. If, previously to finding the decomposed body, there had been a long continuance of cold weather, the probability that such was the case would be greatly increased. (*Case* 19.)

B. Effects of Extreme Heat.

(*Sunstroke; Thermic Fever; Insolation.*)

[For papers and lectures on sunstroke, see "*New York Med. Journal*," XII., p. 90; "*Med. Times and Gazette*," March 16th, 1878, p. 271 (Dr. Handfield Jones); "*British Med. Journal*," July 9th, 1870, p. 35 (Dr. Henry Thomson); Aitken's "*Medicine*," II., p. 380.]

A heat that raises the body temperature above the normal, is as fatal as a cold that reduces it below the normal. In certain American towns during the hot weather, the mortality from "sunstroke" has at times been enormous. Thus at St. Louis, the temperature from July 10th to 20th, 1878, ranged from 83° to 100° F., and during this period one-third of the mortality was ascribed to the heat. (Dr. Kennard, "*New Orleans Med. Journ.*," October, 1878.) At New York the deaths from sunstroke have been at times very numerous. ("*Lancet*," July 23rd, 1870.)

Dr. Horatio C. Wood, to whom we are indebted for much careful work on the effects of heat ("Thermic Fever, or Sunstroke," Trübner, 1872; "*Lancet*," July 27th, 1872; "*Philadelphia Medical Times*," August 5th, 1876), considers that there are three classes of cases confounded under the general term "sunstroke." In the *first class* (which is very rare), we have acute meningitis or phrenitis (*coup-de-soleil*). In the *second class*, we have heat exhaustion with collapse, accompanied by a rapid feeble pulse, a cool moist skin, and a tendency to syncope. In the *third class* we have thermic fever, and to this the name sun-

stroke is, he considers, a misnomer. It is not, in his opinion, the sun merely that is the active agent (for attacks of sunstroke occur at night as well as by day), any more than it is blood-poisoning; but it is the action of external heat, independently of its source—in other words, it is a matter of indifference whether the source of heat be the sun, a factory, a hot-house, a sweating room in a Turkish bath (in which bad effects have been recorded, (*Case 22a*), an engine room, &c. The effects of the heat, moreover, are always far more severe when they occur to those unaccustomed to an abnormal temperature. (*Cases 22, 25.*)

But something more than heat is required to induce thermic fever. An impure air and an atmosphere saturated with moisture, by which evaporation from the skin is interfered with (evaporation being the principal means of effecting a cooling of the body), are most important factors.

The sweating room of a Turkish bath should not be heated by a flue passing round the room, but should be a well ventilated apartment, the ventilators being placed level with the floor, and the heat maintained by a constant influx of pure hot air. By the latter process the air will be hot but pure; whilst by the former, the same air—polluted by the inmates of the apartment, and more or less saturated with moisture—is heated over and over again, the door being the only chance of admitting fresh air.

I have had an opportunity of watching an excellent experiment, in illustration of the prolonged action of a high temperature, conducted by Mr. Bell, of the Grosvenor Terrace Turkish Baths, Westminster, on himself. He remained in the hot room of the bath, day and night without once leaving it from 9 a.m. on Monday, August 9th, to 9 p.m. on Friday, August 13th, 1880. During this period the average day temperature of the room was 140° F. (60° C.), and the average night temperature 125° F. (51·6° C.). His health in no respect suffered from the experiment. His bowels were somewhat costive, and his urine high coloured, and (as we should expect) small in quantity. Some of the detailed results of this experiment may be interesting:—

		Weight.	Temperature.	Pulse.	Diet.
		st. lbs.			
Mon.,	9 a.m.	11 7½	—	—	Mutton broth, a little mutton, vegetables, bread and butter, watercress.
	12 Midnight	—	98·4	120	
			—	—	
Tues.,	9 a.m.	11 2¼			Ditto, but no meat.
Wed.,	9 a.m.	11 1¼	100·0	122	Ditto, with soda water, lemons and a water melon.
,,	8.55 p.m.	11 4	—	—	
Thurs.,	9 a.m.	11 1½	—	—	Ditto, A small quantity of whiskey freely diluted was taken morning and evening.
,,	2 p.m. (after dinner)	11 3¼	99·5	80	
Fri.	9 a.m.	11 2	—	—	Ditto.
,,	9 p.m.	11 6	99·5	72 (regular.)	

The same fact respecting the character of the heat is observed in other cases. Thus, a temperature by no means oppressive, if the atmosphere is pure, becomes absolutely intolerable in the narrow, ill-ventilated, close courts and alleys of towns. Again, a heat easily tolerated if the air is not saturated, becomes unbearable if it is saturated. This is the explanation of the stifling character of the air after a thunderstorm on a hot day. External heat can be easily borne if the air is pure and unsaturated, for the skin then permits evaporation, and by evaporation the internal temperature of the body is regulated. If, however, from any cause whatsoever, the skin fails as an evaporating, and therefore as a cooling surface, a condition of hyperpyrexia results, with a disturbed balance of the circulation and cerebral irritation (thermic fever), gradually increasing till it reaches the point of death.

The phenomena of sunstroke and heat apoplexy, depend on the action of the superheated blood on the nerve centres and large internal organs. Quoting Dr. Wood's words: "Under the influence of external heat the temperature of the body rises, until at last a point is reached at which the heat paralyses, by over-stimulation of the controlling centre regulating animal heat: then a sudden additional rise of temperature with a corresponding increase in the severity of the symptoms occurs."

There is no doubt that in exceptional cases an intense heat may cause a condition closely allied to concussion of the brain, death resulting from paralysis of the heart's action; or that if a

person be disposed to apoplexy, or have a weak or diseased heart, he may, as has happened in the Turkish bath (*Case 22 a*), die suddenly at the very outset. It is these exceptional cases which have given rise to the incorrect term "sunstroke."

It has been remarked that the *morning* sun is specially dangerous. This has been accounted for by supposing that the injurious effects are chiefly due to the direct rays of the sun striking the nape of the neck; and there is considerable evidence in support of this view. Some have supposed that the strong glare of an intense sunlight is alone sufficient to produce sunstroke. This is doubtful; but it is certain (and the fact is not unimportant in its relation to electric lighting) that an intense actinic light is itself a powerful irritant. Other observers, having remarked that on some days cases of sunstroke are numerous, whilst on others although the temperature has been as great, the cases were few, have supposed that the electrical condition of the atmosphere may play its part. Of this by no means improbable conjecture, however, we have no experiments in proof; but that something more than heat is required to produce thermic fever is, as we have said, a matter beyond question.

Prophylactics.—The safeguard against sunstroke is the healthy play of all the functions. Whatever checks elimination, or induces nerve weariness, or embarrasses the normal working of the organic system, predisposes to heat apoplexy. ("Let the sun have no ally in liquor.") Temperance, sobriety, and cleanliness are the chief points to be observed by residents in hot climates. The wearing of flannels is, under all circumstances, advisable. A daily bath, an occasional purgative, and, when in the sun, some method by which the direct rays may be prevented from reaching the nape of the neck, are the special precautions called for.

Sunstroke frequently attacks soldiers on the march. Unless unavoidable, it should be an axiom with commanders that troops should not march, or practise, or be reviewed, during the hottest hours of the day. The weight of the knapsack, and the tight articles of dress, such as the collar around the neck, contribute to the fatal results recorded by exposing soldiers to the extreme heat of the sun.

Symptoms Produced by Extreme Heat.

The symptoms vary in degree. Thus, in a *mild case* there may be merely a momentary loss of consciousness, followed by drowsiness, a condition in children not unlikely to be overlooked. Or again there may be headache with prostration, a hot skin, a small weak compressible pulse, but without other signs of fever, and with no appreciable mischief, functional or organic, of any special organ except depression of the heart's action. Or again in a bad case, there may be profound coma lasting for several days.

The symptoms at times set in suddenly (*Cases* 23, 24 *a* and *β*, 32, 36 *β*, 38), but as a rule they are not of instantaneous occurrence. Certain premonitory symptoms, such as headache, tinnitus aurium, and vomiting, are commonly recorded. (*Cases* 34, 37, 40, 45.) Often the bad symptoms set in at night after a long day's work, accompanied by great muscular exertion, in the sun. These are after a time followed by confusion and temporary loss of sight, flushed face, great difficulty in breathing, stupor, and in bad cases, coma. A case of recovery, even when the coma was very marked, is recorded. (*Case* 26.) Sometimes *petechiæ*, or spots like those of typhus, make their appearance. (*Case* 31.) The skin is dry and hot, and the temperature invariably very high (100° to 110° F.). (See *Cases* 26, 30, 35 *a* and *β*, 39.) The pupils are generally dilated in the earlier, and *contracted to a fine point* in the later stages. (*Cases* 24 *a* and 42.) As a rule they always appear contracted when the attack comes on slowly. (*Cases* 34, 35 *a* and *β*, 36*a*, 37, 41.) In one case inequality of the pupils was remarked. (*Case* 32.)

We are indebted to Dr. Katzenbach ("*New York Med. Journ.*," XVII., p. 91) for a careful summary of the symptoms noted in 55 cases treated at the Bellevue Hospital. Of these, 44 were admitted in an unconscious state. The skin was invariably dry and hot, and the cases in which it was pallid and those in which it was congested were about equal in number. The pulse ranged from 68 to 168. It was generally frequent, small, and weak, but in some cases it was slow, full, and strong.

The *respirations* were generally increased in frequency—sometimes stertorous, but in others, quiet and easy. Pulmonary congestion, marked by cyanosis and moist râles in the chest, was remarked in nearly every case.

The temperature varied greatly. Thus it was found to be:—

100° F.	to	105°	in 43	cases.
105°	„	107°	„ 27	„
107°	„	108°	„ 16	„
108°	„	110°	„ 10	„
110° and over		„	3	„

Vomiting occurred in 13 cases, and purging in 19—the dejections being yellow, liquid, and offensive. Vomiting and purging together, occurred in 8 cases.

The urine was always small in quantity. In one case it was alkaline, and in one albumen was present. Convulsions were not infrequent, being epileptiform in 4, tetanoid in 12, and of a mixed nature in 3. (*Case* 23.)

Delirium occurred in 7 cases, and in 4 cases it was associated with convulsions. Hemiplegia occurred in 1 case only. No paralysis of any kind was noted in the remaining 54 cases.

It would appear, therefore, that the symptoms are somewhat variable. Thus in Dr. Thin's cases (*Case* 46), there seems to have been cerebro-spinal lesions, a similarity to typhus (ζ), and disordered digestive symptoms (η). And this can be explained by supposing that the heat, which undoubtedly causes functional paralysis of certain nervous centres, attacks different centres in different people. Thus it may be that the medulla in one person, the cardiac plexus in a second, and the solar plexus and its offshoots in a third, may be severally affected. And so in some instances, abdominal symptoms (a *heat affection*) (*Cases* 34, 41), in others spinal symptoms (*Cases* 37, 40), and in others cerebral symptoms (*heat-stroke*) (*Cases* 22, 23, 26, 27, 29 α and β, 33, 42) may preponderate.

The specially striking symptoms of intense heat, are undoubtedly the high temperature, the thirst, and the dryness of the skin. Death may result from genuine apoplexy in those predisposed to it, but most often it is due to apnœa, and some-

times, as Dr. Aitken has pointed out, to rapid asthenia (syncope). Considering the power of intense heat as a depressor of cardiac activity, the failure of the heart is always one of the chief dangers of sunstroke.

Of the 55 cases recorded by Katzenbach, 23 died. The shortest duration of the attack in his fatal cases was ten minutes, although a case is recorded where death ensued after five minutes (*Case* 43), whilst the longest duration was three days.

In the cases that recovered, a few were well in one hour, whilst in some the severe symptoms lasted for 24 hours, and even a much longer time. (*Cases* 23, 24 *a*, 31.) As a rule the patients cannot be pronounced out of danger, even in the mildest forms, in less than 11 or 12 hours. There is hope, however, in the most severe cases. (*Cases* 31, 44.)

Sunstroke is disposed to leave behind it a train of sequelæ. Of these, the most serious are various neuroses, such as epilepsy, catalepsy (*Case* 42), and paralysis which may be transient or permanent (*Cases* 31, 44); also a weakened condition of the liver and digestive organs, etc.

Treatment.

(For reference to rules of treatment see Sir J. Fabian, "*Brit. Med. Journal*," Aug. 12, 1876, p. 223.)—The collar, necktie and any tight articles of dress should be immediately removed, and the person carried to a cool and scrupulously quiet place, and placed in a recumbent position. All clothing but one thin covering, should be removed. Ice should at once be applied to the head and back of the neck, and in bad cases the body should be rubbed with ice or iced water. (Dr. Wood considers that the ice-water bath should be persevered in until the mouth temperature is reduced to 100° F.) When the patient can swallow, a little weak wine and water may be administered, together with light nourishment, such as milk or beef-tea. Counter-irritants are useful in certain cases. (*Cases* 24, 40.) The after-treatment must depend on the symptoms which develop themselves.

As regards bleeding, some, as Dr. Richardson, speak of it as *the* remedy. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," Dec. 17, 1870, p. 695.)

It undoubtedly proved useful in *Cases* 23 and 27, but failed in *Case* 36 *a*. The general opinion, however, of practical physicians, such as Dr. Wood, is against it.

Dr. Wood recommends quinine, except in the cardiac variety, to be given either by the mouth or preferably hypodermically (one grain in this form being said to be equal to four grains administered by the mouth), as a drug of great service in preventing a rise of temperature. The details of recorded cases clearly indicate its great value. (*Cases* 29 *a* and *β*, 33, 38.)

Katzenbach records that in many of his cases morphia was administered with marked benefit.

The hypodermic injection of atropine (*Case* 28) has been advocated by Dr. Barnett.

If there is much vomiting a sedative dose of opium and calomel is indicated.

If there is collapse Dr. Wood recommends a warm-water bath.

The symptoms which set in after the subsidence of the first symptoms (head-ache, distress, and mental incoherence), yield to mercurials and to free blistering of the neck.

Post-mortem Appearances.

The post-mortem appearances are as a rule negative, *i.e.* no constant lesion seems to occur. In some cases nothing abnormal has been noted. (*Case* 22.)

Rigidity occurs early and putrefaction rapidly after death, livid spots and petechiæ being commonly found on the body. (*Case* 35 *a*.) A blanched condition of the body has also been noted. (*Case* 24 *β*.) Levick has shown that the appearances after death from extreme heat, are almost identical with petechial or spotted typhus.

The brain and its membranes are generally congested, and serum in quantity is commonly found in the ventricles. (*Cases* 35 *a* and *β*.)

The heart becomes unusually rigid and of a dusky grey colour after death. Putrefaction being rapid, the heart at the post-mortem may be found in a relaxed condition. As a rule the left ventricle is rigidly contracted, whilst the *right* heart

and pulmonary arteries are gorged with dark *fluid* blood. (*Dr. Wood* and *Dr. Kennard.*) (Dr. Kennard considers death in sunstroke is due to paralysis of the heart, dependent on derangement of the nervous centres.)

The lungs are usually highly congested (*Case* 32) and œdematous, more especially posteriorly. They often exhibit the conditions characteristic of apnœa (*Case* 35 *α*), but this is by no means always the case. (*Case* 35 *β*.)

The abdominal viscera, especially the liver and spleen, are commonly more or less congested.

The brain and kidneys are usually moist and œdematous, whilst the liver, heart, and muscular tissue are more than ordinarily dry. (*Arndt.*) The blood after death from sunstroke is frequently fluid, from impaired coagulability, and is also very dark in colour. (*Cases* 32, 35 *α* and *β*.) It is said to be acid, and to contain an excess of urea. (*Oberneier.*)

Dr. Rudolph Arndt states as his experience (in which Dr. Wood, Dr. Kennard, and others agree) that in sunstroke we have blanching (anæmia) of the parenchyma of the organs, and as a result, a distended condition of all their vessels above a certain size, with dark-coloured, uncoagulated blood. The brain tissue is in his experience anæmic, although the ventricles are distended with fluid and the large veins and sinuses full of blood. Similarly the heart, liver, kidneys, intestines, and bladder are in reality anæmic, although the larger vessels are engorged. Hence sunstroke in his opinion, is not hyperæmia, but rather anæmia, of the brain, for the capillaries and minute vessels are well-nigh empty. In the lungs the hyperæmia prevailed uniformly. ("*Brit. and Foreign Med.-Chir. Review*," Oct., 1875.)

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. American Journal of Medical Science, Oct. 1861, p. 432.—(*Dr. Hartshorne.*)—Male, æt. 14. Exposure for a few minutes in his night-shirt, at an open window on a winter's night. [The temperature of the night was 50 degrees lower than that of the day.] Death occurred on the third day. The symptoms were headache, drowsiness, vomiting, high temperature, hard and quick pulse, and delirium. [In fact, the symptoms were not unlike those of sunstroke.] (Pages 427, 430, 431.)

2. Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal, Vol. I., p. 302.—(*Dr. Kellie.*)—Recovery from the effects of cold. (Pages 423, 431.)

3. Casper's Vierteljahrss., 1865, II., p. 140.—(*Dr. Hilty, of Wiedenberg.*)—Male, æt. 57, intoxicated. Died from exposure to cold during a severe winter's night.

Post-mortem.—Blood crimson. Both sides of the heart full. Congestion of internal viscera, especially of the liver and kidneys. Numerous patches of redness found on the skin and in non-dependent parts. Bladder distended with urine. (Pages 425, 433, 434.)

4. Casper's Forensic Medicine, Vol. II., p. 280.—(*Case* cccxxiii.)—Female, æt. 55, found on the ice, dead and stiff.

Post-mortem.—No signs of injuries, except abrasions on the knuckles, probably due to her having had a fit, and throwing her arms about. Brain appeared half frozen, the cerebral veins and sinuses being only moderately full; lungs normal; trachea pale and empty; right side of the heart fairly full of blood, and the left side distended; blood natural; liver moderately congested; kidneys and spleen normal; ascending vena cava congested.

Opinion.—Death the result of cardiac apoplexy, possibly from the effects of cold, but more likely from a convulsive attack whilst walking over the ice. (Page 434.)

5. Edinburgh Medico-Chirurgical Transactions, Vol. I., p. 84.—(*Dr. Kellie.*)—Death of two persons on the night of the 3rd of November, 1821, from exposure to cold.

Post-mortem.—The appearances exactly corresponded in both cases

External signs not well marked. The brain and its membranes were congested, the sinuses being loaded with black blood; three or four ounces of serum were found effused in the ventricles and at the base of the brain. Stomach pale; intestines reddened; liver congested. (Page 434.)

6. Haller's Disputationes, Vol. VI.—(*Post-mortem by Quelmalz after death from the effects of exposure to cold.*)—Vessels of the brain turgid, with serous lymph effused into the ventricles. Large veins and arteries filled with polypous concretions. (Page 434.)

7. "Annales d'Hygiène," Vol. VI. (1831), p. 207; *see also* the "Medical Times and Gazette," July 21st, 1860, p. 61.—(*Dr. Ozanam, of Lyons.*)—A man and his wife were tried at Lyons for the manslaughter of his daughter and her stepchild, a girl æt. 11. The mother, after a long course of starvation and ill treatment, had compelled the child to get out of bed on a cold morning in December, and get into a barrel filled with cold water. Although extricated by a servant after having been immersed for some time, she was again replaced in the water, and finally died. The woman was condemned to imprisonment for life. The child doubtless succumbed to the effects of cold added to * previous ill-usage. (Page 424.)

8. R. v. Lovell.—(*Gloucester Lent Assizes*, 1853.)—In this case a woman was convicted of the manslaughter of a child aged four years. The child, already diseased, was put under a spout in cold January weather, and water pumped over her. Although the medical witness did not think this accelerated the death, the jury (as we think rightly) did, and found the prisoner guilty. [The late Justice Talfourd remarked that the verdict was based on common sense and reason, although contrary to the opinion of the medical witness!] (Page 424.)

9. Edin. Med. Journal, March, 1868, p. 859.—(*Mr. C. E. Smith.*)—An account of the effects of long protracted exposure to cold and privations in the case of 50 persons belonging to the ship Diana, who were compelled to winter in lat. 70° 30′ N., with only two months' provisions on board. The weekly allowance was 3lbs. of bread, 3½lbs. of salt meat (afterwards reduced to 2lbs.) and ½lb. of flour per man. Scurvy made its appearance after four months. The men of medium size, dark complexion, active habits, and cheerful temperament enjoyed the greatest immunity. All were affected with scurvy by April, when the ship arrived in Shetland. (Page 430.)

[In the march of the French soldiers from Moscow, it is reported that they suffered severely from hunger and cold. Insensibility and disposition

---

* Dr. Ozanam uses the word *assideration* in reference to cold being the cause of death. It is equivalent to our word "concomitant."

to sleep came on whilst they were marching, and although able to continue their march for a short time, they could not understand anything addressed to them.]

10. Lancet, Jan. 14, 1871.—Male, æt. 14. Acute inflammation of the feet from exposure to cold, with large vesications. The toes were shrivelled and of an ashy grey colour. (Page 431.)

11. Lancet, July 8, 1871, p. 47.—(*Dr. Leared.*)—Male, æt. 49. Gangrene of lungs, following immersion in cold water. Death. (Pages 427, 431, 433.)

12. Medical Times and Gazette, Dec. 2, 1871.—(*Mr. Hutchinson.*)—Female, æt. 30. Suffered from intermittent hæmatinuria. Circumscribed gangrene of the skin, and of the tip of the nose and parts of the ear following exposure to cold. The sloughs separated, and she recovered after a long time. (Pages 431, 432.)

13. British Med. Journal, 1870, I., p. 213.—Male, æt. 9. Death from cold. (Page 431.)

14. R. v. Walters (Oxford Autumn Assizes, 1841).—The prisoner was delivered of a child whilst travelling in a waggon. She carried it for some distance, but afterwards abandoned it, leaving the infant in the road where it was afterwards found dead, the death evidently resulting from exposure to cold. Live birth was proved by witnesses who heard the child cry *after* the mother had left it. The prisoner was found guilty, and sentenced to 10 years' transportation. (Pages 425, 426.)

15. R. v. Waters (Exchequer Chambers, Jan., 1849).—A woman was convicted with causing the death of her child by leaving it exposed on a dust heap. (Pages 425, 426.)

[In this case there was an appeal, on the ground that the count charging the woman with causing the death of her child as above, was not good. Conviction affirmed.]

16. Ann. d' Hyg., 1868, 2, 173.—A girl suddenly delivered of a child whilst sitting on a night stool. She stated that she fainted, and on recovery found the child on the floor dead. The child had breathed. The cord had also been cut, and there were no signs of violence on the child. Medical evidence showed that death was caused by exposure and want of proper attention. The child, however, was a weakly one. The girl was found guilty of causing its death by imprudence, inattention, and negligence. Sentence, two years' imprisonment. (Pages 425, 426.)

17. Horne's Vierteljahrss., 1866, 2, 148.—(*Dr. Otto.*)—Infanticide by exposing a child to cold. (Page 425.)

18. Casper, Vol. II., p. 278.—(*Case* cccxxi.)—A female, unmarried,

delivered suddenly, whilst sitting down (January) with a washing basin beside her. She lost her senses, and on recovery found the child had fallen on its back into the basin. It was cold and dead. When she became sensible she placed the body without any covering on some dirty clothes in a basket. *Post-mortem.* Body mature; signs of death from apoplexy. (Pages 425, 426.)

[Casper accounts for the death, by the child lying exposed naked in a cold basin to the cold atmosphere.]

19. Casper, Vol. II., p. 279.—(*Case* cccxxii.)—A male child, rolled in rags, found in the snow in an advanced state of putrefaction. It was proved to have been born alive. (Pages 425, 435.)

[Casper decided (from the state of putrefaction) that the child had been dead some time before it was placed in the snow; and that *it did not die of cold* (a conclusion open to question.—C.M.T.).]

20. Casper, Vol. II., p. 281.—(*Case* cccxxiv.)—A mature female child found dead and frozen in a loft (February).

Post-mortem: All the cavities of the heart were distended with dark and partially frozen blood. Lungs congested. Larynx and trachea pale and empty. Liver congested. Casper decided that cardiac and pulmonary apoplexy, possibly due to internal causes but probably to exposure to cold, was the cause of death. (Pages 425, 434.)

[Casper decided the child was born alive.]

21. Taylor, Med. Juris., II., p. 488.—Male, æt. 65, insane, had first of all a shower-bath given him (the water being 45° F.), and afterwards a dose of tartar emetic. The man died in a quarter of an hour after he had taken the medicine. (Pages 427, 428, 431.)

[The coroner's jury brought in a verdict of manslaughter against the medical man, but the grand jury threw out the bill. The treatment was proved to be bonâ-fide.]

22. Taylor, Med. Juris., I., p. 138.—A male, by business a grocer, and not accustomed to great heat, undertook the duties of stoker on an Aberdeen steamship. Whilst at work he was seen suddenly to fall on the floor insensible. When carried on deck he was found to be dead.

Post-mortem: Effusion of serum into the ventricles of the brain. No other abnormal appearances noted. (Pages 436, 440, 442.)

22a. British Med. Journ., June 3, 1876, p. 706.—Death in a Turkish bath. (Page 438.)

23. Medical Times and Gazette, Aug. 27, 1870, p. 236.—(*Mr. Salter.*)—Male, æt. 16. Suddenly seized with sunstroke whilst harvesting. Insensibility; convulsions, with clenched teeth; conjunctivæ injected, pupils contracted. *Treatment*—Venesection, after which the symptoms slowly abated. Recovery. (Pages 439, 440, 441, 442.)

24. Med. Times and Gazette, May 27, 1871.—(*Dr. Gibson.*)—(α) Male, æt. 17. Suddenly staggered and became insensible whilst walking in the sun. Pupils dilated. No vomiting. Abdomen hard. *Treatment*—Enemas, blisters, Croton oil, and salines. Recovered in 6 days. (Pages 439, 441.)

(β) Male, æt. 17. Struck dead whilst haymaking in the sun. *Post-mortem:* Body very blanched and sphincters relaxed. (Pages 439, 442.)

25. New York Med. Journal, 1873, p. 93.—(*Dr. Katzenbach.*)—Details of cases of sunstroke. (Page 436.)

26. New York Med. Journal, 1872, Vol. XVI., p. 168.—(*Dr. A. Flint, jun.*)—Case of sunstroke. Profound coma. Temperature 110·5° F. Recovery. (Pages 439, 440.)

27. New York Med. Journal, Vol. X., p. 35.—(*Dr.*.
æt. 30. Sunstroke. Delirium. Bled to 18 oz. Recovered without a bad symptom. (Pages 440, 442.)

28. American Journal of Med. Science, Jan., 1875.—(*Dr. Barnett.*)—Two cases of sunstroke treated successfully by hypodermic injections of Atropia. (Page 442.)

29. India Med. Gazette, July 1, 1869.—(*Mr. W. K. Waller.*)—A series of cases of heat apoplexy treated by Quinine. (Pages 440, 442.)

α. Male adult. Heat apoplexy. ℈j. of Quinine given at once, and 10 grains repeated every hour. 70 grains given in all. Spoke after the second dose. Recovered in 13 days.

β. Male adult. Heat apoplexy. After 3 grains of Quinine, the convulsions lessened in severity. After 30 grains the man became conscious. Recovery after 2 days.

[In these cases quinine was the only remedy used. A series of 31 cases of sunstroke recorded, 28 of which treated by quinine recovered.]

For other cases see same journal. Also "American Journal of Medical Science," Jan., 1870, p. 253, and "Indian Medical Gazette," Sept. 2, 1872 (*Mr. A. R. Hall*).

30. Med. Press and Circular, Aug. 30, 1876.—(*Dr. Winn.*)—Male adult. Case of sunstroke. Temperature 112°. Death. (Page 439.)

31. Medical Times and Gazette, March 16, 1878, p. 271.—(*Dr. Handfield Jones.*)—Male, æt. 14. Sunstroke. Brief delirium at first, then unconsciousness, with stupor, prostration, and impaired mental actions. Motor and sensory paralysis of the left arm. Roseolous eruption. Frontal neuralgia. Temperature never very high. Stimulants were given, and the patient recovered by the 17th day. (Pages 439, 441.)

32. British Med. Jounal, July 9, 1870.—(*Dr. Henry Thompson.*)—

Sunstroke. Male, æt. 59. Fell down unconscious. Left pupil contracted, and the right dilated. Temperature 105°; pulse 130. Death in 1½ hours. Temp. rose to 107·2, after he had been dead 30 minutes. *Post-mortem:* Lungs engorged. Heart large, pale, flabby, and diseased. Arteries of brain atheromatous, and fluid found in the subarachnoid space. Blood everywhere fluid. (Pages 439, 443).

33. Lancet, Sept. 15, 1877, p. 415.—(*Mr. Maurice Knox.*)—Male, æt. 26. (A soldier.) Heat apoplexy. Violent delirium. Temp. 105° F. Contracted pupils. *Treatment:* Cold douche and subcutaneous injection of quinine. Recovery. (Pages 440, 442.)

34. Edinburgh Med. Journ., Oct. 1876.—(*Mr. Thomson.*)—Male, æt. 36. Sunstroke, from exposure to sun for several days. The attack came on gradually. Semi-unconsciousness; great thirst; laboured breathing. Lividity of face and contracted pupils. Diarrhœa and vomiting. Temp. 102°. Death occurred about 22 hours after "the fit." No *post-mortem.* (Pages 439, 440.)

35. Lancet, July 29, 1876, p. 153.—(*Dr. Shingleton Smith.*)—Two cases of sunstroke. (Temp. of day, 96° F. in shade.) (Pages 439, 442, 443.)

(*a.*) Male, 45. Had been working in the sun from 8 a.m. to 1 p.m. when he was attacked. Comatose; pupils very contracted. Breathing laboured. Active perspiration. Temperature reached 109° F. Iced water applied by Roberts's coils. Died at 7.50 p.m.

Post-mortem (17 hours after death). Much p. m. lividity and numerous petechial spots. Cerebral veins and sinuses full. The grey matter of the brain appeared of a dark purple colour, the white matter exhibiting many bloody spots. Effusion into the ventricles and under the arachnoid. The blood everywhere fluid and dark, containing numerous air-bubbles from decomposition. The thoracic organs presented the appearance of death by asphyxia.

(*β.*) Male, æt. 35. When admitted was semi-comatose. General muscular tremor, followed by convulsions with opisthotonos. Temp. 110·2° F. Pulse small and rapid; respiration laboured. Complete coma supervened, with contracted pupils. (Temp. 111° F.) Death in 20 minutes after admission. Five minutes after death the axillary temperature was 110·4°.

Post-mortem. Intense engorgement of the cerebral veins and sinuses, with subarachnoid effusion. Blood black and fluid. Symptoms of asphyxia not so well marked as in the former case. Death apparently resulted from cardiac paralysis.

36. Lancet, Aug. 26, 1871, p. 259.—(*Dr. Macdonald.*)

(*a.*) Male, æt. 63. Sunstroke. Became unconscious. He could not be roused. Breathing stertorous. Throbbing of carotids and temporals.

Pupils contracted and insensible to light. Death in 1½ hours from commencement of the attack. *Treatment:* bleeding, 12 ozs.; cold to the head; sinapisms to the extremities.

(*8.*) Male, æt. 34. Went into the sun after a full meal, at which he had drunk freely. Suddenly fell down insensible, but rallied in a few minutes, and recovered after a few days. (Pages 439, 442.)

37. Lancet, April 6, 1872, p. 464.—(*Mr. Clapham.*)—Sunstroke, commencing with drowsiness, pain in the limbs, followed by rigor, with faintness and nausea. Temp. 104·2°. Pain in the head, stomach, and back. Contracted pupils; injected conjunctivæ; great headache; pain down the spinal cord, branching off and encircling the body in two distinct lines, one following the course of the eighth intercostal nerves, and the other that of the first lumbar, ileo-inguinal, and hypogastric. Recovery after 8 days. (Pages 439, 440.)

38. Lancet, July 29, 1876, p. 154.—(*Dr. E. L. Fox.*)—Male, æt. 55. Suddenly seized as he was driving. Coma; tonic spasms of muscles of legs; pupils contracted but sensible to light; skin hot, with absence of perspiration; stertor. Temp. 106·4°; pulse 141; respirations 27. Temperature was reduced by the use of ice and cold water, and by quinine subcutaneously injected. Recovered consciousness the next day. Discharged cured on the third day. (Pages 439, 443.)

39. British Med. Journal, Aug. 3, 1872, p. 131.—Case of sunstroke where the temperature of the body exceeded 109° F. (Page 439.)

40. Lancet, Aug. 6, 1870, p. 183.—(*Dr. Andrew.*)—Male, 38. Exposure to sun without a cap for one hour. Felt giddiness and swimming in the head. This increased the next day, accompanied by a pain extending down the spine, which became so severe that he could not stand. Temperature 100·6°. *Treatment:* Ice to the head and mustard plasters to the loins. He was better in 24 hours, and well after 4 days. (Pages 439, 440, 441.)

41. Lancet, Aug. 6, 1870, p. 184.—(*Dr. Harris.*)—Male, 3½. Slept in the sun until 4 p.m. *Symptoms:* headache, short breathing (48), and bilious vomiting, which lasted all night. Became semi-comatose at 3 a.m. Pupils much and equally contracted. Temperature 101·6°. Severe abdominal pains. Recovered on the eleventh day. *Treatment:* Salines, beef tea, and no stimulants. (Pages 439, 440.)

42. Lancet, Aug. 6, 1870, p. 184.—(*Dr. Sieveking.*)—Male, 13. Heat apoplexy, followed by catalepsy. Temperature 100°; pulse 108. Face flushed; pupils dilated. The catalepsy set in on the fifth day. This passed away very slowly. Recovery. (Pages 439, 440, 441.)

43. Lancet, Aug. 27, 1870, p. 316.—Two deaths from exposure to the sun, one in five minutes, and a second after two hours. (Page 441.)

44. Medical Times and Gazette, May 12, 1877, p. 516.—(*Drs. Andrew and Dyce Duckworth.*)—Female, æt. 2½. All but universal paralysis, caused by exposure to the heat of the sun whilst travelling. No cerebral symptoms. Recovery. (Page 441.)

45. Lancet, Aug. 20, 1870.—(*Dr. Handfield Jones.*)—Some hours after exposure to the sun, sickness and vomiting set in, with impaired consciousness and loss of power. Conjunctivæ congested. The man was tolerably well the next day, and quite recovered after three or four days. (Page 439.)

46. Edinburgh Med. Journal, Vol. XVI., p. 780.—(*Dr. Thin*, of Shanghai.)—A series of cases of sunstroke. (Page 440.)

(α.) Male adult. Sudden seizure. Bled. Died within thirty minutes.

(β.) Male adult. Sudden insensibility; coma lasting for twelve hours. Bled; ice applied to head, hot water to feet, and brandy and water administered. Recovered, but was permanently paraplegic.

(γ.) Male adult. Sunstroke; conscious, but great headache; skin and head very hot. On the second day became delirious. Died on the third day.

(δ.) Male adult. Slight sunstroke, threatening organic mischief. Recovery.

(ε.) Male adult, a tea-taster. Sunstroke, but not from direct exposure to the sun. No head symptoms, but depressed action of the heart, with temporary suspension of the functions of the cerebellum.

(ζ.) Male adult. Symptoms resembled those of the first week of typhus. Recovered on the fifth day.

(η.) Male adult. Sunstroke, causing headache, debility, and loss of appetite. Recovered, but suffered for twelve months from disordered liver.

CHAPTER IX.

BURNS AND SCALDS—CONSIDERED MEDICO-LEGALLY.

Definitions.—The General Characteristics of Burns Resulting from Various Causes.—The Classification of Burns.—The Symptoms Produced by Severe Burns, Local and General.—The Causes and Period of Death.—Post-mortem Appearances.—Appearances Presented by Burns Produced Before and After Death.—Accidental, Suicidal, and Homicidal Burning.—Burns Produced by Corrosives.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, Page 489.)

We shall consider the subject of burns and scalds in the following order:—

1. The definition of burns and scalds.
2. How far is it possible to determine the origin of a burn by its appearance?
3. The classification of burns according to their intensity.
4. The symptoms and effects resulting from burns.
5. How far the period at which different burns were inflicted may be judged by their appearance.
6. The causes of death.
7. The period at which death ordinarily occurs.
8. The post-mortem appearances.
9. The means of distinguishing a burn inflicted during life from one produced after death, or from the effects of post-mortem change.
10. If the death was caused by a burn, was it accidental, suicidal, homicidal, or the result of spontaneous combustion?
11. The characteristics of burns produced by acids and other corrosive bodies.

1. *The Definition of a Burn.*

A *burn* is an injury to the body produced by the application of a flame, or of a substance heated above a certain temperature, or of radiant heat. (*Case* 1.)

A *scald* is an injury produced by the application of a liquid heated above a certain temperature.

For practical purposes it is unadvisable to draw any distinction, where in reality none exists, between burns and scalds.

Burns or scalds in law are not regarded as wounds, but in the statute on wounding they are included amongst bodily injuries dangerous to life. In some cases a prisoner guilty of inflicting a burn on his victim, might be prosecuted for "maiming." (*Case* 34).

But the word *burn* has a wider signification than these definitions suggest. Thus *the injuries resulting from corrosive liquids*, such as oil of vitriol (sulphuric acid), aqua fortis (nitric acid), spirit of salt (hydrochloric acid), aqua regia (nitro-hydrochloric acid), caustic potash, lime or soda, carbolic acid, &c., are popularly termed *burns*, and are so designated in the statutes. In the case of R. *v.* Murrow (Liverpool, 1835) the judge decided that a burn caused by sulphuric acid, was not a wound within the meaning of the Act.

In the definitions of burns and scalds given above, no reference is made to the part of the body injured. An internal burn is as much a burn as an external one. Boiling water has been drank accidentally, and poured down the throat homicidally, causing an internal scald or burn. Melted pewter has been poured into the ear (*Cases* 27, 28), respecting which M. de Lowry remarks, that it is not easy to fill the ear with melted metal, owing to the expansion of the air in the meatus. Death in such case may result from inflammation extending to the brain.

Respecting the administration of corrosive liquids, it will be convenient to regard such internal burns as cases of poisoning.

2. *How far may the Appearance of a Burn enable us to Determine its Origin?*

(*a.*) *A heated solid* (such as hot iron) may produce a burn of any intensity, from mere skin redness to charring of the tissues, according to its temperature and the length of time it remains in contact with the person. In such cases the shape of the burn indicates somewhat the form, and the extent of the burn the size, of the heated solid.

In order to burn, some substances must be heated nearly to redness, or even beyond it.* Metals will produce redness, vesication, coagulation of blood, and other injuries when heated to 212° F. (100° C.). The *actual cautery* is said to be more efficacious in arresting hæmorrhage at a black, than at a red or white heat.

Burns of greater intensity are produced by hot, semi-fused solids—which (either from their nature or from their being in a state of partial fusion) adhere to the skin, so that on removal either a portion of the cuticle is dragged away, or some of the hot material remains behind—than when (as in the case of a piece of hot iron) the source of heat can be instantly and completely got rid of, so soon as the pain renders the person conscious of actual contact with it.

It may not, perhaps, be out of place to mention here that the feats shown by workmen, and sometimes by public exhibitors, of handling red-hot metals, burning coals, and the like, are as a rule easy of explanation. "M. de Boutigny showed, at the meeting of the British Association at Ipswich, in 1851, that a hand which is naturally damp, or which has

* Pouillet determined the following temperatures by means of an air thermometer. They correspond to the stages of incandescence of a met l bar:—

Incipient red heat	525° C. = 977° F.
Dull red	700° C. = 1292° F.
Cherry red	900° C. = 1652° F.
Dark orange	1100° C. = 2012° F.
White heat	1300° C. = 2372° F.
Dazzling white heat	1500° C. = 2732° F.

See article on Pyrometer in the "*Popular Encyclopædia.*"

been slightly moistened, may be safely passed into a stream of *molten iron* as it flows from the furnace." (Carpenter's "Physiology," note to p. 484.) The ancient trial by the ordeal of the hot ploughshare may thus be explained, although it is to be feared that the more guilty the person, the more likely he was to escape. (See article on the Spheroidal State in the "*Popular Encyclopædia.*")

(β.) *Molten Metals* cause burns (scalds) that can scarcely be distinguished from those produced by solid bodies. They may vary from a slight degree of skin redness, to an absolute destruction and charring of parts. Supposing the melted metal to be spilt on the skin, the burns will be found to be less regular in form than those produced by hot solids, and more often of greater severity, inasmuch as the metal to be molten must necessarily (in the majority of cases) be of a very high temperature. Further, the melted metal having once come into contact with the person, it is less easy for the patient to rid himself of it, than when he accidentally comes into collision with a heated solid. Further than this, melted metals produce burns in all respects similar to those produced by solid bodies.

(γ.) *Boiling oils* produce burns as severe in their general characters and (so far as destruction of parts is concerned) in their effects, as hot solids or molten metals.

(δ.) *Boiling water.* The application of hot water may merely produce an inflammatory redness; but in severe scalds the skin commonly appears soddened, vesicated and of an ashy grey colour, a condition scarcely distinguishable from slight burns resulting from other causes. But boiling water *never* produces (as in the case of hot solids or melted metals) blackening of the cuticle, much less charring or destruction of the parts. Hot-water scalds are frequently of considerable extent, and on this account are liable to prove rapidly fatal. (*Case* 6.) They may also be followed by gangrene. (*Cases* 26, 47.) Many cases are recorded where boiling water has been thrown over people for the purpose of maiming, but with no apparent intention of destroying life. (*Cases* 34, 35, 36.)

Cases are recorded where children, lunatics, and others have been scalded to death by being immersed in water at too

high a temperature. (*Cases* 6, 6*a*, 6*b*.) This circumstance suggests the remark, that the use of the hand by a nurse in determining the temperature of a bath, instead of testing it by the thermometer, is culpable negligence. The hand is at best a fallacious test of temperature, its nerves, compared to parts not exposed, being slowly stimulated by heat. Again, the heat of the hand itself renders it an uncertain test;—thus a hand cooler than the liquid in which it is immersed, cools for an instant the water in immediate contact with the skin.

A remarkable case of boiling a child in water is recorded. (*Case* 37.)

Many cases are recorded where severe scalds of the mouth and glottis have resulted from a child putting its mouth to the spout of a kettle whilst steam was issuing therefrom. (*Cases* 44, 45.) In such cases false membranes frequently form from the extension of the inflammation; or it is not improbable that the fright may cause the child to make a deep inspiration, whereby the steam or boiling water will be drawn into the back of the throat, and may possibly enter the larynx. ("*Brit. Med. Journ.*," May 1, 1875, p. 589.)

(ε.) *Phosphorus burns* are characterised by their great depth —by their severity, from the extreme heat accompanying the combustion of the phosphorus;—by their pain, the acid products of burning acting as violent irritants to the injured parts;—and, lastly, by the comparatively small extent of surface commonly destroyed. As a fact it will usually be found that the part affected is limited to the actual spot on which the phosphorus burns, the phosphoric acid generated during combustion coating the surrounding skin, and acting like a varnish to prevent the spread of the flame.

(ζ.) *Gunpowder burns* are often of great superficial extent, and for that reason not infrequently fatal. They are usually marked by extensive scorching, from the globe of flame produced. Numerous carbon particles are commonly found embedded in the true skin of the part burnt, which on recovery leave permanent tattoo marks of a more or less violet-black tint. It will be noted that in gunpowder burns these spots of colour are of very uniform size.

Our remarks here do not refer to injuries resulting from the firing of gunpowder in a pistol, so much as to explosions of free powder. When a pistol, loaded with gunpowder only, is fired near the naked skin, penetrating wounds (as if caused by bullets) are frequently produced. These are due to unburnt particles of powder playing the part of small shot. Under these circumstances, in addition to the scorching effects of the powder, contusions and lacerations of the skin may occur. These will be more fully discussed under gunshot wounds.

(η.) *Petroleum burns* (or burns resulting from *rock oil, paraffin,* etc.,) are generally severe. One cause of this is that the fibres of the clothes, on which the spirit is commonly spilt in such accidents, act as wicks to assist combustion. In these cases, the powerful odour of the liquid is certain to be detected for some days after the accident has happened, whilst the parts scorched, and the surrounding skin, are usually much blackened from the carbonaceous matter set free during combustion. (*Case* 33.)

(θ.) *Burns from flame* are characterised by extensive scorching. Scorched hairs in the neighbourhood of the parts burnt, although not actually on the injured part, are very suggestive of flame as the origin of the burn. Scorched hairs are scarcely likely to result from the application merely of a hot body, and certainly could not be produced by boiling water, or even by boiling oils.

(ι.) *Burns from explosions of fire damp in coal mines,* are frequently of great extent, and present the appearance of great scorching. Very frequently a quantity of coal dust will be found embedded in the true skin. This may give the burn the appearance of having been produced by a gunpowder explosion. In one case, a doubt of this kind formed the ground-work of a legal action (Norfa Colliery Explosion Case, March, 1870). The tattoo marks resulting from coal dust, however, are commonly of a blacker colour than the marks produced by gunpowder, whilst the spots are far less uniform in size.

(κ.) *Burns from Acids, &c.* These will be described in detail under the various reagents. A sulphuric acid stain is brown, and a nitric or hydrochloric acid stain yellow. The scars are soft and not hard as in ordinary burns. The skin sloughs away,

leaving a granulating surface. Such burns are not surrounded (as in the case of those produced by heat) by reddened skin.

3. *The Classification of Burns.*

Dupuytren has classified burns, according to the amount of injury inflicted, in six degrees, as follows :—

1st Degree. The skin only is scorched, or slightly reddened, with efflorescence of the cuticle, but without permanent injury.

This state would be produced by the momentary contact of a hot body, or by water some degrees below boiling point. It leaves no mark after a few hours, but causes pain at the time.

2nd Degree. The skin exhibits general redness, and the formation of vesicles, either at once or after a few hours. Some of these vesicles or blisters may be very large and tense with serum.

The second degree implies a longer contact of heated solids or of liquids at the boiling point, than the first degree. [Iodine, cantharides, strong acids, melted sealing-wax, tallow, metals heated to 212° F. (100° C.), &c., produce very similar vesication.] Although there may be some suppuration of the vesicles, burns of the second degree seldom leave permanent marks, except in persons of a bad constitution, or in those weakened by previous disease. These burns invariably cause considerable pain.

3rd Degree. The cutis or true skin is destroyed; yellowish grey or brown eschars form, which involve the whole thickness of the skin. The surrounding integument is more or less reddened and vesicated, and the parts affected are extremely painful.

In this third degree, a mark of a shining white cicatrix without contraction of the neighbouring parts remains. Occasionally the cicatrix itself contracts considerably, assuming a *cheloid* condition.

4th Degree. In this the whole thickness of the skin, and part of the subcutaneous cellular tissue are destroyed. Dry, yellowish black, insensible eschars are formed, with considerable inflammation around, leaving on their separation deep and luxuriantly granulating ulcerated surfaces.

5th Degree. In this the eschars extend more deeply, the muscles, fasciæ and soft structures being implicated.

In the fourth and fifth degrees, not only are cicatrices

formed on recovery, but considerable deformity generally results from the contraction of the skin and of the deeper tissues. Thus the head may be drawn down to one side, unless great care be taken during the healing process; and even with every care, skill, and attention, it is not always possible to prevent deformity. The arm or leg also may be contracted into a bent and almost useless position, or the fingers be tied down or united together by webs of skin. Very often limbs have to be amputated, in whole or in part, on account of the destruction of the skin being too great to allow of repair, or even of a plastic operation.

6th Degree. In this an entire limb, bones and all, may be destroyed and charred.

It seldom happens, but that in a burn two, three, or more of these six degrees will be found mixed together. (*Case* 20 *β.*) Hence Mr. Luke, Mr. Curling, and other surgeons have suggested a simpler classification of burns, as follows:—

(*α.*) Burns only involving the skin or subcutaneous connective tissue.

(*β.*) Burns involving the muscles and tendons, with their nerves and blood-vessels.

(*γ.*) Burns involving the bones or internal viscera.

(*δ.*) Mixed burns, in which the three preceding varieties are more or less combined.

4. *The Effects produced by Burns.*

These effects we may consider under the two heads of local and constitutional:—

(*α.*) *Local Effects.*—Redness, vesications (entire or burst), destruction of cuticle, either alone, or involving the true skin (*cutis vera*), actual roasting or carbonization of parts for a greater or less depth, marks of blackening, burning of the hair, &c., are some of the local results of burns of different degrees. Further, it is not uncommon to find on a single body all degrees of intensity, from redness to charring. (*Case* 20 *β.*)

Omitting cases of carbonization, we note that the skin redness produced by a burn differs greatly in its appearance on such

causes as the intensity of the heat, time of exposure, &c. Thus the cuticle may be merely reddened, or dry and parchmenty. The reddening may go deeper and affect the true skin, giving it a dotted appearance, the dots corresponding to the openings of the sudoriferous and sebaceous ducts. If the burn be severe, it may perhaps implicate the subcutaneous tissues. Here and there, entire blisters will probably be found, containing a thick and highly albuminous serum; whilst in all probability there will be some burst blisters, the serum oozing out of fissures or apertures in the cuticle and drying on the parts around. The redness above described, it must be remembered, results whenever the skin is inflamed, whether by disease, friction, strong stimulants, or heat.

Before very long the cuticle will in parts assume an ashy grey colour, or even an appearance of extreme whiteness. In many cases, almost immediately after the burn has been inflicted, a deeply injected line of demarcation will be apparent between the parts burnt and the sound skin. The value of this line medico-legally, we shall discuss at some length when we consider the methods of distinguishing burns caused during life from those produced after death. In a case of a severe burn arising from hot water, the nails of the fingers and toes were said to have been detached; at any rate they were found wanting at the post-mortem. (*Case 6.*)

Experience proves that the danger of a burn depends less on its depth, than upon its extent. A roasted limb is not so dangerous to life as a less severe burn affecting two-thirds of the skin. In other words, the prognosis will be unfavourable in proportion to the number of square inches of surface involved. The explanation of this will be found, partly in the greater implication of sensory nerves in extensive burns, and partly on the fact that so much of the skin is prevented from doing its work of excretion and heat regulation. Thus, if we simply varnish any considerable portion of the skin of an animal with an impermeable material (like gutta-percha or india-rubber), it becomes greatly inconvenienced, whilst if some three-fourths or more of the body be thus treated, the animal usually dies.

It is a question of considerable importance medico-legally,

what extent of skin must be injured necessarily to prove fatal. In a case involving one-fifth of the body the patient seems to have recovered. (*Case* 13.) A burn involving two-thirds (*Case* 6), and even one-half of the entire skin, we may regard as certain to destroy life, and the same practically may be said of a burn (if severe) involving one-third of the body. But when we come to smaller areas, there are many circumstances that must be borne in mind, and which need scarcely enter into our consideration when we are dealing with burns of greater extent. For instance, (α) the *constitution and pain-bearing power of the patient.* Thus considering the dangerous effects of pain, and the very different powers possessed by different persons to bear it, there will necessarily be a great difference in the result of a burn occurring on a robust, powerful man, and one of similar extent affecting a highly nervous, sensitive woman. Again (β) the *part affected* must be considered. Thus burns on the extremities are less fatal than those on the trunk, whilst burns on the perinæum, or upon the labia in the female or the scrotum in the male, are more than ordinarily dangerous. Again (γ) the *character of the burn* (*i.e.*, whether it be continuous or in numerous small patches) is of importance. Given two burns, both of equal extent, the one being continuous and limited to one part only of the body, and the other occurring in isolated and divided patches, more or less spread over the whole body, the latter undoubtedly is the more dangerous, not only because the pain and vascular reaction will be greater, but because it is more difficult for the patient to rest (and for recovery in such cases, sleep is no unimportant consideration), and also more difficult for those in attendance to ensure the efficient application of necessary dressings to the injured parts. And lastly (δ) *the age of the patient* is an important element, children as a rule bearing burns badly, whilst old people bear them comparatively well.

The fact that the danger of a burn is in proportion to its extent, or as we may say according to the "law of square inches," is strikingly shown by a series of cases of burns resulting from gunpowder and steam, recorded by Inspector-General Dr. William Smart, of Haslar Hospital, and founded on his experience in the explosion on board H.M.S. "Thunderer." ("*British Medical*

Journal," Sept. 23, 1876, p. 389.) In the majority of the cases, from 200 to 500 square inches of surface were injured. One man, who had some 766 square inches of skin (or nearly one-third of his entire superficies) burnt, recovered. His scald was, however, only one of the first degree. A scientific observer, who has witnessed two great magazine explosions, remarks that if as much as 80 square inches of skin be damaged, there is always a degree of secondary fever involving danger to life. Dr. Smart considers that a burn involving 350 square inches, places life in the greatest jeopardy—gunpowder burns being more hazardous than those caused by steam.

Amongst the occasional effects of fire on the body, is the formation of extensive fissures in the skin, that assume the character of *wounds* of greater or less extent. These are no doubt occasioned by the destruction of the elasticity of the skin as a primary consequence of the extreme heat to which it is subjected, and, as a result, its giving way or splitting under the patient's struggles. Hence, as a rule, these wounds will be found in the neighbourhood of joints. (See *Cases* 23 and 24.) In most cases they are exceedingly irregular in form, with uneven and jagged edges. Sometimes, moreover, the layer of fatty tissue adherent to the skin will give way at the same time as the skin, whilst at other times the skin only will be found fissured. The blood-vessels, owing to their greater elasticity, may escape being torn, and be found stretching across the fissured tissues. In all cases where we are called upon to inspect a body burnt to death, having wounds upon it, these vessels stretching across the wounds should be carefully sought for with a powerful hand lens.

It is manifest that if wounds are found on the body of a person supposed to have been burnt to death, the following question is one of primary importance for the medical jurist to decide, viz.:—Were the wounds the result of violence inflicted by some cutting instrument *before* the burn, or were they the result of the burn? Given the absence of any marked effusion of blood in the exposed adipose tissue—given, further, an *irregularly* fissured wound with uneven edges, more especially if in certain spots unbroken blood-vessels be found stretching across

the fissured part, such characteristics would lead us to infer that the wound was the result of the burn, and not caused by an instrument of violence.

There is a still more marked characteristic of these wounds to be occasionally noted, and that is where the skin has fissured, and the melted fat run out of the wound and varnished the parts around the fissure. (See *Case* 24.)

As a rule these heat wounds are of no great depth, but in certain recorded cases they have been so deep that the contents of the thoracic and abdominal cavities have been exposed. (*Case* 8.)

It must of course not be forgotten that on a burnt body, wounds of previous violence may exist co-temporaneously with wounds the result of the fire. Hence the appearance, the shape, and the general conditions of each and all the wounds found on a body, should be accurately noted and described. The following headings for the description of such wounds may be useful:—

(1.) Their position (*i.e.*, whether near a joint or otherwise).

(2.) Their characteristics (*i.e.*, whether regular or irregular, jagged or otherwise).

(3.) Their depth in different parts.

(4.) The character of their edges (*i.e.*, whether even or uneven, smooth or otherwise).

(5.) Whether there be any effusion of blood in the adipose or other tissues exposed.

(6.) Whether blood-vessels are, or are not, to be observed stretching across them.

(7.) Whether there is any appearance of melted fat having poured out through the wound.

Lastly, it will probably be noted that in certain parts of the body, the skin, although perhaps not actually fissured, will be in such a condition of tenseness that but a very slight movement would tear and lacerate it.

(β.) *Constitutional* (or general) *Effects.*—The first important constitutional effect to be noted as the result of a burn, is *great collapse* or *severe shock to the nervous system.* The surface of the body becomes pale, the extremities cold, and the pulse quick and feeble. There will be repeated and severe rigors or shiverings,

and the patient will complain bitterly of being cold, the thermometer all the while indicating a febrile temperature. In some cases, however, the temperature is really sub-normal, as in collapse proper. In fatal cases, these symptoms are rapidly succeeded by laborious breathing, coma, convulsions (particularly in young children) and death; whilst in others, dissolution is preceded by a period of imperfect reaction, accompanied by delirium and a sharp jerking pulse. Mr. Erichsen states, that the first period of depression and congestion occupies, as a rule, some forty-eight hours. Before reaction sets in, there is usually an interval of quiet, during which the sufferer may die comatose from congestion of the brain and its membranes, and from effusion into the ventricles. Death sometimes occurs from a sort of passive œdema or dropsy of the lungs, and more rarely the serous cavities become the seat of copious and fatal effusion.

From the second day to the second week is the period of reaction and inflammation. *Irritative fever* attended with thoracic complications, such as *pneumonia*, *pleurisy* or *bronchitis*, or a compound of all three, may set in. Enteritis, with ulceration of the bowels and consequent peritonitis may, and as Mr. Curling* has pointed out not unfrequently does, occur.

We have next to consider the *stupor* or *coma* produced by burns and scalds. This has often been mistaken for *opium poisoning*. As a fact, there are no well-marked indications by which to distinguish the coma of the one from the coma of the other. Mr. Abernethy once gave evidence in a case where a surgeon was charged with the manslaughter of a child by opium, the comatose condition in which it died being ascribed to two doses of eight and ten drops of laudanum given to relieve the pain of a severe scald. The surgeon was acquitted, Mr. Abernethy deposing, not only that the practice of giving opium in such cases was usual, but that the coma was in all probability the result of the burn and not of the opium. The author cannot concur in Dr. Taylor's recommendation to withhold opium from

* "Medical Chirurgical Transactions," Vol. XXV.; Humphrey, "Association Journal," Oct. 19, 1855.

burnt children. *It must not be forgotten that extreme pain may be, and often is, fatal.*

Tetanus may supervene on *burns and scalds.* (*Cases 2, 7.*)

5. *The Period at which different Burns were Inflicted.*

When there are *several burns* on a dead body the question may be asked, "*Were all these burns inflicted at one and the same time?*" To answer this, note must be taken whether any of them have begun to suppurate, or slough, or cicatrize, or show any other changes indicative of vital action. Nevertheless it must be remembered that burns inflicted at the same time may not heal with the same rapidity, owing either to differences of degree, or to some peculiarities of circulation or innervation, or to their situation.

6. *The Causes of Death.*

The causes of death from burns are various. ("*Vierteljahrss.*," 1870, II., 93.)

(*a.*) *Injury.*—In the case of fire attacking buildings, etc., instances of instantaneous death may result from the fall of bricks, timber, etc. Or, again, in the endeavour to escape, people may fall from windows or roofs, and thus meet with fatal injuries. These accidents may cause death after a longer or shorter interval.

(*β.*) *Syncope* and *Suffocation* (asphyxia).—There is little doubt that in large fires, suffocation resulting either from the actual want of fresh air, or from the presence of a large excess of the products of combustion (CO_2, CO), or both, is frequently a cause of death.

In *Case* 1 the question arose whether the cause of death was suffocation, or the effects produced by the burns. The burns found on the body Dr. Bonfanti attributed to *radiant heat.* Experiments were tried with radiant heat on amputated limbs, but the results obtained were not satisfactory, living skin being affected far more readily by heat than dead. Undoubtedly injuries similar to those arising from the direct application of

heat to the skin, may result from radiant heat of sufficient intensity. But in the case quoted the difficulty appears to have been to explain why the back and front of the body should exhibit the presence of burns, whilst the clothes covering the body were uninjured.

(γ.) *Collapse*—in other words an absence of rallying power from a severe *shock to the nervous system.* This great depression of nervous force is perhaps the chief cause of danger in cases of burns. Collapse is most likely to kill in the case of extensive burns on the trunk.

(δ.) *Coma, Convulsions, Tetanus, etc.*, or other symptoms referable to the brain and nervous system. (*Case* 2.)

(ε.) *Bronchitis, Pneumonia, Œdema of Lungs*, or other thoracic complications.

(ζ.) *Enteritis*, ending in *peritonitis or hæmorrhage*, due to abdominal lesions.

(η.) *Exhaustion*, arising from pain, or from profuse or long-continued suppuration. ("*Lancet*," Feb. 19th, 1870, p. 267.)

(θ.) *Gangrene, Erysipelas, Pyæmia, etc.* (*Case* 47.)

(ι.) Lastly, death may result, after an interval more or less remote, from secondary causes, as in *Case* 3, where death occurred after three months from ulceration of the bowels.

This circumstance suggests the general remark that the cutaneous and visceral nerves of the body are closely related. Thus may be explained the visceral inflammations so often occurring in cases of burns during the stage of reaction. It is in this way that the severe effects of the primary shock are chiefly produced. The later pulmonary inflammation is probably due to the reflected influence through the pneumogastric on the lungs. Hence any previous nervous depression must intensify not only the sequelæ of, but also the shock arising from a burn.

7. *The Period at which Death occurs.*

There can be no question that the first week after a burn is the most fatal period. Thus of fifty fatal cases of burns noted by Mr. Erichsen, there died—

During the first four days	...	...	27	cases.
From the fourth to the eighth day			6	„
In the second week ...	...	...	8	„
„ third „ ...	...	...	2	„
„ fourth „ ...	...	...	2	„
„ fifth „ ...	...	...	4	„
„ sixth „ ...	...	...	1	„

Death, however, may be delayed for a considerable period. Thus in one case of burns (*Case* 3) resulting from a coal mine explosion, death occurred from ulceration of the bowels three months after the accident. Or, again, a person may recover the primary effects of a burn, and die after an interval, longer or shorter, from exhaustion or other causes. (*Case* 2.) As a fact, inflammation of the viscera, which not unfrequently is the cause of death in the case of a severe burn, does not set in for several days after the accident, during which interval a considerable alleviation of the extreme pain may occur, and consequently an appearance of partial recovery.

And here a further medico-legal question may arise—*How long after a burn did the person live?*

Death may be almost instantaneous from shock, or exceedingly rapid from the effects of the gases of combustion. So rapid, indeed, may the fatal result be, that the time is insufficient for even inflammation of parts to set in, the post-mortem revealing no well-marked signs of the accident, nor any visceral abnormalities to indicate the actual cause of death. The existence of suppuration, much more of gangrene, proves that the person must have lived for some time (say 48 hours at least) after the burn had been inflicted, although on these points it is impossible to lay down definite rules.

8. *The Post-mortem Appearances produced by Burns.*

Supposing a body to be more or less completely charred, it may still be possible to distinguish the sex from the pelvis, and the age from the length and character of the bones, or if the person be very old, from the jaw. In such investigations, moreover, the finding remains of rings and studs, or of false teeth, or

the gold mounts of teeth, may constitute most important evidence of identity. (See Dr. Parkman's case, p. 264.)

Even should the body be reduced to ashes, it is not improbable that the bones may retain their form and shape sufficiently, at any rate, to enable us to determine certain of their characteristics. Of course, the presence of foreign bodies amongst the ashes, as in the former case, must be carefully sought for. For a body to be reduced to ashes (remembering that the human body contains 75 per cent. of water), a great heat long applied is required. Admitting that there are exceptional cases where a body has been reduced to ashes (such as, *e.g.*, the case of Mr. Scott, which occurred in London in the great fire of 1861, when only two or three bones and a gold watch and guard marked the spot of his death), it is certain that as a rule a body subjected to great heat will merely be carbonized, the skeleton remaining more or less complete, with remains of the soft parts upon it sufficient to establish identity. (*Case* 25.) In Mr. Scott's case the body had been subjected to a white heat for ten or twelve days, a condition only likely to occur exceptionally.

But it must be remembered that death may occur in, and from a fire, and yet no external appearances be apparent, as when, for example, it results from suffocation. It is difficult I admit to see how a body could escape burns of greater or less degree, either before or after death, in such case; nevertheless the possibility of death occurring from suffocation, and under such conditions that the skin might suffer no injury indicative of a burn, is manifest. Under these circumstances we should probably find marked suffusion of the eyes, whilst the internal appearances would be certain to yield important evidence. Thus in *Case* 19, where two children met their death in a fire, severe burns were found on one child, whilst on the other no burn marks were visible at all. Nevertheless, at the post-mortem, indications of death by asphyxia were discovered in both cases.

It is most important that we should carefully examine the body for all fractures and wounds, and if present, as far as possible determine their cause. (*Case* 38.) The possibility of wounds in such cases resulting from pieces of timber, etc., accidentally falling on the person must not be overlooked.

Again, if the bones be reduced to ashes, the presence of phosphate of lime in the burnt residue in quantity, will be strongly indicative of animal remains.

In all the cases thus far mentioned, the chemical analysis of residues may furnish important evidence. It is quite true that organic and volatile poisons would be destroyed by the heat, but there are other poisons that would not be similarly affected; and if any suspicion of death from poisoning exists, the analysis of the ashes may serve to prove or disprove its truth, so far as certain indestructible poisons are concerned.

Supposing the body to be charred or roasted, it will probably be quite impossible to form any opinion as to previous acts of violence on the person, or whether death was caused by violence or by fire. Cremation of a body has not infrequently been adopted to cover crime. (*Case* 17, 20 *a*.)

We now leave the examination of charred and incinerated remains, to consider the post-mortem appearances presented in an ordinary case of death from burning:—

(*a*.) *External Appearances.*—The post-mortem appearances of a burn on the dead body, will resemble for the most part those already described as the appearances found during life, viz., a reddened or ashey white or parchmenty state of skin, and a blistered cuticle. The resulting vesications may be either entire or burst, the exuded serum in the latter case having coated the skin with a kind of albuminous varnish. The parts where the burnt and unburnt tissues join, will be indicated as in life by a red line of demarcation; whilst under the raised cuticle the true skin will appear of a brownish red colour. (*Cases* 6 and 24.)

If a patient has lived for some time after a severe burn, suppurating surfaces and granulating sores will probably be found. (*Case* 4.) It is evident that the exact appearance will depend on various circumstances, such as the intensity of the heat, the length of time the patient has lived, and the vital power of the constitution.

In one case of death from scalds, it is stated that the nails of the fingers and toes were found wanting. (*Case* 6.)

In examining and reporting on a burn we must carefully note the following details:—

(1.) The part or parts of the body burnt.

(2.) The special characteristics of the burnt portion (whether charred, vesicated, merely reddened, etc.).

(3.) The extent (stated in square inches) of the burn.

(4.) Whether there is any well-marked and deeply injected line, dividing the injured from the uninjured tissues.

(5.) Whether the blisters are full of air or of serum. If they contain serum, it should be noted whether it be watery or thick.

(6.) Whether the true skin, after the cuticle is removed, exhibits a dotted injected appearance.

(β.) *Internal Appearances.*—Cases of death from burns not infrequently occur where no internal post-mortem appearances can be detected. (*Cases* 5 and 7.)

Case 7 is remarkable, inasmuch as tetanic stiffness occurred before death, and yet no signs of lesions were noted at the post-mortem either in the brain or spinal cord, or indeed of any abnormalities in other parts or viscera.

If death results from shock, or from the simple exhaustion occasioned by pain, it is probable, at any rate possible, that no post-mortem appearances would be discovered.

Inflammation of serous membranes with abnormal effusion into serous cavities.—Thus, after death from burns, fluid in more than usual quantity will frequently be found in the ventricles and at the base of the brain; also signs of pleurisy with pleuritic effusion (*Case* 4); effusion into the pericardium (*Case* 4), abdominal cavity, etc. No doubt effusion is in such cases the result of a sudden reflux of blood resulting from the injury.

Congestion of the mucous membranes of the bronchial tubes and alimentary canal.—The bronchial tubes, as well as the lungs generally, even when death occurs at a very early period, are usually congested. (*Cases* 9, 17 and 19.) In death resulting from suffocation in a large conflagration, a sooty, frothy mucus is usually found in the larynx and trachea. (*Cases* 19 and 26.) Sometimes, however, the respiratory tract has been found normal. (*Case* 11.) In *Case* 26 the lungs were said to be pale and anæmic.

Congestion of the stomach and of the alimentary canal, more especially of the œsophagus, duodenum, and ileum, are generally well-marked post-mortem signs of death from burns. The parts are variously described as rosy red, scarlet, etc. (*Cases* 14 and 19.)

The author from a personal examination of many fatal cases of burns, can confirm Mr. Curling's statement that *perforating ulcers of the duodenum* are common, particularly in children and young people, in whom Brunner's glands are very active. These ulcers are rarely found before the sixth day, the second week being the usual period of their occurrence. Mr. Murray Humphrey has observed that the lower part of the œsophagus is sometimes ulcerated, and the author has noted that Peyer's patches, and in fact the solitary glands generally, are often greatly inflamed and sometimes ulcerated in injuries to the skin resulting from severe burns, scalds, large blisters from the Spanish fly, and the burns inflicted by strong carbolic acid. Intussusception of the small intestines is also very commonly noted after death from burns, but is probably only a phenomenon attending the death. The ulcers described may set up peritonitis, or fatal hæmorrhage, by implicating a large artery. In this way blood may be vomited or passed by stool.

The *heart* is sometimes found empty (see *Case* 17), but more often the right side of the heart is full, and the left empty. (*Cases* 4, 6, 11, 19.) The larger blood-vessels have frequently been recorded as congested, whilst the rest of the body was anæmic. (*Cases* 4 and 10.) These appearances are not unlike what we should expect as the result of death by asphyxia.

The *brain* has been frequently observed congested with red blood. (*Cases* 6, 9, 16, 19.)

The *liver*, *kidneys*, and *pelvic organs* are not unfrequently congested. (*Cases* 19 and 26.) In *Case* 19, where two children were exposed to the same fire, the liver and kidney of one child were congested, whilst in the other they were normal.

The *colour of the blood* varies. In Dr. Buzzard's cases there was no venous blood in the body. (*Case* 16.) It is evident if death result from asphyxia due to an excess of *carbonic anhydride* and a want of oxygen in the air, the blood will be dark coloured

(venous) (*Cases* 6 and 19); but if death is occasioned by breathing *carbonic oxide*, which under certain circumstances may be the chief product of combustion, the blood will then be found of a bright red colour (carbonic oxide hæmoglobin). (*Cases* 4 and 16.)

9. *The means of Distinguishing Burns inflicted during Life from those produced after Death, or from the Effects of Post-mortem Changes.* (*Cases* 1, 20 *a*, 20 *β*.)

On this matter two points are certain and may be disposed of at once:—

First. If a body be found completely charred or roasted, it will be impossible to say whether the *primary* application of the fire was to a living or to a dead body, seeing that a living body cannot be charred. In other words, the roasting (much more the charring) process would not commence until after the death of the person, even supposing him to have been alive when the fire was first applied. Hence no opinion can be offered from an inspection of charred or roasted remains as to the life or the death of the individual before the action of the fire.

Secondly. If the presence of granulations are well marked on a burn, more especially if "proud flesh" [*i.e.*, exuberant granulations] is apparent, or if pus or gangrene or the like are found on the burnt portions, we may regard the indications afforded by these (being essentially vital phenomena) as proof positive that the sufferer lived for some time after the burn had been inflicted.

There are two specially marked characteristics of burns, produced during life (*i.e.* where destruction of tissue has not resulted), and to these our attention must be directed in some detail, viz., (*a*) a red line dividing the injured from the uninjured skin; and (*β*) the formation of blisters (vesication).

(*a.*) *Line of redness.*

On applying a hot body to the skin of a living person, the part to which the heated substance is actually applied will at once (as we have pointed out) assume a coppery red colour, the skin becoming dry and parchmenty, and the cuticle after a time rising in a blister. And here, in passing, we may note that the dry and parchmenty condition of skin found in a burn, at once

serves to distinguish it from a post-mortem appearance (*i.e.*, from the result of decomposition), where the cuticle, at any rate for a considerable period after death, is moist and the reverse of parchmenty. Around this coppery-coloured blush, or the blister if such be formed, the skin has a dead white or grey appearance. Surrounding the dead-white skin we shall observe the *line of redness*, of varying depth and width according to the intensity of the heat, and the length of time the hot body was applied. This line of redness shades off on the outer side to a diffused blush, which may extend some distance. This diffused redness, however, is not to be confounded with the line of redness. The diffused redness is nothing more than a mere capillary congestion or erythematous blush removable by pressure with the finger, and disappearing after death. The line of redness on the contrary is (like that seen in gangrene) a true line of demarcation between living and dead tissues—the result of vital reaction, appearing almost immediately in many cases after the infliction of the burn, not materially affected by pressure, and not disappearing with death. The medico-legal importance therefore, of this line of redness depends (1) on its almost certain formation when burns are inflicted during life; and (2) on its permanence after death.

But it is necessary to consider here the indications afforded by its absence and by its presence in greater detail:—

(i.) Given *the absence* of the line of redness, are we justified in stating positively that the burn *was not* inflicted during life? The existence of the red line being the result of vital reaction (*Ann. d'Hyg.*, I., p. 442), it must be admitted that there are cases of severe burns (and more than one is known to the author), occurring on persons of a low degree of vitality, where the line is at best but very slight, or where it has been very slow in making its appearance. (*Case* 15.) Considering, therefore, *first*, that this red line depends on a reaction (and there may be none, or next to none); and *secondly*, that it requires a certain time (rapid as its formation usually is) for its appearance, (whereas a severe burn may destroy life almost instantly), we should scarcely be justified in saying that the *absence* of the line of redness is positive proof (however strong an indication it may be) that the burn was not inflicted during life.

(ii.) Given *the presence* of the line of redness, are we justified in stating positively that the burn *was* inflicted during life? Allowing that the formation of the line of redness is the result of vital action, it may be conceded that it cannot be produced on, or in, tissues that are dead. But it is equally certain that the molecular death of the tissues or of particular parts of the organism, may be delayed for a longer or shorter time after what is termed somatic death—that is, the general death of the body (page 28). Hence the line of redness may be formed on a part, and in tissues, where there still lingers a certain degree of vitality, although we should be justified in considering the person to be actually dead. I have myself produced this line of redness, more or less well marked, by the application of a hot iron, in several limbs, within five minutes of amputation; but I have never succeeded in producing it either on limbs or bodies at a period later than five minutes after amputation or death. Sir R. Christison ("*Edin. Med. and Surg. Journ.*" XXXV., p. 320) gives ten minutes as the period after death beyond which he was unable to obtain this red line. Dr. Taylor failed to obtain it in bodies that had been dead some hours. Chambert ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1859, I., 368) believes the red line to be practically distinctive of a life burn. On the other hand, Champouillon ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1846, I., 421) asserts that a red line always accompanies heat blisters produced after death in dropsical subjects. I have myself observed the red line to which Champouillon refers, but it is of so slight a nature and so superficial (so entirely different indeed from what we are describing) that I can scarcely think it could be mistaken for the deeply injected deep red line of a burn produced during life.

The conclusion it seems to me, therefore, that we are justified in drawing respecting this red line of demarcation between living and dead tissue (for that really is what it is), is that although its absence may not be absolute proof that a burn was not inflicted during life, nor its presence that it was, nevertheless that it constitutes the strongest possible presumptive evidence as to the period when the burn occurred; its presence undoubtedly indicating, even supposing the burn was not inflicted during

bodily life, that it was inflicted at most within a few minutes of that bodily life, and at any rate during the molecular life of the part or of the tissue concerned.

Lastly, we may note that if in the course of this line of redness, minute pus-yielding granulations are to be seen (a hand-glass being often necessary for their detection), we should then have no hesitation in asserting positively that the burn was produced during the bodily life of the person, seeing that at least some hours are necessary for the production of pus-yielding granulations.

(*β.*) *Vesication.*—By a blister we understand the exudation of the serum of the blood from the surface of the true skin and its collection between the cuticle and the true skin (*cutis vera*).

It is evident that the exudation of a fluid on the one hand, and the continuity of the cuticle on the other, are the two essential conditions for the production of a true blister.

When intensely heated solids have been applied, with the effect of producing actual destruction of the skin, although there can be no vesication at the precise spot, nevertheless, on parts contiguous, and to which the heat may have extended by radiation, vesicles may form.

Again, vesicles are certain to be produced in the case of burns resulting from boiling water, melted sealing-wax, etc., or indeed any agency where the heat is insufficient to effect a destruction of skin.

The formation of a true serous blister indicates as a rule that the burn was inflicted during life. Thus, the action of heat on the skin has been suggested as one of the minor signs of death (page 39). The action resulting in serous exudation must be regarded as vital. But here, again, we must distinguish between the life of the body as a whole, and the life of its separate tissues and portions.

We must now consider the medico-legal value of vesication in greater detail:—

(i.) Given *the absence of blisters* (supposing the cuticle to be continuous), are we justified in assuming positively that the burn was not inflicted during life?

Most certainly not. Sometimes no vesicles whatsoever form

after a burn. Or, again, admitting that in certain cases vesicles form almost immediately after the infliction of a burn on a living body, it is equally certain that in other cases many minutes and even hours may elapse before the blister rises. (*Case* 15.) In this interval the patient may die, under which circumstances the blister will not rise. Further, it has been shown by M. Bouchut (see Chaubert's Papers in the "*Ann. d'Hygiène*," April, 1859), that the application of heat to the skin of a patient dying from phthisis produced no blisters, nor indeed any other effect than its application would to a corpse.

Some little care is necessary to decide positively in any case the absence of vesication. A mere pin-hole aperture in the cuticle would be sufficient to allow the serum, which would otherwise collect and form a blister, to escape, and so prevent a vesication being formed. This has been noticed many times in our experience. It suggests the necessity, in cases where a question of this kind occurs, of carefully examining the cuticle with a lens for minute apertures, or for what very frequently may be noted, minute fissures. The non-elasticity, the parchmenty and unyielding condition of the cuticle resulting from a burn, is very liable to force out the serum as fast as formed, if but the slightest outlet exists.

(ii.) Given *the presence* of blisters on a burnt body, are we justified in assuming positively that the burn was inflicted during life?

In all cases where questions of this kind occur, the character of the blister and the nature of the red line surrounding it, are (as we have already indicated), most important details. We limit ourselves now, however, to the blister itself, and not to its anatomical characters.

In considering the conclusions to be drawn from the presence of blisters, it will be well to study the experiments that have been recorded, and the conclusions drawn from these experiments, by authorities.

Sir R. Christison's experiments ("*Edin. Med. and Surg. Journal*," XXXV., p. 320, April, 1831) were conducted in consequence of being consulted in *Case* 20 *β*. To different portions of the body, one hour after death, of a stout young

man who had committed suicide with laudanum, a hot poker and a stream of boiling water were applied. No blister nor redness resulted. Next day the poker burns presented a dried, brownish, translucent appearance, and on the scalded parts the cuticle was easy of removal, and appeared ruffled, the true skin underneath exhibiting no trace of moisture.

In a patient comatose from poison, heat was applied to the skin four hours *before* death, and again half an hour *after* death. The burnt spots were observed thirty-eight hours after death. The parts burnt during life where the cuticle was entire were blistered, the vesications being filled with serum; whilst on those portions where the cuticle was destroyed, the true skin and parts adjacent appeared glazed, from the exuded and dried serum. Around all these burns there existed a red line not diminished by pressure. The parts burnt after death were mostly charred, but in two places blisters, covered by a dry skin, and containing air and not serum, were noted. The true skin was also dry, and presented no appearance of any exudation having occurred. No redness, moreover, was remarked surrounding these burns.

In experiments on an amputated limb, no vesicles of any kind could be obtained half an hour after its removal, but blisters containing air were easily formed ten minutes after amputation by the application of a hot iron. From these and other experiments Christison concludes:—

(1.) "That the application of heat to the body a few minutes after death is incapable of producing any of the effects due to living reaction.

(2.) "That a line of redness near the burn, not removable by pressure, and the formation of blisters containing serum, are certain indications of the burn having been inflicted during life.

(3.) "That if a vesicle be formed after death, it will be found to contain air and not serum; the true skin underneath the cuticle will be found to be dry, and no redness around the burnt spot apparent."

Casper (Vol. I., p. 300) details a series of experiments on this subject. Wadding soaked in turpentine was fired on the calf of the leg, and the flame of an oil lamp applied to the top of

the foot of a woman æt. 60, who had been dead forty-eight hours. In neither case was vesication produced, nor any exudation of serum.

Wadding soaked in turpentine was fired thirteen hours after death on the stomach of a premature child that had lived for twenty-four hours. Fine radiating folds were remarked surrounding the spot burnt. The spot itself became dry and of a light brown colour, but there was no trace of vesication.

A flame was applied to the dropsical scrotum of the body of the last-mentioned child. The part burnt contracted, but no trace of vesication resulted.

Casper refers (Vol. I., p. 302) to a most interesting case, where certain bystanders had lighted a straw fire under the body of a drowned man, with the hope of resuscitating him. The body had been recovered from the water almost immediately after submersion. In this case Casper noted, three days after death, ten or twelve burst bullæ of various sizes up to a walnut. The base of the blisters presented no redness, nor was any redness of the true skin apparent under the blisters when the cuticle was removed.

Numerous other experiments were made, and the following are Casper's conclusions:—

(1.) That by means of flame, vesications may in certain cases, and at almost any time after death, be produced on a dead body. These vesications result from the fluid under the cuticle becoming vaporized by the intense heat applied, the cuticle in this way being elevated above the true skin. They are always of small size, and usually in a few seconds (or at most a few minutes) after their formation burst with a slight crack, the cuticle immediately collapsing. These blisters were never found to contain serum, but watery vapor only; and there were no signs of a red line or of redness on the base from which they spring.

(2.) No blisters of any kind are produced when combustible substances, such as wadding soaked in turpentine, are laid on the body and fired.

(3.) The presence, therefore, of vesications persistent after death, accompanied by a reddened base, are certain indications

of the burn being produced during life; and he adds, "It is quite impossible to confound a burn inflicted during life with one inflicted after death."

M. Liman (Casper's "*Vierteljahrss.*," 1863, XXIV., 367) has experimented on five dead bodies, the temperatures of which varied from 78° to 98° F., and at periods varying from one to two hours after death. He notes that a blister may be raised by a spirit flame, but that the vesication results, in his opinion, merely from the fluid under the cuticle becoming vaporized, none of the blisters in his experiments containing serum. The raised skin soon became flat when the source of heat was withdrawn, nor were there any changes indicative of reaction.

Dr. Taylor ("*Med. Juris.*," I., p. 690) states that he has never observed any vesication produced in his experiments with heated iron or with boiling water on the bodies of infants after death. He describes, however (p. 691), an interesting and most important case, where a drowned man, pulseless and to all appearance dead, was immersed in a warm (? hot) bath. When the body was taken out the cuticle peeled off, and several vesications filled with bloody serum were noted. The man was not anasarcous. Dr. Taylor concludes :—

(1.) That the production of a serous blister on a dead body depends on the amount of latent organic life remaining in it.

(2.) That the effects of *hot water* on the living and on the recently dead body, may as in this case so far as vesication is concerned, be similar.

Dr. Chambert ("*Ann. d'Hygiène*," April, 1859, I., 342) has conducted a series of experiments on living persons, and on bodies at various periods up to twenty-four hours after death, to determine the medico-legal importance of blisters as signs of life burns, and the three chief conclusions at which he has arrived are as follows :—

(1.) That blisters (even containing serum) may be caused by heat both on living and dead bodies.

(2.) That in the living, the temperature necessary to produce them is less than in the dead.

(3.) That the serum in a blister produced by a burn on a living body is thick, and sets by the action of heat or nitric

acid into a nearly solid mass; whilst the serum of a blister produced on a dead body is thin and watery, and when warmed or treated with nitric acid, merely turns milky or opalescent.

M. Leuret ("*Ann. d'Hygiène*, 1835, II., 387) experimented on a dropsical subject twenty-four hours after death. On applying a heated brazier, he noted that the cuticle was first hardened, after which a blister formed, containing an abundance of reddish coloured serum. He was unable to obtain serous blisters after death in non-anasarcous bodies. He argues: that the conclusions to be drawn from serous vesications as proof of a burn being inflicted during life in the case of anasarcous patients, needs great caution.

M. Champouillon ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1846, I., 421) confirms the experiments of M. Leuret. He further states that blisters may be produced at any period after death, even when putrefaction has commenced, on the bodies of patients afflicted with dropsy. These blisters do not appear in less time than from two to six hours. The serum they contain is rarely tinged with blood.

Dr. Wright, of Birmingham ("*Path. Researches on Vital and Post-mortem Burning*," 1850) has given us some interesting experiments bearing on this point:—

On the body of a woman, æt. 30, who died from acute congestion of the lungs and was slightly dropsical, a spirit lamp was applied to the back of the leg 3½ hours after death, the body being at the time warm and the joints flexible. In the course of an hour blisters were formed filled with pale straw-coloured serum, one blister containing two, and a second three drams.

Experiments of a like kind were conducted on the same body ten and fifteen hours after death, the body being then cold and rigid. Blisters again were produced, but they contained no serum.

Dr. Wright states that he has produced a serous blister on a dead body more than a dozen times, on two occasions within half-an-hour, and once within fifteen minutes of death, and also on amputated limbs, from half a minute to four minutes after removal.

His experiments led him to conclude:—

That serous blisters may result from post-mortem burns, and that their formation depends on the amount of latent organic life in the body, rather than upon the presence of serum in the cellular tissue (anasarca).

And not to quote further authorities, it may be noted that *Orfila* ("*Méd. Légale*," 1828, I., p. 457) and *Devergie* ("*Méd. Légale*," 1836, p. 273) both express their positive opinion that, from the nature and appearance of the blisters, it is not possible to mistake a burn inflicted during life for one inflicted after death.

I have made a series of observations (conjointly with the late Dr. Woodman) on some twenty-eight bodies from one hour to six days after death, and also on several amputated limbs, to discover how far it was possible to produce blisters by fire or by the application of heated bodies, and if so, in what particulars they differ from those produced during life. Without detailing these experiments, I content myself with stating our conclusions:—

(1.) That in some cases blisters may be produced after death by the application either of a flame (this being the easiest method of all), or of boiling oil, or of molten lead to the skin; but that in no case were we able to produce a post-mortem blister by the application of boiling water.

(2.) That in no case were we successful in producing a blister on an amputated limb at a later period than thirty minutes after its removal, probably owing to the rapidity with which cooling takes place. In the case of dead bodies, however, (excluding those that died of dropsy), vesications were formed in two cases as late as eighteen hours, and in several cases as late as twelve hours after death.

(3.) That the majority of these post-mortem blisters were found to contain no fluid whatsoever, the raised cuticle rapidly collapsing after the source of heat was removed. In some few exceptional cases there was observed under the cuticle a small quantity of a thin watery fluid, containing a mere trace of albumen only.

(4.) That in the bodies of persons who had died with well-marked dropsy, serous blisters could always be produced, and at almost any period after death; but the serum found under such

circumstances was invariably thin and watery, rarely tinged with blood, and contained but a mere trace of albumen.

(5.) That in no instance were we able in a dropsical subject to produce a blister by the simple application of boiling water, unless a stream of the boiling water was poured for some minutes on one spot. Even under these conditions we were not always successful.

(6.) That in no case of a post-mortem blister, whether on dropsical bodies, or on the bodies of persons who had died suddenly, or had met their death instantaneously by accident, have we ever noticed the slightest indication of a line of redness around the blister, nor of a reddened *cutis vera* after the removal of the cuticle.

(7.) Our experiments entirely confirm the observations of *Chambert*, that the serum exuded in a blister formed during life is thick and rich in albumen.

And here three further points must be recorded :—

(1.) That in certain badly nourished people, or in those suffering from phthisis, starvation, &c. (as Guy points out), blisters, not unlike those produced by fire, may be found on the trunk or on the extremities. Such blisters and sores (so-called "burnt holes") were very common in the great Irish famine.

(2.) That if a burn be inflicted on a person in a state of insensibility, where the vital powers are much depressed, no line of redness or vesication may result; nevertheless on the patient reviving and recovering sensibility, the vital signs of blisters and of the red line dividing the dead from the living tissues, may then become apparent. (*Case* 15.)

(3.) That bullæ frequently form on a dead body as the result of putrefaction. The absence both of the red line of demarcation and of a reddened state of the *cutis vera*, together with the presence of green discolouration on the skin generally, and on the *cutis vera* in particular when the cuticle is removed, will at once dispel any doubt as to the cause of these blisters.

And these two conclusions I think the facts warrant :—

(1.) Given a burn on a dead body where there are serous blisters, the serum being thick and rich in albumen, and the blisters surrounded by a deeply injected red line, the true skin after the

removal of the cuticle also presenting a reddened appearance, the evidence is strong that the burn was produced during the life of the person, whilst it is conclusive that it was caused during the life of the part. Thus in *Case* 18 a red line and a serous blister resulted from a burn inflicted on a child during a life which only lasted a quarter of an hour. In *Case* 37, again, a new-born child was boiled in water. The medical jurist stated that the blisters indicated that the child was living when first put into the water, although the soddened state of the lungs prevented the application of the hydrostatic test.

(2.) Given a blister containing air, the true skin after the removal of the cuticle appearing dry and unglazed, of a dull white colour, or dotted with grey specks at the opening of the sudoriferous ducts;—or given a blister containing a little thin non-albuminous serum, there being in neither case any red line surrounding the blister, nor any injected condition of the *cutis vera* or subcutaneous tissues, the evidence is strong that the burn was inflicted after death.

10. *Was the Death by Burning Accidental, Suicidal, Homicidal or the result of Spontaneous Combustion?*

Omitting for the moment any reference to the so-called spontaneous combustibility of the body under certain unusual conditions, we may remark that death from burning is more likely to be accidental than either suicidal or homicidal, and less likely to be suicidal than homicidal. *Case* 42 is, however, an illustration of suicidal burning.

As regards *accidental* death from burning, it by no means follows that the person will be found dead at a spot *near* the fire which had caused the accident. On the contrary, it is more likely that a person who accidentally catches fire, would be found after death at some distance from the fire. We know that when such an accident as the clothes catching fire occurs, it more frequently than not happens that the person runs frantically out of the room and house, crying for assistance. Nor, again, does the fact that a dead body is found near a fire, necessarily suggest murder, or positively exclude accident, for the person might

have been intoxicated when he caught fire, or have been unable to move from the spot by reason of disease.

It will be all important in a case of this kind to examine the body for marks of violence—such as fatal cranial injuries, marks of a cord, &c. It must be remembered, however, that marks of violence (excepting fractures) may be entirely effaced by burning —indeed, that the burning may have been effected for the express purpose of destroying the evidence such injuries would otherwise afford of homicide. Thus the conclusions to be drawn, even from the absence of such marks in cases of burning must be carefully considered. (See *Cases* 21, 22 and 32.) On the other hand the conclusions to be drawn from the presence of wounds on a body burnt to death, require careful consideration, seeing that wounds of very considerable extent may result from the application of heat only. (*Cases* 23 and 24.) In all wounds found on bodies in cases of burning, this question must be considered—Were they caused by violence previously to the burning, or were they the result of the burning?

Another question here presents itself—

Given severe wounds on a dead body, evidently the result of violence, and in addition marks of burning sufficient to account for death, whether is the death to be attributed to the wounds or to the fire?

This question occurred in *Case* 22, and its importance consisted in the fact that if the wounds had been the cause of death, the prisoner, on his own confession, was guilty of murder; but if the fire, he might have been innocent of the death.

In these days, when cremation amongst a certain class is lauded as a grand hygienic system for disposing of the dead (utterly forgetful, in the desire to be strong-minded and unsentimental, that such a rapid destruction of evidence may often defeat the ends of justice, and in no small degree suggest, and act as an incentive to, crime), burning may be adopted as a means for disposing of the dead body of a person that had come to his end naturally. (*Cases* 30 and 31). But it may be far otherwise. Criminals with criminal intent, and for the purpose of ridding themselves of awkward evidence, may cremate a body, and plead the simple adoption of a sanitary improvement as the motive.

Or even if the burning be not carried so far as this, certain portions of a body may be cremated, in order to destroy marks of violence that might otherwise convict. In all such cases the exact position of the burnt body in its relation to the fire-place and to surrounding furniture must be noted. The extent to which other articles near the body, as chairs, carpets, &c., are scorched or burnt should be carefully examined, always remembering, however, that the evidence afforded by these details has only a certain limited value, seeing that murderers frequently arrange matters to suggest accident or suicide, and so to break the scent of the authorities.

In these cases general evidence will be of chief importance. The hearing of a quarrel between the husband and wife, previous to the smell of burning being recognized, was the chief ground of the verdict in *Case* 20 *β*.

Of course the probabilities in such cases must be weighed. It is, for instance, more likely that a blacksmith working at his forge, or a cook at her kitchen fire, would be accidentally burnt to death, than that such an accident would occur to a merchant in his office.

We shall discuss the so-called spontaneous combustion of the human body in another chapter.—(See Index.)

11. *Burns produced by Acids and other Corrosive Bodies.*

The crime of maliciously throwing corrosive liquids over persons was at one time very prevalent. By the 24 & 25 Vic., c. 100, s. 29, this offence is specially mentioned, and punishment provided. It is said that on one occasion a prisoner escaped the charge of felony, because he was indicted for wounding, the judge deciding that sulphuric acid would not produce a wound! (R. *v.* Murrow, Liverpool, 1835.) This statute, however, does not define a wound, but mentions the nature of the fluid thrown, as "any corrosive fluid, or any destructive substance," which would include dynamite, nitro-glycerine, &c.

The law regards the act of throwing acids, &c., over a person, whether he be injured or not, as a felony.

There is no very definite recorded case where by throwing acids over a person, death has been caused *directly* from the burn. In *Case* 41 death was said to have resulted from the use of a nitric acid liniment. In another case (*Case* 39) disease of the brain and death resulted from nitric acid having been poured into a man's ear; and in a third case (*Case* 40) death is stated to have been the result of phlebitis, after bleeding performed for a severe ophthalmia, resulting from a sulphuric acid burn. There are many cases, however, where serious results, such as the loss of an eye, &c., have accrued from the throwing of corrosives.

To distinguish burns of this nature from heat burns, it may be noted that the resulting eschars are commonly soft, and not dry, and that the line of redness dividing living and dead tissues is usually very slight. The skin covering the burn is generally of a leathery consistency, and when the part injured is cut into, the tissue affords no indication of congestion, such as we usually find in heat burns, whilst the true skin in many cases will be found destroyed. The burns produced by corrosives, further, are of singularly uniform colour, and very different in this respect from ordinary heat burns; where various degrees of injury from redness upwards will probably be noted. Blisters do not result from the burns produced by corrosive agents, whilst they invariably result from the action of heat, unless there has been entire destructive charring of the skin. Again, in heat-burns we shall probably discover on some parts, and probably on the parts unburnt, a blackening of the skin produced by a deposit of soot set free during combustion. Further, in a heat-burn, the hairs in the neighbourhood of the burn will probably be found scorched. Both of these indications will be absent in the case of burns produced by corrosive agents. And, lastly, if acids be thrown over the person, it is next to certain that some will be found on the dress and clothes of the victim, which must, therefore be carefully examined for stains, the nature of which will have to be determined.

To differentiate burns produced by the various acids or caustic alkalies (for these latter are corrosive fluids, and as injurious in their action as acids), the colour of the stains must be most

accurately noted. Thus, sulphuric acid leaves a brown, nitric acid a deep yellow, and hydrochloric acid a faint brownish yellow stain. The chemical reactions of the stains will, however, probably set at rest the actual acid or corrosive agent employed.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. London Med. Record, Jan. 15, 1878.—(*Dr. Farchini-Bonfanti.*)—A healthy child, æt. 5, was put to bed in a wicker cradle, in its night-dress, and covered over with the usual clothing. Two hours afterwards the friends found that the room in which it was sleeping was on fire. The child was found to be dead, and a wardrobe and some articles of linen contained in it, in flames. The bed-room was filled with a thick smoke. The child had apparently died of suffocation, but there were many slight burns found on its body, both front and back. The wardrobe was three quarters of a yard from where the child was lying. In this case there was no doubt that the woman who had put the child to bed had unconsciously set the linen in the wardrobe on fire. There was no reason to suspect a criminal act. (Pages 452, 464, 465, 472.)

2. Med. Times and Gaz., April 26, 1854, p. 406.—Death from tetanus, after recovery from the primary effects of burns. (Pages 464, 466, 467.)

3. Swansea Lent Assizes, 1869.—(Referred to by *Dr. Taylor*, Vol. I., p. 687.)—Burns from a fire-damp explosion. Recovery took place from the primary effects, but death occurred after three months' continuous illness from inflammation and ulceration of the bowels. (Pages 466, 467.)

4. Casper, Vol. I., p. 315.—A girl, æt. 6. Scald from boiling coffee, extending from the left ear over half the back of the right axilla, down the right side of the thorax, and the right upper extremity. Death in eight days. *Post-mortem:* Brownish patches and granulating sores noted; pleurisy of the right side with recent bands of adhesion; serous effusion into pericardium; right side of heart full of cherry-red, half-coagulated blood, and the left side empty; rest of body anæmic. (Casper decided death was due to thoracic inflammation.) (Pages 469, 470, 471, 472.)

5. Guy's Hospital Reports, 1860, Vol. VI., p. 146.—(*Dr. Wilks.*)—A boy, æt. 2. Scalds on face, neck, and chest. Death on eighth day No special post-mortem appearances discovered. (Page 470.)

6. Casper, Vol. I., p. 313.—(*Case* cxliii.)—Male, æt. 68. Scalded to death in a hot (?) bath. The scald affected two-thirds of the body, and

death occurred in two hours. *Post-mortem:* Epithelium lay in tatters over the brownish-red *cutis vera;* nails of fingers and toes wanting; great congestion of brain; right side of heart distended; blood black and grumous. (Pages 454, 459, 460, 469, 471, 472.)

6a. British Med. Journ., April 29, 1871, p. 456.—A lunatic scalded to death in a hot bath. The attendant was charged with manslaughter. (Page 455.)

6b. Lancet, Jan. 8, 1876.—Death of a child from a scald, from being placed in a bath at too great a temperature. (*See* "British Med. Journ.," Jan. 15, 1876, p. 80.) (Page 455.)

7. Guy's Hospital Reports, 1860, Vol. VI., p. 146.—(*Dr. Wilks.*)—Girl, æt. 9. Clothes caught fire, causing severe burns on the upper part of the chest and on both arms. Death on the ninth day. Twenty-four hours before death she became restless, and tetanic stiffness of the limbs and body was remarked, but no convulsions. At the post-mortem all the organs (even the brain and spinal cord) were found healthy. (Pages 464, 465, 470.)

8. Casper, Vol. I., p. 314.—(*Case* cxliv.)—Male, æt. 83. Burnt to death sitting in a chair before the fire, from his clothes accidentally catching alight. Body (except legs) completely carbonized. The back so destroyed that, on attempting to straighten it, it broke. On the right side the fissures were so deep that the thorax and abdomen could be seen into, and the roasted condition of the liver recognised. (Page 462.)

9. Casper, Vol. I., p. 316.—Boy, æt. 1½. Clothes caught fire. Death in two days. *Post-mortem:* Apoplectic congestion of brain; inflammation of trachea; red hepatisation of inferior lobe of right lung. (Pages 470, 471.)

10. Casper, Vol. I., p. 316.—Female, æt. 81. Death after several days, from a severe burn, involving the nates, including vulva and perinæum, from her clothes catching fire whilst warming herself before a stove. *Post-mortem:* Red hepatisation of upper lobe of left lung; other parts anæmic. (Page 471.)

11. Casper, Vol. I., p. 317.—Female, adult. Burnt to death from her clothes taking fire whilst drunk. In this case Casper states that, from the appearances, some of the burns were inflicted during life, and others after the woman was dead. The character and contents of the vesications are the main points on which he relies for this opinion. Death, he considered, was due to asphyxia, the right side of the heart being gorged with dark red fluid blood. Lungs, trachea, and other parts normal. (Pages 470, 471.)

12. Med. Gazette, Vol. XXV., p. 743.—(*Mr. Long.*)—Account of the post-mortem appearances, recorded in cases of burning. (Page 467.)

13. Lancet, Jan. 6, 1872, p. 11.—(*Mr. Hulke*).—Male adult. One fifth part of the body surface burnt by falling into fire. Highest temp. reached 101·2. Alive on the 12th day. (Page 460.)

14. Amer. Journal Med. Science, Jan., 1861, p. 137.—Female. Superficial burn, involving lower part of body. Death on 13th day. Stomach inflamed at its greater extremity. More or less inflammation of the intestines as far as the cæcum. (Page 471.)

15. Ogston's Med. Juris., p. 462.—A woman, in a state of insensibility from cold, had tins of hot water applied to her feet and sides. The flannels in which they were wrapped got disarranged, so that the tins came into contact with the skin. Two hours afterwards when she was examined, no redness or vesication was visible where the heat had been applied; the next morning, however, when the woman had well-nigh recovered from the insensibility of the previous day, the parts were found extensively blistered, with broad patches of redness. (Pages 473, 476, 482.)

16. Lancet, 1863, I., p. 60.—(*Dr. Buzzard.*)—Case of six children burnt to death in December, 1862. (Pages 471, 472.)

17. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 689.—(*Mr. Jackson of Stamford.*)—Death from burning. *Post-mortem:* Lungs congested; cavities of heart empty. There were reasons to believe that the burning was done after death to conceal strangulation, but there were also indications that some of the burns had been inflicted during life. (Pages 469, 470, 471.)

18.—Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 692.—A child that survived its birth about a quarter of an hour, had a burn purposely inflicted on the right leg during its life. *Post-mortem* (10 days after death): Cuticle entirely destroyed, the under surface being scarlet and much injected. There was a vesicle filled with serum on the scrotum, with *a red line of inflammation* around its edge. (Page 483.)

19. Caspar, Vol. I., p. 314.—Two children (boy æt. 7, and girl æt. 3) burnt to death in one fire. Death was due in both cases to asphyxia. On the girl, however, burns were abundant, but on the boy no injuries from fire were apparent. *Post-mortem:* In both, the trachea contained dull-coloured, frothy mucus discoloured with black particles of soot, the lungs and venous trunks of thorax and abdomen being distended with dark fluid blood. The stomachs of both contained food, the large intestines were full of fæces, and the bladders empty. In both the brain-substance was congested, and the surface of a rosy red tint. In the boy the right heart contained half-a-tablespoonful, and in the girl half-a-teaspoonful of dark fluid blood. In the boy the liver and right kidney were congested, and the small intestines of a rosy red colour; but these appearances were not recorded in the post-mortem on the girl. (Pages 468, 470, 471, 472.)

20. Med. Gazette, Vol. VIII., p. 170.—(*Dr. Duncan.*)

(α). Case of Gilchrist (Glasgow).—A man found guilty of murdering his wife, and afterwards burning her body. The body was so burnt, that medical evidence as to the cause of death was rendered impossible. The defence was that her clothes caught fire whilst she was intoxicated. In this case, however, lodgers in the same house had heard noises as if of a struggle, and the smell of fire succeeded the noises. There was no trace of burning either of the house or furniture. (Pages 469, 472.)

(β). Case heard at Leith.—In many respects this case was similar to the above. A forcible entrance was effected to the room, when a woman (who was then dead) was found burning, a red light issuing from the clothes, whilst in an inner room the accused was found asleep, or pretending to be so. The deceased was found on the hearth, the clothes only partially burnt, and the furniture uninjured. At the post-mortem parts of the body were found carbonized, the abdomen being reduced to a cinder. On the face and extremities some parts were scorched to a hard transparent crust, surrounded by a distinct redness, whilst other parts were merely red and inflamed. There were also many blisters filled with serum on the body. The medical evidence, for these reasons, was to the effect that the burns were inflicted during life. Verdict, "Not proven," on the ground that it might have been accidental.

[The important question here was, might the redness and blisters have occurred if the burning had been effected immediately after death, by other violence, such as strangulation?] (Pages 458, 472, 476, 485.)

21. Taylor's Manual, p. 348.—Murder of the Countess of Goerlitz. The deceased was first strangled; the prisoner (Stauff) then placed the body in a chair, piled combustible articles of furniture around it, and set fire to them. (Page 484.)

22. Caspar, Vol. I., p. 308.—(*Case* cxlii.)—Murder of Widow Halke, aged 70, by Fritze. The woman had been subjected to violence, and the body afterwards burnt. The question was, Did the woman die from the violence (of which the prisoner was undoubtedly guilty), or from the effects of the fire (of which the prisoner might have been innocent)? Vesications were found on the body, some of which contained serum, others being empty. The post-mortem showed clearly that asphyxia was the cause of death. The question then arose, was the asphyxia the result of strangulation (which the prisoner denied) or the effect of fire? A stoppage to respiration might have resulted from an injury to the nose that the victim had sustained, and to the circumstance that after the prisoner had stunned the woman, he turned her face to the floor. Although the fire was so severe that the whole of the clothes were consumed, and the body carbonized, yet Casper thought the fire was insufficient, supposing the

woman to have been alive, to cause the asphyxia. (The case is most remarkable.) (Page 484.)

23. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 696.—A boy, æt. 2 years, was severely burnt, and died three quarters of an hour after the accident. In this case there were gaping wounds in each knee, and a fissure about 2¾ inches long in the right thigh, also transverse lacerations above and below the knee on the left side. The edges of the fissures were not uneven, but lacked the smoothness of ordinary incised wounds. The fissures themselves were about 3 lines wide and 2 deep, exposing the fatty tissue beneath which was white, and free from any effusion of blood.

Mr. Curling considered these wounds due to the action of heat. It was noted that small blood vessels ran across the fissures, which, being more tenacious than the fatty tissue, had not yielded to the heat. (Pages 461, 484.)

24. Casper, Vol. I., p. 307.—(*Case* cxl.) A young chimney-sweep was roasted to death by a fire being lighted during the time he was sweeping a chimney. He was not carbonized, but his entire skin was of a coppery-red colour, with isolated yellow patches. The skin was parchmenty, in many places fissured, the molten fat having flown out, and varnished the parts around. (Pages 461, 462, 469, 484.)

25. Casper, Vol. I., p. 308.—Five persons completely carbonized in a fire. Not a trace of soft parts were visible. Certain parts in each skeléton were wanting. (Page 486.)

26. Casper, Vol. I., p. 315.—Girl, æt. 2½. Burnt on the private parts, by falling on a hot smoothing-iron. Death in eleven days. *Post-mortem:* Vagina soft and gangrenous; blood fluid; trachea bright red, and covered with frothy matter; lungs pale and anæmic. (Pages 454, 470, 471.)

27. Ann. d'Hyg., 1847, Vol. II., p. 424.—(*M. Boys de Lowry.*)—A mother accused of pouring melted pewter (tin 3 parts and lead 7 parts; melting-point 340° F.=171·1° C.) into the right ear of her idiot son, whilst he was asleep. Pain and violent inflammation resulted. Recovery. (Page 452.)

28. [We have been unable to trace the following anecdote to a more ancient source than the "Dictionnaire d'Anecdotes," etc., published by La Combe, Paris, in 1766, although it refers to the time of the first Edward.] The book says (p. 361), "A pretty citizeness of London had had six husbands, one after the other: the first to please her parents, the rest to please herself. One of her countrymen was brave enough to allow her to make him her seventh husband. For a few months all went merrily. Her fondness, perhaps, made her indiscreet. She told her husband all the faults and follies of his predecessors. She disliked some because they were

sots, others because they were unfaithful to her. In short, she had no good words for any of them. The husband, suspecting something, and wishing to test the character of his wife, began to stay out late, and to appear drunk when he returned. She first reproached him, then began to threaten; but he continued to stop out late, and to feign drunkenness, even more often than before. One night, when she believed him dead drunk, and fast asleep, she took a lead button from the sleeve of her dress, melted it in a pipe, and approached the pretended sleeper, to pour the melted metal into his ear. The husband, no longer doubting her guilt, seized her, cried for help, and gave her up to justice. She was first imprisoned, and then tried, the dead bodies of her six husbands being exhumed, and all bearing witness against her, by the discovery of lead in their ears and brains. On this evidence she was condemned to death. Hence the origin of coroner's inquests in England." (Page 452.)

29. R. v. Newton.—(*Shrewsbury Assizes*, 1849.)

30. R. v. Cook.—(Case of Mr. Paas.)—Attempt to dispose of a body by burning. (Page 484.)

31. R. v. Good.—Ditto. (Page 484.)

32. R. v. Taylor.—(*York Lent Assizes*, 1862.)—Death probably from strangulation, burning of the body being afterwards attempted in such manner as to appear to have been the cause of death, and accidental. The medical evidence showed that the burns exhibited no signs of vesication. (Page 484.)

33. R. v. Caitskell.—(*Carlisle Spring Assizes*, 1872.)—The prisoner was convicted of manslaughter under the following circumstances:—He poured a quantity of petroleum over the clothes of the deceased. By accident the vapour caught fire, and the resulting burns caused the man's death on the following day. (Page 456.)

34. R. v. King.—(*Liverpool Summer Assizes*, 1847.)—A woman convicted of throwing boiling water over her husband for the purpose of maiming him. (Pages 452, 454.)

35. R. v. Blewitt.—(*Worcester Summer Assizes*, 1847.)—A case similar to No. 34. (Page 454.)

36. R. v. Hill.—(*Stafford Summer Assizes*, 1859.)—Similar to Cases 34 and 35. (Page 454.)

37. R. v. Goodfellow.—(*Winchester Assizes*, 1876.)—The body found of a child which had been boiled in water. The question was, had it been put in the water dead or alive? One medical witness stated that the

water had so destroyed the lungs that it was impossible to test them. A second, relying on the presence of blisters containing serum, believed the child was living when placed in the water. The prisoner was acquitted. (Pages 455, 483.)

38. Foderé, Vol. III., p. 18.—The case of a man who murdered several individuals with an axe in 1809, and then set fire to the house in which they lived. The medical officer did not examine the bodies, but certified that their death was due to the fire. Meanwhile, an individual was discovered about one hundred paces from the house, who had evidently been murdered, and suspicion being aroused, the bodies of the others were disinterred. It was then found that the flames had only burnt the flesh superficially, and that the marks of the axe were still distinctly visible.

[Dr. Dunlop (MS. Lectures) mentions a similar case occurring at Glasgow in 1809. A man murdered his wife, and then set fire to her clothes. There were, however, marks of external violence sufficient to convict him.

In the State of Maryland, a few years since, a ruffian murdered a whole family, and then fired the log-house in which they lived. On the body of the father, however, a fracture of the skull was found; and in consequence of a bed from the upper room falling on the mother, her body was so far uninjured as to exhibit three incised wounds, one of them penetrating the stomach. The murderer was detected by finding on him articles of dress belonging to the family.] (Page 468.)

39. Med. Gazette, XVII., p. 89.—A man poured strong nitric acid into his wife's ear whilst she was asleep. She died after six weeks. Great exhaustion. Complete deafness. Loss of the use of the right arm, and before death, convulsions in the right half of the body. Bleeding and suppuration from the ear.

P. M. A portion of the external ear wanting. Petrous portion of temporal bone carious, and the brain near it softened. Death, no doubt, resulted from disease of the brain, the effects of the acid. (Page 486.)

40. R. v. Macmillan.—(*Edinburgh*, 1827.)—("Ed. Med. and Surg. Journ.," April, 1829, p. 230.)—A man had sulphuric acid thrown over him. Severe ophthalmia resulted, for which the surgeons bled him. The man died of phlebitis. (Page 486.)

41. Case of Miss Cashim.—(*Taylor*, Vol. I., p. 698.)—Death from great local mischief, following the use of an escharotic liniment containing nitric acid. (Page 486.)

42. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. I., p. 695.—"A case of attempted suicide by fire occurred in Newgate, in December, 1871. One of the prisoners was found in his cell with his clothes, and part of the bed-clothes, much burnt, and with severe burns on the body. The gaslight in the

cell was so placed that no accident could account for the fire; but all the facts concurred to show that the man had done the act deliberately. He gave no alarm, but a moaning was heard in his cell, and this caused the warder to enter and make the discovery in time to save him." (Page 483.)

43. British Med. Journ., March 23, 1872.—(*Mr. Lawson.*)—Female, æt. 23, went to bed intoxicated and set fire to her bed. She was so drunk that she could not get out of the room, and was compelled to breathe the smoke and hot air. Great pulmonary congestion resulted. Death on the fifth day from exhaustion.

44. British Med. Journ., May 1, 1875.—(*Mr. Parker.*)—Female, æt. 3. Scald of glottis by the child placing her mouth to the spout of a tea-kettle from which steam was issuing. The immediate effects seem to have been only slight, croupy breathing not occurring until the third day. On the sixth day no visible injury was apparent, but there was a deposit of a diphtheritic membrane in the pharynx, larynx, and bronchi. Tracheotomy. Death on the eighth day. (Page 455.)

Query.—Was the formation of the membrane the result of the scald?

45. British Med. Journ., June 19, 1875, p. 809.—(*Mr. Sympson.*)—Boy, æt. 2½. Scald of glottis by drinking boiling water out of a teakettle. Tracheotomy. Recovery. (Page 455.)

46. British Med. Journ., Nov. 20, 1880, p. 806.—(*Mr. Cochrane.*)—Female adult. Injured surface, 7 in. × 4 in. on the head, and 8 in. × 4½ in. on the shoulder and forearm. Recovery.

47. Medical Times and Gazette, Oct. 23, 1880, p. 485.—(*Mr. Hutchinson.*)—Male, 56. Scald of the head with boiling water. Gangrene of arm, necessitating amputation near the surgical neck of the humerus. Recovery after five months. (Pages 454, 466.)

CHAPTER X.

LIGHTNING.

General Considerations.—Experiments with the Induced Spark.—Symptoms produced by Lightning.—The Causes of Death.—Treatment.—Post-Mortem Appearances.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 510.)

LIGHTNING accidents occur more commonly to males than to females, from the circumstance that they more frequently attack those in an exposed position. Exceptional cases are, however, recorded where persons have been struck in places by no means exposed, and as we should suppose singularly safe. Thus in Case 40, a boy was struck by lightning whilst in bed; in Case 44, a child's clothes caught fire, and the chair in which she was sitting was shatttered, and in Cases 43, 43a, and 45, the houses in the first instance were fired and the inmates more or less injured. Cases of railway signal men and of telegraph clerks being struck by lightning at work in their boxes have occurred within the experience of the author.

The forensic aspects of the subject are not unimportant. Thus the effects of lightning may simulate those of violence, and lead to a suspicion of foul play. This suspicion may be increased by a dead and wounded body being found in a lonely country lane, partly stripped of its clothes. (*Case* 45.) In all such cases the circumstances of the death need to be fully considered.

Further, the injurious effects of lightning may prove important in questions of insurance. (See page 366.) (*Case* 1.)

Some few points of general interest bearing on this subject require consideration :—

(1.) *Lightning* is the spark or flash observed during a sudden

discharge of atmospheric electricity. The identity of the lightning flash with electricity of great quantity was first noted by Franklin. The accompanying phenomena of *light*, of *heat* (for the lightning current will melt thin metal wires (*Case* 46) and at times even siliceous substances, producing the tubes called fulgurites), of *magnetism* (as evidenced by the power of lightning to magnetise articles of steel, so that watches stop, magnetic needles have their poles inverted, and telegraph signals are interfered with), are some of the effects whereby this similarity becomes evident. Further, electrical conductors are lightning conductors, and electrical non-conductors are lightning non-conductors. And once again, the influence of lightning and electricity on chemism (as, for example, the power possessed by each of intensifying atmospheric oxygen) affords additional proof of this identity.

(2.) Experiment shows that the lightning flash does not last longer than the $\frac{1}{10,000}$th part of a second. For this reason an object in motion, when seen by a flash of lightning, appears motionless. And again, objects (such as the spokes of a rotating wheel), which, from their rapidity of movement would not be recognisable by ordinary illumination, become visible when seen by the electric flash. These two facts may have considerable medico-legal interest.

The possibility of seeing things and people by lightning, so as afterwards to recognise them, we have already discussed. (Page 246.)

(3.) During a thunderstorm *fire-balls* or meteorites have at times fallen. They are said frequently to rebound once or twice from the earth, and then to explode violently.

(4.) *Thunder* is the sound due to the disturbance produced by a lightning discharge. The long rolling effect probably depends on echoes from clouds, or to a number of discharges taking place at different distances.

(5.) *The Varieties of Lightning.*

(*a.*) *Sheet Lightning.*—This appears as a diffused reddish white, or violet flash, seemingly spread over a considerable extent of sky. It is probably due to a discharge inside the cloud. The *colour of the flash* varies with the state of the atmosphere and with the elevation.

(β.) *Forked Lightning.*—This appears as a zig-zag line of light passing between cloud and cloud, or between cloud and earth. It resembles the discharge from the prime conductor of a frictional machine, taking the path of least resistance. The light is white and brilliant.

(γ.) What is called *Heat Lightning* is, unlike sheet or forked lightning, unaccompanied by thunder ("Silent," or "summer" lightning). It seems to be the reflection from aqueous vapour and clouds of a discharge occurring beyond the horizon, or it may depend on the discharge taking place at such an elevation that the thunder cannot be heard.

A special cause of accidents arises from what is called "the *return shock*." And this form of lightning stroke derives importance from the circumstance that its effects are usually very severe, immediate death frequently resulting, without any injury being apparent on the clothes, or marks present on the body. Thus it may be difficult in such cases to find proof of the cause of death. In most cases where lightning has proved fatal, the severity of the injuries are such that they might lead to a suspicion of criminal violence (although usually there is sufficient evidence from the general surroundings, from the appearance of the clothing and of the dead body itself, to guide us in this matter); nevertheless, as we have said, it must not be forgotten that lightning shocks of great severity may leave no marks whatsoever behind them.

(6.) "It is not known," says Fownes, "to what cause the disturbance of the electrical equilibrium of the atmosphere is due. Experiment has shown that the higher regions of the air are usually in a *positive* state, the intensity of which reaches a maximum at a particular period of the day. In cloudy and stormy weather, the distribution of the atmospheric electricity becomes much deranged, clouds near the surface of the earth often appearing in a *negative* state. The circumstances of a *thunderstorm* exactly resemble those of the charge and discharge of a coated plate or jar, the cloud and the earth representing the two coatings, and the intervening air the bad conducting body. The polarities of the opposed surface and of the insulating medium between them become raised by mutual induction, until violent

disruptive discharge takes place, through the air itself, or through any other bodies which may happen to be in the interval." The fact then is, given a lightning flash, and nothing to interfere with its free passage (in other words, that the discharge meets with no imperfect conductor), it does no harm. But if its free passage be interfered with (in other words, if imperfect conductors come in the path of the discharge), serious results must occur. And such an imperfect conductor is the human body.

As regards living muscle, Ranke considers its conducting power is 3,000,000 times weaker than that of mercury, and 15,000,000 times weaker than that of copper. (Brown-Séquard, "Proc. Roy. Soc.," No. 44.)

Dr. Richardson's experiments lead him to believe, that the blood is a better conductor of electricity than either water, muscle, or nerve matter, whether grey or white. The course of lightning through the body, therefore, would be preferentially by the blood.

The principal cause, then, of the injury effected by lightning, depends on the imperfect conductivity of the body, and its interposition between cloud and earth. The very varied results, therefore, of the flash may be easily accounted for by variations in the conducting power of the clothes worn by the person, or unequal conductivity resulting from one part of the clothes being dry and another part wet, a circumstance fully sufficient to explain irregularities in the direction of rents. Wet clothes are better conductors than dry clothes: — thus wet clothes may, under certain circumstances, save a man. Irregularities, again, in the direction and intensity of wounds and burns may depend on the different conducting power of different articles of clothing worn at the time. Thus, when flannel is worn next the skin, the burns are invariably more superficial than when cotton is in contact with it. Or, again, irregularities may depend on the various metallic substances worn, or on differences in the conductivity of the various tissues themselves.

As regards the general question of the best and safest position in a thunderstorm, it is undoubted that to take refuge under a high solitary tree is a dangerous position. A low

tree, a clump of trees, or a hedge, are less objectionable, whilst a wood is least of all open to danger. Further, it is certain that a corn or hay rick is an unsafe shelter, because if it is dry, it is a worse conductor than the body. The open country is equally objectionable, because in such case the person is the only object for attack. The recumbent is safer than the upright position, and to lie down in a furrow is better than to lie on a ridge.

As a rule trees, buildings, &c., conduct the current fairly well, but if any circumstance happens whereby they are rendered bad or inferior conductors, they will probably be destroyed. In the case of buildings, dangerous effects are now in a great measure obviated by the use of *lightning-rods*, the nature and arrangement of which, however, demand a number of precautions. If *lightning-conductors* are meant to protect a building, they must be sufficiently thick and massive to conduct the electricity, and further they must be absolutely continuous (hence chain conductors are not to be recommended), and well connected with the earth. It is a good plan to connect the lightning-rod with the large water-pipes of a building, and care should be taken that all out-lying metal on the roof should be connected with the conductors by strong wires.

Experiments with the Induced Spark.

Considerable light has been thrown on the phenomena of death by lightning, by the experiments of Dr. B. Ward Richardson ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," May 15th, 1869, and May 11th, 1870) with the large induction coil, formerly at the Polytechnic Institution. The battery used in his experiments consisted of forty-eight Bunsen cells, the primary wire of the induction coil being 3,770 yards, and the secondary wire 150 miles in length. The central core was of soft iron wire five feet long, four inches in diameter, and 125 pounds in weight. With this instrument three kinds of sparks were obtained:—

(1.) When the secondary wire was simply charged from the primary wire, a thick spark of 29 inches long was obtained. It had two flames—an inner line of thin, blue flame, surrounded

by a thick burning flame. The latter could be blown aside by a bellows. As regards the physiological effects of this form of discharge, Dr. Richardson has shown that the injury caused by it is not great. Thus it merely singed the feathers of pigeons or the fur of rabbits, and produced anæsthesia only after several discharges had been transmitted. A frog took 25, a pigeon 15, and a rabbit 30 discharges without being killed.

(2.) When the break was used, a blue, intense, forked, and almost continuous spark of 10 to 15 inches was obtained. This was also tolerably harmless if merely passed on the outside of the body, but the contraction of muscles induced by it was more or less permanent. If passed *through* the body, the effects were more powerful, although even then death seldom resulted.

(3.) When a Leyden battery of 40 square feet was charged, a most dangerous and fatal kind of spark resembling artificial lightning was obtained. With this variety, if the current was passed *through* a body and not stopped by feathers, &c., one or two discharges were usually fatal. The animals frequently retained after death the last attitude of life, and no marks in the majority of cases were found upon them. But even this kind of discharge, it was noted, had two effects—the one on voluntary motion and common sensation, which was not fatal; and the other on respiration and circulation, which was fatal.

The following were Dr. Richardson's conclusions:—

1. That lightning kills by an intense shock, like that of the Leyden jar.

2. That the fatality of an electrical or lightning shock is in proportion to its *intensity*. And here it is to be noted that there are two kinds of shock;—one producing temporary contraction of muscles and insensibility from which recovery is possible, and a second killing directly, by producing a condition of nervous and general muscular insensibility.

3. That the kind of covering with which the body is furnished makes a great difference. Fur and feathers are protective.

4. That in those not killed, the reception of the shock is not remembered (accurately at least) owing to its instantaneousness. It is, therefore, *probably the most painless of deaths*. [Dr. Richardson advocates its use judicially, and also to kill animals for the table.]

5. That those discharges, which, from their intensity, kill most readily, leave fewest and least marks of external injury.

6. That after what appears to be general death, the heart may continue to beat for several minutes.

Now that the use of powerful galvanic batteries and dynamo-machines are becoming common, it is by no means unlikely that some deaths (accidental, or otherwise) may happen from a sudden discharge passing through the human body. (*Case* 49.) A careful examination of the exact position of, and the markings on, the body, should in such cases be at once made. Note should also be taken of its proximity and relation to the battery, the nature of the battery, the arrangement of wires, commutators, conductors, &c.

The use of electricity medically, should most certainly be in the hands of qualified medical men only, as much as the use of the knife. Bad results arising from improper treatment are not unrecorded. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," 1877, II., p. 577.)

Symptoms.

In cases where death is not immediate, we find as a rule sudden insensibility, the person falling down as though in a fit, the respirations being slow and laboured, the pulse feeble and irregular, and the pupils dilated (*Cases* 8, 11 *β*, 24, 30, 32, and 43 *a*), and insensible to light. In *Case* 10 the pupils are reported as contracted. I have seen them contracted on the side of the shock, and dilated on the opposite side. Even in very slight cases, the person frequently falls down as if stunned, and perhaps foams slightly at the mouth. The first thing that may strike an observer is, that the clothes worn by the patient are torn, singed, burnt, or smell of fire. (*Cases* 9, 11 *β*, 13 *a* and *γ*, 32, 38.) Sometimes they are carried to a distance, and the person left stark naked. (*Case* 45.) And here must be noted two important facts:—(*a*) That the clothes may be torn and burnt without any corresponding injuries on the body (*Case* 35); whilst (*β*) severe body injuries may occur without the clothes suffering. (*Cases* 11 *a* and 41.) These anomalies probably depend on whether the garments have been wetted or

not by the storm, or how much of them are wet and how much dry, the rain rendering the clothes good conductors of the electrical current. (*Case* 41.)

Burns and blisters are common results of the lightning stroke. (*Cases* 2, 3 *a* and *β*, 4, 5, 18, 39, 41 *a* and *β*, 45.) The burns may at times be due to the clothes having caught fire, but that this is by no means necessarily the case, is proved by the circumstance that burns may exist when the clothes are not injured. Further, Dr. Richardson's experiments with the induced spark sufficiently indicate that burns of great severity may or may not result, according to the nature of the flash. At times the burnt spot on the body is at some distance from the actual point where the discharge entered or found an exit. (*Case* 3 *β*.) Sometimes the burns may be of so intense a nature as to cause charring or sloughing of the parts, this condition being mostly dependent on metallic substances worn at the time becoming heated by the current. (*Cases* 3 *a*, and 19.) The heating power that lightning possesses is well illustrated in *Case* 46. The hair is frequently found to be singed (*Cases* 10, 11 *β*, 13 *γ*, 19, 20, 32.) In some cases there is a marked absence of all burning. (*Cases* 9, 22.)

Wounds as though caused by the stab of a blunt dagger are not uncommon. These may be accompanied by a bruised condition of the parts. (*Cases* 2, 9, 13 *γ*, 16, 21, 35.)

Livid streaks and ecchymosed spots are very frequent. (*Cases* 3, 4, 10, 14, 20, 21, 23, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 42.) It is said that ecchymosed spots are most common on the back (Meyer), and that they usually indicate the entrance or exit, or both, and the livid streaks the passage, of the electric current. Frequently the marks assume a peculiar arborescent appearance (*Case* 47.) This may depend on the course of the veins, or on the disposition of metallic bodies about the person. Such peculiar marks are very indicative of death by lightning. And this further point is worth noting, that if marks on the skin be caused by the contact of metallic substances (and the thinner such metallic bodies are, the more likely they are to produce marks), it may be determined by analysis what was the actual metal causing the stain. In this way it would be possible to

show that the deceased carried about with him a body of a certain composition.

Fractures from lightning are rare. In Cases 9, 37 and 48, fractures of the skull are recorded, accompanied, in some cases, by loosening of the sutures. (*Case* 9.) In one case, a fracture of the os calcis together with fractures of the tibia and fibula, is stated to have occurred. (*Case* 45.)

And here two remarks are suggested—

(1.) The appearances presented by a patient suffering from lightning stroke, may closely resemble the results of violence. Of course the existence of a thunderstorm and various other points in the case will, as a rule, render the diagnosis easy.

(2.) That cases are recorded where, after death by lightning, no marks of external violence have been visible. (*Case* 36.)

A severe lightning shock is often associated with various nervous and other symptoms, some of which are as follows :—

1. *Blindness, or injury to sight.* (*Cases* 7, 29.) In *Case* 29 the injury was total and permanent.

2. *Deafness* (*Case* 19), or *noises in the ears.* (*Case* 25.) Bleeding from the ears is recorded in one case (*Case* 11 *β*), and in two cases lacerations of the membrana tympani are stated to have occurred. (*Cases* 11 *β* and 21.)

3. *Dumbness*, or *difficulty of articulation.* (*Cases* 7, 19, 22.)

4. *Tetanus* (*Case* 28); *tetanic* and *epileptiform symptoms.* (*Cases* 6, 30 and 34.)

5. *Constipation* (*Case* 15) *and retention of urine.* (*Cases* 9, 15, 19.)

6. *Paralyses* (*Cases* 14, 15, 16 *β* and 43), (hemiplegia), (*Cases* 11 *a*, 14 and 19), (paraplegia), (see also *Cases* 1, 18, 25.) In Case 9 paralysis was more or less complete. Although some neurosis ordinarily occurs, exceptional cases are found where there is none. (*Case* 41.)

7. *Cardiac affections.* (*Case* 43.)

8. *Insanity.* (*Case* 26.) Great excitement (although very occasionally) has been recorded. (*Cases* 14, 22, 27, 39.)

9. In addition to the above, *apoplexy* (*Case* 6), *loss of memory* (*Case* 27), *headache* (*Cases* 15 and 43), *severe dyspnœa* (*Case* 43),

and the discharge of blood from the mouth and nostrils (*Case* 22), are also recorded.

It will be seen that the prominent symptoms resulting from the lightning stroke arise from its effects on the nerves of motion and sensation. Still more remarkable is the variety in its results at different times, and in different individuals at the same time. Bearing on these differences in the form of the paralysis induced, the experiments of Nothnagel on the effects of electrical discharges on rabbits are full of interest. (Virchow's *Archiv.*) He discharged a Leyden jar repeatedly through some part of the body of an animal by placing the points of the electrodes *beneath* the skin. This mode of experiment was rendered necessary, because when the electrodes were merely placed *on* the skin, its resistance was found to be so considerable that it was impossible to control the course of the discharge. One electrode being placed in the groin, and the other beneath the claws of the hind or fore leg, no motor disturbance and no loss of sensibility whatsoever resulted in the groin when the shock was passed, but loss of sensibility occurred in the foot, sharply limited however by the articulation of the foot with the leg. If the electrodes were so placed that one was in contact with a hind paw and the other with a fore paw, anæsthesia took place in both feet as far as the foot articulation, but there was no loss of feeling in the intermediate parts. This singular limitation of the anæsthesia was found to involve in like manner the deeper parts, including the nerve trunks. Thus, when the foot was the point of entrance or of exit, it, and it alone, was rendered anæsthetic.

The shock was next sent from the fore paw to the tail. The tail, extending as far as the insertion of the muscles at the root, and the foot, were both rendered anæsthetic. In one case of feeble discharge the tail only suffered. But why this limitation? Arago has stated that when lightning strikes men or animals placed near together, its action on the extremities is always the most severe. This may explain the intensity of action at the extreme points in the feet and tail. But the real difficulty is that, if one electrode be placed on the foot and the other in the groin, or trunk, or thigh, there is no such limitation as regards

these latter parts. Possibly this may be explained by the rapid diffusion of the electricity in these regions.

The anæsthesia produced in Nothnagel's experiments was complete but transient (say of one or two hours' duration), and often succeeded by a transient hyperæsthesia. Motor disturbances were not conspicuous. Complete, but transient paralysis of the leg was, however, caused if the electrodes were placed, the one on the front, and the other on the back of the thigh, so as to include between them the sciatic nerve. Paresis of the hind legs was also caused when the electrodes were placed on each sciatic nerve, the motor weakness corresponding to the anæsthesia. During the paralysis a distinct diminution existed in the electrical irritability of the nerve. (See "*Lancet*," June 5, 1880, p. 883.)

Nothnagel's experiments show that the partial paralysis of lightning is to be regarded favourably.

The *causes of death* from lightning are various. Thus, it may kill like any other shock. It may also kill by the severity of the resulting burns and wounds. It may kill, again, by causing a rupture of structures necessary to life, and disorganization of tissues. Hunter supposed death by lightning was due to the destruction of the contractility of the muscles; and Richardson considers its instantaneous effects to be dependent on a combination of shock and the sudden conversion of the animal fluids into a gaseous form.

The *capricious action of the discharge* may be illustrated by a variety of cases. Thus, in Case 13, one man was killed, whilst two others by his side at the time escaped without injury. In Cases 12 and 33 one man was killed, whilst two others were injured, but soon recovered. A similar result is recorded in Case 41. Again, in Case 12, we find the intensity of the discharge centred in a *low* tree, although *high* trees, an iron bridge, and a lightning conductor were in the immediate vicinity. Again, in Case 2 we have an illustration how the same discharge may produce in one person burns and in another wounds. (*Case* 39.) Again, numerous cases are recorded that show how comparatively slight circumstances may determine results. Thus, in Case 15 the passage of the flash followed the line of a telegraph wire,

through a clock in communication with it, and through the key to the man who was winding it up at the time. In Case 14 the contact of the man's hand with the door bolt determined the course of the discharge. Similarly, metal hairpins and earrings (*Case* 4), or steel corsets (*Cases* 3 *a* and 4), or iron hoop skirts (*Case* 4), or buckles on abdominal belts (*Case* 20), or watches and watch chains (*Cases* 11 *β*, 13 *β*, 16 *β*), have all been causes of some of the apparently eccentric results of lightning.

The remarkable and capricious action of the discharge is illustrated in a singular manner by its effects on clothing, of which the cases quoted supply numerous illustrations. Case 45 is one of the most remarkable of these on record. Perhaps this stripping off of clothes, which frequently occurs to a greater or less extent, depends on the force resulting from the formation of a large body of steam.

As regards the results of 54 cases collected in the "Illustrative Cases," 21 died and 33 recovered. Recovery may take place even after very severe shocks, where anæsthesia and paralysis have been present. (*Case* 19.) The time of recovery varies within great limits, from a few days to some months (*Case* 15), when recovery may be either complete, or (what is not infrequent), associated with various bad results, such as—

(1.) Epilepsy.
(2.) Paralysis and anæsthesia or hyperæsthesia.
(3.) Catalepsy.
(4.) Blindness or injury to sight. (*Case* 29.)
(5.) Permanent loss of memory. (*Case* 27.)

The time of death, as a rule, follows *immediately* on, or at the most very soon after the shock; if not, recovery may be hoped for. Thus, of thirteen cases of death where time is recorded, seven were instantaneous; one was after a short interval; one was on the second day (*Case* 22); two on the third day (one of these resulting from tetanus) (*Cases* 7 and 28); one on the ninth day (*Case* 16 *β*); and one on the thirty-third day (*Case* 14).

Treatment.

The application of cold to the head, a blister to the nape of the neck, mustard poultices to the legs, and the administration of stimulating and nourishing injections are indicated.

Dr. Richardson strongly advises in such cases venæsection as *the* remedy. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," Dec. 17, 1870, p. 694.)

The patient must be treated afterwards according to the symptoms that present themselves.

Post-mortem Appearances.

Death, as we have said, may be instantaneous, in which case the body may be found after death in the exact attitude in which it was struck. (*Case* 17.) (Page 63.) In other words, rigor mortis may occur *immediately* after death. Sometimes, however, it supervenes after several hours. (*Cases* 9 and 16 *a*.)

John Hunter appears to have been deceived by the transient and early post-mortem rigidity occurring in some cases, and to have supposed that *cadaveric rigidity* was absent in death from lightning. We now know (and on this point the author has had personal experience) that rigidity does occur, and that it is often well marked and prolonged. It is also perfectly certain that the blood coagulates after death from lightning, although coagulation is often slowly developed.

The face after death usually exhibits a very bloated and discoloured appearance (*Cases* 1 and 20), the head being the part which is usually first struck. (*Cases* 20, 23.) Putrefaction is frequently very rapid. (*Case* 1.)

Contusions, lacerated wounds, burns and blisters, ecchymosed spots (*Case* 23) and lines often assuming a tree-like shape (arborescent) (*Case* 47) are common appearances. Fracture of the bones of the skull (*Case* 9), and of other bones (*Case* 45) are recorded. Loosening of the sutures of the skull is also said to have occurred. (*Cases* 9 and 48.) A charred spot has been noticed in a bone at the spot through which the electric spark passed. (*Case* 9.)

Dr. Richardson remarks that in animals killed by electricity

the blood is commonly dark (venous), but that on exposure to air it rapidly changes to the ordinary arterial red colour.

The *brain and its membranes* usually suffer the most severely. Thus, at the seat of the injury, blood may be effused under the skull. (*Case* 9.) The membranes may be much congested (*Case* 20), and even lacerated. (*Case* 9.) The brain itself has been found congested with bloody fluid in the ventricles. (*Case* 9.) A blood clot has been recorded in various parts, such as in the left cerebral hemisphere. (*Case* 16 *β*.) Sometimes the brain substance appears to have suffered complete disorganization (*Cases* 9 and 21), whilst at other times it has been found normal. (*Case* 48.)

The *lungs* (together with the air passages) have been found congested (*Cases* 9 and 20), and even injured. (*Case* 21.) The bronchi and air-tubes were recorded in one case to be full of mucus. (*Case* 20.)

The *heart* in one case was said not to have had much blood in it (*Case* 20); and in another, the right side was said to be full and the left empty. (*Case* 48.)

Of the *abdominal viscera*, a generally congested condition has been noticed (*Cases* 9 and 20); whilst in other cases they have been recorded as normal. (*Case* 48.)

Metallic substances about the person may be fused (*Case* 4), whilst any steel articles in the pocket, such as a knife, etc., may acquire magnetic polarity. (*Case* 35.)

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. Law Times, Mar. 14, 1846, p. 490.—("Taylor's Med. Juris.," p. 135; "Comptes Rendus," Sept., 1845, and "Medical Gazette," 36, p. 1133.)—A case tried in France in October, 1845, in which medical evidence was given of considerable importance respecting the character of wounds caused by lightning. In August of that year some buildings at Malauny, near Rouen were destroyed, either by a thunderstorm, according to the one side, or by a whirlwind, according to the other. As the persons whose property was destroyed were insured against lightning, they sought to recover damages accordingly. The evidence as regards lightning consisted (1) in the alleged carbonised appearance of the leaves of some of the trees and shrubs growing in the vicinity; and (2) in the characters of the wounds on the bodies of several persons who were injured at the time. M. Lesauvage deposed to the occurrence of dark stains scattered over the bodies, and that the survivors suffered from torpor, pains in the limbs, and partial paralysis of motion. He also observed that those killed speedily putrefied. In one case the muscles were torn across in a ragged manner, and some small arteries were divided. M. Funel deposed that the face and neck in some of the dead bodies were bloated and discoloured, as if the death had occurred from asphyxia. M. Pouillet described the storm, but although he did not deny that there may have been thunder and lightning, he thought the trees and buildings were simply overthrown by the wind. [It is unusual for young and green trees to present any marks of combustion about the leaves or trunk.] The Royal Court of Rouen, without deciding the exact mode of the occurrence, condemned the insurance company to pay the amount claimed. (Pages 496, 504, 508.)

2. Beck, p. 522.—("London and Edinburgh Philosophical Magazine," Vol. I., p. 191.)—A lady and gentleman were struck by lightning. The injuries on the lady were actual *wounds*, whilst those on the man were *burns*. (Pages 503, 506.)

3. Lancet, Aug. 6, 1870, p. 185.—(*Mr. Simon.*)—(*a.*) Female. The lightning singed the eyebrows, and inflicted a charred burn from the chin, passing over the fore part of the body, to the ankles. Above the left groin were some sloughs, supposed to have been produced by the heated metal of the stay busk. The pubic hair was burnt off, and the legs blistered. Recovery. (Pages 503, 507.)

(3.) Male. The lightning passed through the trouser at a point immediately above the left outer ankle, and through the elastic of the boot, which, on the outside, was the only part affected, the woven tissue being frayed away from the elastic. The burn passed downwards and forwards, inflicting no wound until it met the expanse of the dorsum of the foot, where it inflicted a quadrilateral burn. (Page 503.)

4. Amer. Journ. of Med. Sciences.—(*Dr. Holton.*)—Female, æt. 61 Remarkable burns produced by lightning. The woman was at work in an out-building, and the lightning, after shattering a tree, penetrated the wall of the building, and struck her on the back of her head, where she wore two wire hair-pins. The burn from this point passed down by the right ear (in which was a gold earring), across the throat, and down to the left of the sternum. The burn was 3 inches wide, and blistered. The second line of burn commenced on the left side, and passed down to the symphysis pubis. The third line of burn was from the patella of the right knee to the bottom of the heel, from which it passed off, bursting open the heel-seam of a strongly-sewed gaiter boot. Portions of the wires of the hoop skirt were melted. Certain detached burns Dr. Holton accounts for by the presence of metal ribs in her corset.

Symptoms.—Insensibility, from which she recovered in twenty minutes. (Pages 503, 506, 507, 509.)

(See also "Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal," Vol. XII., p. 493; also "Lancet," Vol. VI., p. 910, and Vol. VII. (N.S.), p. 255, for a case of lightning stroke, accompanied by very *extensive burns, blistered skin*, and *livid streaks.*)

5. New York Medical and Surgical Register, p. 55.—Case of lightning stroke, by *Professor Stevens*, with extensive *vesication.* (Page 503.)

6. Edin. Med. Chir. Trans., Vol. I., p. 360.—*Dr. Macauley* reports three cases of lightning stroke, one followed by *apoplexy*, and two by *epilepsy.* (Page 504.)

7. Lond. Med. and Phys. Journal, Vol. XLVII., p. 369.—*Mr. Godfrey* tells of a sailor struck *dumb* and *blind* by lightning. (Pages 504, 507.)

8. American Journal of Medical Sciences, Vol. XIII., p. 54.—The *pupils were dilated* in a series of cases of lightning stroke recorded by *Drs. Young* and *Stevens.* (Page 502.)

9. Lancet, July 20, 1872, p. 77.—(*Drs. Clark* and *Brigham.*)—Male, æt. 74. Struck by lightning, whilst standing under a tree, on an eminence, in a thunderstorm. The shock threw him on his face, and he became unconscious. The lower extremities were completely, and the upper partially paralysed. The hat, jacket, and boots were destroyed. The hair was burnt off on all parts, the mouth lacerated, and there were several small bleeding

wounds, but these presented no signs of bruises. The following day the bladder was found to be paralysed. Death occurred on the third day.

Post-mortem.—A very fine fracture of the squamous portion of the temporal bone, 1¼ inch long, with a second at right angles was found. The temporal bone was forced outwards. An irregularly triangular piece of bone, black and charred, was found between the fractures. Other bones of the head were also charred. The sutures of the temporal bone were loosened. Thick, but uncoagulated blood was found beneath the dura mater. The membranes were much torn and congested. The right side of the brain was so soft as to resemble pus. Much bloody fluid was found in the ventricles. Rigor mortis was slow in appearing. The skin was in parts charred, and very tough. (Pages 502, 503, 504, 508, 509.)

10. Medical Times and Gazette, July 13, 1872.—(*Mr. Richards.*)—Female struck with lightning whilst sitting near a cactus hedge at Orissa. The hedge itself was in parts carbonized, and in others riddled. She was rendered almost insensible. The pupils were contracted, and the conjunctivæ congested. The hair on the left side was burnt, and there was great discolouration of the left temple. Recovered after five days. (Pages 502, 503.)

11. British Med. Journ., Aug. 3, 1872, p. 114.—(*Mr. J. R. Lane.*)—Two men struck by lightning whilst taking shelter during a thunderstorm under an oak tree. (Pages 502, 503, 504, 507.)

(*a.*) One man seemed to suffer from shock. There was loss of power in the lower extremities. The clothing was uninjured, and there were no ecchymoses. Recovered the next day.

(*β.*) The other man was unconscious for ten minutes. This was succeeded by collapse, with widely dilated pupils. He said he felt as though he had had a severe blow. Bleeding from right ear. Bruises. Hair singed. Current diverted by watch-chain and watch, which was completely destroyed. Clothes much injured. Partial paralysis. Recovered, but the tympanic membrane was found lacerated.

12. Ann. d'Hygiène, 1871, p. 1, 478.—M. Tourdes relates the following:—"In 1869 three soldiers sat under a tree during a storm. They were struck down by lightning, and two were killed on the spot. There were loftier trees in the neighbourhood, and a lightning conductor was not far off, and an iron railway bridge and a river were near. The electric fluid struck the lower tree, and passed through the bodies of the men, in place of being carried off by the surrounding conductors." (Page 506.)

13. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. II., p. 134.

(*a.*) In June, 1871, a coachman was killed, whilst driving, during a storm, and the footman, sitting by his side, escaped uninjured. The lightning struck the coachman on the head, destroyed his hat and rent his clothes. It passed through his body, tore a large hole in the cushion on which he was

sitting, and, except the shattering of the glass, did no injury to the carriage nor to those inside.

(β.) At the same time and during the same storm three men were mowing in a field. They put down their scythes and sought shelter; but as they were leaving the field, they were all three struck to the ground by the lightning. One only was killed. It was found that he had been struck on the right side, where he wore a steel chain to his watch, which was broken to pieces.

(γ.) In another case, occurring at the same time, a man, aged seventy-four, was struck whilst standing under a fir-tree. He was taken up insensible, and soon died. There was a jagged wound over the right eye, and a great part of the surface of the body was burnt, including the hair, whiskers, eyebrows, and eyelashes. The boots were burnt off the feet, and the hat and trousers were torn to pieces. (Pages 502, 503, 506, 507)

14. Lancet, June 28, 1873.—(*Dr. Wilson.*)—Male, adult, struck by lightning whilst bolting a door in his barrack-room. Remained insensible for ten minutes. [A rifle placed in the rack in the room was struck at the same time, the lightning penetrating the scabbard of the bayonet, and punching out a hole about the size of a pea. The surface of the bayonet corresponding with this hole was partly molten. The stock was shattered to pieces.] A diffused swelling of the right forearm (the member nearest the bolt), with diminished sensibility, but not impaired motion, was noticed. Both legs, from the knees downwards, had lost their sensibility. The patient was very excited. Sensation returned about the fifth day. Recovered entirely on the tenth day, and suffered no inconvenience afterwards. (Pages 503, 504, 507.)

15. Berliner "Klinische Wochenschrift," No. 17, April 26, 1875; and London Medical Record, Vol. III., No. 125, p. 320, May 26, 1875.—Eulenburg records a very curious case of *hemiplegia* with subsequent recovery, from the *effects of lightning*. The patient was a pointsman, aged forty-two. On the night of August 4—5th, 1873, he was winding up a clock in the signal department of the Berlin-Stettin Railway. He had just inserted the key with his left hand when a flash of lightning flew along the telegraph wire into the clock, thence to the key, and thence to the left half of his body. He at once became insensible, and this state lasted for a full hour. On recovering consciousness, he dragged himself into a waiting-room. On examination there was found to be *total loss of motor power in the left arm and leg, and considerable loss of common sensation*, and of the localization of impressions. Headache, insomnia, vertigo, slight muscular tremors, constipation, and retention of urine were felt for a few days, and then passed off. After ten months the leg improved but the arm remained in *statu quo*. It hung down quite limp, and all movements seemed abolished, except in the fingers and thumb. The *nutrition of both limbs was*

also much impaired. Under treatment by the constant current, &c., he gradually improved, and at the end of seven months was nearly as well as ever. (Pages 504, 506, 507.)

16. Med. Times and Gazette, June 20, 1868, p. 671.—(*Dr. G. R. Barnes.*)—Two men struck by lightning whilst standing under a tree with their horse during a thunderstorm. Both men and the horse were knocked down, and one man was killed.

(*α.*) The man who was killed was struck on the side of the head. A circular wound was found over the fourth rib, into which the finger readily passed. Rigor mortis twelve hours after death.

(*β.*) The other man (æt. 41) was unconscious, pulse small, respiration slow, but not stertorous, and paralysed on the right side. His watch chain was fused into small fragments, and the watch itself pulverized. The skin in the course of the chain was reddened, and blistered where the watch rested. Several wounds were found on the leg. The clothes were much injured. Death on the ninth day.

P. M. *A blood clot found in the left cerebral hemisphere.* (Pages 503, 504, 507, 508, 509.)

17. Med. Times and Gazette, Feb. 18, 1860, p. 167.—Death in this case was so sudden that the body retained after death the attitude in which it was struck by lightning. (Page 508.)

18. Fleming.—("Glasg. Med. Journ.," Oct., 1859, p. 257.)—Eight cases of lightning stroke. Several were burnt severely, and their dresses singed. Some were benumbed and more or less paralysed, but all recovered. The burns took some months to heal. (Pages 503, 504.)

19. Taylor's Med. Juris., p. 131.—*Mr. Hill* mentions that a man was burnt by lightning on the nape of the neck, where a metal watch chain rested. From the spot where the current left the chain, the skin was blistered in a straight line down to the feet, scorching the pubic hairs. He had paraplegia (loss of motion and sensation) with retention of urine, deafness, difficulty of articulation, dysphagia, and a metallic taste in his mouth.

The anæsthesia passed away in half an hour, the retention in twenty-four hours, and the paralysis in four days. (Pages 503, 504, 507.)

20. Oesterreich. Med. Wochenschrift, June 6, 1846.—(Quoted almost *in extenso* by *Dr. Taylor, loc. cit.*, p. 132.) In a case reported by *Dr. Schaffer*, a healthy middle-aged labourer was working with others in a field, supposing that the thunderstorm was over. He was trying to strike a light with a flint and steel, when the lightning struck him. For a moment after the shock he stood still, and then fell heavily to the ground dead.

Post-mortem: The electric fluid had pierced and torn the hat at the upper part of his forehead; it seems then to have been divided into two currents, which passed down the sides of the body, along the lower limbs, and out at

the feet. On the upper part of the forehead a soft swelling of a dark blue colour, about the size of the palm of the hand was found, the hair covering it being uninjured. From this spot two dark red streaks proceeded in different directions. The left streak, when it reached the left groin, formed a large irregularly scorched (*brandige*) patch, passing onwards to the dorsum of the left foot, terminating in several small dark blue spots. The other streak, pursuing its way on the right side, formed a similar burn or scorched patch in the right groin, and ended, like the other, on the foot. The hair on the forehead was not burnt, but the pubic hairs were completely burnt. This was ascribed to the buckles of an abdominal belt, which was completely destroyed. *Post-mortem:* About four ounces of extravasated blood found in the swelling on the head. The membranes of the brain were much congested, and the choroid plexuses particularly so; bronchi and air-tubes full of bloody mucus; the lungs, stomach, and intestines greatly congested; the right lobe of the liver and spleen also much congested. There was not much blood in the heart and large vessels. Beneath the burnt patches much blood was found extravasated in the substance of the abdominal muscles. (Pages 503, 507, 508, 509.)

21. Heller's Journal, Feb. 1845, p. 245.—In this case the hat and shoes of an old man killed by lightning were destroyed, but the garments were uninjured. The left ear was severely lacerated. Black longitudinal lines were found on the skin of the abdomen, an ecchymosed spot on the skin of the left ankle, and a deep wound on the foot. The whole of the left hemisphere of the brain was disorganised and liquefied, except the *corpus striatum*. There were injuries to the left lung. (Pages 503, 504, 509.)

22. Lancet, June 5, 1880, p. 885.—(*Dr. Nothnagel.*)—A man struck with lightning. Remained unconscious for five hours. Paralysis of the right hand, there being in the middle of the back of the hand a brown spot where, probably, the electricity had entered. Recovered under the influence of magnetism, but had a relapse six years afterwards, which was cured by the application of a magnet to the hand (?). (Pages 503, 504, 505, 507.)

23. Travels to St. Petersburg, Vol. II., p. 112.—A case of lightning stroke is mentioned by Dr. Granville, in which the only mark visible was a red spot on the forehead. The legs were blue, and one shoe was torn, but not burnt. (Pages 503, 508.)

24. Medical Gazette, Vol. XIV., p. 654.—A non-fatal case of lightning stroke. The person was seen soon after and was found labouring under the following symptoms:—Insensibility; deep, slow, interrupted breathing; relaxation of all the muscles; slow, soft pulse and dilated pupils, the latter sensible to light. (Page 502.)

25. Medical Times, July 15, 1848.—Noises in the ears, paralysis, and other neuroses succeeding severe lightning strokes. (Page 504.)

26. Conolly's Report of Hanwell, 1839.—Insanity is said to have resulted from the shock of lightning. (Page 504.)

27. Lancet, Aug. 3, 1839, p. 582.—Three days' delirium and entire loss of memory after a lightning stroke. (Pages 504, 507.)

28. Medical Times and Gazette, May 26, 1855.—A boy, aged four, had tetanus on the third day after a lightning stroke, and died in four hours after it set in. (Pages 504, 507.)

29. Medical Times and Gazette, July 24, 1858.—Frontal headache and total loss of sight occurred to an old man, who felt as if a vivid flash had struck him in the face whilst standing under a tree during a storm. He did not fall. (Pages 504, 507.)

30. British and Foreign Medical Review, Oct. 1842.—Three persons struck by lightning. One of them, aged 26, an hour and a-half after the stroke, lay completely insensible, as if apoplectic. His pulse was below sixty, full and hard, pupils dilated and insensible, respiration noisy. Thumbs and jaws firmly fixed. Twitchings of arms and hands, succeeded by severe spasms, with the body drawn to the left side. He was afterwards bled and blistered, cold being applied to the head, and sinapisms to the legs. Stimulant enemata and opium were given. He recovered consciousness after 24 hours, and soon got quite well. The only external mark was a red streak as broad as a finger, extending from the left temple over the neck and chest. This disappeared completely after a few days. (Pages 502, 503, 504.)

31. Dr. Horstmann (Casper's "Vierteljahrsschrift," April, 1863, p. 308.)—Red streaks or marks resembling trees or veins resulting from lightning. (Page 503.)

32. Australian Medical Journal, September, 1870, p. 295.—"In this case a youth was killed by lightning, and there were contusions on his left side, which was extremely rigid. His back hair was burnt off. Both pupils were dilated. His nose bled from the left nostril. The surgeon who examined him stated that he noticed on the skin of the chest the perfect impression of a young tree, inverted! It appeared of a dark colour, as if tattooed. It was just like the trees which grew near! When struck he had two or three layers of woollen cloth buttoned over his chest. His cap was torn to pieces. The trousers on the left side were rent from the hip to the stocking; the latter and the boot were torn open. He died from injury to the brain." (Pages 502, 503.)

33. Lancet, July 30, 1864, p. 118.—(*Taylor, loc. cit.*, p. 129.)—*Dr. Mackintosh*, of Littleport, was called in, May 1864, to see three persons who were struck by lightning twenty minutes before. They had taken shelter

under a hay stack, which had been set on fire by the same flash. No. 1, male æt. 10. In this case the shock was slight. He had difficulty in moving his legs at first, with pain in lower part of abdomen, and red streaks on chest and abdomen. Recovered in about four days. No. 2, male æt. 11. In this case the shock was severe. The boy had epileptiform symptoms, and similar red streaks, whilst his hair was singed at the back of the head and neck. He became conscious in five hours and rapidly recovered. No. 3. A man, aged 46, was killed on the spot where he was sitting. Rigidity came on fourteen hours after. He had a large lacerated wound of the scalp, dividing blood vessels and nerves. His right ear was livid and swollen. There was a dark blue mangled patch of skin above the right collar-bone. His hair was singed. In his left trousers pocket were lucifer matches and a tin tobacco-box, not affected, but a knife in his right pocket was strongly magnetised. In neither of these three were the buttons melted, or the clothes, which were very wet, torn. (Pages 503, 506.)

34. Medical Times, May 3, 1845, p. 82.—No marks apparent in several severe cases of lightning stroke. (Pages 503, 504.)

35. Taylor, Vol. II. p. 129.—(*Dr. West.*)—A case in which a lad, æt. 18, was killed by lightning. His pocket-knife had acquired strong magnetic polarity. His boots (full of hob-nails) were torn to pieces, but his feet appeared uninjured. In fact, although the dress was much injured, there were no marks of injury on the body immediately covered by the garments destroyed. (Pages 503, 509.)

36. Taylor, Vol. II., p. 129.—A case of a man instantaneously killed by lightning. There was a hole in his cap, his hair was singed, his trousers torn, his shoes burst open. The woodwork of the building down which the electric fluid passed was merely split, and there were no marks of burning. (Page 504.)

37. Pouillet.—("Traité de Physique," Elect. Atmosph.)—A case of lightning stroke where the skull was fractured and bones depressed. (Page 504.)

38. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. II., p. 131.—(*Dr. Geoghegan.*)—A girl struck by lightning. The thighs and buttocks were burnt, but her clothes were not burnt. (Page 502.)

39. Taylor's Med. Juris., Vol. II., p. 131.—(*Mr. Fisher*, of Dudley.)—A case of a man milking a cow in a shed during a thunderstorm. The cow was killed at once by the flash. The man was severely burnt from the right hip to the shoulder. The sleeve of his shirt was also burnt, but his arm was not injured. He had delirium and inflammatory fever, which lasted seventeen days. (Pages 503, 504, 506.)

40. British Med. Journ., Sept. 11, 1880, p. 437.—A boy, in bed, struck by lightning, and rendered insensible. The lightning entered by the door. (Page 496.)

41. British Med. Journ., June 22, 1876.—(*Dr. Jefferies.*)—Three persons struck by lightning whilst hoeing in an open turnip field. (Pages 502, 503, 504, 506.)

(α.) Female. Became unconscious. Eyebrow singed. Scorched across the chest, one arm seeming as if scalded. Severe headache. No paralysis. Recovery in fourteen days.

(β.) Boy. Much frightened. There was no broken skin, but a scorch on one leg, tree shaped. Recovery rapid.

(γ.) The man had a very slight shock indeed.

In neither case were the clothes nor metal articles about them injured.

(Dr. Jefferies states that near the spot six sheep were killed by the lightning, and that he was unable to find any marks upon them either externally or internally.)

42. Philosophical Transactions, Vol. XLIX., p. 61.—The death of Professor Richman at St. Petersburg, in 1753, was caused whilst experimenting on atmospheric electricity. On the left side of the forehead, where he was struck by the electric current, there was a round ecchymosed spot. There were eight other patches of ecchymosis, of variable size, from the neck to the hip, and chiefly on the left side. Some were like marks of gunpowder discharged in contact with the skin. The left shoe was torn open at the buckle, without being singed or burnt; but the skin around was slightly ecchymosed. A quantity of blood was found extravasated in the windpipe, the lungs, and the layers of the omentum. The omentum appeared as if greatly bruised. (Dr. Taylor refers to Murbach's "Encyklopädie," article "Blitz," and Henke's "Zeitschrift der S. A.," 1844, Vol. I., p. 193, for further accounts of this case) (Page 503.)

Beck refers to other similar cases in "Philosophical Transactions." (See footnote to Beck, p. 522.)]

43. Edinburgh Med. Journ., March, 1873.—(*Dr. Ogston.*)—A dwelling-house containing ten inmates, all at the time being in the kitchen, was struck with lightning. The whole were stunned, and thrown down. On recovering consciousness after a few minutes they found themselves (excepting two children) little the worse for the accident, but the house a wreck. The effects produced on the house and its surroundings closely resembled those of an explosion. It is singular that the inmates generally suffered so little harm. (Pages 496, 504.)

43a. Deutsche Klinik, June 20, 1874.—*Bugge* mentions the case of a delicate girl, struck by lightning whilst in a room. At first, he says, she only had headache, dilated pupils, dyspnœa, and palpitation. After twelve days she had systolic and diastolic bruits over the heart. In six days more

right hemiplegia set in, and on the thirty-third day she died. There was no post-mortem examination. (Pages 496, 502.)

44. British Med. Journal, Feb. 26, 1870, p. 212.—Death of a girl from lightning whilst sitting at a table. A bright flash was seen, part of the house was struck, and the child's clothes were set on fire. The chair on which she sat was shattered to atoms. Death in a few hours. (Page 496.)

45. Med. Times and Gazette, Nov. 1, 1879, p. 515.—(*Dr. Wilks* of Ashford.)—Three men struck by lightning in a lodge. Instantaneously the building seemed enveloped in flames. In the case of a fourth man, who was standing under a tree which had been struck, the effects were most remarkable. His boots lay at the foot of the tree, whilst his clothes were scattered in a line for several yards along the field, the man himself being stretched on his back, six feet away, stark naked, and calling for aid. He says he felt himself violently struck across the chest and shoulders, hurled through the air, and dashed upon the ground, but is sure he never lost consciousness. He was more or less burnt all over. The os calcis was fractured, and there was a compound comminuted fracture of the right tibia and fibula. He showed no signs of shock, and recovered perfectly. (Pages 496, 502, 503, 504, 507, 508.)

46. British Med. Journal, July 26, 1879.—(*Dr. Brock.*)—A girl, with two needles in her dress, standing at a window during a thunderstorm, found the needles very hot, and her dress smouldering at the spots where they were inserted. She herself felt no shock. (Pages 497, 503.)

47. Lancet, Aug. 10, 1878.—(*Dr. Waugh.*)—Male, adult, struck by lightning whilst standing under a tree. The injury resulting seems to have been singularly tree-like in appearance. There was nothing about the man to account for the arborescent appearance of the burnt surface. (Pages 503, 508.)

48. Lancet, Aug. 18, 1877.—(*Dr. Hefferman, of Melbourne.*)—In a post-mortem after death by lightning there was found on removing the scalp a clot of blood over the right forehead and a thin layer of semifluid blood over an area of 2½ inches on the front of the right hemisphere of the brain beneath the membranes, corresponding to the bruise on the forehead. The brain substance was normal. There was a diamond-shaped fracture of the right orbital plate of the frontal bone. The right side of the heart was full of dark liquid blood, and the left side contracted. All the internal organs were healthy. (Pages 504, 508, 509.)

49. British Med. Journ., Jan. 31, 1880.—Male, æt. 30, sudden insensibility, and death in forty minutes by taking hold of the battery wires used for an electric light. (Page 502.)

CHAPTER XI.

COMBUSTIBLES AND EXPLOSIVES.

A.—SOLID COMBUSTIBLES, ETC. : —Coal.—Lime.—Lampblack.—Sulphur.—Gunpowder.—Gun-cotton.—Phosphorus.—Dynamite.—Metallic, and other Combustible and Explosive Compounds.—The Spontaneous Combustion (1) of Dry Organic Substances, (2) of Organic Substances Moistened with Water, and (3) of Organic Substances Moistened with Oil.—Human Spontaneous Combustion.

B.—LIQUID COMBUSTIBLES : —Petroleum. — Boiler Explosions. — Nitro-Glycerine.—Bisulphide of Carbon.—Alcohols.—Ethers.—Turpentine.—Benzol.

C.—GASEOUS COMBUSTIBLES :—Coal Gas and Coal Mine Explosions.—The Action of Coal Dust, etc., when Suspended in Air.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 551.)

CERTAIN mineral and organic bodies possess extreme inflammability, whilst a few have been known to fire spontaneously.

The medical jurist may be consulted in such cases as the following :—

(1.) Where a person charged with incendiarism alleges the fire to be the result of natural spontaneous combustion. (*Case* 7, &c.)

(2.) Where cargoes and ships have been consumed by the alleged spontaneous ignition of their contents. (Marine insurance.) (*Case* 3, &c.)

(3.) Where life and property have suffered from the ignition of certain accumulations on adjoining premises, or are endangered by contiguity to such inflammable materials. (*Case* 15, &c.)

(4.) Where spontaneous combustion of the human body is the alleged cause of death.—(*Case* 26, &c.)

(5.) Lastly, a scientific enquiry may be called for, respecting the cause of special explosions, and the means to be adopted to prevent their recurrence.

The 38th and 39th Vict. (1875), cap. XVII. (called the Explosives Act), regulates all matters relating to the manufacture, sale, and storage of *explosives*. This latter term is made to include "gunpowder, nitro-glycerine, dynamite, gun-cotton, blasting powder, fulminate of mercury and other metals, coloured fires, and every other substance used or manufactured with a view to produce a practical effect by explosion or a pyrotechnic effect." It also includes "fog signals, fireworks, fuzes, rockets, percussion caps, detonators, cartridges, ammunition of all descriptions, etc."

Injuries to persons by the use of explosives is dealt with by the 24th and 25th Vict., cap. C., secs. 28 to 30, and injury to property by 24 and 25 Vict., cap. XCVII., secs. 9, 10, 45, 46, 54, 55. The prevention of the use of dynamite in fishery is provided for by 40 and 41 Vict., cap. LXV., and 41 and 42 Vict., cap. XXXIX., sec. 12. The keeping explosives for sale or in quantity (30 lbs. of gunpowder being all that is allowed by 38 Vict., cap. XVII., sec. 5, to be kept for private use), is regulated by license granted by the local authorities named for this purpose in the Act.

The Acts referring to petroleum are referred to on page 536.

A.—Solid Combustibles, Etc.

(1.) **Spontaneous Ignition of Coal.** (*Cases* 3 and 4.)—This was the subject of a report by Abel and Percy (Royal Commission, August, 1876). It has long been known that certain varieties of coal (more especially Welsh and Yorkshire coal) will, at times, fire spontaneously under conditions attendant on storage and transport, such as its breakage into small lumps, its being packed in a damp state and in a close place, etc. This is brought about by the spontaneous oxidation of the iron pyrites, present more or less in all coal—a compound, it is worthy of note, which varies considerably in its liability to undergo oxidation. The presence of moisture (and in this respect salt water is as effective as fresh) may assist oxidation by aiding the actual contact of oxygen with the iron sulphide. Not

only may the oxygen of the air surrounding the coal, itself act on the pyrites, but the danger is intensified from the circumstance that freshly broken coal is specially liable to absorb oxygen. (Richter.) In this latter case it is evident that although moisture would aid combustion, it would at the same time help to limit oxidation by occupying the pores in the coal through which the pyrites is disseminated. "Spontaneous oxidation of pyrites by the oxygen absorbed from the air is therefore satisfactorily established, and is unquestionably one, if not the chief cause of the spontaneous heating of coal."

The oxidation of the iron sulphide develops heat. This increasing day by day, in time reaches a point sufficient to ignite the inflammable constituents of the minerals through which it is distributed.

In lading coals it is manifestly important, therefore, *first* to keep them dry, and *secondly* to prevent their being much broken. All coal contains a certain quantity of occluded marsh gas. From large lumps this may be given off in comparatively small quantity only. The danger of breaking the coal into small pieces is threefold—*first*, the quantity of marsh gas evolved is likely to be greater; *secondly*, fresh surfaces absorb oxygen with special activity; and *thirdly*, the smaller the pieces, the greater the absorbing surface exposed.

The advantage of ventilating the place where the coal is stored in such case is questionable, seeing that the admixture of air and marsh gas forms an explosive mixture, and that the supply of fresh air is practically the supply of the fuel required by the pyrites for its oxidation. Thus drawing air into the body of the freight manifestly might intensify, rather than lessen the mischief. The only possible advantage of ventilation would be to keep down the heat developed by chemical combination. How far this can be done effectually in a vessel containing no special apparatus for maintaining a constant current, is doubtful. If ventilation does not keep the coal cool, it must do actual harm. And the opinion of the Commissioners seems to be, that it is unadvisable to attempt through ventilation in coal-laden ships.

(2.) **The Slaking of Lime.**—When water is poured on lime (CaO), a hydrate is formed (CaO, H_2O), great heat being

evolved during combination. This union of the lime and water constitutes the operation of "*slaking*." The heat evolved by the process may be sufficient to fire combustible bodies placed in contact with it. Thus a wooden cart has been known to fire from a shower of rain wetting the lime with which it was filled.

(3.) **Lampblack**, more particularly when mixed with a certain proportion of oily matter, appears prone to spontaneous combustion. (*Cases* 1, 2, and 10.)

M. Aubert ("*Annales de Chimie*" 1831) has drawn attention to the fact that recently prepared charcoal, free from oil, when in a state of fine division, is prone to develop great heat, and to ignite spontaneously. The same fact has also been observed by M. Chevallier ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1841, I., 339) and by M. Robin. It requires, however, according to Aubert, to be in masses of about sixty pounds for spontaneous inflammation to take place. The greatest heat was found to be in the centre, or about five or six inches below the surface, and it was here that ignition was remarked as occurring in the first instance.

(4.) **Sulphur** fires at from 450° to 500° F. (235° to 260° C.), the precise temperature differing slightly according to the variety. Thus, the octahedral form fires somewhat below the prismatic. At any rate, sulphur is scarcely likely to fire spontaneously in any one of its allotropic modifications.

(5.) **Gunpowder** is a mixture in different proportions of sulphur, charcoal and saltpetre. The *grain* or size of the powder varies with the purpose for which it is used. Service powder is classified according to the size of the grain, the letters L.G., F.G., R.L.G., R.F.G., signifying large grain, fine grain, large rifle grain, fine rifle grain, etc., etc.

If gunpowder be heaped up in the open air and inflamed, it detonates with but little report. If a small quantity be placed loose in a room and inflamed, it merely blows out the windows; but if the same quantity be confined in a bomb and fired, it may blow up the whole house. Thus the injury resulting from gunpowder explosions depends more on the method of firing, than on the quantity fired.

Gunpowder shows no tendency to spontaneous heating. It

requires a temperature of at least 520° F. (271·1° C.) for ignition. Thus a black heat or even friction would be sufficient to effect combustion. The smallest particle heated to the firing point is enough to explode any quantity of powder. Not a few of the accidents that have happened have no doubt been due to ignorance or carelessness.

The colours of fireworks are due to the presence of strontia, baryta, antimony, and other metallic compounds, which do not, except in the case of the strontia salt used in preparing red fire, sensibly increase the danger of the powder. Taylor records a case of the spontaneous ignition of red fire.

The force of the explosion in cartridge factories usually causes severe compound fractures, death commonly resulting from pulmonary complications ("*British Med. Journal*," 1870, II., pp. 667, 690).

(6.) **Gun-cotton** or *Pyroxylin* ($C_6H_7(NO_2)_3O_5$) is made by steeping cotton-wool in a mixture of sulphuric and fuming nitric acids. When the cotton after immersion is thoroughly washed, and dried at a gentle heat, it is found to have increased about 70 per cent. in weight, and to have become highly explosive, taking fire at a temperature of about 300° F. (149° C.), and burning without smoke or residue. This constitutes the gun-cotton of Schönbein. It possesses about four times the explosive power of gunpowder. Several varieties are known, distinguished by their different degrees of stability, and by their different solubilities in alcohol, ether, and other liquids.

Gun-cotton properly prepared (that is, where the acids employed in its preparation have been thoroughly washed out), is a fairly stable body. On the other hand, if the acids used be not removed, but allowed to remain in contact with the cotton, it may undergo spontaneous ignition. (*Case* 22.)

Paper, sawdust, starch, and other bodies similarly treated, are also highly combustible. A prepared sawdust has been suggested for the use of sportsmen in place of gunpowder.

(7.) **Phosphorus** volatilizes at ordinary temperatures, and melts (firing when melted directly its surface is touched) at about 111·2° F. (44° C.). Dr. Taylor states that he has known phosphorus melt and fire spontaneously when touched, in a room

the temperature of which was below 70° F. (= 21·1° C.). The ordinary lucifer-match composition fires at about 120° F. (48·8° C.), although varieties of make show in this respect marked differences. Hence large quantities of matches may fire spontaneously in summer. Red or allotropic phosphorus (used in most of the best matches) requires a heat of 600·8° F. (316° C.) to fire, but when mixed with potassic chlorate or nitrate, the mixture ignites at from 159° to 200° F. (70·5° to 93·3° C.).

Phosphorus dissolves freely in carbon disulphide, forming the liquid known as "Greek fire." If the solution be exposed to the air, the solvent rapidly evaporates, leaving the phosphorus in a finely divided state, and in a condition in which it speedily inflames. It must be noted, however, that the flames produced by phosphorus, do not as a rule spread or burn the material upon which it is placed beyond the precise spot on which it rests. This is due to the large quantity of phosphoric acid generated during combustion, glazing as it were with a non-combustible varnish the parts in the vicinity of the burning phosphorus. Of course if the material on which the solution is poured, is itself highly combustible, or if the flames come into contact with other combustible bodies in the vicinity, the fire would then spread as usual.

(8.) **Dynamite** was patented by A. Nobel in 1867. As first manufactured, it consisted of a siliceous earth of a porous and absorbent nature, obtained from Oberlohe in Hanover (*Kieselguhr*), impregnated with 75 per cent. of nitro-glycerine. Various substitutes for this siliceous earth, such as charcoal, sand, and sawdust, have been adopted. The dynamite prepared at Paris during the recent siege consisted of 25 per cent. of nitro-glycerine and 75 per cent. of a burned clay obtained from the glass and brick furnaces. Dynamite remains unchanged for any length of time. Thrown into a fire it burns with a bright flame, but without explosion. Its explosive power is reckoned to be about eight times that of gunpowder. It is superior to blasting-powder in mines, because it is not affected by damp, is more economical, and gives off no smoke. From its great disruptive power, the wounds caused by it are usually rugged and severe (*Case* 21.)

(9.) Metallic and other Combustible and Explosive Compounds.—(*a.*) *Silver fulminate* ($Ag_2Cy_2O_2$) is prepared by dissolving forty or fifty grains of silver in about three-quarters of an ounce by measure of nitric acid (sp. gr. 1·37) with the aid of heat. To the hot acid solution, two measured ounces of alcohol are added, and heat applied until reaction commences.

The silver fulminate slowly separates in the form of small, brilliant, white crystalline plates, which may be washed with a little cold water, and dried cautiously in a warm place. It is soluble in thirty-six parts of boiling water, but nearly the whole crystallises out on cooling. It explodes when heated, or when struck with a hard body, or when touched with concentrated sulphuric acid, the metal being reduced and a large volume of gaseous matter liberated.

(*b.*) *Berthollet's fulminating silver* (Ag_3N) is formed by digesting silver oxide in ammonia. While moist it explodes when rubbed with a hard body, but when dry the touch of a feather is sufficient to fire it.

(*c.*) The *oxide* and *oxalate of silver*, and some other silver and mercury salts, are liable to explode with considerable force. The silver oxide is particularly prone to explode, when prepared from the nitrate by precipitation with ammonia.

(*d.*) *A silver potassium fulminate* ($AgKCy_2O_2$) is also known. Corresponding sodium and ammonium compounds exist. They all detonate if subjected to a blow or to friction.

(*e.*) *Mercuric fulminate* ($Hg''C_2N_2O_2$) is prepared by a process very similar to that adopted in the preparation of the silver fulminate, and its properties are also similar. It explodes violently by friction or percussion, but, unlike the silver salt merely burns with a sudden and almost noiseless flash when fired in the open air. It is manufactured on a large scale for charging *percussion caps*. For this purpose sulphur and potassic chlorate, or more often potassic nitrate, are incorporated with it, and the mixture, pressed into the cap, is secured by a drop of varnish.

Abel mentions the circumstance that dampness of the fulminates may aid explosion by promoting chemism. He further

mentions that *signal light composition* has been known to undergo decomposition (so that it would ultimately have exploded) from a little acid in the paper linings of the cases in which it was packed (the acid being derived from the antichlor used in the manufacture of the paper), setting up chemical action between the orpiment and the potassic nitrate. (For the History of Detonating Agents, see Prof. Abel's papers in the "*Pharmaceutical Journal*," Vol. X. (3rd series), pp. 26, 47, 69, 86.)

(*f.*) *Aurum fulminans* [which Beckman, in his "*History of Inventions*," says was known to the older alchymists] is said by Berzelius to have the composition of $Au_2O_3,4NH_3,H_2O$. It is formed by digesting auric oxide (Au_2O_3) in ammonia.

(*g.*) The *iodide of nitrogen* (NI_3) prepared by rubbing together iodine and strong ammonia solution, and *chloride of nitrogen* (NCl_3) prepared by placing a jar of chlorine over a solution of ammonic chloride, are very dangerous and explosive compounds. Chloride of nitrogen explodes between 199·4° and 221° F. (93° and 105° C.) with fearful violence. It is a deep yellow, volatile liquid. It has a sp. gr. of 1·653. Contact with almost any combustible matter, such as oil or fat, determines its explosion at common temperatures.

(*h.*) Explosions have many times been reported as arising from the many curious combinations ordered by physicians in prescriptions.

In the "*New York Medical Record*" (Jan. 22, 1881), the following are mentioned as examples of explosive prescriptions:—

(1.) Hypophosphite of lime, 50 centigrms.; potassic chlorate, 3 grms. 75 centigrms., lactate of iron, 30 centigrms.

(2.) Solution of glycerine 8 grms.; chromic acid, 4 grms.

(3.) A mixture of potassic chlorate, tincture of perchloride of iron and glycerine.

(4.) Potassic chlorate mixed with catechu. [This, it is stated, has exploded in the mouth when used as a dentifrice, if great friction be employed.]

(5.) Pills of oxide of silver.

(6.) Pills composed of potassic permanganate and reduced iron. Also pills of antimonic sulphide and chlorate of soda.

(7.) It is stated that pills made of nitrate of silver and creosote, also of a mixture of nitrate of silver, extract of nux vomica, hydrochlorate of morphia, conserve of roses and extract of gentian, have proved explosive. ("*Med. Press and Circular*," 1874, I, p. 518.)

A general caution in the matter of prescriptions may be given, viz., to avoid mixing glycerine and substances easily reduced, with such oxidizing agents as the chlorates and permanganates or with chromic and certain organic acids.

In battle the use of explosive bullets is not permitted. This frequently becomes a subject matter for recrimination. The character of certain wounds, or the broken, distorted, and shattered condition of the projectiles found in them, are the grounds upon which the allegations that the enemy has employed them in war are commonly based. As a fact, however, these conditions constitute no proof whatsoever of explosive bullets having been employed. ("*Med. Times and Gazette*," Dec. 9, 1871, p. 715.)

The spontaneous combustion of certain vegetable and animal substances under special conditions of storage, demands consideration.

I. *The Spontaneous Combustion of perfectly dry Organic Substances.*

Dr. Taylor remarks that although it may be true, as Chevallier states ("*Annales d'Hygiène*," 1841, I., pp. 276-309, and 1843, I., p. 99,) that certain resinous woods, as pine, etc., or wood which has decayed and afterwards been dried, if long exposed to a temperature above that of boiling water, become highly combustible, yet, on the other hand it has never been proved that they will take fire below their igniting temperature in air, which is about 1000° F. (537·7° C.) Dr. Taylor says "he has exposed the thinnest deal shavings in contact with iron pipes at temperatures varying from 150° to 200° F. (65·5° to 93·3° C.) for some weeks without combustion, torrefaction, or any change approaching either condition. The most inflammable deal may be plunged into melted lead at 620° F. (326·6° C.) or into zinc

at 770° F. (382·2° C.) without igniting. Dried wood, it is true, is in a condition to burn fiercely, but not to ignite spontaneously, or no dwelling-house, locomotive, or steam vessel would be safe for a single day." (See Chevallier's paper for instances of supposed spontaneous combustion, in which the ignition of combustible substances was caused by the friction of wheels or by machinery.)

Many fires in houses, churches, workshops, &c., are due to stove-pipes, or to flues and chimneys being so fixed as to heat wood-work.

II. *The Spontaneous Ignition of Organic Substances Moistened with Water.*

An organic body that contains 50 or even 40 per cent. of water will not catch fire when held in a gas flame, nor will the application of a red hot iron do more than char it. A piece of jute or bast that contains 20 per cent. of water will ignite when held in a flame, but its combustion is not rapid. If, however, it contains 8 to 10 per cent. of water, it then fires easily and burns rapidly. Hence for the spontaneous combustion of damp material to occur, the necessary conditions are—(*α*) that in some parts at least it must have dried to a considerable extent; and (*β*) that the heat generated must have been sufficient to ignite it. If hay, *e.g.*, be spread out it never fires, because a sufficiently high temperature to effect ignition is never reached. Its firing can only arise when it is closely packed in large bulk. Further, it would appear that there are no recorded cases where organic materials having been once thoroughly dried and afterwards re-wetted, have fired spontaneously. Under these circumstances the tendency of such bodies is to decay (rot) rather than to eremacause.

The spontaneous combustion of organic bodies commences with slow burning (eremacausis of Liebig), the heat gradually increasing until at last actual ignition results.

(1.) *Vegetable substances*:—

(*α.*) Of the spontaneous combustion of *hay* when stacked in a damp condition numberless cases are recorded.

(*β.*) Of the spontaneous combustion of *raw cotton*, packed damp in the hold of a vessel, Case 5 is an illustration.

(γ.) Of the spontaneous combustion of *wet flax*, one doubtful case is recorded. ("*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1841, I., 359.)

(δ.) Of the spontaneous firing of a barn loaded with *oats*, one case is recorded. (*Case* 17.)

We may presume similar results might occur in the case of barley, corn, etc., under conditions of a like kind. (See Chevallier, "*Ann. d'Hyg.*, 1841, I., 321, 323.)

(ε.) Of the spontaneous combustion of damp *esparto grass*, one case is recorded. (*Case* 16.)

(ζ.) Of the spontaneous ignition of damp *jute*, no case is recorded. The possible danger of storing this material, however, was the subject of a trial. (*Case* 15.) In this case, the heaps at most were only seven feet in thickness, and at a depth of six feet—that is, one foot from the ground—Dr. Taylor found the mass had a temperature of 117° F. (47·2 C.). The heap, moreover, was turned twice a week, and as soon as the material was dry, was removed from the premises. The conditions do not seem, therefore, to have been favourable to ignition. We can scarcely accept this case or the evidence of shippers, who said they had never known jute to undergo spontaneous combustion, as proof that it is an exception to the tolerably general rule applicable to bodies of a similar kind.

(η.) Of the spontaneous combustion either of heaps of damp *leaves*, or of *manure*, no instance is recorded. Nevertheless, in the case of manure, a considerable temperature is often reached.

(θ.) Of the spontaneous combustion of *grain during malting*, no instance is recorded. The process of turning over and drying the barley before it is stored in any large bulk, is sufficient to explain the absence of such cases.

(ι.) There are no cases where the spontaneous ignition of *tobacco leaves* is recorded, although during manufacture they are stacked and undergo fermentation with the evolution of considerable heat (170° F. = 76·5° C.).

(κ.) Although no case is recorded of the spontaneous combustion of *cocoa-nut fibre* (coir), still there is evidence to show that considerable heat may result from packing cocoa nuts in a damp state.

(2.) *Animal Substances*:—

(*a*.) A case of fire, believed to be due to the spontaneous ignition of *wool*, is on record. (*Case* 18.)

(*β*.) The spontaneous ignition of *silk* is also stated to have occurred. (*Case* 19.) In this instance the silk was said to have been dry.

III. *The Spontaneous Ignition of Organic Substances Moistened with Oil, etc.*

A large number of substances become very disposed to fire spontaneously when moistened with animal and vegetable oils. Mineral oils do not only not increase the spontaneous inflammability of organic bodies, but destroy the property that animal and vegetable oils confer on organic bodies in promoting their spontaneous firing. Such animal and vegetable oils, especially if drying oils, are not only themselves inflammable, but powerfully aid the absorption of oxygen.

Cases 6, 7, and 8 illustrate the spontaneous inflammability of *cotton* impregnated with oil. The cotton waste used for cleaning lamps and machinery has frequently fired spontaneously.

In Case 8 the question was raised, *what is oily waste?* The plaintiff contended that all cotton contained a certain amount of oil. It was decided that in insurance policies where it is stipulated that oily waste should not be in the stock, that it applied to the railway and foundry waste, such as is generally employed for cleaning machines.

Mr. Galletly ("*Pharmaceutical Journal*," September, 1872, p. 225,) has experimented with various oils mixed with cotton waste, to determine the time required to effect their spontaneous ignition. With seal oil, one hundred minutes only, and with boiled linseed oil, less than two hours, were required, whilst with lard oil, four hours were needed; with olive oil, five or six hours; with rape oil, ten hours; and with castor oil, two days. Sperm oil did not even char the cotton waste.

As regards greasy rags, Dr. Taylor says the heat is not likely to reach 1000° F. (537·7° C.), unless *large* quantities are accumulated. The author knows, however, of an instance in a private surgery, where there was no reason to suspect any one of arson, in which

the contents of a drawer, consisting merely of a few greasy woollen and cotton rags, ignited.

Several fires occurred in warehouses on shore and in the Russian navy towards the close of the last century, which were at the time attributed to the acts of incendiaries. It was subsequently discovered that they arose from the spontaneous ignition of large quantities of flax, jute, and hemp impregnated with oil or grease. Experiments were made by the Imperial Academy of Sciences, and the result was to satisfy the inquirers of the possibility of spontaneous combustion under such conditions. (Paris and Fonblanque's "*Medical Jurisprudence*," Vol. I., p. 410. *See* also the "*Ann. d'Hygiène*," 1841, I., 364.) The great fire in Plymouth Dockyard in 1840, says Dr. Taylor, was supposed to have originated from a similar cause, though some attributed it to design.

In Case 9 *sawdust*, impregnated with oil, fired spontaneously.

In Case 10 a mixture of *boiled oil* and *lampblack* spread on *sail cloth*, ignited spontaneously.

In Case 11, the combustion of woody matters saturated with *cocoa nut oil* is recorded.

In Case 12 *jute*, impregnated with *castor oil*, fired spontaneously.

A series of experiments are recorded in the "*Ann. d'Hyg.*," 1841, I, pp. 370-373, to show the extreme inflammability of various vegetable structures after having been boiled in oil.

In Cases 13 and 14, the spontaneous ignition resulting from the impregnation of vegetable structures with turpentine, is recorded. Mr. Scanlan ("*Records of Science*," August, 1835) found that woody fibre impregnated with turpentine, is liable to spontaneous ignition. Dr. Taylor gives one or two instances of ships apparently destroyed from this cause.

Cases of so-called spontaneous ignition, need in all cases very careful investigation. Admitting the possibility of the spontaneous ignition of various bodies, there are many reasons apart from questions of science, that raise doubts respecting the occurrence of spontaneous combustion in the case of large fires, such for instance as that of London Bridge in 1861, attributed to the spontaneous combustion of jute. In the conflagration occur-

ring at the City Flour Mills in Thames Street (November, 1872), Captain Shaw stated that although the fire was supposed to have originated in the heating of damp sacks, several of these were burned on the *outside* only, and not in the middle. It was also found that a number of idle persons were on the premises the same afternoon, and that one of them, who had a box of lucifer matches, was intoxicated.

In investigating such cases—

(1.) We must not mistake the evolution of aqueous vapor for the smoke of combustion.

(2.) We must test whether carbonic acid is being evolved in considerable quantity.

(3.) We must determine the precise temperature at different depths. [In real cases of spontaneous firing the more central we get, the greater will be the temperature]

(4.) We must examine whether the middle or outer parts show the most marked charring and blackening.

(5.) We must enquire whether the mass has been noticed to smoke for some days, increasingly.

It will be evident that the gist of these enquiries is to determine whether the burning proceeds from the *surface* (when it is most likely due to external causes), or from the *centre* (when it will probably be due to spontaneous heating).

Spontaneous Combustion in the Human Body (*Cases* 26 to 33).

There is no subject in the whole range of Medical Jurisprudence on which so much romance has been built as this. Since 1692, when the subject was first seriously discussed, popular novelists have often embellished their works by the introduction of some such story, or amused themselves by telling or re-telling some of the current legends on the subject. The disappearance of the law-writer in Dickens' "Bleak House" is perhaps one of the best of these.

Writers on Medical Jurisprudence have treated the matter from different points of view. Some, like Beck, scarcely express any opinion on the subject. Others, like Casper, contemptuously reject it. Others, again, as Taylor, combat the theory of spon-

taneous combustion in a more scientific spirit. On a careful consideration of the whole question, we have come to the conclusion :—

First. *That there is no authentic case of true "spontaneous" combustion of the human body on record.*

We do, however, find a considerable number of cases in which old and infirm persons, mostly spirit-drinkers, have met their death by fire, originating, it would appear, from an accidental spark setting their clothes alight. In many of these cases the combustion of the body was far more perfect than that of the clothes, or of surrounding inflammable substances. There appears, therefore, a strong probability that the bodies of spirit-drinkers are more combustible and more easily set on fire, than those of persons not addicted to alcohol. Nor indeed is this increased inflammability of a fat person saturated with spirit, other than what we should expect from "a priori" reasoning. Hence we conclude :—

Secondly. *That there is evidence to show that the bodies of habitual drunkards, more especially if corpulent, are more than ordinarily inflammable, and hence that slight accidents, such as the upsetting of a candle, or a spark projected from the fire, might lead to the ignition of the body and its destruction by burning.*

The deductions of Drs. Lair and Marc, apply to most of these cases. They say :—1. The majority of the sufferers were females either very *fat* or very *lean*, and advanced in life. 2. Most of them were addicted to spirits. 3. The combustion occurred accidentally, and often from a very slight cause. 4. The combustion was very rapid usually consuming the entire trunk, whilst the extremities were left unhurt. 5. Water sometimes promoted, rather than checked, the combustion. 6. The fire seldom did much other damage, and often did not affect the combustible objects in contact with the body at the time it was burning. 7. There was left, as a residuum, fœtid ashes, with an unctuous, stinking, and very penetrating soot. 8. These combustions are recorded as having occurred in all countries and at all seasons.

Most of the recorded cases, it must be admitted, are marred by a want of precision, or by an evident credulity on the

part of those who relate them. And not a few of the supposed cases of spontaneous combustion turn out to be murders, in which the culprits hoped to conceal the traces of their crime by fire.

It has been suggested that phosphoretted hydrogen may be generated in the human body, and Professor Apjohn appears to favour this view. It is true that the gases found in dead bodies are sometimes inflammable. ["*Edinburgh Med. and Surgical Journal*," Vol. XXXVI., p. 221. (See page 83.)] But it is a question whether they are likely to be present in sufficient quantity or purity to fire—in other words, whether they are not, as a rule, so diluted with non-combustible gases, that they cease to be liable to ignite.

It is evident that the weight of authority is not in favour of human spontaneous combustion. No one of any position or authority has ever seen a case, and the fact is certain that dead bodies burn slowly after being steeped for a long time in alcohol, or even when alcohol has been injected into the veins. (M. Chassagniol, "*Lond. Med. Rec.*," November 11th, 1874.) On the other hand, the weight of authority supports the notion of the increased combustibility of bodies under certain conditions, and in such cases the possibility of accidental ignition.

B.—Liquid Combustibles.

By a combustible liquid is implied one that evolves vapor at a low temperature, the vapor igniting if a flame or hot body be applied to it. But because a combustible liquid emits vapor at a low temperature, it does not follow that the vapor is combustible at a low temperature. Thus, alcohol is a combustible liquid:—it boils at 173° F. (78·4° C.)—and the vapor is given off far below 173° F. Nevertheless, a temperature of 173° F. will not fire the vapor, a pale red heat at least being necessary for this purpose. Thus, we must distinguish between the volatility of a combustible liquid, and the temperature at which its vapor fires. Combustible liquids are dangerous, because if but once a sufficient temperature be applied to the vapor to ignite it, even though the heat be at a distance, the flame rapidly travels down to the

liquid from which the vapor is being disengaged. A constant and increasing evolution of inflammable vapor is thus kept agoing, until the whole of the liquid is vaporized and consumed.

By the 34 and 35 Vict. (1871), cap. CV. (designated An Act for the Safe Keeping of Petroleum), petroleum is made to include any rock oil, Rangoon oil, Burmah oil, oil made from petroleum, coal, schist, shale, peat, or other bituminous substance, and any products of petroleum, or any of the above mentioned oils. These materials, by the Act of 1879, 42 and 43 Vict., cap. XLVII., sect. 2, must not evolve inflammable vapour below 73° F. (22·77° C.) when tested by a flash test with a special form of apparatus described in the Act, and a model of which is deposited with the Board of Trade.

This does not mean, however, that the vapor is inflammable at this temperature, but only that the vapor, which would ignite if a flame or hot body were applied, is evolved at this temperature. The 44 and 45 Vict., cap. LXVIII., regulates the hawking of petroleum, limiting the quantity to be conveyed about on land by hawkers to 20 gallons.

The 1871 Act forbids the storage of petroleum, except by the licence of the local authority, under a penalty of £20 per day. By sect. 7, however, 3 gallons may be kept for private use or for sale without licence, provided it be stored in separate glass, earthenware, or metal vessels, securely stopped, not containing more than 1 pint each.

Petroleum explosions. (We include under the general name petroleum, all such liquids as naphtha, benzine, benzoline, gasoline, etc., etc.) The vapor of petroleum merely burns. In order to become explosive it must be mixed with a large bulk of air. Given conditions permitting volatilization of the spirit, and the admixture of the vapor with air, an explosive mixture is formed. Thus an explosion may result from a naked light being taken into warehouses or the holds of vessels where petroleum is stored, or more particularly into premises where the operation of transferring the liquid from one vessel to another is being, or has been, conducted. In the former case the accident may depend on leakage from the casks or barrels consequent on rough usage, or may arise from the evaporation or diffusion of the spirit

through the pores of the wood. To prevent such evaporation occurring, the casks employed for petroleum are usually rinsed out with a solution of glue, and covered over in the storehouses after they are filled, with tarpaulin. No doubt what was known as the "Regent's Park Accident" was due to the firing of a mixture of air and petroleum vapor in the cabin. (*Case* 25.) It is not improbable that many of these accidents have arisen from the presence in the oil of highly volatile ingredients, that should have been removed by distillation. The liquid known as *Xerotine siccative* consists of these highly volatile constituents of petroleum.

In 1875 an explosion is reported to have occurred in the sewer at Greenwich, owing to certain petroleum products finding their way into it. The explosive mixture of air and vapor must have been fired by a flame possibly dropped by a smoker through a sewer grating.

A question respecting the danger of fire arising from the accidental upsetting of petroleum and paraffin lamps came before the courts in the case of Mason *v.* Nicholson. (See "*Daily Chronicle*," May 22, 1879, and following days.) The plaintiff, an artist, claimed £2,500 damages of an Insurance Company, asserting that a lighted lamp, containing half a pint of Alexandra oil (petroleum) was upset accidentally over certain valuable paintings and engravings, nearly the whole of which were consumed as a consequence. A verdict was given for the Insurance Company (the defendants.) In this case there were many points raised, that, according to the theory of the defence, threw some doubt on the genuineness of the fire. The plaintiff had had a previous fire of insured paintings, and the injury to the carpet and to the surrounding furniture in the present instance did not correspond with the extent of damage done to the drawings.

There are several circumstances that may be the cause of accidents with petroleum lamps. Thus if a lamp charged with a small quantity of petroleum spirit (for accidents rarely happen when a lamp is fairly well filled) be carried carelessly, the liquid may be brought into contact with heated portions of the burner, so that rapid volatilization takes place, and a considerable burst of flame results. Such an accident is specially liable

to occur with the small metal lamps now so commonly sold, in which benzol is burnt. Serious results in such cases may follow if the lamp be dropped from fright, or if the ignited spirit be scattered, from the reservoir of the lamp being broken by the sudden burst of vapor.

Again, these so-called petroleum explosions (for, in fact, these explosions are cases of ignition and not cases of explosion at all) may result from the use of a badly refined oil, the very volatile products present being set free at the temperature at which the reservoir becomes heated. In this manner a feebly explosive mixture with the air may be produced, which is ignited by the flame of the lamp. Although "the explosion" may amount to a mere puff, it not unfrequently cracks the reservoir.

Accidents from the falling over of lamps, however, are by no means so likely to occur as is commonly supposed. As a rule the mere shock of falling is sufficient to extinguish the flame, but even supposing this not to occur, the oil running over the flame, will, in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred, extinguish it. The oil in a well-made lamp is rarely more than five degrees Fahr. above the outside temperature. Hence, supposing such an accident to happen, at any rate the oil must be some time, and even a considerable time, in contact with the flame in order that it may be heated to a temperature (say 120° F., or even higher) when vapor will be disengaged, below which the oil is as harmless as water. And further the oil must not pour out in such quantity as to deluge the flame, otherwise it is certain to extinguish it. There is another point to be considered moreover, which is that the interval, say of two or three minutes, during which the oil is being heated sufficiently to generate the vapor, allows time for the flame to be extinguished almost by a blow from the mouth, but most certainly by covering it over with matting, or by sprinkling it with a little water.

The author conducted a series of experiments on a large scale in the case referred to. The results proved that for any serious accident to happen we must suppose:—

1. That the shock of falling does not extinguish the flame.

2. That the oil in pouring out of the lamp does not extinguish the flame.

3. That a sufficient interval elapses, during which the oil is in contact with the flame, to admit of its becoming so heated as to evolve combustible vapor in any quantity.

If, therefore, it be stated that immediately the lamp fell, the flames flared up, and the whole place was in a blaze, the story is, to say the least, excessively improbable. In the experiments conducted it was found that in a room of 30 ft. by 20 ft. we were unable, owing to the irritating nature of the products of combustion to remain in the room more than ten minutes after the oil and furniture had caught alight.

Boiler Explosions.—An explosion commonly results from the sudden conversion of a solid or liquid into gas, and the further expansion of the gas by the heat.

The causes of boiler explosions are, as a rule, not difficult to find. Of these, the malconstruction of boilers, the corrosion and consequent thinning of the metal, some failure in the working of the apparatus which allows the escape of steam and warning of excessive pressure, etc., may be mentioned. But the most common cause of boiler explosions is undoubtedly the neglect of periodical cleaning and removal of the fur, consisting chiefly of earthy carbonates deposited from the water, which are insoluble in water deprived of its carbonic acid. To prevent this furring, various "boiler solutions," or "anti-fouling preparations" have been suggested. Those preparations should be avoided that themselves corrode the boiler. None, however, can safely be employed in kitchen boilers, the water of which is used for culinary purposes. Perhaps the fouling of boilers is best prevented by keeping a few oak staves constantly in the water. But again this method is scarcely applicable to water used in the kitchen.

The danger of fur in boilers arises from the circumstance that owing to the unequal expansion of the metal and the incrustation, the latter will, from time to time, break away. In such case, the water suddenly comes into contact with the intensely heated metal of the boiler, whereby an enormous volume of gas or steam is instantly generated.

Nitro-glycerine (Glonoin, Nobel's blasting oil $[C_3H_5(NO_3)_3]$ (sp. gr. 1·6) is a yellow, oily liquid, insoluble in water but soluble

in alcohol and ether. It is made by acting on glycerine with a mixture of three parts of sulphuric and one part of fuming nitric acid. This is poured into five or six times its bulk of cold water, when the nitro-glycerine sinks to the bottom. When violently struck, it explodes, being resolved into water, carbonic acid, nitrogen and nitrogen oxides. The volume of gas produced is about 10,000 times the initial volume of the nitro-glycerine. Its explosive force is about thirteen times that of gunpowder. If it has not been thoroughly washed, in other words, if a little acid has been allowed to remain, it may undergo decomposition and fire spontaneously. Thus its stability depends on the care taken in thoroughly removing the acids employed in its manufacture.

Bisulphide of Carbon (CS_2) boils at 110° F. (43·3° C.), but is volatile at common temperatures. The vapor fires at 360° F. (182·2° C.), and perhaps at even a lower temperature. ("*Chemical News*," Vol. VI., p. 4.) The vapor when mixed with air is explosive. The liquid is largely used in different manufactures. The concentrated sun's rays might be sufficient to fire the vapor if diffused in a factory, and so cause an explosion.

Alcohol [(Ethylic alcohol, $C_2H_5(OH)$. Boiling point, 173° F. (78·4° C.)] is volatile at ordinary temperatures, but the vapor requires a high temperature for its ignition. The flame is non-luminous and smokeless.

Wood Spirit [(methylic alcohol; $CH_3(OH)$; pyroxylic spirit). Boiling point 151·7° F. (66·5° C.)] is also volatile at a low temperature, but the vapor requires at least a red heat for its ignition. It then burns with a pale-coloured flame which deposits no soot.

Ether ($(C_2H_5)_2O$) is volatile at common temperatures. It boils at 96° F. (35·6° C.), but the vapor requires a red heat for ignition. It burns with a luminous flame. An explosion of a mixture of sulphuric acid and nitric ether prepared by a druggist as a button cleaner, has been stated to have occurred. ("*Med. Press and Circular*," May 25th, 1881, p. 453.)

Turpentine ($C_{10}H_{16}$) boils at 320° F. (160° C.). The vapor requires a full red heat for ignition. Combustion results when the liquid is acted upon with fuming nitric acid.

Benzol (benzene) (C_6H_6) boils at 176·9° F. (80·5° C.). The vapor burns with a luminous flame, to fire which a full red heat is needed.

C.—Gaseous Combustibles.

Certain gases are spontaneously inflammable. Of these *phosphoretted hydrogen* or *phosphamine* (PH_3) [the spontaneous inflammability of which is due to the presence of a trace of liquid phosphoretted hydrogen (P_2H_4)], and *silicic hydride* SiH_4) may be mentioned.

Pure *hydrogen* explodes with great violence when mixed in proper proportion with air or oxygen.

*Coal Gas Explosions.**—Coal gas is an admixture of several gases. It requires almost actual flame (at least a white heat) for its ignition. If flame be applied to a pipe from which coal gas issues, or to a leaky spot in a gas holder, the gas would simply burn at the point of exit, just as the gas burns at a gas jet, and that is all. In other words, the flame would not be communicated to the whole bulk of the gas in the pipe or holder. The same result would happen even if the coal gas contained a small quantity of air. But if the coal gas be mixed with about seven to ten times its bulk of air, then a violent explosion would occur if a light was applied. The damage resulting from entering a room with a naked candle where there had been a leakage of gas, depends on the presence of an explosive mixture of gas and air. If, therefore, an explosion occurs in a gas main, or in a gas holder, it is certain that the explosive gas is not pure coal gas, but a mixture of coal gas with several times its bulk of air.

Gas explosions in houses, etc., are commonly due to defective fittings, such as imperfect ball and socket joints, leaky telescope slides, etc.

The Tottenham Court Road explosion (July, 1880) depended on the presence of an explosive mixture of gas and air, the latter having found its way into the gas pipe during repairs.

* See Case 24, a curious illustration of difficulty in framing an indictment, where a person was charged with causing injury to another by permitting an escape of gas.

The results of the explosion extended a considerable distance. Over twenty-five persons were injured.

In *Coal Mine Explosions* (*Case* 20) the explosive mixture (known by the name of *fire-damp*) is a compound of methane or light carburetted hydrogen (CH_4) and air. Mixed with seven times its volume of air, methane explodes violently when a naked flame or a white heat is applied, the violence gradually decreasing from this point until the air is about seventeen times the bulk of the methane, when the mixture ceases to be explosive. When the proportion is as 1 to 18 of air, the mixture merely forms a pale blue flame round the light (corpse light). Carbonic anhydride and water are the products of combustion, the former constituting the "*Choke Damp*" of the miner, to the poisonous action of which, no doubt, more of the fatal results of an explosion are due, than to the explosion itself.

It has frequently happened that the sufferers from an explosion die of some brain complication. (*Case* 23.)

It has been suggested that in a coal mine explosion the cause of death is not so much asphyxia, as the swallowing red hot particles of coal suspended through the mine as one result of the explosion. Thus it is supposed that the victims are actually burnt to death, rather than suffocated. (See M. Riembault's paper to the Academy of Sciences, referred to in the "*British Med. Journal*," Jan. 31, 1880, p. 183.)

The usual method of detecting fire-damp in air is by observing the indications afforded by the flame of the safety lamp. The safety lamp, however, does not serve to indicate the presence of very small quantities of fire-damp, although it gives unmistakable results with large quantities. If, however, the flame of the lamp be exceedingly small, say not more than the $\frac{1}{8}$th of an inch high, the "cap" (that is the conical blue flame which appears to rest on the oil flame) becomes apparent, its size varying with the quantity of fire-damp present in the air. It is assumed if there be no "cap" that there is no fire-damp, but this is by no means necessarily the case.

Mr. Galloway's experiments show that the cap varies in different mixtures of air and fire-damp as follows :—

Composition.	Appearance of Cap.
1 fire-damp to 16 air	Voluminous, waving, spindle-shaped, $3\frac{3}{8}$ ins. high.
1 „ to 18 „	2 inches high.
1 „ to 20 „	$1\frac{5}{16}$ in. high. Very steady and pointed.
1 „ to 25 „	$\frac{1}{2}$ to $\frac{5}{8}$ in. high. Conical.
1 „ to 30 „	$\frac{3}{16}$ to $\frac{1}{4}$ in. high. Conical.
1 „ to 50 „	$\frac{1}{8}$ in. high. Very faint, and apparently broken off at top.
1 „ to 60 „	Existence of cap doubtful.

This last atmosphere most miners consider safe, and the quantity of marsh gas present unimportant. At any rate, safe or not safe, it is the limit of impurity which the safety lamp indicates.

The influence of coal dust in producing an explosive mixture with air has received considerable attention, and has been the subject of experiments and memoirs by Faraday and Lyell in 1845, by M. Verpilleux in 1867, by Mr. Galloway (Proceedings of the Royal Society, March 2, 1876, March 13, 1879, and June 16, 1881), by Mr. Abel ("*Report on Samples of Dust collected at Seaham Colliery*," July 1881), and by M. Vital ("*Annales des Mines*," 1875).

In Mr. Galloway's first paper he draws attention to the fact that a mixture of air with finely divided combustible solids (such as flour) is explosive, more especially if it be fired in a confined space. In a coal mine, layers of rubbish, consisting of dry coal dust, or of coal dust mixed with pieces of coal and stone, are found on all the floors of the air-ways. Mr. Galloway contends, that the presence of an explosive mixture of air and coal dust is the explanation of many explosions occurring in places where at any rate no large accumulation of fire-damp existed. A gust of wind (originated, possibly, by the explosion of a small accumulation of fire-damp), or a blasting operation (and it is certain that coal mine explosions have increased since gunpowder has been used for breaking the coal), would be amply sufficient to raise the dust cloud. And the results follow in order, "the flame of the

original inflammable mixture would pass directly into the newly-formed one, expanding its volume; the disturbance would be propagated over an ever widening area, until that area might possibly become co-extensive with the workings themselves: and the consequences would be the same as if the whole space had been filled with an inflammable mixture before the disturbance began." That this may be so, seems possible from the accounts of the Campagnac Colliery explosion (November 2nd, 1874), where no fire-damp was detected. A shot fired in the mine seems to have disturbed the coal dust, and the explosion occurred immediately afterwards. Thus the coal dust in a well ventilated mine may itself be a cause of danger, or where fire-damp already exists, may increase the chances of explosion or aggravate the consequences.

Mr. Galloway's experiments prove that a mixture of air and coal dust is not inflammable at ordinary pressure and temperature, but that it becomes so when mixed with a small quantity of fire-damp, *i.e.*, a quantity less than is indicated by the safety lamp. Mr. Galloway describes his inspection of the New Tredegar Colliery after the explosion on December 4th, 1875. The results of his enquiries in this case were, that the whole of the air of the mine contained some fire-damp, and that an explosive mixture had fired from a naked light at the inner end of the level. Further, he considers that the explosion of the mixed gas raised a cloud of coal dust, which when mixed with a little fire-damp and air, formed an explosive mixture such as would not have resulted had no coal dust been present. In this manner the evil of the first explosion was rendered more extensive.

What then is the smallest quantity of fire-damp necessary to make air explosive when coal dust is present? Mr. Galloway's experiments indicate that if air contains 0·892 per cent. of its volume of fire-damp, it is capable of forming an inflammable mixture with coal dust. If the proportion of fire-damp present be greater, the explosive power increases until a maximum is reached, after which it begins to decline. But Mr. Galloway contends that a mixture of coal dust and pure air is so nearly inflammable, that it would probably become explosive when it

undergoes the compression and consequent heating which the occurrence of an explosion in one part of a confined space must necessarily produce throughout the remainder of the same space.

Mr. Galloway states that some kinds of coal dust require less fire-damp than others to render the air inflammable, and that it is, therefore, conceivable that still other kinds of coal dust may form inflammable mixtures with pure air. No doubt, however, the presence of a small quantity of fire-damp is required to create the first disturbance.

As regards the quantity of coal dust required to render the air explosive, Mr. Galloway considers one ounce of coal dust to a cubic foot of air to be necessary. In some cases the air, he states, had to be black with dust before it would ignite. Thus he is of opinion that the particles normally floating about the air of a dry mine would not render it inflammable, but that a gust of wind would raise sufficient dust for the purpose.

Abel, from his experiments in the Seaham case, is of opinion "that a minute quantity of dust may under favourable conditions serve as the inciting cause of the ignition of fire damp mixtures of such a nature, that in the absence of that cause, they would escape ignition."

M. Vital explains these curious results by supposing that portions of the coal dust are successively decomposed, the products yielding explosive mixtures with the air, the violence of the burning being much influenced by the fineness of the dust.

Abel's experiments show, however, that in its power to bring about the ignition of an otherwise uninflammable mixture, magnesia, silica, slate dust, etc., are but little inferior in this respect to the most inflammable samples of coal dust.

It has been shown that one volume of fire-damp in sixty volumes of air, is the smallest admixture that the safety lamp (the usual test employed) will indicate. It has further been shown that one part of fire damp mixed with 112 of air, becomes inflammable at ordinary pressure and temperature, when charged with fine *dry* coal dust. Thus it is evident that an explosion originated in any way whatever, may extend itself to

remote parts of the workings where the presence of fire-damp was unsuspected.

The phrase "*dry* coal dust" calls for this remark. The hygrometric condition of coal dust is influenced materially by the quantity of aqueous vapour in the air. Hence explosions from mixtures of air and coal dust are more likely to occur when the air is at its *driest*, because the dust rises more easily and burns more actively. Mr. Galloway further contends that "explosions whose magnitude is due to the influence of coal dust, will happen most frequently during cold weather; and conversely . . . that the magnitude of those explosions which occur during cold weather, is traceable in some measure to the influence of coal dust."

Much, it is certain, will depend on the comparative wetness or dryness of a mine;—and dryness or wetness is greatly dependent on depth. A coal mine not more than 400 feet deep is usually damp and wet, whilst one of 700 feet deep is usually dry and dusty. Between these points much depends on the temperature of the air that finds access to the mine.

If there be much smoke and soot produced, with the ejection of large bodies of dust from the shaft—or if the timbers exhibit a charred appearance from a deposit of coked coal dust on their surfaces—or if the sides of the galleries are found to be on fire immediately after the explosion, we may then conclude that coal dust has played an important part in the accident.

The following are the principal conclusions among those deduced by Professor Abel from his numerous experiments on the dust drawn from the Seaham Colliery:—

6. The several samples of dust differed from each other considerably in sensitiveness, *i.e.*, in the readiness with which they promoted the ignition of a mixture of air and fire-damp, in such proportions that it was not inflammable *per se* when brought into contact with the flame of a lamp, or, in regard to the proportion of fire-damp required by the several samples to impart explosive properties to them, when suspended in air.

7. The most sensitive of the Seaham dusts were found to be those which were the richest in coal, and those which also contained the highest proportions of very fine dust.

8. Comparing the samples of Seaham dust with dust obtained from other collieries where disastrous explosions have recently occurred, it was found

that the most sensitive of the former was somewhat less sensitive than samples of dust obtained from Leycett Colliery (Fair Lady Pit), which ranked highest in this respect among all the samples experimented with. The Leycett dusts corresponded closely in chemical character and specific gravity to the purest Seaham coal-dust; their somewhat greater sensitiveness was perhaps ascribable to their remaining more uniformly suspended in air-currents, but possibly also to physical peculiarities.

9. One of the Seaham dusts which ranked high (third) in order of sensitiveness contained the lowest proportion of coal of all the samples, and consisted of non-combustible matter to the extent of nearly half its weight.

10. Special experiments, which were instituted in consequence of the behaviour of this sample, demonstrated that some perfectly non-combustible powders, which are also not susceptible of any chemical change when exposed to the action of flame, are very little inferior to the most inflammable or sensitive of the Seaham dust samples in their power to bring about the ignition of an otherwise uninflammable mixture of fire-damp and air.

11. Mixtures of fire-damp and air, in proportions bordering on those which will ignite on the approach of flame, are inflamed instantaneously if they contain in suspension only few particles of such non-combustible dusts, or of the Seaham or other dusts from coal-pits.

12. This effect appears ascribable, at any rate in part, to the fact that these dust particles, when they pass through a lamp-flame, immediately become incandescent, and thereby localise and intensify the heat at those points, and thus bring about the ignition of the mixture of air and fire-damp by which they are surrounded. But some phenomena observed in the course of the experiments with non-combustible powders favour the belief that finely-divided solids of particular descriptions may exert another quite distinct kind of action when heated in fire-damp mixtures, which may at least contribute importantly in determining the ignition of gas-mixtures which are not susceptible of inflammation by the application of flame alone. This subject is about to receive complete investigation.

13. The smallest proportion of the fire-damp experimented with (from the 9-foot Wigan mine) which became ignited and produced explosive effects, when passing a naked lamp-flame at a velocity of 600 feet per minute, by having suspended in it the most sensitive of the Seaham dusts, was 2·5 per cent. The most sensitive coal-dust from Leycett furnished a mixture which exploded when passing the flame, under corresponding condition, with air containing only 2 per cent. of fire-damp. A mixture of 2·75 per cent. of fire-damp with air was ignited by the lamp through the agency of a perfectly non-combustible powder (calcined magnesia).

In a current moving at a velocity of only 100 feet per minute, the Leycett coal-dust, suspended in air containing only 1·5 per cent. of fire-damp, became ignited by the lamp-flame, the ignition extending throughout the mixture.

14. The accidental presence of a proportion of fire-damp, which must have

been considerably below the smallest above specified, caused one of the most inflammable of the coal-dusts (from Leycett) to become inflamed and to carry fire some distance, when a small powder-charge was fired from a cannon while the dust was travelling.

15. The sensitiveness to ignition of a mixture of air with a small proportion of fire-damp is considerably increased if the source of heat is increased.

16. The results of the experiments with Seaham and other dusts appear to have demonstrated—

(*a.*) That coal-dust in mines not only much promotes and extends explosions in mines by reason of the rapid inflammability of the finely-divided combustible, and of the readiness with which it becomes and remains suspended in air-currents; but

(*b.*) That it may also be itself readily brought into operation as a fiercely-burning agent which will carry flame rapidly as far as its mixture with air extends, and will operate even as an exploding agent, *through the medium of a proportion of fire-damp in the air of the mine, the existence of which, in the absence of the dust, would not be attended by any danger.*

(*c.*) That dust in coal mines, *quite apart from any inflammability which it may possess*, can operate in a distinct manner, as a finely-divided solid, in determining the ignition of mixtures of only small proportions of fire-damp and air, and consequently in developing explosive effects.

(*d.*) That a particular dust in a mine (such as the Seaham N dust) may therefore be a source of danger, even though it contains only a small proportion of coal or combustible matter. Although the explosion which may occur through the agency even of a non-combustible powder, in the manner described, may be of a very mild or feeble character in the first instance, it may be almost at once increased in magnitude and violence by coal-dust which the first ignition will raise and bring into action.

17. The proportion of fire-damp required to bring dust in a mine into operation as a rapidly burning or exploding agent, even on a small scale, and with the application of a small source of heat or flame, is below the smallest amount which can be detected in the air of a mine, even by the most experienced observer, with the means at present in use, as has been already demonstrated by the experiments of Mr. Galloway. Indeed, with dusts of highly sensitive or dangerous character, under those conditions, and very possibly with dusts not more so than the least sensitive of the Seaham samples, *in the presence of a source of considerable heat and flame*, such as a blown-out shot or an overcharged hole would constitute, a small proportion of fire-damp, the possible existence of which in the mine might not be in the least suspected, may serve as the inciting cause to the development of an explosion of coal-dust.

18. In the complete absence of fire-damp coal-dust exhibits some tendency to become inflamed when passing a very large lamp-flame at a high velocity; if exposed to the action of a large volume of flame, such as is produced by the explosion of freely exposed gunpowder or gun-cotton, it exhibits, in addition, a decided tendency to carry or propagate flame. But, so far as can be determined by experiments on a moderate scale, this *tendency* (which was exhibited by Seaham X, K, and S dusts, and still more by the more sensitive Leycett dust) is of limited nature, and very different indeed from the *property* of carrying or propagating flame, which even comparatively non-sensitive dusts possess, *in the presence of a very small quantity of fire-damp.*

In conclusion, it may be admitted as possible that, with the large volume of flame, and the great disturbing effect, of a blown-out shot, as the initiatory cause of the ignition of dust, and its suspension in the surrounding air, such inflammation may, in the complete absence of fire-damp, be propagated to a greater distance than the results of small experiments would warrant one in assuming. But it can scarcely be maintained that the air of a mine in which the coal gives off gas at all can be, at any time, *free* from fire-damp; and as the existence of very small and unsuspected quantities of that gas in the air of the mine may suffice to bring about the ready propagation of flame by coal-dust and thus to develop violent explosive effects, it would appear needless to assume that coal-dust may, in the entire absence of fire-damp, give rise to explosions, even of only limited character, in coal mines, in order to account for casualties which cannot be ascribed to the existence of accumulations or sudden outbursts of fire-damp.

Experiments on this subject are being made at Harton Colliery, and also at Chesterfield by a Committee of the Chesterfield and Derbyshire Institute of Engineers. The experiments of the Chesterfield Committee confirm (it is stated) the view, that flame will travel in a mixture of coal dust and air, even in the absence of a trace of fire damp.

The practical conclusion suggested by these facts is, the advisability of removing from the mine as far as possible all dust liable to be disturbed by the passage of men and horses and by every puff of air, and to water the roadways. There is no little difficulty, however, in reducing to practice regulations that look well on paper.

Explosions in Flour Mills, etc.—It has been proved beyond question that a mixture of air and fine flour dust is inflammable. From the friction of the millstones igniting a mixture of this description, the Glasgow Flour Mills were completely destroyed

(July 9th, 1872), the flame rapidly spreading through the conduits leading to the exhaust box on the upper floor.

Some care is necessary in flour mills to prevent such accidents. The exhaust should be placed outside the building, and should offer as little resistance as possible to sudden expansion, resulting from the ignition of inflammable mixtures. And again, the conduits leading from the mills to the exhaust chambers should be small, and there should be no other communication between the interior of the building and the dust receptacles.

An explosion in a candy factory in New York, resulting in the loss of twelve lives and the destruction of the building, is recorded. A large quantity of starch is used in the preparation of the moulds, and the explosion is supposed to have arisen from the atmosphere of the factory becoming charged with the fine starch powder. A similar accident is said to have occurred in a linoleum factory, through the ignition of cork dust diffused through the building. ("*Lancet*," March 30th, 1878, p. 481.)

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. Ann. d'Hyg., 1841, I., p. 343.—("Taylor," Vol. I., p. 709.)—Six weeks after a vessel, laden with casks of lamp-black, had left Portsmouth, signs of smoke and a smell of burning issuing from one of the casks was remarked. The cask was intensely hot, but not in flames. Other casks were also observed to be smoking. The whole were thrown into the sea. The casks were surrounded by barrels of tar and jars of oil, and there was some reason to suspect leakage from these had occurred. No light had been taken into the hold since the vessel had left England. (Page 523.)

2. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 709.—A fire said to have occurred at Doncaster Railway Station from the spontaneous combustion of lamp-black. (Page 523.)

3. Michael v. Gillespy.—(*C. P.*, 1856.)—Plaintiff agreed to convey a cargo of coals from the Tyne to Aden, and insured the freight in a time policy for £300. The ship leaked whilst in the Tyne, but the leak was at once stopped. The vessel encountered a storm, and put into Cuxhaven. The coals were here landed, and found to be much wetted with salt water. The captain was advised, considering the state of the coals, not to reship them, for fear they might ignite spontaneously. A claim was then lodged for a total loss of freight. The defendants contended that the owner knew the vessel was leaky;—that the cargo was not lost by the perils of the sea;—that the coals might have been re-shipped without danger;—and that if they had been washed with fresh water and dried, there would have been no fear of spontaneous ignition. Verdict for plaintiff. (Pages 520, 521.)

4. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 710, 1859.—A cargo of 640 tons of coal, shipped at Hartlepool, became wetted with sea water. For fear of spontaneous combustion they were landed at Lowestoft, and a claim made for loss of cargo. They were found to contain iron pyrites that were undergoing disintegration. The temperature of the mass in the centre was greater than near the surface. It was urged that the coals did not fire when they were landed, and that therefore they might safely have been conveyed to their destination; but it was argued that by unloading, and by being spread out, they had been so cooled as to prevent the accident that would otherwise have occurred. (Page 521.)

5. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 713.—(Destruction of the merchant

ship, "Earl of Eldon," 1834.)—Damp raw cotton was packed in the vessel. A month after leaving port, vapours were given off in large quantity, the evil being intensified by disturbing the bales, whereby a free current of air was created. Ultimately the ship caught fire, and both vessel and freight were entirely destroyed. (Page 529.)

6. **Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 714.**—A ship and its cargo destroyed by the spontaneous ignition of bales of cotton upon which oil had been spilt. (For other cases see "Ann. d'Hyg." 1841, I, 367.) (Page 531.)

7. **Ann. d'Hyg., 1842, 1, 211.**— Fire due to the spontaneous firing of cotton waste saturated with oil. A man accused of incendiarism was acquitted. (Pages 520, 531.)

8. **Knowles v. North British Insurance Company.**—(Manchester Assizes, 1865.)—The plaintiff claimed £300 fire insurance. Certain cotton waste had caught fire spontaneously, and to this the conflagration was due. The policy stipulated, however, that there should be no "oily or greasy waste" in the stock. The defendants pleaded a breach of this stipulation. The plaintiff urged that cotton was naturally oily. Verdict for the defendants. (Page 531.)

9. **Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 714.**—Reference made to the spontaneous ignition of a mixture of sawdust and oil. (Page 532.)

10. **Ann. d'Hyg., 1841, 1, 384.**— In 1781 a fire occurred in a Russian frigate from the spontaneous ignition of sailcloth, which had come into contact with a mixture of boiled oil and lampblack, prepared for painting the vessel. It was found that this mixture spread on cloth, fired in twenty hours when exposed to the air. (Pages 523, 532.)

11. **Koebel v. Saunders (C. P., 1865.)**—The plaintiff sued the defendant on a policy of insurance on a cargo of cocoanut oil which had been stored with cocoanuts. The question here was leakage of oil, dependent on the shrinking of the staves of the cask from the heat developed by the fermentation of the cocoanuts, due to their having been wetted with sea water owing to bad weather. Verdict for plaintiff. (Page 532.)

12. **Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 716.**—The case of a ship set on fire by the spontaneous ignition of jute impregnated with castor-oil. (Page 532.)

13. **Records of Science, 1835.**—("Taylor's Med. Juris.," I., p. 716.)—The spontaneous combustion of "chipcake" (that is the chips of wood, leaves and leaf-stalks as contained in the imported raw American turpentine). The mass caught fire about nine hours after it had been heaped. (Page

14. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 716.—Destruction of the ship "Jane" (Aug., 1851), owing to the spontaneous ignition of a cargo of resin, turpentine, and tar. (Page 532.)

15. Hepburn v. Lordan.—(*V. C. Wood*, January, 1865.)—The plaintiff, a large leather dealer, brought an action against the defendant on account of the injury he believed would result from the spontaneous ignition of a mass of about 300 tons of a vegetable fibre (jute) stored in a yard adjoining his premises. The jute was damp, but it was not stacked in a confined space. The plaintiff argued the possibility of such an accident happening by reference to the analogous case of cotton. The defendants brought a mass of evidence to show that, although it might become heated, it merely dried, and that no case of the spontaneous ignition of jute had ever been heard of. Dried jute, it was admitted on all sides, was not spontaneously combustible. An injunction was, however, granted, on the ground of the danger of external ignition. (Pages 520, 530.)

16. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 720.—Reference made to a suspected case of spontaneous firing in the Tyne Docks (1871) of damp esparto grass (?). (Page 530.)

17. Ann. d'Hyg., 1841, 1, 309.—A barn loaded with oats was destroyed by fire. It was supposed to be the act of an incendiary. MM. Chevalier, Ollivier, and Devergie decided that it caught fire spontaneously, from the heat developed by fermentation, the result of damp storage. (Page 530.)

18. Taylor's Med. Juris., I., p. 722.—A fire occurred in a vessel laden with wool. It was believed to be spontaneous. (Page 531.)

19. Chemical News, 1870, 2, 145.—(*M. Persoz.*)—A fire which occurred at a silk mercer's in Paris, was believed to be due to the stacking of very large quantities of dry black-dyed silk. (Page 531.)

20. Proc. of R. S., Vol. XXVIII., p. 412.—Details of colliery explosions at Pemberton, Oct. 11, 1877; at Blantyre, Oct. 2, 1877; at Unity Brook, March 12, 1878; at Apedale, March 27, 1878; at Haydock, June 7, 1878; at Abercarne, Sept. 11, 1878; at Dinas, Jan. 13, 1879. **Proc. of R. S., Vol. XXIV.**—Explosion at New Tredegar Colliery; also at Swaithe and Llan Collieries. **Proc. of R. S., June, 1881.**—Explosions at Risca, Seaham, and Penycraig. **British Med. Journal, July 24, 1880, p. 146.**—Account of the accidents arising from the Risca colliery explosion. (Page 542.)

21. British Med. Journ., March 5, 1870.—Explosion of 2 cwt. of dynamite at a factory at Dunnwald, near Cologne. (Page 525.)

22. Medical Times and Gazette, Aug. 19, 1871.—Explosion of 15 tons of gun-cotton at Stowmarket. (Page 524.)

23. British Med. Journal, Dec. 19, 1874.—Male, æt. 32. Explosion of gas in a room. The person injured died from meningitis. (Page 542.)

24. R. v. William Leonard, John O'Brien, and another.—(*C. C. C.*, July 9, 1845. *Vide* "Times," July 11, 1845.)—The indictment charged the prisoners with having caused the escape of a certain quantity of inflammable gas, etc., etc. They were found not guilty, because of the invalidity of the charge, there being no law to embrace such a crime as that they had committed, gas being neither a corrosive fluid nor destructive matter. Further it could not be said that they had cast it over her. (Page 541.)

25. Pharmaceutical Journal, (3), VI., pp. 97, 113.—Account of the explosion of a mixture of air and petroleum vapour on board the "Maria Lee" (June, 1873). The weather at the time was hot. The leakage of th petroleum took place in the hold of the vessel. (Page 537.)

26. Pierre Aim Lair, from "Coxe's Emporium of Arts and Sciences, vol. I., p. 167, quoted by Beck. The wife of the Sieur Millet of Rheims was drunk every day of her life. The domestic economy of the house was managed by a handsome young female. On the 20th February, 1725, the wife was found consumed at a distance of a foot and a half from the kitchen hearth. A part of the head, a few of the vertebræ, and a portion of the lower extremities were all that remained unconsumed. A foot and a half of the flooring under the body was burnt, but a wooden kneading trough and a tub very near the body had sustained no injury. M. Chretien, a surgeon, examined the remains of the body with great precision. Jean Millet, the husband, being interrogated by the judges, declared that about eight p.m. on the 19th of February, he had retired to rest with his wife who not being able to sleep, had gone into the kitchen, where he thought she was warming herself. Having fallen asleep, he was roused by an infectious odour, and having run to the kitchen he found the remains of his wife in the state described by the medical reports. The judges formed an opinion that he had conspired with his servant to destroy the wife, and he was condemned to death. On appeal, however, to a higher court, this decree was reversed, and it was pronounced a case of spontaneous combustion.

Here it will be seen there were grave elements of suspicion, but even admitting the husband's statement, there is yet great improbability that the combustion was spontaneous, as the wretched woman was so close to the fire. (Pages 520, 533.)

27. Bianchini, quoted by Beck. (See also Lair, and the "Philosoph· Trans.," Vol. XLIII., p. 447. "Transactions of the Copenhagen Society.")—(1.) In 1692 a woman of the lower class who had taken little but intoxicating liquors for three years, sat down one evening in a straw chair to sleep.

Next morning no part of her was found except the skull and the extreme joints of her fingers, all the rest of her body having been reduced to ashes.

(2.) The Countess Cornelia Bandi, of Cesena, in Italy, aged 62, was accustomed to bathe her body with camphorated spirits of wine. When her servant came to her one morning, she found nothing but the remains of her mistress's body in the most horrible condition. Four feet from the bed was a heap of ashes, in which the legs and arms alone were untouched. Between the legs lay the head; the brain, together with half the posterior part of the skull and the whole chin had been consumed. Three fingers were found in the state of a coal, and the rest of the body was reduced to ashes, which, when touched, left on the fingers a fat, fœtid moisture. A small lamp on the floor was covered with ashes, and contained no oil; the tallow of two candles was melted on a table, but the wicks still remained. The state of the bedding suggested that she had got out of bed. The bed itself was not damaged, though the furniture and tapestry were covered with a moist kind of soot, which had penetrated into the drawers and dirtied the linen. (Page 533.)

28.—(1.) On the 6th of January, 1847, a man, æt. 71, was found by his grandson lying in bed in a state of combustion. The chamber was filled with dense smoke, and one witness asserted that he saw a small whitish flame playing around the body of the deceased, which receded as the witness approached. The clothes and bedcoverings were almost entirely consumed, but not the wooden bedstead. Very little of the body was left. The man usually carried lucifer matches in his waistcoat-pocket, and a hot brick was placed at his feet when he went to bed. The son and his wife were suspected of having murdered him, and Dr. Masson was commissioned to examine the exhumed body, but both he and Orfila are said to have agreed that it was a case of spontaneous combustion! ("Gazette Médicale," Sept. 4, 1847, and Taylor, *loc. cit.*, pp. 702-3.)

(2.) The same theory found favour in the case of the Countess of Goerlitz, for whose murder John Stauff was tried at Darmstadt, in March and April, 1850. This case is fully reported by Dr. Taylor. The subsequent confession of the murderer absolves us from quoting it at length.

(3.) One of the most recent cases of spontaneous combustion is that of a woman much given to drinking absinthe and other spirits. "On the 1st of August, 1869, having drunk largely, she went to her bedroom about 5 p.m. Two hours after, her husband trying to enter, found the door very hot. He raised an alarm of fire, and the room was entered by the window. There was a nauseous odour, and a sense of suffocation on entering. The dead body of the woman was found on the floor, between the bed and the hearth—the head being partly under the bed, and the legs across the hearth. There was no fire in the grate, and the trap was down. The floor on which the body lay was more carbonized than burnt; on it were found fragments of bones, some of

the ribs, a hand, and some ashes. The head, which was swollen and livid (violet-red) presented no mark of burning. The hair, even, was not burnt, any more than the upper part of the trunk, which was covered with a black powder from the burnt clothes. The left arm was wanting from the shoulder, The right arm had lost its hand, which was disarticulated at the wrist. The elbow joint was exposed, but the muscles of the arms were not destroyed. The left side and front of the chest were widely open, but there was no trace of the viscera of the thorax. The lower ribs were separated. The walls of the abdomen were gone, and its cavity empty, the viscera being reduced to a greasy black soot, adhering to the vertebræ. The bones of the spine and pelvis remained, but the muscles and fasciæ had disappeared. The lower limbs, from the thighs downwards, were entire, the skin being covered with a black powder, but there were no blisters on these parts. It was further stated that although there was no apparent source of fire or of ignition in the room, and that the bed and its furniture had escaped burning, nevertheless that the floor was still on fire [smouldering], when the room was entered. Neither candle, match, nor fuel were found near the body. No noise or cry of alarm was heard, and the opposite neighbours saw no signs of fire to attract their attention to the chamber.

[See Reports of Drs. Bertholle and Strohl in "L'Union Médicale," November 19, 1870, and the "Ann. d'Hygiène," 1871, 1, 228; and Taylor, *loc cit.*, p. 705. Dr. Taylor suggests that the wretched woman in all probability had matches about her person. As regards the dark greasy or sooty matter, and the empyreumatic odour, he refers to Tardieu's paper in the "Annales d'Hygiène," 1850, 2, 191 and 363, and for 1851, 1, 99; and also to a paper by Dr. Ogston in the "Medical Gazette," Vol. XLVI., pp. 889 and 948.]

(4.) Dr. Taylor records a curious case in which a dead body was found thirteen months after death almost entirely consumed along with the coffin. It appears that a bad smell attracted attention to the vault, which was opened; the coffins (one of which was of metal) had burst, and the body therefore was placed with sawdust in the coffin, the gas turned off, and all, as was thought, left safe. But in the morning the vault was found on fire, with the result above mentioned (Taylor, *loc. cit.*, p. 706). Mr. Worthington, of Garston, near Liverpool, who consulted Dr. Taylor on the case, discovered that one of the workmen was smoking in the vault the night before, and as there were gas-pipes, the cause of the accident is not far to seek. No doubt the sawdust acted as fuel. (Page 533.)

29. In the "Philosoph. Trans.," Vol. XLIII., p. 463, it is recorded that "Grace Pett, the wife of a fishmonger, of St. Clement's, Ipswich, used to go downstairs every night half dressed to smoke a pipe. On the 9th of April, 1744, she got up from bed as usual. Her daughter who slept with her, did not perceive that her mother was absent till next morning when she awoke. Soon after this she put on her clothes, and going down into the kitchen

found her mother stretched out on her right side, with her head near the grate. The body was extended on the hearth, with the legs on the deal floor, and it had the appearance of a log of wood consumed by a fire without apparent flame. On beholding the spectacle, the girl ran in great haste and poured some water over her mother's body, to extinguish the fire. The fœtid odour and smoke which exhaled from the body, almost suffocated some of the neighbours who had hastened to the girl's assistance. The trunk was in some measure incinerated, and resembled a heap of coals covered with white ashes. The head, arms, legs, and thighs had also participated in the burning. This woman, it was said, had drunk a large quantity of spirituous liquor, in consequence of being overjoyed at hearing that one of her daughters had returned from Gibraltar. There was no fire in the grate, and the candle had burnt entirely out in the socket of the candlestick, which was close to her. There was also found near the consumed body the clothes of a child, and a paper screen, which had sustained no injury. Her dress consisted of a cotton gown. (Page 533.)

30. Another of Le Cat's cases quoted by Beck was given him by M. Boinneau, curé of Plurguer, near Dol. It occurred in 1749. Madame de Boiseon, aged 80, a great spirit-drinker for many years, was sitting in her elbow chair before the fire, while her waiting maid went out of the room for a few moments. The maid on her return, seeing her mistress on fire, immediately gave an alarm, and some persons having come to her aid, one of them tried to extinguish the flames with his hand, but they adhered to it, as if it had been dipped in brandy or oil. Water was brought and thrown over her, yet the fire appeared more violent, and was not extinguished till the whole flesh had been consumed. Her skeleton, exceedingly black, remained entire in the chair which was only a little scorched. One leg only and the two hands detached themselves from the rest of the bones. It is not known whether her clothes had caught fire by approaching the grate; but she was in the same place in which she sat every day. There was no extraordinary fire at the time, and she had not fallen from the chair. (Page 533.)

31. (1.) Dr. Taylor (*loc. cit.*, p. 701) relates the case of a woman addicted to habits of intoxication, who was found dead in her room in December, 1864. Her clothes were on fire, and a chair had been burnt. The room when entered was filled with a thick, black, offensive smoke. On examination some of the bones were found quite bare of flesh. A candle was still burning on the table, and there was also a fire in the room. But for this, the case (as Dr. Taylor says) might have been taken for one of spontaneous combustion.

(2.) He also mentions the case of Mrs. Pulley, whose body was examined by the late Mr. Jackson, of Stamford, in 1860. The circumstances required little ingenuity to transform them into a case of spontaneous combustion, instead of, as it really was, an attempt to conceal

murder by strangulation. There had been no fire in the grate. The deceased was lying on the hearth of her room, three or four feet from the grate. From the shoulders downward, the body lay on a boarded floor of oak. She was fully dressed, and parts of her clothing and body had been destroyed by fire. A brass candlestick was lying between the left arm and the body, the top of the candlestick being inclined towards it. Her clothes were wholly burnt off both arms, and partly off the upper portion of the trunk. The legs were not at all burnt. A bonnet worn by her was partly burnt. The right arm was raised by the side, with the elbow resting on the floor. The fingers were partly burnt off, and the remainder of the hand was charred. Her left hand (which was stretched out) was less burnt than the right. Some ashes from the clothing lay between the left arm and the body. The fire was extinguished when the room was entered, but there was a strong smell of burning. Under the body was a hole burnt in the oak floor. Her features were distorted and swollen, and the eyes suffused with blood. Some parts were burnt to a cinder, whilst others were but little affected by the fire. (Page 533.)

32.—In the case of **R. v. Hatto** (Aylesbury Lent Assizes, 1854), in which Dr. Taylor was consulted, a woman was found dead in her room, much burnt. She was known to have been alive about 8.15 p.m., whilst her body was found still smouldering at 11.15 p.m. Her clothes were much burnt. The most important point in this case, as it appears to us, is, that Dr. Taylor found that a hempen mat under the body was so saturated with melted human fat, that it burned like a link when he ignited it. The subsequent confession of the prisoner showed that the burning of the body must have taken place in less than two hours, and possibly in about an hour and a half. "Both knees," said the surgeon, "were consumed by fire, and the thighs, as well as the private parts were burnt to a cinder, leaving the shafts of the thigh bones exposed and charred for several inches. Between the thighs and the feet the floor underneath had been burnt away, and the leg-bones had fallen through the floor, leaving the feet, unburnt, upon the floor." Her clothes were much burnt. (Page 533.)

33.—(1.) The case of the priest Bertholi, in 1776, in Italy, quoted by Foderé, Vol. III., p. 210; "London Medical Repository," Vol. I., p. 332; and given by Beck in foot-notes, is also extremely curious. "He had retired to a room in his brother-in-law's house, as was supposed, to pray. In a few minutes his cries caused the room to be entered. He was found extended on the floor, and surrounded by a light flame, which receded as they approached, and finally vanished. The next morning M. Battaglia was called, and examined the patient. He found the integuments of the right arm almost entirely detached from the flesh; also between the shoulders and thighs the nteguments were injured. There was mortification of the right hand, which

in spite of scarification, rapidly extended. The patient complained of burning thirst, and was horribly convulsed; he passed by stool putrid, bilious matter, and was exhausted with the continual vomiting, accompanied by fever and delirium. On the fourth day, after two hours' insensibility, he expired. A short time previous to his death M. Battaglia observed with astonishment that the body exhaled a most insufferable odour—worms crawled from it on the bed, and the nails had become detached from the left hand. The account of the patient was, that he felt a stroke like the blow of a cudgel on the right hand, and at the same time saw a bluish flame attack his shirt, which was immediately reduced to ashes, the wristbands remaining totally untouched. A handkerchief between the shoulders and shirt was entire, and free from any trace of burning. His breeches were also uninjured, but though not a hair of his head was burnt, yet his cap was entirely consumed. There had been no fire in the room, but the lamp, which had been full of oil, was now dry, and its wick reduced to a cinder." The vagaries of this fire are more like the effects of lightning than anything else.

(2.) A case, said to have occurred in the neighbourhood of Bordeaux in September, 1822, is too absurd to require either quotation or refutation. The curious may find it in a foot-note to page 528 of Beck's work, where a number of references to articles on the subject, and to other recorded cases will be found. (Page 533)

CHAPTER XII.

STARVATION.

Circumstances under which Death from Starvation may occur.—Varieties of Food.—Relative Values of Foods.—The Quantity of Food necessary to Support Life at Different Ages.—The Symptoms of Starvation.—Treatment.—Post-Mortem Appearances.—Diseases Arising from a Deficient Diet, or from an Improper Quality of Food.

(ILLUSTRATIVE CASES, PAGE 593.)

BY *acute starvation* is implied, the deprivation of all food from a person previously well fed. By *chronic starvation* is implied, the withholding of food either sufficient in quantity, or proper in quality, to support life.

The following cases bearing on starvation, may present themselves to the medical jurist:—

1. A mother may be charged with causing the death of her infant, by preventing it from taking the breast. (*Case* 42.)

2. Parents or employers may be charged with giving their children, apprentices, or servants insufficient nourishment, and so causing either their death or a danger of death. (*Cases* 42 to 47*.)

3. Real or pretended cases of prolonged fasting, or the conduct of persons concerned in such cases, may be called in question, and submitted to the medical jurist. (*Cases* 1 to 7, etc.) (See a paper by Dr. L. S. Winslow, in the "*Journal of Psych. Med. and Mental Pathology*," Nov., 1880.)

In an indictment for murder or manslaughter by starvation, the defence set up is invariably, that admitting starvation to be the cause of death, it was the result of disease, and not an act of wilful malice on the part of the prisoner. (Vide *R.* v. *Pryke*, Chelmsford Summer Assizes, 1840; *R.* v. *Mitchell*, Oxford Lent Assizes, 1861.) Hence to support a charge of starvation, the absence of organic disease should, if possible, be proved, although it must be remembered that the presence of

organic disease does not disprove that death may have resulted from criminal starvation.

We may here inquire in somewhat greater detail, respecting the circumstances under which death may occur from starvation, and so become a subject of legal inquiry.

I. *Disease.*—Thus in cases of mal-assimilation of food (*Case* 12, 47*), of chronic diarrhœa (*Case* 47*), of cancer of the stomach (*Case* 15*), of œsophageal stricture (*Case* 15), in certain forms of paralysis (*Case* 14), and perhaps more frequently than all, in cases of closure of the pancreatic duct, death may result from true starvation, the effect of organic disease.

Again chronic starvation may result from the nausea of pregnancy. This may become so uncontrollable as to terminate fatally.

Again in children, where the mother's milk or the cow's milk employed is wanting in fat, we may have the functions of the pancreas, after they have been developed, paralysed by prolonged inactivity, or in the case of very young infants the organ may remain inactive because not called to the full performance of its duties at a proper age. (Dobell, "On Loss of Weight," p. 268. "*Med. Times and Gazette,*" June, 1868 (Dr. Brakenridge).) This fact is of importance in days when pure milk (owing to Adulteration Acts) is more difficult to obtain than it ever was, and when preparations of preserved milk, from which the fatty constituents have been removed and a superabundance of saccharine matter added, are so largely used for the food of children, contrary to all sound principles of infant diet. That a child may, under such circumstances, plump though it appear, grow up to be a miserable dyspeptic, and die of physiological starvation, must not be lost sight of.

A dislike to, and abstinence from food, proving serious in its results, is not uncommon in young girls at or about their first menstrual period. ("*Med. Times and Gazette,*" Jan. 22, 1870.) Connected, as this dislike to food most often is, with hysteria, it should be met peremptorily and with a strong will. (*Case* 10.)

Hysterical insanity, the general cause of an occasional epidemic of "fasting girls," is a disease that requires treatment, and the sufferers, like people out of their mind, need to be taken care of. ("*British Medical Journal*," 1878, I., p. 254.) Commencing with a genuine dislike to food, the patients stand a chance of being seized upon by idle parents as excellent money-making exhibitions, and either prevented from taking nourishment when the desire returns, or all forms of deception (such as night-feeding, &c.) practised, to keep up the outside interest, lest the profitable business be interfered with. (*Cases* 1, 2, 5, 6, 9.)

But this subject has another aspect besides that of the showman and the marvel-monger. Chronic starvation may occur in young girls, who in consequence of home neglect, or the want of a sufficiently good diet at school, or the neglect of treatment when anæmic, fall into a condition of extreme weakness and debility, just as the menstrual function is beginning to establish itself. The systematic rejection of food by the patient (a matter possibly of no great concern to the economical schoolmistress) retards menstruation, and so increases the trouble. It is certain that girls at such a time require more than a *little* meat and bread-and-butter pudding once a day, more especially when perhaps they are expected (healthy and feeble alike) to take a long daily walk. Girls of 16 or 17 require at least two good meat meals a-day, to meet the drain the system is called upon to bear at this time of life, and on the proper treatment of which their future health so much depends.

Cases 6 and 8 are illustrations of how abstinence from food is often associated with uterine irregularities and disturbances.

Acute melancholia (*Case* 12) and *idiocy* (*Case* 12*) may be causes of starvation, and must be met by prompt and careful treatment.

II. *Criminal neglect.* Such cases may occur in young children, or in aged persons dependent on others for food. By 31 & 32 Vic., c. 122, s. 37, it is "a misdemeanour to refuse or neglect to provide sufficient food or other necessaries for any infant of tender years, unable to provide for and take care of itself (whether such infant be child, apprentice or servant), whom the

party is obliged by duty or contract to provide for, so as thereby to injure its health." (See "Russell on Crimes," I., 499, where the cases are collected.)

In the case of a mother being charged with not suckling her infant, it may be urged that either she lost her milk, or that from insufficient food owing to poverty, her milk became so poor that it failed to afford proper nourishment to the child. The possibility of such conditions must be admitted. ("*Medical Times and Gazette*," 1871, II., 656.) More than this, it is within our own experience, that some human milk (although the mother may be well fed) is so absolutely wanting in nutritive properties, that a child may die of starvation although it seems to be sucking ravenously at well-filled breasts. (Page 561.)

III. Starvation may be suicidal. (*Cases* 30, 32, 35, and 40.) Such attempts are usually the acts of prisoners who refuse food, either to make themselves ill, or to feign insanity declaring that they fear poison, or from a feeling of resentment. Few, however, have the courage to carry out for very long their determinations. Thus in Case 37 the resolution to commit suicide by starvation failed on the ninth day, in Case 31 on the tenth day, and in Case 36 on the eleventh day.

IV. Lastly, an exhibition of starvation for forty days and nights as a money-making concern (probably not unprofitable) occurred in the case of the notorious Dr. Tanner. (*Case* 48.) (See *B. M. J.*, 1880, II., pp. 171 and 215.) During his fast he took plenty of water, which no doubt materially assisted the kidneys in purifying the blood. Dr. Tanner's fast, further, occurred in hot weather (July and August): — hence the normal temperature was somewhat easily maintained. We confess, however, that the remarkable return of appetite, raises some doubt as to the genuineness of the exhibition.

There are one or two points of legal interest bearing on the question of starvation to which we may refer here:—

(1.) If a man supplies his wife with sufficient money to buy food for their children, which she neglects to do, either squandering the money on drink, or hoarding it, or not devoting it to the object for which it was given her, the man is held blame-

less but the woman is culpable. On the other hand, if it is proved that sufficient money was not supplied the woman by her husband, the man only is culpable. This is founded on the principle that the wife in law is the husband's servant. (*R.* v. *Edwards*, 8 C. & P., 611, *per* Patteson, J.)

Several decisions of the judges (*e. g.*, *R.* v. *Downes*, 45, L. J. M. C. 8) in trials of the "Peculiar People," etc., have shown that medical attendance and medicines are considered necessaries, and that a husband is bound to provide them for his wife, and a parent for his or her child, etc. On the other hand the decision in the recent case of *R.* v. *Morby* (*Case* 50) has laid it down that, to support an indictment of manslaughter for not providing medical attendance to a child, it must be shown that the neglect caused or accelerated the child's death. A want of cleanliness in the case of lunatics, children, and sick persons, is very justly considered an aggravation of the neglect to provide sufficient food.

(2.) With regard to servants and apprentices, it has been held that the husband, and not the wife, is bound to provide food for them. (*R.* v. *Squire.*) But a wife may be, and sometimes is, charged as an accessory or accomplice in the crime.

(3.) With regard to unweaned *infants*, it has been held that the mother alone is criminally responsible if the death arise from her not suckling the child when she was capable of doing so. (*R.* v. *Davey*, Exeter Lent Assizes, 1835.) Nevertheless the father may be accessory to the death.

(4.) It has been held that parents are bound to supply the wants of their children of tender years. Thus, in cases of pretended fasting, where, for fear of detection, food is absolutely withheld from a child by its parents or guardians, they are guilty of manslaughter if the child dies, although the child itself be a consenting party. (Hannen, J., *R.* v. *Jacobs and Wife*, Carmarthen Summer Assizes, 1870, *Case* 1.)

(5.) The numerous cases of *baby-farming* within the past few years led to the passing of a special Act of Parliament. The cases of *R.* v. *Mary Hall* and *R.* v. *Margaret Waters* show how in addition to improper food, farmed children are often criminally neglected, and drugged with preparations of opium to keep them quiet.

Before considering the subject of starvation in detail, there are certain points connected with food generally, that it may be well in the first instance to discuss.

(*a.*) The Varieties of Food.

Variety of food is absolutely essential to health. The only food which by itself is capable of sustaining life, and building up tissues for an indefinite period, is *milk*. This is to be regarded, therefore, as the model diet—the perfect type of what food ought to be.

Its composition, in different mammals, varies somewhat :—

	Woman	Cow	Goat	Sheep	Ass	Mare
Water	890	860	868	856	907	888
Solids	110	140	132	144	93	112
	1000	1000	1000	1000	1000	1000
Butter	25	38	33	42	12	8
Casein	35	68	40	45	16	16
Sugar and Extractives ...	48	30	53	50	65	88
Fixed salts ...	2	6	6	7		

If we analyse the constitution of milk, we find that dissolved or suspended in the water are certain oleaginous, nitrogenous, saccharine, and mineral constituents :—

(1.) *Water*, amounting to about 90 per cent. by weight. Experience shows that for adults two to three pints, and for infants one to two pints of liquid, are required for health per day, in addition to the water ordinarily present in articles of food. When too little water is ingested, a great accumulation of used-up material takes place in the system, so that nutrition is interfered with, and a train of unpleasant symptoms developed. A deficiency of drink is said to cause nervous exhaustion. (See "*Boston Med. Journ.*," July 8, 1880. Dr. Webber.)

(2.) The quantity of fatty or *oleaginous* matter (butter), is greater in cow's than in woman's milk. Fatty food is absolutely

necessary for the maintenance of animal heat, for the growth and repair of nerve tissue, and perhaps for other purposes. The inhabitants of cold countries appear to be able to assimilate more fat than those living in temperate or tropical regions. The author has been informed that a few years ago a troublesome outbreak of skin-disease (somewhat allied to eczema, but of dartrous nature), occurred amongst the pauper children in the Haverfordwest workhouse, which quickly yielded when a more liberal allowance of butter was permitted. If butter, on account of cost, is suppressed, or sparingly given, dripping, or some other kind of animal fat, ought to be substituted.

From a practical point of view, the sale of fatty material, be it "butterine" or any other oleaginous body, so long as it is wholesome, should be assisted, and not checked by needless prosecutions. As a question of *taste*, butter is no doubt preferable to butterine, but as a question of *food* and *nourishment*, the one is as good as the other.

(3.) The casein of milk is the representative of the *nitrogenous* constituents of food. The gluten of bread—the legumin of peas, beans, and other legumes—the albumen of eggs—the myosin of muscle—the gelatin of bones, ligaments, tendons, etc., are similar in their general constitution.

Although health cannot long be maintained on pure albumen, yet albuminous foods are necessary for the repair of muscular waste.

(4.) Again, in milk we have *saccharine* and *extractive* matters. These answer to the saccharine and starchy constituents of bread and other vegetable foods (Amylaceous). And here it may be remarked that the term *farinaceous* is not equivalent to *amylaceous*. Farinaceous food contains gluten, legumin, or some other form of vegetable albumen, and the name signifies that it resembles farina or flour. Arrowroot, sago, and tapioca are amylaceous or starch foods; whilst the flour of wheat, Indian corn (maize), barley, oats, lentils, beans, peas, etc., are farinaceous or farina foods.

(5.) Lastly, we have *mineral* constituents in milk. The chlorides, phosphates, and carbonates of the alkaline and earthy metals, and the salts of iron and perhaps of manganese, are

the most important of these. Criminals were at one time deprived of salt in Holland, and are said to have perished miserably.

(β.) The Relative Values of Different Foods.

The following table from Dr. Letheby's work shows the *relative values* of different foods. In using such tables regard must be had to age, climate, and other circumstances of life, and also to the individual powers of digestion.

Nutritive Value of Foods.

[In this table carboniferous matter is calculated as starch, ten of fat being equal to twenty-four of starch.]

Substances. (100 parts.)	Water.	Fibrin, Albumen, &c.	Starch, Sugar, &c.	Fat.	Salts.	Carboniferous.	Nitrogenous.	Total Nutriment.
Human Milk ...	89	3·5	4·2	3·0	0·2	11·4	3·5	14·9
Cow's Milk... ...	86	4·5	5·0	4·1	0·7	14·8	4·5	19·3
Skimmed Milk ...	87	4·5	5·0	2·7	0·7	11·5	4·5	16·0
Butter Milk ...	87	4·5	5·0	0·5	0·7	6·0	4·5	10·5
Beef and Mutton	73	19·0	—	5·0	2·0	12·0	19·0	31·0
Veal	77	19·0	—	1·0	0·6	2·4	19·0	21·4
Poultry	74	21·0	—	3·0	1·2	7·2	21·0	28·2
Bacon (fat)... ...	20	·8	—	70·0	1·3	168·0	0·8	168·8
Cheese (Cheddar)	36	29·0	—	30·0	4·5	72·0	29·0	101·0
,, (skimmed)	44	45·0	—	6·0	5·0	14·4	45·0	69·4
Butter...	15	—	—	83·0	2·0	199·0	—	199·0
Eggs	74	14·0	—	10·5	1·5	25·0	14·0	39·0
White of Egg ...	78	20·0	—	—	1·6	—	20·0	20·0
Yelk of ,, ...	52	16·0	—	30·0	1·3	72·0	16·0	88·0
White Fish... ...	79	19·0	—	1·0	1·2	2·4	19·0	21·4
Salmon	78	17·0	—	4·0	1·4	9·6	17·0	26·6
Eel	80	10·0	—	8·0	1·3	19·2	10·0	29·2
Wheat Flour ...	15	11·0	70·0	2·0	1·7	74·8	11·0	85·8
Barley Meal ...	15	10·0	70·0	2·4	2·0	75·8	10·0	85·8
Oat Meal	15	12·0	62·0	6·0	3·0	76·4	12·0	88·4
Rye Meal	15	9·0	66·0	2·0	1·8	70·8	9·0	79·8
Indian Meal (Maize)	14	9·0	65·0	8·0	1·7	84·2	9·0	93·2
Rice	14	7·0	76·0	0·3	0·3	76·7	7·0	83·7
Haricot	19	23·0	45·0	3·0	3·6	52·2	23·0	75·2
Peas	13	22·0	58·0	2·0	3·0	62·8	22·0	84·8
Beans	14	24·0	44·0	1·4	3·6	47·4	24·0	71·4
Lentils...	14	29·0	44·0	1·5	2·3	47·6	29·0	76·6
Wheat Bread ...	44	9·0	49·0	1·0	2·3	51·4	9·0	60·4
Rye Bread	48	5·0	46·0	1·0	1·4	48·4	5·3	53·7
Potatoes	74	2·0	23·0	0·2	0·7	23·5	2·0	25·5
Green Vegetables	86	2·0	4·0	0·5	0·7	5·0	2·0	7·0
Arrowroot	18	—	82·0	—	—	82·0	—	82·0

(γ.) The Quantity of Food Required to Support Life at Different Ages.

This question is best approached from purely physiological considerations. An average adult loses daily about 4,500 to 4,600 grains of carbon, and 300 of nitrogen, or very nearly 11 ounces of solids, by some such means as the following:—

Loss by the lungs about 32·0 per cent. of the entire loss.
" " skin " 17·0 " " "
" " fæces " 4·5 " " "
" " urine " 46·5 " " "

Now it is important to note that if a man were to live on albuminous articles of food only, (the ratio of carbon to nitrogen in these being about 3·5 to 1) he would be taking about fifteen times as much nitrogen as he requires, in order to get sufficient carbon. Hence other articles of food, such as the amylaceous or starchy varieties, become a necessity.

Again, as the proportion of carbon to nitrogen in bread is about 30 to 1, it follows that if a man ate enough bread to give him all the nitrogen he requires, he must take about twice as much carbon as he really wants.

To put this matter in a practical form, let us suppose a man to live entirely on butchers' meat, he would require nearly 6½ pounds (or 45,000 grains) daily, in order to obtain sufficient carbon for his daily needs, in consuming which he would take about 1,500 grains more nitrogen than is necessary. Thus:—

Carbon ... ... 4,500 grains
Nitrogen ... ... 1,830 " } in 6½ lbs. of meat.

Excess of Nitrogen above that required=1,500 grains.

Or again, let us suppose that he attempted to live on bread alone, he would then require about 4½ lbs. (30,000 grains) daily in order to obtain sufficient nitrogen, in which case he would consume double the quantity of carbon required. Thus:—

Carbon ... ... 9,000 grains
Nitrogen ... ... 300 " } in 4½ lbs. of bread.

Excess of Carbon above that required=4,500 grains.

It is evident, however, that a combination of bread and meat would more economically supply his wants. Thus:—

	Carbon.	Nitrogen.
15,000 grains of bread (or rather more than two pounds) contain }	4,500 grs.	150 grs.
5,000 grains of meat (or about ¾ pound) contain ... ...)	500 „	150 „
	5,000	300

The next question we must consider is the practical one:—

How much Food should a healthy Adult and a healthy Infant Consume Daily?

Stated broadly it may be said that for a man of about nine or ten stone (126 to 140 pounds), two pounds of bread, three-quarters of a pound of meat, and from one and a-half to three pints of fluid per day is sufficient. Authors, however, differ somewhat in their estimates. Thus Dr. Dalton ("*Physiology*," 1871, p. 101) states that rather less than two and a-half pounds of solid and rather over three pints of liquid food, are required by a man in full health, taking free exercise. This he apportions as follows:—

Meat	16 oz. or 1·00 lb.	avoirdupois.
Bread	19 oz. or 1·19 „	„
Butter or fat	3½ oz. or 0·22 „	„
Water	52 fluid oz. or 3·38 „	„

Vierordt ("*Grundriss der Phys.*," 1860, p. 192) considers an adult to be well nourished, if with moderate exercise he takes daily about 4 ounces of dry albumen, 3 ounces of fat, 11½ ounces of some starchy substance, and about 1 ounce of salt. This gives a proportion equal to 1 part of nitrogenous to 3·5 parts of non-nitrogenous food. If to this be added about 6 pints of water and the oxygen taken up in the act of respiration (which he estimates at 1·5 pounds), we obtain a total of about one-twentieth of the body weight consumed in twenty-four hours. But this quantity of food is, we consider, insufficient, at least for active exercise.

In the Navy, the men get 31 to 35½ ounces of *dry* nutritious material daily. Of this 26 ounces is vegetable and the rest animal, and, like the diet of the British soldier, contains 5 ounces of nitrogen, and 10 ounces of carbon compounds.

Dr. Edward Smith gives the following diet-scale for a man in good health, with good appetite and moderate exercise :—

Breakfast: ¾ pint of milk, ¼ pint of water with tea or coffee; bread, 4 to 6 ounces; butter, ¾ ounce; sugar, ¾ ounce; bacon, 3 ounces, or eggs, 4 ounces [2 to 3 eggs], or cooked meat, 3 ounces. *Dinner:* cooked meat, 4 to 6 ounces; potatoes, 8 ounces; bread, 3 ounces to 4 ounces; pudding, 8 ounces; cheese, ½ ounce; soup, 6 ounces; water or beer, ½ pint. *Tea:* water with tea, ¾ pint; sugar, ¾ ounce; milk or cream, 2 ounces; bread, 3 ounces; butter, ½ ounce to ¾ ounce. *Supper:* milk, ¾ pint; oatmeal, 1 ounce; bread, 3 to 4 ounces; or eggs, 4 ounces, or cooked meat, 3 ounces, and bread, 3 ounces; butter or cheese, ½ ounce; water or beer, ½ pint.

The table on the opposite page, from Dr. Letheby's work on food, gives some further dietaries.

Dr. Dobell has discussed at considerable length the essentials of a normal diet for adults and children (the latter being contributed to his work by Dr. Sansom), and to these carefully considered statements of practical physicians the reader is referred for further details. (Dobell's "*Diet and Regimen*," pp. 62-82.)

In practice it is found that some people take rather more, and others rather less than the amount stated. This depends more on habits of life and constitution, than on mere body weight. Thus growing children and young adults, those who lead an active life in the open air, pregnant women, etc., require more food than older persons, or those of sedentary habits.

It is difficult to place a limit to the rapacity of gluttons, and of lunatics with inordinate appetites! Captain Parry's Esquimaux devoured no less than 35 pounds of various aliments, including tallow-candles, in twenty-four hours. A certain Hindoo is said to have eaten a whole sheep at one time. Sir John Franklin states that the half-breed *voyageurs* of Canada are very discontented when put on a short allowance of 8 pounds of meat a day, their usual consumption being from 12 to 20 pounds. The wandering Cossacks of Siberia, according to Captain Cochrane, are not much less hearty! But these exceptional peculiarities scarcely interest the medical jurist.

Dietaries and their Nutritive Values.

Diets.	Weekly Consumption (in Ounces).							Daily Ditto.		
	Bread or Biscuit.	Meat.	Potatoes.	Meal, &c.	Milk.	Cheese.	Butter.	Carboniferous.	Nitrogenous.	Total Solid Nutriment.
Physiological	140	84	—	—	—	—	3·5	12·7	4·0	16·7
Prison Punishment	112	Will only sustain life for a limited period, when combined with water.						8·2	1·4	9·6
English County and Borough Goals										
Under 7 days	121	—	—	23	39·5	—	—	12·4	2·2	14·6
Not hard labour..	172	7·8	3·2	22·8	15·4	3·5	—	15·7	3·1	18·8
Hard labour	163	14·6	63·4	27·2	41·6	1·5	—	18·2	3·5	21·7
Scotch Prisons:—										
Under 3 days	112	—	—	—	—	—	—	11·2	1·9	13·1
Not hard labour..	30	7·5	152	73	175	—	—	19·0	3·4	22·4
Hard labour	76	10	176	100	175	—	—	27·0	4·5	31·5
Irish Prisons:—										
Under 1 month	56	—	192	70	70	—	—	19·5	2·9	22·4
Not hard labour	56	—	192	60	170	—	—	20·5	3·4	23·9
Hard labour	64	—	219	70·5	170	—	—	22·0	3·6	25·6
Military Prisons:										
Under 84 days	56	—	—	119	210	—	—	22·2	3·8	26·0
Over 84 ,, ...	56	—	—	168	210	—	—	27·8	4·7	32·5
Convict Prisons	161	36	112	12	12·8	—	—	18·4	3·6	22·0
Union (adults)	112	15·5	51	17	34	5·2	1·1	14.2	2·8	17·0
,, (children)..	90	14·0	32	—	105	—	3·5	11·1	2·3	13·4
Lunatic Asylums..	114	23·0	68	16	14	7	1·3	13·2	4·0	17·2
Public Hospitals..	93	52	56	14	7	—	3·2	12·1	3·5	15·6
Army (Crimea)	112†	112	—	—	—	—	—	14·5	4·8	19·3
,, (Home)	168	84	112	—	—	—	—	19·4	4·8	24·2
,, (in Madras)	112	112	56	4*	—	—	—	16·5	4·9	21·4
Navy	112†	112	56	—	—	—	—	17·7	5·0	22·7
Navvy (in the Crimea) ..	140‡	140	—	28	—	—	—	17·8	6·2	24·0
,, or Navigator (Home)	320‡	96	64	—	—	12	4·0	18·6	7·7	26·3
Yorkshire Labourer	280	126	28	—	210	—	49	42·2	8·8	51·0
Berwickshire ,, ...	122	—	—	224	224	—	—	37·1	7·0	44·1

Note.—In this table only the most important articles of diet are mentioned, although the remainder, excepting beer, spirits, tea, and coffee, are calculated in the daily consumption. * Moderate rations of rice, and † of biscuit. Gruel is calculated at the rate of two ounces of meal per pint.

Although the principles laid down are undoubtedly true for the mass (and when dealing with the diet of a number, it is better to err on the safe side of plenty than on the dangerous one of deficiency), yet there are instances of health and longevity attained on a very restricted diet. Of these, the two best known are those of Cornaro, whose diet was only 12 ounces of solids (chiefly vegetable), with 14 ounces of light wine daily, on which he subsisted for fifty-eight years; and that of the miller of Billericay (Thomas Wood), who is said to have sustained a remarkable degree of vigour for upwards of eighteen years upon

16 ounces of flour made into a pudding with water per day. No doubt life, and some strength may be long sustained on a comparatively meagre diet, if the supply of liquids is unrestricted. In some cases (as in the two mentioned) more liquid is said to have been excreted by the kidneys than was taken by the mouth. This is the probable key to that sudden increase of weight remarked at times in the case of jockeys and others, which would otherwise be inexplicable, except on the hypothesis of trickery. On this point, "there are certain phenomena," says Dr. Carpenter, ("*Physiology*," pp. 168-9,) "which, if accurately recorded, cannot be accounted for in any other way than by admitting that, under particular circumstances, a considerable amount of water may be absorbed from the vapour of the atmosphere. Lining observed that his body on one occasion increased in weight, during two hours, to the amount of 8½ ounces, allowance being made for the amount of fluid ingested and for the quantity passed off by the urine, and by cutaneous transpiration during the time. Dr. Jurin affirms that he ascertained an increase of 18 ounces to have taken place during a night passed in a cool room after a day's exercise and abstinence. Dr. Watson states that a lad at Newmarket having been almost starved, in order that he might be reduced to a proper weight for riding a match, was weighed at 9 a.m. and again at 10 a.m., and he was found to have gained nearly 30 ounces in weight in the course of this hour, though he had drunk only half a glass of wine in the interim. A parallel instance was related to the author by the late Sir G. Hill, then Governor of St. Vincent:—A jockey had been for some time in training for a race, in which that gentleman was much interested, and had been reduced to the proper weight; on the morning of the trial, being much oppressed with thirst, he took one cup of tea, and shortly afterwards his weight was found to have increased 6 pounds, so that he was incapacitated for riding." Should such a question in connection with racing matters become matter for medical evidence, one would expect to find (in addition to the evidence of credible witnesses), the two following conditions:—

1st. A previous course of privation, exercise, or sweating, so as to predispose to absorption.

2nd. That the air at the time contained a considerable amount of watery vapour.

With respect to the amount of food required by children, we are informed that in a well-managed school, where the average numbers are over 400, including both boys and girls, the children averaging from nine to fourteen and presenting a picture of health, the daily diet consists of—

Bread	...	...	from 6 oz. to 16 oz., according to age.			
Meat (cooked)	...		„ 4 „	to 6 „	„	„
Butter or cheese	...		„ ½ „	to 1 „	„	„
Vegetables (chiefly potatoes)			„ 4 „	to 8 „	„	„
Milk	...	...	...	...	15 fluid ounces.	

This will give about 12¼ ounces of carbon and about 2¾ ounces of nitrogen compounds daily.

Infants are said to consume no less than 136 grains of carbon per pound of body-weight, or from three to four times in proportion to weight, as much as an adult.

The quantity of nitrogen consumed by an infant per pound of body-weight, is about six times that of the adult. Similarly the adult excretes about 3 grains of urea (nearly one-half of which is nitrogen) per pound of body-weight, whilst the infant excretes about 5 grains per pound of body-weight. In other words, a man of 10 stone gets rid of about an ounce of urea, whilst an infant of 24 pounds gets rid of about ¼ of an ounce of urea per diem.

For an infant fed wholly upon milk (as all babies who have no teeth, or only one or two teeth, should be), we consider they require from 1 to 3 pints daily, according to age.

Physiologists are now agreed that starchy food alone is not a proper diet for infants.

The question may arise as to the quantity of milk secreted by women during lactation. Lamperriere obtained about 1 kilogramme of milk in twenty-four hours (equal to about 35 ounces):—*i.e.* about 22 grammes to each kilogramme of body-weight. This agrees nearly with M. Guillot's estimate of 32 to 64 ounces, founded on the comparative weight of the infant before and after lactation. ("*L'Union Médicale*," 1852, No 16.)

The question, "*How long is it since a meal has been taken?*" is

not infrequently asked of the medical witness. Without quoting the well-known experiments of Dr. Beaumont on Alexis St. Martin, it may be said in general terms that a time varying between three and a-half and four and a-half hours, is usually required for the digestion of a meal of mixed food. In some cases six to eight hours, or even more, may be required, whilst fish and certain light articles of diet are digested by most people in about an hour.

We may say then, that in order to maintain health and vigour:

(1.) The food taken must be sufficient in quantity. This implies in the case of adults, from 25 to 30 grains of carbon, and from 1 to 1·5 grains of nitrogen for every pound of body-weight, but in the case of infants proportionally more of both.

(2.) The food must be of good quality and digestible. Although salt junk may be digested by the British sailor, the same food would probably mean starvation to the delicately-nurtured child, or to the literary man who takes but little exercise.

(3.) The food should be properly cooked. Underdone meat may give worms. Over-cooked meat is difficult to digest, is unpalatable, and often proves injurious.

It may be remarked that from 15 to 30 per cent., or on an average, about one-fourth of the weight, is lost in most methods of cooking meat. Therefore 8 ounces of raw meat will be about equal to 6 ounces of cooked meat.

(4.) There must be variety in an efficient diet scale. In addition to the carbon and nitrogen, some 200 to 600 grains of mineral matter, and some 5 to 6 pints of water are required;—in other words, there is needed from 2 to 3 pints of water in excess of that contained in the articles of food.

(5.) The intervals of feeding must not be too long. The very young infant requires the breast at least every two hours, or if only a few days old, every hour. Older children require food about every three or four hours during the daytime. Few adults can dispense with three meals per diem. A few thrive well on two, but most do better with four meals daily.

Having discussed these general questions we now proceed to consider—

I. The symptoms of starvation.
II. The time of death in starvation.
III. The treatment of starvation.
IV. The post-mortem appearances indicative of starvation.
V. The diseases arising from a deficient diet, or an improper quality of food.

I.—The Symptoms of Starvation.

In chronic starvation, hunger is not a marked symptom. On the contrary, a loathing of food is more frequent than a desire for food. Similarly in acute starvation, intense hunger appears to be a symptom of comparatively short duration.

Briefly summarizing the symptoms recorded, they appear to be those of great nervous depression. The pulse is usually slow and soft (*Cases* 35, and 36), the features collapsed (*Case* 36), although a flushed face has at times been noted (*Case* 35), the voice hollow (*Case* 36), and the breath offensive (*Cases* 35 and 36).

In the case of the Welsh Fasting Girl, Nurse Clinch "first perceived a peculiar smell about the bed on the sixth day of the watching." She says, "it was not like the usual smell of death, and I cannot describe what it was like." It was not urine, nor did it arise from the feathers of the new bed, for "after the bed was changed I still perceived the smell."

Very often, in cases of starvation, the breath for some days before death has been described as unusually cold. A marked debility with great languor (*Case* 36), listlessness, irritability (*Case* 16), despondency, and a tendency to start at noises or bright lights (*Case* 18), has been commonly observed.

In some cases the eyes are said to be fierce-looking, and the pupils widely dilated. The skin usually is harsh and dry, and if the person be plump before starvation, it will probably soon be found to hang in loose folds (baggy) over prominent bones. ("*Med. Press and Cir.*," 1880, I., p. 210.) Very frequently, especially in chronic cases, the skin becomes covered

"with a brownish filthy-looking coating, almost as indelible as varnish." One most marked characteristic of slow starvation is the acutely lined character of the wrinkles on the face, assuming, in fact, the appearance of deeply cut lines. The hair in chronic cases has been recorded as growing unusually long and rapidly over the body. ("*Med. Press and Cir.*," 1880, I., p. 210.)

There is often distressing palpitation, with *tinnitus aurium*, illusions and double vision (*Cases* 18 and 36), and even temporary blindness. (*Case* 6.) Great emaciation (showing itself especially at the nates, the thighs, the orbits, the neighbourhood of the zygoma, and in the neck and thorax) occurs especially in the later stages, and arises not so much from loss of fat as from actual wasting of the muscles. (*Cases* 2, 9, 13, 15, 15*, 23, 31, 35, 43, and 47.)

The muscular weakness may become so great, that the person is unable to move from actual loss of power (a kind of paralysis) in the lower extremities (*Cases* 8**, 17, 27, 36), although such a result of starvation is by no means of uniform occurrence. (*Cases* 15, 31, and 39.) The temperature, slightly raised at first, usually sinks in the later stages. As a rule the mouth is dry, parched, and full of thick tenacious saliva, and the thirst intense. (*Cases* 23, 32, 34, and 35.)

The pains and irritation in the stomach, sometimes increased and sometimes relieved by pressure, are usually troublesome (*Cases* 31 and 36), although they are not of such a nature as to give the patient the sensation of hunger, but rather the reverse. In some chronic cases, convulsions (*Cases* 6 and 35), ending in dementia (furious delirium) (*Cases* 8* and 18) have occurred. Dr. Taylor ascribes this latter condition either to a tropical climate, or to the person drinking wine, spirit, salt water, or urine during the period of abstinence. (Rostan and Orfila, "*Cours Elémentaire d'Hygiène*," I., p. 283, etc., and "*Médecine Légale*," I., p. 415; "*Medical Times and Gazette*," March 30th, 1861 p. 344.)

In some cases a train of nervous affections have had their ending in fatal coma (*Cases* 6 and 34), whilst in others, the mind has remained clear, and the intellect unclouded, to the very last. (*Cases* 10, 11, 15, and 15*.)

As a rule the bowels are exceedingly costive (*Cases* 10, 13, 23, and 36), and sometimes cease to act altogether. (*Cases* 6, 8, 8*, 9, and 31.) If they act at all, the fæces are usually small, hard, dark coloured, and dry lumps, that cause much pain in the passing. The state of the urine depends somewhat on whether the person abstains from liquids as well as solids, and the quantity of liquid taken. Thus in some cases no urine seems to have been passed at all (*Cases* 6 and 8); in others what was passed was very pale and scanty (*Cases* 8*, 9, 10, 23, and 26); whilst again, in other cases, it has been recorded as high-coloured, becoming very turbid on standing,—in other words very concentrated. A peculiar aromatic odour of the urine has been noted. The absence of albumen has also been remarked. (*Cases* 9 and 31.)

It will generally be noted that the body feels cold, and that occasionally purple extravasations (petechiæ) are to be found on the skin. (Orfila, "*Cours de Med. Légale*," p. 415.) The mucous membrane of the outlets of the body (anus, nostrils, vagina, urethra, etc.), are frequently red and inflamed.

Dr. Cornish (Surgeon-Major) gives the following as the conditions resulting from chronic starvation:—(*a.*) emaciation and loss of bulk;—(*b.*) disappearance of the subcutaneous fat, and in females absorption of the mammæ;—(*c.*) anæmia; (*d.*) swollen and ulcerated gums (this condition of *land scurvy* occurred in a large proportion of the cases noted);—(*e.*) great tendency to ulceration and sloughing on the receipt of slight injuries;—(*f.*) anasarca (in a considerable number of the cases);—(*g.*) dry scurvy, with pigmented patches on the skin;—(*h.*) bristly discoloured hair;—(*i.*) an aspect of great hebetude and depression;—(*j.*) a crouched attitude, the limbs being gathered in on a sunken abdomen. ("*London Med. Record*," 1879, p. 170.)

Some of these symptoms, require more detailed notice:—

(*a*) *The pulse.* At first this is a little quickened, but in the later stages it becomes slower (*Cases* 23, 31, 35, 36). On the approach of danger, it usually becomes greatly quickened. On this point Dr. Fowler, in his "*History of the Welsh Fasting Girl*," remarks, "Assuming the average pulse of Casper's pri-

soner (*Case* 36) to have been from 70 to 75, as it ordinarily is at that age, we get on the fifth day of absolute starvation a rise of from 13 to 18 beats per minute, which, on the eighth day is augmented by 8, or in all about 21 to 26 beats over and above its natural rate. On the second day of the fasting, Sarah Jacob's pulse had increased 14 beats, on the third 26 beats, on the fifth 54 beats, and on the 7th day 74 beats, in rapidity. Sex and temperament may have something to do with this dissimilarity." Dr. Fowler accounts for the apparently normal rate of 76 on the tenth day in Casper's prisoner, from his having taken some sugar and water.

In the case of imprisoned pitmen, an impure atmosphere no doubt contributes to the slow pulse rate.

(β.) *Temperature.* Chossat's experiments on the temperature in starvation, will be found in his "*Recherches expérimentales sur l'inanition*," a memoir presented to the Academy of Sciences in 1843. (See also Wunderlich on "*Temperature*," New Syd. Soc.'s Translat., pp. 135-6.) The temperature in starvation is generally lowered, but to no great extent in the earlier stages. Thus on the fifth day the temperature in Case 36 was recorded as normal. The general depression is rarely more than from 0·5° to 2° F. (=0·3° to 1·1° Cent.). Forgetfulness of this fact led some of the medical men wrong in Sarah Jacob's case. It is very probable that in certain stages of fasting, there is a slight increase of temperature [pyrexia]. The loss of temperature is most remarkable, however, on the last day of life, when it sometimes amounts to several degrees (collapse). But even this is not always the case, for I have myself seen a case of chronic starvation where the temperature was normal to the very end. Dr. Carpenter shows that in Chossat's experiments, the daily *variation* or *fluctuation* of temperature is greatly increased.

When food is taken after prolonged fasting the temperature rapidly rises.

(γ.) *Loss of weight.* In starvation, loss of weight is inevitable (*Cases* 2, 9, 13, 15, 15*). Thus in Case 31 (one of voluntary starvation), the man lost seven pounds during the first six days of his fast (=1·17 pounds per day). Dr. Tanner's loss of weight during his forty days' fast, was said to be at the rate of

1 lb. per day (*Case* 48). It was the appeal to the balance that proved the imposture in Case 2.

But it is important to consider to what extent loss of weight, consistent with life, may extend :—

In Chossat's experiments ("*Recherches Expérimentales sur l'inanition*," Paris, 1843, p. 21), the average loss of weight that occurred in healthy warm-blooded animals between the commencement of starvation and death, was 40 per cent. In other words, an animal died without the intervention of disease, when it had lost two-fifths of its body weight. The results obtained show considerable variation depending chiefly on the amount of fat, those animals losing most in which the fat was in the greatest abundance, whilst at the same time they lived the longest.

Taking 40 per cent. as the mean, M. Chossat obtained the following curious results as regards the relative diminution of the several tissues and organs of the body :—

Parts which lose *more* than 40 per cent.		Parts which lose *less* than 40 per cent.	
Fat	93·3	Muscular Coat of Stomach	39·7
Blood	75·0	Pharynx and Œsophagus	34·2
Spleen	71·4	Skin	33·3
Pancreas	64·1	Kidneys	31·9
Liver	52·0	Respiratory Apparatus	22·2
Heart	44·8	Osseous System	16·7
Intestines	42·4	Eyes	10·0
Muscles of Locomotion	42·3	Nervous System	1·9

Assuming these results to be applicable to human beings, it follows that if a man weighing 144 lbs. loses weight continuously at the rate of 24 ozs. per week (=6 lbs. per month), he must die within twelve months ;—or given a normal weight of 120 lbs., a person could not live three years with an annual loss of 20 lbs. The enormous importance of these facts to practical medicine, has been dealt with in great and careful detail by Dr. Dobell (See "Loss of Weight, Blood Spitting, and Lung Disease.")

In the Staunton case (*Case* 41), the woman after death weighed 74 lbs. Assuming 120 lbs to have been her normal weight (calculated from her height), it follows that she lost 46 lbs., or as

nearly as possible two-fifths of her weight—a result strictly in accord with Chossat's experiments. But it would seem from recorded cases, that the body weight in human beings, may fall below 40 per cent. Thus in Case 15, one of enforced fasting by disease, the body weight fell in ten months from 120 to 60 lbs, and during the succeeding seven months (at the end of which time the man died) to 40 lbs. The case is remarkable from the circumstance that the man walked about to within three days of his death. One cannot help thinking there must have been some error in the weighing.

Again, in famine, Dr. Cunningham ("*London Med. Record*," 1879, p. 171) records that in a series of observations made by him, the loss of body weight fell from 20 to 40 per cent., fat and blood (the latter in bulk rather than in any special constituent) disappearing in greater proportion than other tissues. The spleen, pancreas, liver, heart and intestines underwent a high degree of waste (Chossat, Cornish, etc.). A very important fact bearing on this subject is the following:—The tissues are prone, in chronic starvation, to undergo fatty changes and subsequent absorption (Cunningham), this change specially affecting the mucous and submucous tissues of the intestines. This condition leads to destructive desquamation of the epithelium, thinning of the intestines, and various degrees of ulceration, so that in some cases the muscular coat is found to constitute the lining membrane of the intestine. These changes are also observed, although in a lesser degree, in the skin, liver, and kidneys. (See illustrative of this (Mr. Lucas) "*Lancet*," August 9th, 1879.)

When food, in proper quantity and quality, is taken after a period of starvation, the body weight increases. Thus in Case 43 a starved child, when properly fed, gained 3 lbs. in four days, and 10 lbs. by the end of the month, whilst in Case 47 a starved girl, æt. 13½, gained weight at the rate of 5 ounces per day for 129 days. The increase of weight in such cases is gradual, because the powers of assimilation become weakened by the fast. And the longer the fast, the more gradual the increase, because the weaker is the digestive capability from an increasing atrophy of the digestive organs, and more especially

of the pancreas. In Case 31, one of acute starvation in a healthy man, the loss of weight resulting from a ten days' fast was said to have been made up by three days' food.

In Case 31 the urea excreted during the third, fourth, and fifth days of the fast amounted to 294·6 grains per day (or 2·9 grains per lb. body-weight), whilst on the fourth day the quantity excreted was equivalent to that passed on the third and fifth days together. Ranke fixes 2 grains of urea per lb. of body-weight as the quantity daily excreted during inanition.

And here the important question arises, viz., what ought to be the weight at a given age?* The *average* weight at different periods of life will be found in a Table on page 167.

In using tables of this kind, however, great allowance must be made for premature birth, for congenital syphilis (which has a tendency to retard growth, development, and puberty), and for diseases such as phthisis, tabes mesenterica, recent attacks of fever, etc, all of which would tend to produce a less weight than the average of normal healthy cases, and on the other hand for obesity as an influencing condition in the opposite direction.

Given, however, a case such as Case 47, where a girl of 13 was found to weigh only 35 lbs., whilst her weight at that age should have been 71·5 lbs., showing a deficiency of 36·5 lbs.,—and further,

* The mean weight of man is (M. de Parville "Union Méd.," Sept. 2, 1880,) about 70 kilos. This is made up as follows :—

Muscles and accessories	31·0 kilos.
Skeleton	12·4 „
Skin	5·0 „
Fat	12·0 „
Brain	1·4 „
Thoracic viscera	1·2 „
Abdominal ditto	4·0 = 67·0

The remainder consists of blood.

The total weight of the liquids is 40 kilos., and of the solids 30 kilos.

In 24 hours the body, he states, loses 2 kilos. 700 grms. of water, 250 grms. of carbon, 25 grms. of nitrogen, and 25 of mineral matter. To balance expenditure, the body needs 500 grms. of dry aliment, 650 grms. of oxygen, and 2,300 grms. of water. In the prolonged fast of a fat man, he has at his disposal about 15 kilos., and he loses daily about 300 grms. of carbon and of nitrogen. In 15 kilos. we have 50 times 300 grms.—that is, absolute exhaustion would not take place for 50 days.

taking into consideration the fact that when properly fed her body-weight gradually increased, the loss of weight must be regarded as strong *primâ facie* evidence of insufficient food having been allowed.

But important considerations arise when we regard loss of weight and consequent emaciation forensically :—

And *first, there may be great emaciation, without starvation being the cause of the emaciation.* Thus in Case 42 the medical evidence was that the child died of starvation, although it was admitted that it suffered from extreme diarrhœa. The fact that diarrhœa might itself produce emaciation and bloodlessness seems to have been overlooked, and this although all the time food was being given. (Chossat, p. 153.) Again in the Staunton case (*Case* 41) the emaciation was undoubtedly extreme; but the question here was, not the existence of emaciation but, did the emaciation necessarily indicate starvation? Good authorities (Drs. Greenfield, Bristowe, etc.,) considered the death of this woman was probably due to tubercular meningitis, and the post-mortem undoubtedly supported this view. Dr. Greenfield has shown that emaciation may result from this disease. ("*British Med. Journal*," Oct. 20, 1877.) The real fact is, emaciation does not prove starvation, because emaciation may occur where the supply of food has been unlimited.

But *secondly. There may be very little emaciation, and yet the death result from starvation.* In the case of the Welsh fasting girl (*Case* 1) it was noted that at the time the strict watch was instituted, the girl was *plump*. She died on the eighth day of the watch. The counsel for the defence made much of the fact—as proof against the theory of the prosecution that the death of the girl was due to starvation—that a thick layer of fat was found in some parts of the body, and that no thinning or attenuation of the intestines was discovered. But the truth is, that these conditions, as Dr. Fowler has pointed out, are perfectly consistent with death from starvation in the case of a "*plump*" girl, who dies after eight days' entire deprivation of food. (Dr. Fowler, "*Lancet*," July 30, 1870.) The absorption of fat (whether complete or not) will depend on the amount of fat previously existing, and on the interval between the commencement of the

process of starvation and the death. Where *great* emaciation occurs is after *long* deprivation from food (chronic cases), but not necessarily in acute cases. (See Fowler.)

Thirdly. An important question may arise as to the muscular power possible in cases of starvation. On this we note that in most instances, exhaustion is such that physical exertion is rendered impossible. (*Cases* 17, 27, and 36.) In Case 36 the exhaustion was so great on the eighth day, and in Case 27 on the eleventh day of the fast, that the men (adults) were unable to move. On the other hand, in Case 15, one of *chronic* starvation lasting for 17 months, the man was able to walk about within three days of his death, whilst in Case 31, one of *acute* starvation lasting 5½ days, the man is recorded as taking his usual exercise for an hour daily. Similarly, Dr. Tanner is recorded as taking daily exercise during his voluntary fast of 40 days. (*Case* 48.) On this question we would note that the presence or absence of scurvy would materially affect results.

In Case 39 a question bearing on this point is recorded. If the starvation for the 28 days had been complete, it is doubtful whether sufficient strength could have been retained to perform the acts stated; still, even under such circumstances, it is not absolutely impossible. But the possibility is rendered a probability, considering that some food had undoubtedly been taken during the time. Every case must be considered on its merits, and the chief point in such questions is, what was the condition (*i.e.*, plump or thin) of the person on starting.

II.—The Time of Death in Starvation.

The factors to be considered in answering the question, How long does starvation take to kill? are numerous. Of these may be mentioned—

(*a.*) *Condition of Body.*—Thus, other things being equal, fat persons bear privation longest. (*Case* 1.)

"There is a well-known case of a fat pig which was buried in its sty for 160 days, under thirty feet of the chalk of Dover cliff, which was dug out alive at the end of that time, reduced in weight from 160 to 40 pounds, or no less than 75 per cent." ("*Transactions of Linnæan Society*," Vol. XI., p. 411.) This

extraordinary prolongation of life may be attributed to the retention of the *heat* of the body by the non-conducting power of the chalk, also to the retention of its moisture by the saturation of the air in the immediate vicinity, and to the restriction of the animal's movements. (Carpenter's "*Physiology*," Note to p. 94; Horn's "*Description of Dover*," 2nd ed., 1819, p. 24.)

(β.) *Access to Fresh Water.*—All agree that life is prolonged if the sufferers from want of food can obtain water. Of this fact, the illustrations are numberless.

It is stated that in experiments on starvation tried on horses, it was found that they would hold out for 25 days if supplied with water, but that they could barely live 5 days if no water was given them. (Mr. G. Fleming, in "*Veterinary Journal*," September, 1880.)

(γ.) *Age.*—The statement of Hippocrates* that "The old bear want of nourishment *best;* those who have attained the middle period of life the *next in degree;* those who have just arrived at puberty are *less* able to endure it; but that of all ages, childhood is the *least* capable of sustaining hunger, and of children the more lively are the *least* capable," seems borne out both by experience, and by the experiments of Chossat and others. It takes very little to kill an infant by keeping it away from the breast, or if it be a little older by giving it insufficient or improper food.

(δ.) *Warmth* will, to a limited extent, take the place of food.

(ε.) *Hybernation.*—During hybernation, the digestive, respiratory, circulatory, and nervous functions, if not suspended, are more or less in abeyance (page 33). There are (as we have elsewhere said) conditions of human hybernation (catalepsy, hysteria, etc.) occasionally observed, more especially in young girls, that may account somewhat for the remarkable stories of their long fasts. Clearly, however, at night-time and during sleep much less food is required than during the activity and bustle of the day, indicating that the requirements of the body for nourishment under such conditions are lessened.

* Bellott's translation, "Aphorisms," Lib. I., No. 13:—"*Γέροντες εὐφορώτατα νηστείην φέρουσι· δεύτερον, οἱ καθεστηκότες· ἥκιστα μειρακια· πάντων δὲ τουτέων δὲ αὐτέων ἃ ἂν τύχῃ αὐτὰ ἑαυτῶν προθυμότερα ἐόντα.*"

The long period that the insane will at times subsist without food is remarkable.

(ζ.) *The Atmosphere in which the person is placed.*—Thus in the case of imprisoned miners, no doubt life may be prolonged under privation, the vital functions being materially lowered from the air containing an excess of carbonic anhydride. (*Cases* 17 and 23.)

(η.) *Previous and Existing Health.*

(θ.) *Whether the Privation is associated with general Ill-treatment.* (*Case* 46.)

(ι.) *Whether the fast is complete or not, and whether subject to medicinal interference.*—Thus in Case 6 morphia injections seemed to act as food.

Of the recorded cases of death from starvation (without taking into account, however, access to water) the following are the periods of death :—

From the 7th to 10th day inclusive, 4 cases. (*Cases* 1, 16, 32 and 33.)
„ 11th „ 15th „ „ 9 „ (*Cases* 18, 23 and 34.)
„ 18th „ 30th „ „ 4 „ (*Cases* 18, 27 and 40.)
„ 31st „ 40th „ „ 2 „ (*Cases* 8 (²) and 8*.)
„ 41st „ 50th „ „ 3 „ (*Cases* 7*, 15* and 38.)
„ 51st „ 60th „ „ 3 „ (*Cases* 10, 28 and 35.)

Of men incarcerated in mines or other close places, recovery is recorded after 8 days (*Case* 20); after 9 days with water and in a compressed atmosphere (*Case* 24); after 12 days with water (*Case* 23); after 14 days (*Case* 21); and after 23 days (*Case* 17.)

Recovery is also mentioned as occurring after 20 days (*Case* 22); after 28 days (*Case* 39); after 40 days (*Case* 48); and after 90 days (*Case* 14). In each of these cases the person had access to water. A case is also recorded by Dr. Willan, in Dr. Winslow's paper already referred to, of a 61 days' fast with water, where death occurred on the eleventh day after commencing to take food. In *Case* 25, ten out of thirteen men survived after 12 days without either food or water.

In those who have attempted voluntary starvation, it was observed in one case that the person was rapidly sinking at the end of 9 days, but recovered on being compelled to take food (*Case* 2); and that in two other cases, the individuals

were unable to abstain longer from food than 5½ days in one case (*Case* 31), and 11 days in a second (*Case* 36).

We need only note that there are many cases on record of fasts occupying months and even years, all of which, however, must be accepted for what they are worth. (*Cases* 3, 6, 7, 8 (1), 9, 11, and 29.) The extraordinary fasts of the Faqueers in the Punjaub appear to be an exhibition of conjuring. ("*Medical Times and Gazette*," 1870, I.)

III.—The Treatment of Starvation.

This briefly is as follows:—When food has to be administered after long privation, it should at first be given in small quantities, and in a form easily assimilable, such as beef tea, good soup or broth, eggs, milk, wine and water or weak spirits, gradually going on to fish, meat, bread, and vegetables. If treatment is not effected cautiously, there is considerable risk of injury. The popular but fallacious idea is, that in such cases you can scarcely give too much!

IV.—The Post-mortem Appearances indicative of Starvation.

Our knowledge of these is mostly derived from chronic cases.

Rigor mortis has been recorded as well marked. (*Case* 13.)

Condition.—In Case 1 (acute starvation) the body was plump. (See page 582.) In chronic cases the body is invariably shrunken and greatly emaciated, and there is an almost entire absence of fat. (*Cases* 6, 12, 13, 41, 42, and 45.) Sometimes one part becomes much more emaciated than another, as though the drain of the system centred itself on that part. (*Case* 7*.)

The Skin.—This is sometimes shrivelled, and emits a disagreeable odour (page 575); at other times it is covered with a coating of brown material. (Page 576.) As a rule, it is difficult to separate the skin from the subjacent muscles.

The Muscles are commonly soft, pale, and wasted. (*Cases* 13 and 35.)

The Brain has been variously recorded as healthy and firm (*Case* 1), as pale and soft (*Cases* 35 and 45), and as congested. (*Case* 12.) Effusion on the surface was noted in Case 13.

Many years ago some of the prisoners at Millbank were put on a very spare diet, from which animal food was excluded. (Page 591.) At the post mortem of those who died, "increased vascularity of the brain and its membranes, combined frequently with effusion of fluid into the ventricles and between the membranes" was found. Great injection of the membranes of the brain has also been recorded in cases of starvation. (*Cases* 1 and 12.)

The Lungs have been commonly recorded as healthy, although contracted. (*Cases* 1, 12, and 35.) Sometimes they have been said to be somewhat pale and bloodless. (*Case* 45.)

The Heart is not generally quite empty. Sir Thos. Watson says: "After death by starvation, the heart is not found to be so much contracted, nor so nearly empty, as after death by sudden and copious hæmorrhage." ("*Principles and Practice of Physic*," p. 65.) It is, however, usually more or less contracted (*Cases* 12 and 41), and sometimes soft and bloodless. (*Cases* 30 and 45.)

The Thymus Gland in children (and in animals generally) that have been badly fed is usually of large size, and during life very persistent.

The Œsophagus.— This is usually small and contracted. (*Cases* 6 and 38.)

The Stomach.—This has been recorded as natural (*Case* 35), as small and contracted (*Case* 6) (a condition in which we have ourselves usually observed it), as corrugated (*Case* 12), as loose and flabby (*Case* 28). As regards its contents, it has frequently been found to contain a little dark gelatinous fluid. (*Cases* 1 and 6.)

The Small Intestines.—These are generally contracted both in their length and calibre, and are commonly thin and transparent. (*Cases* 12, 28, 30, 42, and 45.) This was seen in a very marked degree in those that died during the Irish famine. They are sometimes very friable. (*Cases* 13 and 35.) An injected condition has also been recorded. (*Case* 35.) Sometimes they

are empty (*Cases* 1, 30, and 41), but at other times they contain a little dirty mucus. (*Case* 6.) Sometimes they appear to be distended with gas.

It must be remembered, however, that a thinning of the intestines occurs in all long-continued wasting diseases. On the contrary, in acute starvation the intestines may appear normal. (*Case* 1.)

The Large Intestines are usually transparent, and sometimes normal. (*Case* 35.) They frequently contain hard fæcal matter. (*Cases* 1 and 35.) Sometimes they have been found distended with flatus. (*Case* 30.) The rectum has been found congested (*Case* 41), and to contain hard lumps of fæces, which in one case were said to have been coated with a white-looking mucus. (*Case* 6.)

The Omentum is usually transparent. (*Cases* 41 and 46.)

The Liver.—This is usually healthy (*Cases* 1, 12, and 13), but contracted. (*Case* 41.) In one case (*Case* 45) it was recorded as congested.

The Gall Bladder is usually full (*Cases* 1, 6, 12, 13, 28, 35, and 41), and there is often cadaveric exudation of bile. (*Cases* 13 and 30.) In Case 45 the gall bladder was recorded as empty.

The Kidneys.—These have been recorded as healthy. (*Cases* 1, 12, 13 and 45.) In Case 6 they were said to have been congested, and in other cases pale.

The Spleen has been recorded as healthy. (*Case* 1.)

The Pancreas.—This is invariably atrophied, and in some cases to such an extent as almost to be wanting. (*Case* 49.)

The Bladder is invariably empty (*Case* 1), and sometimes much atrophied. (*Case* 6.)

The Uterus.—Softness and relaxation of the tissues of the uterus often result from chronic starvation and defective nutrition. Hence follow flexions. (See Graily Hewett, "*Lancet*," 1879, I., p. 38.) (*Case* 6.)

A contracted state of the stomach and bladder, a shrunken and transparent condition of the intestines and omentum, with a more or less atrophied, but otherwise healthy condition of the viscera (*Case* 49), appear to be the prominent post-mortem symptoms remarked after death from starvation.

V.—Diseases arising from a Deficient Diet or an Improper Quality of Food.

We note first of all, that food of bad quality may produce actual symptoms of acute poisoning.

Some forms of *vetch* (*Lathyrus sativus* and *L. cicera*), used as food, appear at times, when taken in large quantity, to cause paraplegia. Bad results (ergotism) also result from the use of grain affected with ergot.

Pellagra, a red eruption attended with great debility, nervous exhaustion, and pigmentation of the skin, is believed to be caused by the sporules of a fungus [*sporisorium maidis*] attacking maize, the chief food of the peasants in Lombardy. Other affections have been ascribed to the use of food of bad quality or all of one kind, and that kind not sufficiently nutritious. For example, the exclusive use of rice and of potatoes as articles of diet are known to favour, if not to produce ulceration of the cornea, so common amongst the Hindoos. Shellfish appear to induce urticaria in some persons, even when the fish are of good quality.

Gout is known to be greatly favoured by the use of malt liquors and imperfectly fermented wines, and by indulgence in a highly nitrogenised diet without sufficient muscular exercise. Rheumatism is ascribed by some to the mal-assimilation of the farinaceous and starchy foods. Dr. Carpenter ascribes the scrofulous diathesis to the absence of oleaginous articles of food.

The power of sustaining enormous blood-lettings with little inconvenience, apparently possessed by some of our ancestors, has been ascribed to their liberal use of flesh-meat. If this were the cause (and there is little reason to doubt it), we can understand how useful, even medicinally, were the frequent fasts prescribed by the Church.

We may now consider what are the diseases commonly resulting from the combined effects of deficiency and of an improper quality of food:—

(*a.*) *Sea scurvy* (*purpura nautica vel hæmorrhagica*). Although

fatigue and other causes may predispose to this disease, it is certain that the absence of fresh vegetables, of fresh fruits, and of fresh meat from the diet is the principal cause. Of the foods mentioned, the most important is unquestionably fresh vegetables. As early as 1757, Dr. Lind showed the efficacy of oranges and lemons in preventing scurvy. Forty years however elapsed before the Government made the use of lime-juice compulsory, as it now is under the Merchant Shipping Act, in the navy.* It is not yet known how lime-juice acts in preventing the disease. Potatoes and other fresh vegetables, especially the cruciferæ, and most fruits appear to have almost a similar power. Fresh meat alone is not nearly so efficacious.

(β.) The famine stricken are often carried off by *Land purpura* associated either with general cachexia and feeble vital resistance, or with *diarrhœa and dysentery*, the motions containing undigested food. Dr. Cunningham points out that in famine, relief to be of use must be early, the tissues not being ready, as Bauer supposed, to resume their functions so soon as food is provided, but assume a degree of inanition in which the power of assimilation is abolished. ("*London Med. Record*," 1879, p. 171.)

(γ.) It is said that in Ireland *ophthalmia* is a frequent result of starvation. ("*British Med. Journal*," December 25th, 1880, p. 1044.) It is important to note that cases of starvation are often associated with overcrowding, and that such a complication must materially affect the result.

It would appear that although famine may not necessarily originate any specific pestilence, it greatly aggravates any epidemic that may exist within the famine area.

(δ.) *Rickets*, and stunting of the bones, appear to be due, if we may judge from the remedies which prove beneficial, to a

* *Lime*-juice is the juice of the *Citrus limetta*, while *lemon*-juice is derived from the *Citrus limonum*, or lemon-tree. Although the linden (sometimes called "lime-tree") has antiscorbutic properties, it is quite a different plant from the one named above, which is known as the lime-tree in the West Indies. The author cannot express too strongly the necessity of a careful examination of the samples used, to determine whether they be the true juice or manufactured articles.

deficiency of lime-salts, phosphates, fatty constituents, and iron in the diet. ("*Lancet*," 1874, I., p. 560.)

(ε.) *Relapsing fever* and *typhus* are greatly favoured by an insufficient diet. The former of these has gained the name of *famine fever*.

(ζ.) *Dysentery* and *diarrhœa* (English cholera), are also liable to be prevalent where the diet is deficient.

(η.) In cases where patients have been starved and otherwise badly treated, such as recklessly exposed to cold, *chilblains* are often very severe. (*Case* 47.)

(ι.) It has been suggested that starvation may produce *insanity*. (*Vide* "*Lancet*," 1874, I., p. 714.)

As an illustration of the evils arising from a deficient diet, the following case is instructive:—In 1823 the prisoners in Millbank Penitentiary had their allowance of food suddenly reduced from about thirty-two ounces of dry nutriment daily to twenty-one ounces, animal food being entirely discontinued. Although the prison was cold, and situated at a low level and in a marshy district, it had been previously considered healthy. But soon after this change of diet, the health of most of the inmates gave way. They lost colour, flesh and strength; diarrhœa, dysentery, and scurvy set in, and lastly, adynamic fevers, headache, vertigo, convulsions, maniacal delirium, and sometimes apoplexy. The smallest loss of blood produced fainting, which was often fatal. Out of 860 prisoners, 437, or 52 per cent. were thus affected. It was found that those employed in the kitchen, who had 8 ounces of bread extra per diem, were almost exempt (only three being attacked), and further that the addition of 8 ounces to the daily amount of vegetable food, and half an ounce to the animal, greatly facilitated restoration to health. (See Dr. Latham on "*Diseases in Millbank Penitentiary*," 1824; Carpenter's "*Physiology*," pp. 96-7.) (Page 587.)

During the American Civil War, Dr. Jones made similar observations on 30,000 Federal prisoners confined in Camp Sumpter. Here the diet was only one of the causes of sickness, but it was, undoubtedly, a powerful one. Diarrhœa, dysentery, scurvy, and hospital gangrene prevailed. (See Austin

Flint's "*Physiology of Man*," Vol. II., p. 39, 1867, and the "*Ann. d'Hygiène*," Jan., 1849, for similar observations at the Maison Centrale of Nîmes, by M. Boileau-Castelnau.) Another experiment on a gigantic scale was unavoidably made during the siege of Paris in 1870. (*Case* 19.)

The general effects of the deficiency of food are well sketched by Dr. Letheby. "A deficiency of food, especially of the nitrogenous part, quickly leads to the breaking-up of the animal frame. *Plague*, *pestilence*, and *famine* are associated with each other in the public mind, and the records of every country show how closely they are related. The medical history of Ireland is remarkable for the illustrations of how much mischief may be occasioned by a general deficiency of food. Always the habitat of fever, it every now and then becomes the very hot-bed of its propagation and development. Let there be but a small failure in the usual imperfect supply of food, and the lurking seeds of pestilence are ready to burst into frightful activity. The famine of the present century is but a too forcible illustration of this. It fostered epidemics which had not been witnessed in this generation, and gave rise to scenes of devastation and misery which are not surpassed by the most appalling epidemics of the middle ages. The principal form of this scourge was known as the contagious famine fever (typhus), and it spread, not merely from end to end of the country in which it had originated, but breaking through old boundaries, it crossed the broad ocean, and made itself painfully manifest in localities where it was previously unknown. Thousands fell under the virulence of its action, for wherever it came, it struck down a seventh of the people, and of those whom it attacked one out of nine perished. Even those who escaped the fatal influence of it, were left the miserable victims of scurvy and low fevers. Another example, not less striking, of the terrible consequences of what may be truly called famine, was the condition of our troops during the early part of their sojourn in the Crimea in 1854. With only just enough of food to maintain the integrity of the system at a time of repose and of ordinary temperature, they were called upon to make large muscular exertions, and to sustain the warmth of the system in the midst of severe cold."

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.

1. R. v. Jacob and Wife.—(*Carmarthen Summer Assizes*, 1870.)—(Case of Sarah Jacob, known as the Welsh Fasting Girl.—See "History," by Dr. Robert Fowler.)—S. J. was born May 12th, 1857. Had a dyspeptic attack in February, 1867, and about a year after, a mild attack of scarlet fever. During this six weeks' illness, she had some convulsions of a tetanic character (opisthotonos), "with rigidity of the left leg," and "for nearly a month, of all the muscles." During the same year there appears to have been repeated abstinence from food for longer or shorter intervals. But from October of this year till her death on December 17th, 1869 (a period of two years, two months, and one week), it was affirmed that she ceased to take any food! All this time, however, except the last week, she continued plump, and even gained flesh. During the last week an efficient watch was kept, the supervision commencing at 3 p. m. on December 9th, 1869. She died on the 17th at a few minutes past 3 p. m. She was therefore entirely without food for seven days. The father and mother were tried and convicted of causing the death of their child by criminal negligence. The father was condemned to twelve months' imprisonment, and the mother to six months. The medical men who accepted the responsibility of superintending the watching, were summoned to appear before the magistrates on the charge of "killing and slaying Sarah Jacob," but were acquitted, partly because neither the nurses nor the committee appear to have asked their advice, but chiefly, no doubt, because of the humanity of one of their number.

Post-mortem appearances.—The body plump and well-formed, with signs of incipient puberty. Beneath the skin of the chest and abdomen, was a layer of fat about three-fourths of an inch in thickness. The brain was healthy and firm, but the membranes were much injected. Thorax healthy. The stomach contained about three tea-spoonfuls of dark gelatinous fluid, having a slightly acid reaction to litmus paper. The small intestines were empty, but the colon and rectum contained about half-a-pound of hard fæces. It was thought that the fæces might have been there for a fortnight or even longer. Liver healthy. Gall-bladder considerably distended with bile. Kidneys and spleen healthy, and the bladder empty. On looking at the girl's shoulders and armpits, the right shoulder was found to be much more prominent than the other, the left armpit being sufficiently hollow to contain a half-pint bottle. [Dr. Fowler, when he first saw her, was of opinion that the girl was a night-feeder, and that the parents were themselves

deceived at first. Discovering that the thing could be made profitable, they were afterwards tempted to carry on the imposture.] (Pages 560, 562, 575, 577, 578, 582, 583, 585, 586, 587, 588.)

2. "Wilson's Wonderful Characters," and "History of Tutbury," pp. 321-2.—(Case of Ann Moore, of Tutbury.)—About sixty years ago, at Tutbury (or Tetbury), in Staffordshire, certain respectable inhabitants of the place volunteered to discover whether or not Ann Moore, a woman about middle age, subsisted, as was declared, without the ordinary nutriment of her kind. The watch was continued for about three weeks, when it was publicly proclaimed that the Tutbury woman "lived entirely without food.' Her emaciation was said to be so extreme that the spinal column could easily be felt through the abdominal walls. Her distaste to aliment, it was alleged, resulted from a nausea and disrelish produced by washing the linen of a person afflicted with ulcers. In consequence of the *éclat* derived from the unsuccess of the watchers, numerous visitors, some from long distances, visited Ann Moore during the next two (or, according to others, six) years, leaving, of course, their donations to the extent of about £250. [Beck says, on the authority of Dr. Henderson, that she had invested a sum of £400.] In April or May, 1813, the woman consented to another watching process being instituted, provided the Watch Committee was composed of magistrates, clergymen, and medical men. Amongst these were Sir Oswald Mosley, Legh Richmond, Dr. Fox and his son Francis of Derby, and many other gentlemen of the neighbourhood. Two were always in her room day and night. At the suggestion of Mr. Francis Fox, the bedstead, bedding, and the woman in it were placed on a weighing-machine, which resulted in showing that she regularly lost weight daily. At the expiration of the ninth day of this strict watch, Dr. Fox found her evidently sinking, and told her she would soon die if she did not take food. After a little prevarication the woman signed a written confession, allowing she was an impostor, and had "occasionally taken sustenance for the last six years." She also stated that at the first unsuccessful watch of three weeks her daughter had contrived, when washing her face, to feed her every morning by using towels made very wet with gravy, milk, or a strong solution of arrowroot; and had also with every kiss managed to convey certain portions of sugar from mouth to mouth." (Pages 560, 562, 576, 578, 579, 585.)

3. British Med. Journal, May 28th, 1870.—(*Dr. Henry Barber.*)—Two cases of long-continued abstinence from food, combined with hysteria and lethargy. One of these continued for eleven months, and the second for twenty-six weeks!! They were probably night feeders at first. One case died. (Pages 560, 586.)

4. British Med. Journal, July 16, 1870, p. 57; Fowler, p. 296.—*Dr. Ogle.*)—Cases of hysteria with pretended fasting. (Page 560.)

5. Fowler, p. 284.—Account of the Shottisham Angel, Elizabeth Squinel, the imposture being detected by a proposal to fire the house. She afterwards married. (Pages 560, 562.)

6. British Med. Journ., Feb. 2 and 9, 1878.—(*Mr. Grant.*)—The Market Harborough Fasting Girl. Female, 17. Menstruated at 15½. In 1872 her digestion was disturbed, and she asserted that she was unable to swallow. From this attack she afterwards recovered and returned to work. In 1873 the inability to swallow returned. She daily sucked, however, about 1 lb. of butter candy, and nutritive enemata, with hypodermic injections of morphia, were administered. In April, 1874, convulsions set in. At the end of the year she became insensible and lost her sight, which she recovered 1½ years afterwards. The convulsions continued until her death (Dec. 14, 1877).

It seems that no food of any kind was taken, and for twelve months no urine or fæces passed. Hence it would appear from the report, that for a period of 3½ years this girl lived on morphia injections only (!).

Post-mortem.—Body much emaciated. Stomach and œsophagus small and contracted; bowels natural. Both the stomach and intestines contained a little dirty mucus. There were a few hard lumps of fæces, overlaid with whitish mucus, in the rectum. Gall bladder full. No organic disease was found in the viscera. The bladder was so atrophied as to be scarcely distinguishable. The uterus was small, and the ovaries rudimentary. Kidneys congested. Brain and cord not examined. (Pages 560, 562, 576, 577, 585, 586, 587, 588.)

7. Macmillan's Mag., April, 1871; British Med. Journ., May 6, 1871 and 1873, II., p. 353.—Case of Louise Lateau (a case of ecstasy). She was said to have taken no nourishment for *20* months. (Pages 560, 585.)

7*. Lancet, July 31, 1880.—Female, æt. 60. Stout, and in a good position of life. Melancholia. For seven weeks she took nothing but water. Died on the fiftieth day. At death her limbs were found to be very thin, but the body fairly stout. (Page 586.)

8. Medico-Chir. Review, 1833 (from "Hufeland's Journal").—(*Dr. Schmaez.*)—(See "Med. Press and Circular," Nov. 7, 1877, p. 380.)—(1.) Female, æt. 31. For four years she took nothing solid, but merely water and whey. After this she refused even to take liquids. From March 18, 1822, to 1826 she had one motion, and passed urine three times only. A Medical Commission in Holland were appointed to investigate the case, but they could detect no fraud.

(2.) (Case of Anna Garbero.) On one occasion she is said to have passed 40 days without taking any solid or fluid, from inability to swallow. From September 25th to January 7th following, she neither ate nor drank, nor had any relief by bladder or rectum. The catamenia, though regular, were sparing. Death occurred from exhaustion. (Pages 562, 586, 577.)

8*. British Med. Journ., Aug. 7, 1880, p. 214.—(*Dr. Collins.*)—Female, æt. 80.—A thirty-three days' fast, during which an average of 2 ozs. of water was taken daily. Death. Delirium occurred for a few days about the end of the first week. She slept seven or eight hours out of the twenty-four. Urine scanty. No motions after the third week. (Pages 576, 577.)

8. British Med. Journ., Aug. 2, 1880.**—(*Dr. J. C. Noyes.*)—Male, æt. 34. A forty-five days' fast. No water was taken during the last nineteen days. At the end of the forty-fifth day, the man was found to be demented, and the lower extremities paralysed. (Page 576.)

9. Lancet, May 7, 1881, p. 755.—Report by Dr. Dougal on the Fasting Girl at Chapelton, æt. 14. Not menstruated. No solid food was said to have been taken between January 8th, 1881, and the *date of report, May*, 1881. Takes water freely, and occasionally sweets. Very emaciated. Urine scanty and pale, but no albumen. No action of the bowels for eleven weeks. (Pages 562, 576, 577, 578, 586.)

10. Medical and Surgical Reporter, (Philadelphia), April 1, 1876.—(*Dr. J. N. Norris.*)—Female, æt. 11. Suffering from diabetes, with hysteria. No food taken for 59 days and nights. Bowels acted once a week. Death. Mind clear to the last. During the fast, the amount of urine passed became less than normal. (Pages 561, 576, 577, 585.)

11. Med. Press and Circular, Jan. 12, 1881, p. 36.—Female adult. Said to have eaten practically no food for 2 years. The aggregate weight of solid food eaten during 1880 is said not to have amounted to more than 1lb. Mind clear. (Pages 576, 586.)

12. Lancet, Nov. 3, 1877.—(*Mr. Whitcombe.*)—Female, æt. 55. Acute melancholia. Starvation and death from non-assimilation of food.

Post-mortem.—Great emaciation. Membranes of the brain and brain itself congested. Lungs, liver, and kidneys small and healthy, and gall-bladder full. Heart small and contracted. Stomach corrugated, and intestines shrunk. (Pages 561, 562, 586, 587, 588.)

12*. Progrès Méd., Sept. 4, 1880.—(*Dr. Bourneville.*)—A case of a boy, æt. 12, an idiot, who from the age of 2½ had from time to time fasted for periods varying from three to thirty-eight days. (Page 562.)

13. British Med. Journ., Oct. 20, 1877, p. 559.—(*Dr. Elliott.*)—Female, married, æt. 57. Lived in a state of great destitution for 5 or 6 months. Extreme emaciation. Bowels costive. Very ravenous when food was given her. Death.

Post-mortem (28 hours after death.)—Rigor mortis well marked. Absence of all fat. The muscular tissue was pale and wasted. Omentum transparent. Intestines friable. Duodenum stained with bile. Liver and kidneys

healthy, and the bile abundant. Effusion on the surface of the brain. (Pages 576, 577, 578, 586, 587, 588.)

14. British Med. Journ., 1880, I., p. 574.—(*Mr. Henson.*)—Female, æt. 71. Paralysis, Jan. 20th, 1880. Took no food, but occasionally a little cold water, from the attack to the date of the report (April 17th). (Pages 561, 585.)

15. Canada Lancet, Nov. 1880.—(*Mr. Kerr.*)—A case of enforced fasting from an œsophageal stricture produced by swallowing a weak lye. The patient's weight in ten months decreased from 120 lbs. to 60 lbs. During the last seven months of life enemata of milk and egg were all that could be given, and at death he weighed only 40 lbs. The intellect was clear to the end, and he walked about within three days of death. Prostration, with dyspnœa and syncope, caused the fatal ending. (Pages 561, 576, 578, 580, 583.)

15*. Lancet, July 31, 1880.—(*Dr. G. Stanley Murray.*)—Male adult. Unable to take food from cancer of stomach. No nourishment taken (except having his lips moistened with cold water) for forty-one days before death. Great emaciation. Continued sensible to within twenty-four hours of death. (Pages 561, 576, 578, 585.)

(*Dr. Collins*, of Scarborough, reports the death of a female, æt. 80, at the end of a thirty-three days' fast.)

16. Annual Register, 1852, p. 473. Fowler, p. 298. (Case of the Patagonian Missionaries in 1851.) Captain Gardiner left a diary describing his own feelings and the sufferings of those who were with him. After nearly sixteen weeks of insufficient food, the captain, who was apparently the sole survivor, was six or seven days without any food at all, and appears to have died on the day of the last entry.

Another instance of a whole party having insufficient nourishment occurred in *Franklin's Overland Arctic Expedition* in 1820-21, down the Coppermaine River.—("A Narrative of Arctic Discovery from the Earliest Period to the Present Time." By John J. Shillinglaw (Shoberl), 1850, quoted by Dr. Fowler, p. 299.) From September 1st to November 6th the party had to live on the *tripe de roche* (a kind of lichen or moss), shreds of their shoes, old deer-skins, etc. Eventually they are said to have had emaciated figures, ghastly countenances, dilated eyeballs, and sepulchral voices. "After suffering acute pains of hunger all day, at night they were sated, in dreams, with every luxury. Their tempers grew so fretful that the kindest expressions were received pettishly, and Captain Franklin himself admits that he became excessively peevish. Each thought the other weaker in intellect than himself, and more in need of advice and assistance." (Pages 575, 585.)

17. Medical Gazette, Vol. XVII., Nov. 21, 1835, pp. 864 and 889.—(*Dr. Sloan*, of Ayr.)—Man, æt. 65, of spare habit, but vigorous for his age,

was brought alive out of a coal-mine in which he had been incarcerated for twenty-three days. During the first few days he had had access to water "strongly impregnated with iron." After this he became so weak as to be unable to move, and unfortunately lay down at some distance from the water. (Pages 576, 583, 585.)

18. "Times," February 6th and 7th, 1866.—(Case of the Captain and crew of the "Jane Lowden.")—"A very detailed and evidently faithful account" (says Dr. Guy) "of the picking-up at sea of Captain Casey, commander of the 'Jane Lowden,' timber-vessel, shows that out of eighteen men, including the captain himself, wholly without provisions and fresh water, one survived 11 days, one 12 days, one 14 days, two 15 days, one 18 days, and the captain himself 28 days. Two men appear to have died early, furiously delirious, one (a lad, æt. 19), who died on the twelfth day, was quite delirious, with spectral illusions; two others were delirious, and Captain Casey had illusions of hearing." When picked up the captain "was pale and thin;" he sustained life "by drinking as much rain as he could collect by tying his cravat around the mast, and when it became drenched, sucking it." (Pages 575, 576, 585.)

19. Lancet, Feb. 11, 1871, p. 214.—Cases of starvation during the Siege of Paris, in 1870. (Page 592.)

20. Med. Gazette, Vol. XVII., Nov. 28, 1835, p. 390.—(*Dr. Charles Thornhill.*)—Records of eight men and a boy shut up for eight days in a coal-mine. (Page 585.)

21. Carpenter, p. 98.—A number of workmen, dug out alive, after fourteen days' confinement in a cold damp vault under a ruin in which they had been buried. (Page 585.)

22. British Med. Journ., May 18, 1878, p. 739.—(*Dr. Conan.*)—Male, æt. 28. Starvation at sea for twenty days. His companion drowned himself on the ninth day. (Page 585.)

23. British Med. Journ., Jan. 29, 1870, p. 121.—(*Dr. Griffith.*)—A man incarcerated (by accident) in a coal-pit for twelve days, without food, but able to obtain water. The pit atmosphere was largely contaminated with carbonic acid. He slept much of his time, had one action of the bowels, and passed small quantities of water. When extricated he complained most of thirst. He was much emaciated, and had a feeble pulse of 112. He recovered after some weeks. On the fourth day after he was restored, he weighed 28 lbs. less than his ordinary weight. (Pages 576, 577, 585.)

24. Lancet, April 21, 1877, pp. 588, 620.—The case of the imprisoned miners at Tynewydd, who lived nine days in a chamber of *compressed* air, without food of any kind, but with plenty of water.

The lad (who was over 15) bore his confinement as well as the men. (Page 585.)

25. Guy's Forensic Medicine, p. 329.—(Case of shipwreck on the Calcutta coast.)—Ten out of thirteen men escaped and ultimately recovered, after being twelve days without either food or water. [No mention made of rain-water.] (Page 585.)

26. Dublin Medical Press, Feb. 2, 1848; Taylor, p. 141.—(*Dr. Donovan.*)—Irish Famine Cases. (Page 577.)

27. Aitken's Science and Pract. of Med., p. 744.—In February, 1862, a man, 36 years of age, was discovered in a stack, near Morpeth, dying from starvation. All attempts to rally him failed. A diary was found in his possession, containing entries of his condition from the 8th to the 25th of February, from which it appeared that for seventeen days he had twice tasted a piece of bread, but that for the thirteen days preceding death, he had been entirely without food. During the first ten days of the thirteen he was able to obtain water. On the eleventh day he found he had lost all motor power in the lower extremities. (Pages 576, 583, 585.)

28. Transactions of the Albany Institute, Vol. I., p. 113.—(*Dr. McNaughton.*)—The case of Kelsey, who lived for fifty-three days on water alone.

Post-mortem.—The stomach loose and flabby; mesentery and intestines extremely thin and transparent. The gall-bladder full. (Pages 585, 587, 588.)

29. Lancet, April 24, 1869, p. 563.—(*Dr. Williams*, of Sudbury.) Two cases of starvation. (Page 586.)

30. Lancet, August 31, 1872, p. 311.—At the post-mortem on the convict Flynn, who committed suicide by starvation, the stomach and intestines were found to be empty, the small intestines being contracted and stained with bile, and the large distended with flatus. The heart was empty thin, and soft. (Pages 563, 587, 588.)

31. British Med. Journal, Jan. 1, 1870.—(*Dr. Nicholson.*)—A male prisoner, æt. 23, refused to take his food for five and a half days. He, however, took some water on the first and second days, and on the succeeding three and a half days a small part of his diet. His bowels did not act until the eleventh day. He regularly took exercise for one hour daily. Pulse soft and slow. No feverishness. On the fifth day he winced when the stomach was pressed. Urine very acid with aromatic odour, but no albumen. On the fourth day a large deposit of urates was found.

He lost 5 lbs. during the first three days, whilst on the sixth day he had lost a total of 7 lbs. (=1·17 lbs. per day). On the tenth day he took his

full diet, and regained his original weight on the thirteenth day. His bowels were open on the twelfth day for the first time.

During the third, fourth, and fifth days of the fast, the urea excreted was equal to 294·6 grains per day, or 21 grains per ounce, or 2·9 grains per pound of body weight. On the fourth day, the urea excreted was almost equal to that excreted on the third and fifth days together. On the fourth day too, the urates excreted were equivalent to 34 grains. (Pages 563, 576, 577 578, 581, 583, 586.)

32. British Med. Journ., April 16, 1870, p. 384.—(*Mr. Lingen.*)—Male, æt. 58. Voluntary starvation for ten days. Died on the tenth day. Suffered from thirst. (Pages 563, 576, 585.)

33. British Med. Journ., June 16, 1877, p. 765.—(*Mr. Lingen.*)—Male, æt. 60.—Absolute refusal to take food or water. Death on the tenth day. (Page 585.)

34. Lancet, Nov. 2, 1878.—(*Dr. MacLoughlin.*)—Male, æt. 20. Survival, after eleven days' fasting, without water. He drank his urine, however, each time he voided it. He only felt hungry on the second day, but suffered intense thirst for four days, after which he became insensible. (Pages 576, 585.)

35. Van Swieten's "Commentaries upon Boerhaave's Aphorisms," p. 329; American Cyclopædia of Practical Medicine, art. "Abstinence," by Dr. Hays. Foderé, Vol. II., p. 276.—Guillaume Granet, a prisoner at Toulouse, resorted to starvation to avoid punishment. For the first seven days, the symptoms were not remarkable. His face was flushed, his breath foul, and the pulse small and feeble. After this he was compelled to drink water occasionally to relieve excessive thirst, but in spite of the close watch kept over him he frequently drank his urine, or the water of the prison kennel. His strength did not fail him during the greater part of the time, and with varying symptoms of constitutional disturbance and acute suffering, he lingered until the fifty-eighth day, when he expired, after being four hours in convulsions.

Post-mortem.—Brain paler than usual. Lungs natural. Œsophagus contracted. The stomach, which contained a little fluid, natural. The lower portion of the small intestines were red, softened, and highly injected, and the large intestines were natural, and contained fæcal matter. The gall-bladder was much distended with black thick bile. The muscles were much attenuated. (Pages 563, 575, 576, 577, 585, 586, 587, 588.)

36. Casper ("Handbuch der Gericht Med.," 1857, 1, 374; "New Syd. Society's Translation," Vol. II., pp. 28-29.)—A healthy male prisoner, æt. 36, after being in prison for a year, "vowed to God to eat nothing more in prison, come what may." On the fifth day his temperature was still normal, but his features were a little collapsed. He had at this

time singing in his ears, but no delirium. His bowels had not acted, and he passed but little urine. On the seventh day there was an ill smell perceived from the mouth. On the eighth day he had to be carried to the night-stool. Pulse 96. His voice was hollow. On the ninth day the smell from his mouth was more distinct. On the tenth day his pulse was 76, and very feeble. He complained of double vision and spasms in the stomach, relieved by strong pressure. "Yesterday afternoon (the ninth day) and this morning early (the tenth day) he had, from absolute necessity, now and then taken a little sugar and water. Everything to-day smells of milk! and in the night, between this day and the next, hunger suddenly seized and overpowered him, and he ate a little of yesterday's allowance of bread, which still lay near his bed." This man then took to his proper food, and ultimately recovered. (Pages 563, 575, 576, 577, 578, 583, 588.)

37. (Case communicated by Dr. J. L. Lavies.)—A young female adult a prisoner in the Westminster House of Correction, out of pique or dislike to prison fare, vowed to take no food at all. She kept her resolution for nine days, when her pulse began to flag. As Dr. Lavies was anticipating danger, her resolution gave way, and she asked for food. No bad symptoms followed. (Page 563)

38. Van Swieten's Commentaries.—"I knew a woman who obstinately refused all kinds of nourishment for six weeks, drinking nothing but a little water at intervals, so that at length she perished quite juiceless and dried up." (Pages 585, 587.)

39. Medical Gazette, Vol. XIX.—(*Dr. Cummins.*)—(Case of Elizabeth Canning.)—In this case the question was, could a girl of 18 live for twenty-eight days in the depth of winter, without fire, with about a gallon of water, and no food, except some pieces of bread (amounting altogether to about a quartern loaf), and a small mince-pie, and at the expiration of the time retain sufficient strength to break down a window-shutter fastened with nails, get out of the window on to a sort of pent-house, thence jump to the ground nine or ten feet below, and finish by walking from Enfield Wash to Aldermanbury? (Pages 576, 583, 585.)

40. Guy, For. Med., p. 328.—Viterbi's case of voluntary starvation, in which life was prolonged for twenty-one days. (Pages 563, 585.)

41. R. v. Staunton and others.—(*C. C. C.*, 1877.)—The prisoner was tried for the murder of his wife (Harriet) by slow starvation. The body (63 inches long) was in a very emaciated condition. Weight after death, 74 lbs. The heart was small and contracted. A small patch of tubercular deposit found at the apex of the left lung. Liver small (weight 2 lbs. 2¾ oz.), but healthy. Gall-bladder full. Other viscera healthy. The stomach contained undigested food, the inner lining and the duodenum being very congested. The intestines were empty, and contained no food or fæces. There was

an absence of fat in the omentum, and in all other parts and organs. The rectum was much congested.

On removing the skull-cap, adhesions were found between it and the dura mater and arachnoid, and between the arachnoid and pia mater. There was no appearance of lymph or of effusion into the ventricles or cavities of the brain. There were some small patches of rough millet-seed-like deposit in the pia mater, probably tubercular. There was well-marked congestion of all the external blood-vessels of the brain and of its membranes and sinuses. The brain itself was firm, healthy, and well preserved, with marked distinction of white and grey matter, but on the surface bodies were found described as tubercles. (Post-mortem six days after death !)

[Confer "Medical Times and Gazette," 1877, II., p. 391; "British Med. Journal," Oct. 6, 1877, p. 495.] (Pages 579, 582, 586, 587, 588.)

42. R. v. Mills.—(*Leicester*, 1877.)—Charge of manslaughter against a mother for neglecting and starving (that is, not suckling) her child (æt. 7 months, and illegitimate). She went out all day to work, and left the father sixpence to take care of and feed the child. He spent the money in drink. At the post-mortem the child was found to weigh 6 lbs., and was very emaciated. The intestines were small and transparent. The other organs were healthy.

(The father was not charged with manslaughter, but the mother only ! !) ("Lancet," Nov. 24, 1877, p. 777.) (Pages 560, 582, 586, 587.)

43. British Med. Journ., May 19, 1877.—Case of Calo. The parents were convicted at the Old Bailey of starving the child.

The prosecution showed that four days after admission to the workhouse the child gained 3 lbs., and at the end of the month weighed 39 lbs. against 29 lbs. when admitted. (Pages 560, 576, 580.)

44. Brit. Med. Journ., March 17, 1877, pp. 340, 372.—Reference to a case of manslaughter at Sunderland, for starving a child. (Page 560.)

45. Lancet, March 27, 1880, p. 510.—(*Dr. Snowball*, of Melbourne.)—Post-mortem on a child five weeks' old that died of starvation from improper feeding. All fat absorbed. Brain pale and fluid. Lungs pale but healthy. Heart soft and bloodless. Liver congested. Gall bladder empty. Stomach and intestines pale and attenuated. Kidneys pale but healthy. (Pages 560, 586, 587, 588.)

46. Guy, For. Med., p. 330; "Morning Chronicle," Feb. 26, 1853; Fowler, p. 256.—(*Mr. Bigg.*)—Case of Mark Cornish.—Insufficient food for about three months, with ill-treatment. Death.

Post-mortem.—Appearances as usual. Body a mere skeleton. Omentum as clear as glass. No chyle. (Pages 560, 588.)

47. R. v. Scott.—(*C. C. C., August* 7, 1880.)—(*See* "Lancet," August 14, 1880.)—Prisoner charged with starving her servant, æt. 13½. The girl weighed 35 lbs. She suffered in the cold weather from chilblains and sloughing of the toes. When removed and properly fed she recovered her health, and gained weight at the rate of 5 ozs. per diem for 129 days. Sentence: two years' with hard labour. (Pages 576, 580, 581, 599.)

47°. R. v. Mitchell.—(*Oxford Lent Assizes*, 1861.)—The prisoner, a naval surgeon, was charged with the manslaughter of his female servant æt. 24, by withholding from her sufficient food. The appearances were consistent with death from starvation, but the medical witnesses admitted that mal-assimilation of food might have produced similar appearances, and a defence of chronic diarrhœa was set up. The deceased's own statement went to show that food was not withheld from her, and on this ground the prisoner was acquitted. (For details see Taylor, Vol. II., p. 142.) (Pages 560, 561.)

48. Dr. Tanner's Forty Days' Fast.—Dr. Tanner, an American physician, undertook to fast for forty days. The fast, however, was not under strict medical supervision, and many have expressed a doubt how far it was genuine. At the commencement of the fast he abstained from drink as well as food, during which time he steadily declined in weight, became emaciated, irritable, and fretful. He then commenced taking water (about 66 ozs. per diem), which revived him. Altogether his loss of weight was 1 lb. per day; but during one period of three days he gained 4½ lbs. Temperature and respirations normal throughout, and pulse steady. During the period of his fast he slept a good deal, took daily exercise, and held conversations with friends. (Pages 563, 578, 579, 583, 585.)

49. In the case of a girl, æt. 19, who had taken very little food for a period preceding death of nearly two years, and who died at last from apparent exhaustion, I found at the post-mortem, the absorption of all fat and an extreme atrophy (although otherwise not a diseased condition) of the whole of the viscera. The intestines were very transparent. In the case of the pancreas, it had almost entirely disappeared. There were signs of tubercular deposits in the mesentery, but these appeared to be of comparatively recent formation.—(*C. Meymott Tidy.*) (Page 588.)

50. R. v. Morby.—(*C.C.*, 12, *March* 25, 1882.)—Morby was convicted before Mr. Justice Hawkins of the manslaughter of his son, a child of tender years. The evidence showed that the child died of confluent small-pox, and that the prisoner, though able to do so, did not obtain medical attendance for the child during the illness. It was not proved that this neglect caused or accelerated its death, although it was thought that it might have done so, whilst, on the other hand, it was admitted that medical science might have been of no avail. *Held* that, under these circumstances, the conviction for manslaughter against Morby could not be sustained. (Page 564.)

INDEX.

PAGE

A

Abdomen, death from pressure on the 283
post-mortem examination of the... 303
and Thorax, post-mortem examination of the 298
ABEL on explosives 527
on explosive mixtures of dust and air 543, 545, 546
and PERCY on the spontaneous ignition of coal 521
Abnormalities, detection of, a long period after death 291
Abscesses, scars of 186
sudden death from 280
Acardiac monsters..... 315
Accident, definition of 366
and disease..... 367
erysipelas resulting from an..... 368
insurance against 366
and life insurance 375
occurring to a person intoxicated 367
questions to be considered in cases of insurance against 368
sunstroke not an 366
Acephalous monsters 316
Acids, burns from..... 457, 485
conditions of face after death from 293
putrefaction after death from mineral 92
Acute diseases, putrefaction after death from 91
Adipocere 91, 93, 111
circumstances modifying the formation of 112
constitution of 112
and extra-uterine pregnancy 115
formation of 112
lime and ammonia 113
properties of 113
time required for the formation of 113

PAGE

Adults, height and weight of 166
Age, colour of the hair corresponding to 157, 206
and crime 161
as determined from the skeleton... 157
effects of, on certain bones of the skeleton..... 159
— of heat as influenced by 392
— of, on putrefaction 85, 91
of fœtus, table to determine 309
influence of disease on apparent... 157
and marriage 160
medico-legal aspects of 160
method of determining 156
old, characters of 157
and rape 161
in respect to personal identity 144, 148, 150, 156
an influencing condition in cases of starvation 392, 584
and survivorship 386
and unnatural offences 162
Air, death from insufficiency of 283
effects of, on putrefactive process...89, 90
Albinism, hereditary nature of 205
Albinos, hair of..... 157
Albumen, its part in diet 566
Alcohol, action of, on the pupil 42
condition of face after death from 293
firing point of the vapour of 560
influence of, on putrefactive process 91, 105
and longevity 362, 373
ALEXIS ST. MARTIN, experiments on 574
Alkalies, condition of face after death from the 293
Alkanet, spectrum of, compared with blood 231
Altitudes, death from want of air in high 283
AMBROSE PARÉ, process of embalming 118

	PAGE
Amylaceous foods	566
Anæmia and Asphyxia compared	287
death from	283, 285
post-mortem appearances of	285
symptoms produced by	285
Analysis, the preservation of articles at a post-mortem for	306
Anatto stains	239
Androgynæ	325
Androgyni	326
Anencephalic fœtus, appearance of an, mistaken for the effects of violence	319
monsters	316
Aneurism, sudden death from	279
Angina pectoris, sudden death from	279
Animals, hairs of different	200, 202
Animal heat maintained by the fat of food	565
Anti-fouling boiler preparations	539
Antimony, putrefaction after death from	91
Antiseptics, influence of the application of, to the body after death	92
Anus, injuries inflicted through the	305
Aorta, perforation of, a cause of sudden death	279
post-mortem examination of the	300
Aortic regurgitation, sudden death from	279
Apes, bones of, compared with human bones	153
APJOHN (Dr.), on human spontaneous combustion	535
Apnœa and Anæmia compared	287
and Coma compared	287
causes of death from	283, 287
possibility of being confounded with death	38
post-mortem appearances after death from	287
rigor mortis delayed after death from	65
symptoms of	287
Apoplexy, appearance of face after death from	293
death from	280, 282
instantaneous rigor mortis after death from	64
possibility of its being confounded with death	39
Apparent death	29
Apprentices, masters responsible for the supply of food to	562, 564
Archil stains	239
Arctic fox, etc., changes in the colour of the hair of the	205
Arcus senilis	157
ARNDT (Dr.), on the pathology of sunstroke	443
Arrowroot, nutritive value of	567
Arsenic, putrefaction after death from	91, 93, 106
loss of hair resulting from the use of	204
Arteries, diseases of, sudden death from	279
Ash of bones, Re identity	151
Ashes, examination of, supposed to contain human remains	467
Asphyxia, *see* Apnœa.	
Asthenia, causes of death from	283
death from	283
and exhausting diseases	283
and injuries to the spine, etc.	283
and poisons	283
post-mortem appearances	286
and starvation	283
symptoms of	285
Atropine, action of, on the iris	42
AUBERT on the spontaneous combustion of charcoal	523
Aurum fulminans	527
Authorities, quotations from, not allowed in giving evidence	19
AVELING (Dr.), on spontaneous post-mortem delivery	85

B

Baby-farming	564
Bacon, nutritive value of	567
Baldness in relation to age	157
BALFOUR (Dr.), test of the heart's action	34
Barley meal, nutritive value of	567
BARTHES and RILLIET, measurements of healthy children	167
Bartholini's glands	321
Bast fibres	200
Bastardy and likeness	173
"Bat" of Marshall Hall, a test of respiration	37
Bath, temperature not to be tested by the hand	456
Beans, nutritive value of	567
BEAUMONT (Dr.), observations on the rapidity of digestion	574
BECLARD, researches on rigor mortis	59
Beef, nutritive value of	567
BEGBIE (Dr.), on mortality from heart disease	360
BENNET DOWLER (Dr.), researches on muscular contractility	54, 55
Benzol (benzene), volatility and firing point of the vapour of	541
BERNARD, on the action of extreme heat on the living body	421
Bestiality, hairs to be examined in cases of	196
Bigamy and presumption of death	381
Bile stains	81

PAGE

Billericay, case of the miller of 571
Bisulphide of carbon..... 540
Bladder, post-mortem examination of the 304
putrefactive changes of the 108
sudden death from rupture of the gall and urinary..... 280
Bleeding, the nature and permanence of the scars produced by 185
Blisters (*see* Vesications) as a test of burns inflicted during life 475
scars arising from 186
BLIZARD (Sir WM.), on professional evidence..... 27
Blood, action of ammonia on 220
—chlorine on..... 220
—galls on 220
—heat on a solution of..... 220
—nitric acid on 220
—sodic hydrate on 221
—sulphurous acid on..... 220
—water (hot and cold) on 217
arterial and venous 216
bodies with which the spectrum of, might be confounded 231
carbonic oxide..... 216, 218
characteristics by which to distinguish living from dead 233
chemical tests for..... 215, 219
coagulation of, within the body after death 76
colouring matter of the 215
—effects on, of the gases of putrefaction..... 106
condition of, after death from admission of air into the veins ... 216
— —from burns..... 471
— —from cold and starvation 216, 433
— —from the action of carbonic oxide 216
— —from hydrocyanic acid..... 216
— —from lightning 508
— —from sunstroke 443
corpuscles, microscopic appearance of 214
—bodies likely to be mistaken for 215
crystals 216
death from deficiency in the quantity of the 283, 285
detection of, in urine..... 221, 229
of different animals 230
displacements of, resulting from the gases of putrefaction 86
electrical conductivity of 499
guiacum test for..... 221
human, compared with that of other animals..... 231
menstrual 232
Neumann's modification of Teichmann's test for 222

PAGE

Blood, part of the body from which a given specimen was derived ... 232
Pictures 222, 232
post-mortem 38, 216
precautions to be observed in the spectroscopic examination of ... 229
preservation of the, for analysis ... 307
reactions of the 220
of the sexes compared 313
spectra..... 222
spectroscopic test for..... 217, 222
Blood stains, action of cold and hot water on stains of various ages 217, 219
—age of 233
—age no hindrance to the spectroscopic examination of 218
—changes effected by time on the colour of 218
—chemical tests for 219
—conclusions deduced as to the age of stains from the action of cold water upon 217, 219, 233
—examination of, on coloured fabrics 225
— —in earth or on earth-stained fabrics..... 228
— —on iron or steel 219
— —on leather 227
— —old 225
— —the soap-and-water used to wash 226
— —washed 226
— —on white fabrics when recent 223
— method of examining 213
—microscopic test for 213
—naked-eye appearances on different articles of 213
—questions likely to occur in evidence respecting the nature of 230
—spectroscopic test not influenced by the age of 218
Teichmann's test for..... ... 222
treatment of various fabrics marked with..... 219
Blood vessels, putrefactive changes in the 108
—sudden death from diseases of the 279
BOCHEFONTAINE, on rigor mortis 63
Body, heat production in the 419
normal and abnormal temperatures of the 419
post-mortem condition of the, after certain intervals of time 93
BOEHM (Dr.), division of united twins 319
Boiler explosions 539
Bones, age of, Re identity 150
ash of, Re identity..... 151
cause of death determined by an inspection of the 155

PAGE

Bones, changes of, effected by b ... 155
comparison of human bones with those of other animals 153
decomposition of children's 94
diseases of the, Re identity 150
identity determined from fragments of 154
indestructibility of the, after death 94
injuries to the, Re identity 151
malformations of the 150
necessity for caution in determining the nature of injuries in the case of exhumed bones 151
—for distinguishing between the effects of disease, decay, and violence in the case of exhumed bones 156
origin of 149, 153
pregnancy determined from bones found in a coffin 151
relative measurements of the 169
sex determined from the characteristics of the 150
whether belonging to more than one body 155
BOUCHUT, on the weight of children at birth 164
on imperceptible respiration 33
on the gases present in the blood 44
BRAID, on trance 34
Brain, action of putrefactive gases on the 104
cadaveric ecchymoses in the 80
disease and effects of putrefaction on the, compared 104
examination of the 296
of adults, putrefactive changes in 103, 107
of infants, putrefactive changes in 103, 104
in the sexes compared 313
monsters without a 316
Brazil wood stains 238
Bread, ratio of carbon to nitrogen in.. 568
wheat and rye, nutritive values of 567
Breasts, abnormal development of the male 313
female 312
starvation by preventing a child taking the 560
BRIDGES (Dr.), tables showing the height and weight of factory children 165
BRISTOWE (Dr.), on starvation and emaciation 582
BRODIE, experiments with the upas antiar 286
BROWN-SÉQUARD, researches on rigor mortis 63
—on the action of strychnia on rigor mortis 73

PAGE

Bruises, cadaveric and life 78
Bullets, explosive 528
scars produced by the wounds of... 184
Burial, change in the colour of the hair resulting from long 206
effects of, on putrefaction 90, 92
—on bones, etc. 149, 155
—in peat and turf 94
premature 29, 30
Burmah oil, *see* Petroleum.
BURMAN, observations on post-mortem cooling 48
Burns, classification of 458
definition of 453
not wounds in law 453
varieties of 454
Burns, absence of any post-mortem appearances after death from ... 468
accidental death from 483
causes of death from 465
coma after severe, compared with that produced by opium 464
condition of blood after death from 471
constitutional effects resulting from 463
effects produced by 459
examination of incinerated remains in cases of death from 467
external appearances resulting from death by 469
from acids 457, 485
—acids, distinguished from those produced by the action of heat 486
—boiling oils 455
—boiling water 455
—coal mine explosions 542
—corrosive bodies 453
—fire-damp 457
—flame 457
—gunpowder 456
—heated solids 454
—lightning 503
—molten metals 455
—petroleum 457
—phosphorus 456
—steam 456
inflicted during life and after death compared 472
internal appearances after death from 470
line of redness as a test of life...472, 477
period at which inflicted judged by the appearance of 465
—of death after 466
post-mortem appearances produced by 467
a red line produced in the living body as a result of 460
the result of radiant heat 465
the scars resulting from 185, 188
special danger of 460

PAGE
Burns, ulcers of the duodenum after death from 471
vesication as a test of life..... 475
wounds resulting from 462, 484
Burnt remains..... 151
Bursting of bodies by the development of the gases of putrefaction 84
Butter, nutritive value of 567
of milk 565
"Butterine" 566

C

Cadaveric ecchymoses 75
—after death from lightning..... 77
—and blood coagulation 76
—certain peculiarities of 77
—changes produced by time on ... 79
—circumstances determining the size and shape of 77
—distinctions between life bruises and 78
—external 75
—internal 80
—in the brain..... 80
—in the lungs..... 81
—in the spinal cord 80
—in the stomach and intestines ... 81
—means of distinguishing other forms of ecchymoses from ... 77
—position and anatomical seat of 78
lividities, *see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses
Cadaveric spasm 64
Calabar bean, action on the iris of ... 42
Camwood stains..... 239
Candy factory, explosion in a 550
Carbon, bisulphide of 540
loss of, in health per day 568
oxides, condition of the face after death from 293
quantity of, consumed daily by children in health..... ... 573
ratio to nitrogen needed in diet ... 568
Carbonic oxide blood..... 216, 218
—poisoning, hæmoglobin in cases of 38
Cardiac polypi 81
CARRIÈRE, sign of death suggested by..... 41
Cartridge factories, explosions in 521, 524
Casein of milk 566
CASPER, on the formation of adipocere 114
on the obliteration of tattooes 190
on the vesications of burns 477
on the order observed in the phenomena of putrefaction..... 101
on rigor mortis 69
Catalepsy..... 39, 73
Catechu stains 239
Catheter, death after passing a 286

PAGE
Caucasian, skull of the..... 171
Cause of death, influence on putrefaction of the 91
—to be decided by a coroner's jury 5
CAUSSÉ, views respecting footprints held by 176
Caustics, their action on the skin as a sign of death 40
scars resulting from the application of..... 185
Cautery, actual 454
CAUVET, researches respecting the recognition of persons by the flash of firearms 247
Cereals, spontaneous combustion of damp 530
Cesspools, influence of matters in, on the decomposition of bodies 95, 98
formation of adipocere in bodies drowned in..... 112
CHABERT (the Fire King) 423
CHAMBERT, on the vesications of burns 479
on the line of redness in burns..... 474
CHAMBRE (Mr. Justice), remarks on disease and life insurance 371
CHAMPOUILLON, on the vesications of burns 480
on the line of redness resulting from burns 474
Charcoal, spontaneous combustion of 523
Charge of judge to the grand jury ... 7
CHASSAGNIOL, on the combustibility of animal tissues soaked in alcohol 535
Cheese, nutritive value of..... 567
Chest, death from pressure on the ... 283
—from entrance of air into the ... 283
CHEVALLIER, on cases of spontaneous combustion 528
on the spontaneous combustion of charcoal 523
CHEYNE-STOKES' respiration 37
Chilblains, caused by neglect and deficient food 591
Childbearing and insurance 365
Childbirth, questions of survivorship in cases of 393
Children, changes in the colour of the hair of 206
decomposition of the bones of..... 94
diet of..... 573
diminution in weight of, for a time after birth..... 163
effects of cold on young..... 426, 427
height and weight in case of factory 165, 167
weight and length at birth and at different ages 163
who responsible for supply of food to..... 562, 564

	PAGE
Chills, serious effects of	427
Chipcake, spontaneous combustion of	552
Chloroform, condition of face after death from	293
influence of, on putrefaction	91
Choke damp	542
Cholera, sudden death from	280
and collapse	286
CHOSSAT, on starvation..... 578, 579,	581
CHRISTISON (Sir R.), on the line of redness in burns	474
on the vesications of burns	476
Chronic diseases, putrefaction after death from	91
Cicatrices	180
on deserters	185
similar, occurring in two people	181
varieties of	184
Cicatrix, anatomical characteristics of a	180
changes through which a cicatrix passes	183
circumstances influencing the formation of a	182
conclusions to be drawn from a *brown*	183
— —*red*	183
— —*white*	183
does a wound necessarily leave a?	181
growth of, in the case of children	187
importance of noting the locality where it occurs in deciding the cause of a	187
inference from the, as to the period when a wound was inflicted	182
—as to the nature of a wound from the character of a	184
—as to the size of a wound from the extent of the	187
influence of the part wounded on the after development of a ... 182,	184
—of a person's health on a	188
whether due to injury or disease?	186
method of restoring a	180, 193
obliteration of a, by time and by artificial means	187
reasons for non-disappearance of a	188
three stages of a	183
Cineraria, spectrum of, compared with blood	231
Circulatory system, examination in insurance cases of the	360
Citrus limetta (foot-note)	590
Climate and insurance	365
Clitoris, enlarged condition of the ... a penis compared with an enlarged	325
Clothes, condition of, to be noted at a post-mortem	292
electric conductivity compared of wet and dry	500
Clothes and jewellery, discovery of, Re identity	147
Coagulation of blood within the body after death	76
Coal, spontaneous ignition of	521
conditions to be observed in the safe transport of	522
Coal-dust, an explosive atmosphere formed by a mixture of air and	543
Coal-gas explosions	541
Cochineal, spectrum of, compared with blood	231
COCKBURN (Chief Justice), remarks by, on the meaning of the word "accident"	366
Cocoa-nut fibre, *see* Coir.	
Cocoa-nut oil, its power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies	532
Coffins, influence of burial in, as a means of retarding decomposition	89
Coir fibres	200
spontaneous combustion of	530
Cold, action of, in delaying putrefaction	88, 90
death from	283
—blood after	216
effects on animal life of an extreme	421, 423, 424
—on new born infants of	425
—on young children of	426
—on the insane of	428
—on the wounded of	429
hæmoglobin after death from	38
influence of, on rigor mortis	62
medico-legal questions arising in cases of death from	425
and mortality	424
and opium poisoning	391
post-mortem appearances produced by	433
and poverty	391
power of old and young to bear extreme	422
—of body to bear	424
—different in different people, and in the same person at different times, in bearing	425
putrefaction delayed by	434
and survivorship	391
symptoms produced by	429
treatment of persons suffering from the effects of severe	432
Cold water, effects of, when taken by persons greatly heated	429
Cold baths	427, 428
Collapse from burns	466
and concussion	286
Colonel Townshend, case of	33

PAGE

Colour, changes, effects on, of submersion in water after death ... 96
—in air and water from putrefaction ... 82, 96
Colour blindness ... 243
Colouring matter of hair ... 204
Coma a mode of death ... 282
and Apnœa compared ... 287
arising from a severe burn and that from opium compared ... 464
causes of ... 282, 284
post-mortem appearances indicative of death from ... 284
symptoms of ... 284
Comato-asphyxia, death from ... 289
Combustibles ... 520
definition of ... 535
gaseous ... 541
liquid ... 535
Combustion, spontaneous, human ... 533
—of organic bodies moistened with water ... 529
—of dry organic substances ... 528
—of organic bodies moistened with oil ... 531
—of coal ... 521
—of guncotton ... 524
—of lampblack ... 523
—of phosphorus ... 524
—of damp sacks ... 533
—of sulphur ... 523
Complexion in respect to personal identity ... 145
Concealed sex ... 330
Concussion, death from ... 282
and collapse ... 286
Confinement, a woman not excused attending to give evidence because near her ... 11
Congenital peculiarities Re identity ... 175
Congestion and putrefactive discolouration ... 102
Conjunctivæ, changes after death in the ... 44
Contractility of muscle, post-mortem, *see* Muscular Contractility.
Contusions and post-mortem hypostases ... 294
Convulsions from burns ... 466
Cooking, loss of meat by ... 574
Cooling, post-mortem ... 45
Cord, marks of, to be looked for at a post-mortem ... 294
mummification of the navel ... 116
Cork dust and air, an explosive mixture ... 550
Cornaro, case of ... 571
Cornea, loss of sensibility of the, after death ... 43
— transparency of the, after death 43

PAGE

CORNISH (Dr.), on the symptoms of starvation ... 577
Coronary vessels, post-mortem examination of the ... 300
Coroner's inquest, *see* Inquest ... 4
Corpse, spontaneous movements of a 55, 85
Corpuscles, exudation ... 104
Corrosives, condition of face after death from ... 293
Cotton, spontaneous combustion of damp ... 529
Cotton fibres ... 199
Countenance, effects of death on the 40
rapid alteration in, after death 41, 85
Coup-de-froid ... 430
Coup-de-soleil ... 435
Cowper's glands ... 321
Cremation ... 484
and identity ... 151
CRESSWELL (Justice), remarks on insanity and suicide in relation to insurance ... 378
Crime and age ... 161
Cruorine ... 216
Cross-examination of witnesses ... 21
Cryptorchids ... 335
CUNNINGHAM (Dr.), on relief in famine ... 590
on loss of weight in starvation ... 580
Cupping, scars of ... 185
CURLING (T. B.), classification of burns ... 459
researches on the size of the human spermatozoon ... 236
on perforating ulcers of the duodenum *after death from burns* ... 471
Curvature, spinal, and sudden death 279

D

DALTON (Dr.), on the quantity of food required daily ... 569
Daltonism ... 243
Danger, and presumption of survivorship ... 386
DAY'S, guiacum test for blood, etc. ... 221
Dead body, change in colour of the hair of ... 206
Death, absence of contractility of muscle not necessarily a sign of 55, 56
—the transparency of the hands, a sign of ... 41
action on bright needles when stuck into the skin, a sign of .. 35
—of caustics on the skin, a sign of ... 40
—of heat applied to the body, a sign of ... 39
—of a scarificator a sign of ... 35
apparent mistaken for real ... 29

PAGE

Death, appearance of the arteries as a sign of 35
causes of 279, 305
—and the presumption of survivorship 388
—determined from exhumed bones 155
cessation of respiration as a sign of 36
—of the heart's action as a sign of 31, 36
changes in the face and expression resulting from 40, 41
changes in the face, tongue, eyes, &c., after 85
—in and about the eyes after 41
—in the conjunctivæ as signs of... 44
—in the temperature of the body as a sign of..... 45
circumstances under which proof of, may be required 30
characteristics of wounds inflicted after 274
comato-asphyxia as a cause of..... 289
combination of causes frequently found to produce 288
condition of the blood after..... 38, 216
DAVIS (Leon), sign of 35
definition of 28
delivery after 85
dilatation of pupils after 43
flaccidity of the iris as a sign of... 42
diseases likely to cause sudden 280, 305
effects produced by injection of ammonia as a sign of 35
resulting from the operation of tattooing 190
growth of hair after 208
hæmorrhages after..... 87
identifying individuals after..... 142
importance of examining all articles found in the hands after 67
—of recording the position of the body after 65
insensibility and loss of power to move as signs of 38
insurance payable at..... 369
interdependence of the causes of... 288
LABORDE, sign of..... 35
last position of life maintained in.. 62
LEVASSEUR, sign of 35
lightning a painless 501
loss of sensibility of cornea as a sign of..... 43
—of transparency of cornea as a sign of..... 43
—of tonicity and elasticity of eyes as a result of 44
—of the elasticity of the eyelids resulting from..... 44
MAGNUS, sign of 35
means of determining from the appearance of a body the place of 66

PAGE

Death, modes of 282
molecular 28
MONTEVERDE, sign of 35
ophthalmoscopic appearances indicative of 44
peculiar musk odour as a sign of... 41
period of, judged by the inspection of a body 99, 119
—judged by condition of body 93
popular tests of 35, 37
position of the hands as a sign of..... 41
presumption of 380
to be proved by executors in cases of insurance..... 369
rate of cooling after 45
to be regarded as natural unless the contrary can be proved 369
the results attending the application of a ligature, a sign of ... 35
RIPAULT, sign of 42
signs of.. ..... 28, 31
somatic 28
spontaneous movements of a corpse after..... 85
value of a post-mortem at a long interval after 289
Debility, death from 283
Decapitation, rigor mortis after 71
Decomposition, power of the uterus to resist 313
of bodies, *see* Putrefaction.
Deformities..... 315
acquired 315
an arrest of development a cause of 315
congenital..... 315, 317
structural..... 316
Re identity 147, 150
Delivery, determined at a remote period after death 291
post-mortem 85
—after cases of 305
putrefaction after death from 91
Dentition, influence of rickets and syphilis on 212
late 211
early..... 211
third..... 212
irregularities of with respect to time, &c..... 211
Depletion, death by 283
Destruction of soft parts by burial, Re identity 149
Detonators 521
Development, deformities due to arrest of 315
DEVERGIE, on Adipocere..... 113
—on the vesications of burns 481
Diaphragm, putrefactive changes of 108
death from wounds of the..... 283

PAGE

Diarrhœa caused by improper food... 591
chronic, a cause of starvation 561
DICKENSON, on the formation of adipocere 114
Diet, conditions of, necessary to maintain health 568
of children 573
diseases arising from a deficient ... 589
fat a necessary constituent of 565
mineral constituents of 566
necessity for variety in 574
nitrogenous matter a necessary constituent of 566
ratio of carbon to nitrogen required in a proper 568
sugar a necessary constituent of ... 566
water a necessary constituent of... 565
Dietaries, table of 571
nutritive values of 571
Digestion, post-mortem 105
putrefactive changes compared with the redness arising from 105
rapidity of 574
Digestive system, examination in insurance cases of the 361
Discoloration from congestion during life and from putrefaction... 102, 106
Disease as a cause of grey hairs 157
effects of putrefaction confounded with the results of 102, 106
and life insurance 371
—influence of, on apparent age ... 157
Disease and accident, questions to be considered in cases of insurance against accidents 368
Diseased growths 315
Diseases, Re identity 175
Diseases of bones, Re identity 150
Disguisement, personal 174
Disinfectant to be used at a post-mortem where decomposition is advanced 110
Distension resulting from the formation of putrefactive gases 84
Divorce and hermaphrodism 314
—and sexless beings 330
DOBELL (Dr.) on the functions of the pancreas 561
—on diet 570
—on loss of weight considered clinically 579
Dolphins, human 318
DONNÉ, researches on the trichomonas vaginæ 237
Double monsters 317
Dropsy, putrefaction after death from 91
Drowning, effects of death by, on the decomposition of the body 95
floating of immersed body after ... 84
instant rigor mortis after death by 64

PAGE

Drowning and survivorship 388
Duboisin, action on iris of 42
DUNCAN (Matthews), weight of children at birth 163
Duodenum, perforating ulcers of, after death from burns 471
DUPONT, action of atropine on the iris after death 42
DURAND and LINAS, experiments on post-mortem cooling 47
DUPUYTREN, classification of burns... 458
Dust, explosive mixtures formed when dust is suspended in air ... 543
DUVAL, experiments on decapitated criminals 36
DUVERNAY'S glands 321
Dyes for the hair 206
Dying declarations 12
Dynamite, composition of 525
law relating to 521
serious effects resulting from its use 525
use of, in fishery 521
Dysentery caused by improper food... 591

E

Earth, effects of, on putrefaction ... 89, 90
examination of, for blood 228
Ebony turners and colour of hair ... 206
Ecchymoses (*see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses) 75
Eczema, resulting from want of fat in the diet 566
Eels, nutritive value of 567
Effusions resulting from putrefaction 87
Eggs, nutritive value of 567
Electricity, evil consequences resulting from the medical use of 502
fatal effects of 501
and lightning, compared 497
NOTHNAGEL, experiments on animals with 505
points to be recorded in cases of death from 502
Embalming, artificial 116
Hunter's process of 116
Marini's process of 118
Paré's (Ambrose), process of 118
Richardson's process of 117
Embolism, sudden death from ... 281, 282
English cholera 591
Epididymis 321
Epigastrium, death from blows on the 283
— —condition of face after 293
Epispadias 329
Erasures 241
Ergotism 589
Erysipelas and accidental insurance... 368
ESMARCH, on the use of cold in surgery 432

	PAGE
Esparto grass, spontaneous combustion of damp	530
Esquimaux, skull of the	171
Ether, volatility and firing point of the vapour of	540
Evidence	7
Sir William Blizard on	27
of character	9
circumstantial	15
—conclusive	15
—presumptive	15
on collateral facts	9
of the dead	12
expert	17
hearsay	10
how far illness is an excuse for non-attendance to give	11
with personal attendance of witness	11
positive	15
preparation for giving	22
professional secrets not admitted as an excuse for declining to give	20
quotations from authorities not permitted in giving	19
to be given on oath	12
by a woman near her confinement	11
written notes, use of in giving	19
Examination-in-chief	18
Examination of hair	196
report of the medical, in cases of insurance	363
Exhumation of bodies	100
injuries during the exhumation of bones, liable to be confounded with injuries inflicted during life	151
Expectation of life, table of the	357
—formula for calculating the	359
Expert evidence	17
Explosives	520
acts of parliament relating to	521
Explosions, in boilers	539
coal gas	541
fire-damp	542
gas in Tottenham Court Road	541
petroleum	536
Explosive bullets	528
medical prescriptions	527
Exposure, changes in the appearance, the results of	147
Expression, circumstances influencing after death, dependent on the cause of death	174
Extra-uterine fœtation, sudden death from	41
pregnancy, conversion of fruit of into adipocere	280
Eunuchs	115
Euthanasia	327
Eye, effects of death on the	318
Eye, means of testing its sensibility to light	41
Eyes to be observed at a post-mortem	292, 293
prominence of, resulting from the development of putrefactive gases	84

F

Fabrics, blood stains on	219
Face, changes produced by putrefaction on the	85, 96
to be observed at a post-mortem	293
post-mortem changes in the	86
"Facies hippocratica"	40, 293
Fæces, daily loss by the	568
Famine fever	591
Faqueers, fasts of	580
reported power of stopping the heart's action	34
FARADAY, on explosive mixtures of dust and air	543
Farinaceous foods	566
Fast, Dr. Tanner's	563
Fasting as practised by the Faqueers	580
Fasting, pretended	560
prolonged	560
Fasting girls as an exhibition	562
Fatty degeneration of heart, sudden death from	279
matter in diet, a necessity	565
—specially needed in the diet of those living in cold climates	566
—effects produced by the want of, in the diet	566
Feeding, necessity for proper intervals in	574
Feet, marks of the, *see* Footprints.	
Female, enlarged clitoris in the	325
and male skeleton compared	310
pelvis	311
umbilicus in the	313
menstruation, a test of the sex being	331
Femur, influence of age on the	160
FENWICK (Dr.), on post-mortem digestion	105
Fever, influence of, on body weight	581
Fibres	195
Fingers supernumerary	317
Fire at City Flour Mills (1872)	533
at London-bridge (1861)	532
Fire-arms, recognition by the flash from	246
Fire-balls	497
Fire-damp, burns from	457
explosions of	542
—causes of	542
—death in, causes of	542
indications of the presence of	542

PAGE
Fires in warehouses, etc... .. .... 529, 532
Fireworks, law relating to 521
preparation of 524
Fish, nutritive value of 567
Flames, burns from 457
Flax, spontaneous combustion of damp 530
FLEMING, researches on the action of calabar bean on the iris after death 42
experiments on starvation in the case of horses 584
Floating of body after drowning..... 84
Flogging, scars from 185
Flour and air, an explosive mixture 550
mills, explosions in 549
Flower-stains..... 239
Fœtal hair 197
Fœtus, length at different ages 162
table to determine age of..... . 309
weight at birth 163
Fog-signals 521
Fontanelles, size of the 295
FONTENAY, researches on colour-blindness.... 243
Food, amylaceous 566
cases where life has been sustained on very small quantities of 571
diseases arising from the use of improper..... 589
farinaceous 566
gain in weight after starvation, from administration of 580
the insufficient supply of, to girls at about their first menstrual period 561
mal-assimilation of, a cause of starvation 561
milk a type of all 565
mineral constituents of 566
necessity for the quantity being sufficient 574
—for being digestible 574
—for proper cooking..... 574
—for proper intervals in taking ... 574
—for variety in diet 574
nitrogenous constituents of 566
nutritive values of (Table) 567
oleaginous constituents of..... 565
quantity required to support life at different ages 568
ratio of carbon to nitrogen required 568
relative values of different articles of 567
required by children and adults ... 569
—by children..... 573
saccharine constituents of..... 566
varieties of 565
water a necessary constituent of... 565
Footprints, relation between the size of the feet and the 175

PAGE
Footprints, circumstances influencing the size, shape, and extent of the 176
to be compared with blood marks found near them..... 17
method of taking casts of..... 178
rules to be observed in the examination of 179
Foreign bodies, presence or absence to be noted at post-mortem 294
death from impaction in mouth, etc. 283
detection of, at a remote period after death 291
sudden deaths from, in the pharynx 280
FORT, on artificial respiration..... 29
FOUBERT, test of the heart's action 34
FOURCROY, on adipocere..... 111
FOURNOL, on artificial respiration... 29
FOWLER (Dr.), on starvation 577
Fractures, the results of lightning ... 504
Freemartins 323
French law on the presumption of survivorship 384
Fright, change of the colour of the hair resulting from..... 205
as a cause of loss of hair 204
as a cause of grey hair 157
Frost erythems 434
Frozen body, post-mortem on a..... 290
Fruit stains..... 239
Fulgurites 497
Full age, how determined 161
Fulminates 521, 526
Funis, mummification of..... 116
Fuzes 521

G

Gall-bladder, putrefactive changes in the 107
Gall duct, post-mortem examination of the 306
GALLETLY, experiments by, on cotton waste saturated with various oils 531
GALLOWAY, researches on explosive mixtures of coal dust and air ... 543
— on the safety lamp as an indicator of the state of the atmosphere of a coal mine 542
Galvanism, effects on rigor mortis when administered before death 72
Gas, explosions of coal..... 541
Gases of putrefaction 83
action of, on the brain 104
alteration of the eyes and tongue, and of the apparent age, resulting from the development of the 85

PAGE

Gases of putrefaction, blood displacements resulting from pressure exerted by the..... 87
changes of countenance resulting from the development of the ... 85
delivery resulting from the development of the 85
development of the, in the case of a corpse under water..... 96
effects of, on the body 84
fluid effusions resulting from the pressure of the 87
formed in body during life and after death 83
post-mortem hæmorrhages resulting from the pressure of the ... 87
power of, to produce distension ... 84
suffocation simulated by the 86
spontaneous movements resulting from the 85
GAVAT, condition of the fundus oculi after death 45
Gelatin, its part in diet 566
Genital gland, the only test of sex... 322
Genitals, wounds of the 295
examination of the hairs of the, in cases of rape 196
Genito-urinary system, examination of the, in insurance cases 361
GEOGHEGAN'S researches on post-mortem prominence of eyes ... 84
GIBBES, researches on tailless spermatozoa 236
on the formation of adipocere..... 114
Glands, the colouring matter used in tattooes found in the contiguous absorbent 192
post-mortem examination of intestinal 306
Glonoin, *see* Nitro-glycerin.
Gluten, its part in diet 566
Gluttons, rapacity of 570
GOODHART, observations on post-mortem cooling 49
Gout, Re identity 175
and life insurance 371
Graafian vesicles 305
Grain in malting, spontaneous heating of 530
Grand jury..... 6
Graves, formation of adipocere in... 112
influence of depth of, on the decomposition of a body 90
Grease stains 237
Greek fire 525
GREENFIELD (Dr.), on the emaciation resulting from disease 582
Grief, change of colour of the hair resulting from 205
Growths, diseased..... 315

PAGE

Gubernaculum testis..... 321
GUÉRET, experiments on recognition by unaided sight 249
Guiacum test for blood (DAY'S) 221
fallacies in, as a test for blood..... 221
GUILLOT, observations on the quantity of milk secreted by a woman during lactation 573
Gullet, putrefactive changes of the... 108
Guncotton, laws relating to..... 521
preparation of 524
spontaneous ignition of..... 524
Gunpowder, burns from 456
composition of 523
explosions of, under different conditions..... 523
laws relating to..... 521
tattoo marks due to explosions of 456
varieties of..... 523
Gunshot wounds, instantaneous rigor mortis after death from..... 64
GUY, table of the measurements of adults 168

H

Hæmatin..... 215, 216, 217, 223, 233
action of acid-vapours in effecting the change of hæmoglobin into 233
solubility of, in water 217
spectrum of..... 223
Hæmatoceles, sudden death from ... 280
Hæmatoglobulin (hæmatocrystallin, oxy-hæmoglobin) 216
Hæmatothorax, sudden death from... 280
Hæmoglobin..... 38, 216, 217, 223, 233
condition of, in the blood after death 38
circumstances influencing its change into hæmatin 233
solubility of, in water 217
spectrum of..... 223
Hæmorrhages, death from 283
post-mortem 87
Hair, analysis of, in cases of poisoning 208
of the beard 203
appearance of, when torn out violently 204
—of, when shed after fevers, &c. 204
of the Arctic fox, and of other animals, seasonal changes in the colour of the 205
arrangement of the medullary air-cells in the 201
changes in colour by dyes 206
— —of, in children 206
— —and tenacity of the 146

PAGE

Iair, changes in colour of, from the influence of different occupations 206
— —by burial 206
— —by contact with dead body 206
of children 201
colour of 204
—as proof of paternity 205
colouring bodies in the 204
compared with various fibres, &c. 199
from different parts of the body, characters of the 263
of different animals, characters of 202
effects of cutting the 204
—of reagents on 198
of the eyebrows 203
of the eyelashes 203
to be examined at a post-mortem 292
examination of genital hairs important in cases of rape 196
—in cases of bestiality 196
fœtal 197
frequently found embedded in blood-stains 195, 204
golden 206
growth of the, after death 146, 208
—of, as a test of sex 325
—in cases of starvation 576
and identity 146, 150, 154, 195, 206
importance of its examination, medico-legally 195
—of comparing 196
indestructibility of, after death 94
influence of friction, washing, &c., on the 203
on instruments used homicidally 195
loss of, resulting from disease, action of medicines, &c. 204
of man compared with that of the brown dog 202
measurements of different 200
method of deciding if it has been dyed 207
—of examining the 146, 196
microscopic appearance of the 198
peculiarities in the colour and amount of, at a post-mortem a long time after death 291
pigment in the 198, 201
points to be observed in the examination of 201
its power of resisting putrefaction 198
as a proof of age 157, 206
of the hand and forearm 203
pubic 203
and putrefaction 198
questions likely to arise in evidence respecting 202
relation in size between the medulla and the cortex of the 201

PAGE

Hair, scrotal 203
structure of the 197, 198
sudden bleaching of the 205
tenacity of spermatozoa to 196
Hair dyes, formulæ for 207
Hairs and fibres (*see* Plate I.) 195
method of examining 196
HALL'S (Marshall) "bat" 37
Hands, importance at a post-mortem of examining all articles found in the 67
marks of the 175
position of, after death 41
to be observed at a post-mortem 292
want of transparency in the, after death 41
Handwriting 239
Hanging (judicial) and life assurance 375
death from 283
Haricots, nutritive value of 567
HARVEY, weight of Indian children at birth 163
Hay, spontaneous combustion of damp 529
Head, death beginning at the 282
monsters without a 316
in the sexes compared 313
Health and presumption of survivorship 387
"resorts" 422
Hearing, limits of 250
Hearsay evidence 10
Heart, action of, a proof of life 32
—Balfour's test of 34
— —Sansom's modification 34
condition of, in cases of starvation 587
continuous action of, after death from lightning 502
death beginning at the 282
—from deficiency in the power of the 283, 285
—sudden, from diseases of the 279
examination of, after death from apnœa 298
Foubert's test of the action of the 34
possible inaudibility during life of the sounds of the 32
means of determining its entire cessation by auscultation 32
mechanical tests for the action of the 34
monsters without a 315
post-mortem examination of the 300
pulsations after decapitation 36
putrefactive changes in the 107
recovery after apparent stoppage of the action of the 32
sounds 32
voluntary suspension of the action of the 33
diseases and insurance 360

PAGE

Heat and cold 419
Heat, action of, on putrefaction ... 88, 90
and saturated air 437
and survivorship 392
developed by slaking lime 522
effects produced by extreme 435
—on animal life of an extreme 420
—on persons of different ages of ... 392
experiments on the power of the body to bear extreme 436
its action on the skin as a sign of death 39
production in the body 419
power of young and old to bear extreme 422
symptoms produced by an intense 439
Height of adults 166
of the living person, determined from the height of the skeleton 171
Hemp fibres 199
HERMANN, researches on rigor mortis 59
Hermaphrodism 313, 320
complex 329
conclusions respecting 331
definition of 322
double 329
general statements respecting 323
lateral 328
legal importance of 314
legitimacy and paternity 315
spurious 325
and sterility 331
tabular view of the varieties of 324
transverse 328
true 327
vertical 329
HOME (Sir Everard), account of hermaphroditic bull 331
Hot bath, evil effects produced by ... 455
metals, tricks of handling 455
Human remains 153
shape 318
syrens or dolphins 318
HUMPHRY, measurements of the bones and skeletons of different races 172
tables of the measurements of skeletons and bones 169
HUNTER (John), action of extreme cold on living animals 421
on post-mortem digestion 105
process of embalming 116
HUTCHINSON (Jonathan), researches on the teeth in syphilis 212
HUTIN, on the obliteration of tattooes 190
Hybernation 33
Hydrocele, death from emptying a ... 286
Hydrocephalus, death from 282
Hydrochloric acid burn 457
Hydrocyanic acid, blood after poisoning by 216

PAGE

Hydrogen, combustibility of 541
Hydrophobia, death from 283
instantaneous rigor mortis after ... 65
Hydrostatic test 301
—influence on the, of putrefaction in the lungs 108
Hypnotism 39
Hypospadias 320, 328
Hypostases (*see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses) 75
and contusions 294
visceral 296
Hysteria, rigidity of 73
and starvation 561

I

Identity 142
post-mortem 145
age in relation to ...144, 148, 150, 156
cases where questions arise respecting 142
in the case of a living person, or of one who has been dead a short time 144
where an entire or an incomplete skeleton has been discovered ... 149
of mutilated remains 148
where burnt remains have been discovered 151
where fragments of bones only have been discovered 154
changes effected by time and hardship complicating questions of... 147
as determined from bones 153
discovery of clothes and jewellery in relation to questions of 147
complexion in relation to 145
how complicated 143
and cremation 151
determined at a post-mortem 292
to be decided by the coroner's jury 5
hair in relation to 146, 150, 195
deformities in relation to questions of 147, 150
of human remains 153
infanticide and 144
injuries and diseases in relation to questions of 147, 150, 151, 175
likeness and type of face in relation to 145, 173, 174
value of photographs in determining 143
pregnancy in relation to questions of 147
race in relation to 146, 171
scars and tattooes in relation to questions of 147, 180
stature and girth in relation to 146, 148, 162

PAGE
Identity, peculiarities of speech as a means of deciding 147
sex in relation to 145, 150, 162
smears and stains on clothes in relation to 147, 212
teeth in relation to 149, 150, 209
trade and occupation in relation to 145
Idiocy, a cause of starvation..... 562
Illness, an excuse for attending a court on a subpœna 11
Incendiarism 520
Incised wounds, scars of 184
Indigo workers, the colour of the hair of..... 206
Induced spark, experiments with the 500
Infanticide and identity..... 144
Infants, effects of cold on newborn... 425
frequency with which they require the breast 574
starchy food an improper diet for 573
who responsible for supply of food to 562, 564
INGERSLEV, on the weight of Russian children at birth..... 164
Inheritance and monstrosity..... 313
Injuries, etc., Re identity... 147, 148, 151
detection of, at a post-mortem a long time after death 291
due to exhumation..... 100
inflicted through the vagina or anus 305
to be noted at a post-mortem 294
Ink, coloured..... 240
copying 240
printers' 241
sympathetic..... 239
varieties of writing..... 239
Inquest, compared with the magistrate's enquiry..... 5
jury to prove identity of body at the 142
necessity for post-mortem at an... 4, 280
objects of the..... 4
verdict at, not binding in life insurance cases..... 376
Insane, effects of cold on the 428
Insanity, and life insurance 376
caused by starvation 591
Insolation 435
Instantaneous rigor 64
Insurable interest 368
Insurance 356
against accident..... 366
and the age of applicant 359
assuring a life 366
conditions of granting a policy ... 370
death regarded as natural, unless the contrary be proved..... 369
—to be proved by executors 369
declaration of applicant for 358
PAGE
Insurance, duties of medical attendant in cases of 370
litigation in cases of 371
medical examination in cases of ... 359
of members of the army and navy 364
payment of policy after prolonged absence 370
questions for the consideration of the jury where concealment is alleged in cases of 375
report of medical examiner on an applicant for 363
unusually hazardous lives..... 362
and the verdict of a coroner's jury 376
Insurance and accident 375
—alcohol 374
—child-bearing 366
—climate 365
—gout 371
—hazardous businesses 364, 373
—heart diseases 360
—insanity 376
—intemperance 373
—judicial hanging 375
—lung diseases 360
—murder 375, 376
—neuroses 360
—opium 374
—pregnancy 365
—smoking 374
—suicide 375, 376
—total abstinence 374
—uterine diseases 372
—vegetarianism 374
Insurable interest 368
Intemperance and life insurance..... 373
Intestinal abscess a cause of sudden death 279
Intestines, cadaveric ecchymoses in the 81
post-mortem examination of 306
putrefactive changes in 107
Iris, insensibility resulting from causes other than death 41
action of Calabar bean, duboisin, atropine, physostigmia, etc., before and after death on the ... 42
— of electrical and mechanical stimuli on the 42
flaccidity of the, a sign of death ... 42
changes in, as the result of death... 41
colours of the 175
Iron stains 238
sulphide of, in coal 521
and steel, blood stains on..... 219
ISHAM, sign of death referred to by..... 41
Issues, scars of 186

PAGE

J

Jaw, influence of age on the shape of the lower ... 159
JOANNOT, on the chemical analysis of the hair in cases of poisoning ... 208
JONES (Dr.), the effects of a deficient diet in Camp Sumpter ... 591
Jury, coroner's ... 5
the grand ... 6
and witnesses ... 16
Jute, spontaneous combustion of damp ... 530
and castor oil, spontaneous combustion of ... 532
fibres ... 200

K

KATZENBACH, on the symptoms produced by extreme heat ... 439
KENNARD (Dr.), on sunstroke ... 443
Kidneys, normal and abnormal conditions of the ... 303
post-mortem examination of the ... 303
putrefactive changes in the ... 108
Kino stains ... 239
KŒNIG (Dr.), division of united twins ... 309
KÜHNE, researches on rigor mortis. 60
KUSSMAUL, on post-mortem dilatation of the pupil ... 43

L

LABORDE, sign of death suggested by 35
experiments on postmortem cooling 48
Lactation, quantity of milk secreted during ... 573
LAIR and MARC (Drs.), on human spontaneous combustion ... 534
Lampblack, spontaneous combustion of ... 523
and oil, spontaneous combustion of a mixture of ... 532
Lamps, accidents with petroleum ... 537
experiments with petroleum ... 538
Land purpura ... 590
LARCHER, sign of death suggested by ... 44
researches on rigor mortis ... 69
Lard oil, power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies ... 531
LARREY (Baron), the effects produced by extreme cold ... 431
Larynx, influence of age on the cartilages of the ... 159

PAGE

Larynx, post-mortem examination of the ... 302
and trachea, putrefactive changes in the ... 103
LASSAIGNE, test for semen ... 235
LATHAM (Dr.), on diseases in Millbank penitentiary ... 591
Law, process of ... 4
Lawful pecuniary interest ... 368
Leather, blood stains on ... 227
Leaves, spontaneous combustion of damp ... 530
LECANU, on hæmatin ... 215
Legal Medicine, importance of the study of ... 1
Legitimacy and hermaphrodism ... 315
Legumin, its part in diet ... 566
Lemon, etc., stains ... 238
LEMPERRIÈRE, observations on the quantity of milk secreted by a woman during lactation ... 573
Length of the fœtus and of children at different ages ... 162, 167
Lentils, nutritive value of ... 567
LEON DAVIS, sign of death suggested by ... 35
LETHEBY, (Dr.), on the effects produced by deficient food ... 592
nutritive value of various articles of food ... 567
observations on post-mortem cooling ... 49
table of dietaries ... 571
LEURET, on the vesications of burns 479
LEVASSEUR, sign of death suggested by ... 35
LEVICK, similarity in the post-mortem appearances arising from sunstroke and from typhus 442
Life, action of the heart a proof of ... 32
characteristics of burns produced during ... 472
expectation of ... 356
—table ... 357
insurance (*see* Insurance) ... 356
muscular irritability not a certain sign of ... 55
valuing a ... 366
Lightning, absence of marks after death from ... 498, 504
accidents from ... 496
—in places considered safe ... 496
action of heart after death from ... 502
blood after death from ... 508
burns caused by ... 503
capricious action of the discharge of ... 499, 502, 506
cause of ... 496, 498
causes of accidents resulting from 499
—of death from ... 506

PAGE

Lightning, colour of the flash of 497
compared with electricity..... 497
conductors 500
fatality of..... 507
forked 498
fractures caused by..... 504
fur and feathers protective against heat 501
influence of metallic bodies about the person on the results of... 503, 507
—on chemism 497
injuries to clothes resulting from 499, 502
livid streaks and ecchymosed spots caused by..... 503
magnetic influence of the disturbances produced by 497
medico-legal aspect of injuries resulting from..... 496
nervous symptoms accompanying the shock from 504
period occupied by a flash of 497
post-mortem appearances after death from 508
recognition by the flash of 246
return shock 498
rigor mortis after death from ... 72, 508
the safest and the most dangerous places during 499
severity of injuries resulting from 498, 502
sheet 497
silent 498
summer 498
and survivorship..... 392
symptoms produced by..... 502
time of death after the shock of ... 507
treatment of the shock from..... 508
varieties of 497
wounds caused by 503
Likeness of children to parents, respective influences of the latter on the 173
and post-mortem identity 145, 174
in relation to personal identity..... 145, 173, 174
LIMAN, on the vesications of burns ... 479
Limbs, attitude and position to be noted at a post-mortem..... 292
Lime, influence of its application to the body after death..... 92
the temperature produced by slaking 522
Lime adipocere 113
Lime juice, use of, in the Navy 590
LIND (Dr.), on the use of lemons, etc., in scurvy..... 590
Line of redness, a test of a life-burn 472, 477
Linen fibres 199
Linoleum factory, explosion in a ... 550

PAGE

Linseed oil, power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies 531
Liquids, quantity required daily 574
Liver, normal and abnormal post-mortem appearances of the 303
post-mortem examination of the... 303
putrefactive changes in the 107
Lives, hazardous 362
Lividity of face, indications of, at a post-mortem 293
Living, identity of the 142
Logwood stains..... 238
Longevity and alcohol..... 362
and opium.....362, 374
LONGUET, on the examination of seminal stains..... 236
LUCA, measurements of adults 168
Lucifer matches..... 525
LUKE, classification of burns 459
Luminosity of the body, as a sign of putrefaction 102
Lungs, general appearance and characteristics of unrespired 301
cadaveric ecchymoses in the..... 81
daily loss by the 568
death beginning at the..... 282, 287
—from mechanical obstacles to the play of the 283
—from stoppage of the action of the 283
disease of the, and insurance 360
hydrostatic test as applied to the 301
post-mortem examination of the... 300
putrefactive changes in the 107
Lustre, loss of, in the eyes as a sign of death 43

M

Madder, spectrum of, compared with blood 231
stains 238
Magistrate's enquiry, compared with the coroner's inquest..... 5
Magnetic disturbance, produced by lightning 497
MAGNUS, sign of death suggested by 35
Mahometan law of the presumption of survivorship 385
Maize, nutritive value of 567
Male, compared with female skeleton 310
development of breast in the ... 313
non-development of penis in the ... 327
pelvis 311
the presence of spermatozoa, a test of the sex being 331
umbilicus in the 313
MALININ'S researches on the size of the blood corpuscles...(foot note) 214

	PAGE
Man, mean weight of	581
Manhood, delayed	326
Manly women	325
Manure, spontaneous combustion of	530
Marine insurance	520
MARINI, process of embalming	118
Marks of the hands and feet	175
Marriage, a contract	314
and age	160
and sexless beings	330
MARSHALL HALL'S "bat"	37
MARTINOT, sign of death suggested by	39
MASCAR, on footprints	176
Maturity of new born children to be determined at a post-mortem	295
—table to determine	295
Meals, period taken before death judged at a post-mortem	573
Meat, effects of underdone	574
loss by cooking	574
ratio of carbon to nitrogen in	568
Meatus, melted pewter poured into the	453
Medical examination in cases of insurance	359
secrets	20
Melancholia, a cause of starvation	562
MELLBERG, researches on colour blindness	245
Men, womanly	326
Menstruation, commencement of, retarded by starvation	562
a test of the sex being female	331, 333
Mental emotion, sudden death from	280
Mercuric fulminate	526
Mesentery, putrefactive changes in	107
Mesmeric state, possibility of its being confounded with death	39
Metals, burns caused by hot and by molten	455
Meteorites	497
Methæmoglobin	218, 223
spectrum of	223
Methylic alcohol, volatility and firing point of the vapour	540
Microcephalic monsters	318
Microscopic examination of seminal stains	235
Microspectroscope, the	222
Microspectroscopic test for blood	217
Milk, composition of, in various animals	565
the model food	565
quantity required daily by infants	573
—secreted by a woman during lactation	573
starvation of infants from its being of bad quality	563
Milks, nutritive value of	567
Millbank, cases of starvation amongst the prisoners at	587, 591
MILLON'S test liquid	199
Mineral acids, their application to the body after death	92
Mineral constituents of food	566
oils, no power to impart spontaneous inflammability to organic bodies	531
Mines, explosions in coal	542
Moisture, effects of, on putrefaction	88, 90
Molecular death	28
Moles, hereditary nature of	175
Monsters, acardiac	315
acephalous	316
anencephalic	316
not to be destroyed	318
double	317
microcephalic	318
Monstrosities	313
operations for relief of	319
Monstrosity and inheritance	313
MONTEVERDE, sign of death suggested by	35
Moonlight, recognition by	246
Mouth and its contents to be observed at a post-mortem	293
Müllerian ducts	321
Mummification	115
of the funis	116
Munjeet, spectrum of, compared with blood	231
Murder and life insurance	375, 376
Muscle, chemical reactions under different conditions	60
electrical conductivity of	499
Muscles, changes after death in the flaccidity and contractility after death of the	52
Muscular (post-mortem) contractility	53
circumstances suspending	54
development of heat and sound during	56
investigations at La Charité on	54
method of testing	58
period of death judged by degrees of	54
researches of BENNET DOWLER on	57
—of NYSTEN on	54, 55
—of ONIMUS on	57
Muscular flaccidity, period of duration after death	57
movements, spontaneous, after death	53
system, examination of, in insurance cases	55, 85
Mutilated remains, examination of, Re identity	359
—sex determined in the case of	148
	312

PAGE

Mutilation, methods of 148
treatment of parts after..... 149
Mutton, nutritive value of..... 567
Myosin, conditions necessary for the coagulation of 60
its part in diet 566

N

Nævi Materni, hereditary nature of in the newly-born not to be mistaken for marks of violence 175
Nails 146
to be examined at a post-mortem... 292
Negro, skull of the 171
Nerve matter, electrical conductivity of 499
—power, death from loss of..... 283
Nerves, death from division or compression of the eighth pair of ... 283
Nervous system, examination of, in insurance cases 359
NEUMANN researches on blood pictures 232
Neuroses and insurance 360
New-borns, post-mortem on..... 298
NIDERKORN, experiments on post-mortem cooling 48
—on rigor mortis 62, 69
Nipples, supernumerary 317
Nitric acid, action on turpentine of 540
burn 457
post-mortem after poisoning by ... 290
Nitrogen, chloride of 527
iodide of 527
loss of, in health per day 568
quantity consumed daily by children in health 573
ratio of, to carbon needed in diet 568
Nitrogenous constituents of food..... 566
Nitro-glycerin 539
Acts relating to 521
preparation of..... 539
Nobel's blasting oil, *see* Nitro-glycerin.
Nose and ears, cartilages of the 295
NOTHNAGEL, experiments with electricity on animals 505
NUSSBAUM on premature burial..... 30
NYSTEN, researches on post-mortem muscular contractility 57
—on rigor mortis 59, 69

O

Oats, spontaneous combustion of damp 530
Oatmeal, nutritive value of 567
Obesity, influence on the normal body weight 581

PAGE

Oblique illumination to be employed in testing the contractility of the iris..... 41
Occupation in relation to personal identity 145
Occupations, influence of, on the colour of the hair 206
Odour developed at death 41
Œsophagus, post-mortem examination of the 302
ŒSTERLEN, researches on dyed hair 208
OGSTON (Dr.), on obliteration of the scars of chancres 188
on the post-mortem appearances after death from cold..... 433
on sudden death..... 279
Oil, burns from boiling 455
power of animal and vegetable oils to render organic bodies spontaneously inflammable 531
from coal, schist, shale, peat, &c. *see* Petroleum.
Oily waste 531
Old age, character of..... 157
Old people, their power to bear extremes of heat and cold 422
Oleaginous constitutents of food 565
Olive oil, power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies 531
OLLIVIER researches on rigor mortis 63
Omentum, putrefactive change in the 107
ONIMUS, researches on post-mortem muscular contractility 57
Ophthalmia, caused by improper food 590
Ophthalmoscope, as a test of death.. 44
Opinions and facts, their relative value in evidence 24, 25
Opium and longevity 362, 374
condition of face after death from poisoning and cold in relation to questions of survivorship 391
—liable to be mistaken for the coma resulting from a severe burn 464
taking and life insurance 373
Ordeal, trial by 455
ORFILA, measurements of the skeleton 170
researches on the condition of body after death at various periods ... 93
on the vesications of burns 481
Ossification, centres of 295
points of, as a means of determining age..... 158
Ovaries, a manly appearance resulting from loss of the 326

PAGE
Ovaries, normal and abnormal appearances presented by the 305
post-mortem examination of the... 304
their existence, the proof of the female sex 322, 331
testes simulated by prolapsed 326
Ovary, apoplexy of the, a cause of sudden death 280, 305
histological distinction between a testicle and an 335
Oxygen, absorption of, by freshly broken coal..... 521

P

PAGET (Sir James), on the coagulation of blood after death 76
Pallor of face, indications at a post-mortem of 293
Pancreas, absence of influences that stimulate the action of the, a cause of starvation 561
putrefactive changes of the 108
Pancreatic duct, closure of, a cause of death from starvation 561
Paralyses, and death from starvation 561
rigor mortis, in cases of 72
Par ovarium 321
Pastrana (Julia), case of 325
Paternity, colour of hair as proof of and hermaphrodism 315
PEYER (Lieut.), account of the effects of an extreme cold 430
Peat, effects resulting from burial in 94
"Peculiar People" 564
Pellagra, a result of the use of improper food..... 589
Pelvic hæmatoceles, a cause of sudden death 305
Pelvis, male and female 150
— —compared 311
measurements of the..... 312
during pregnancy 312
Penis, absence of a..... 327
adhesion of, a difficulty in determining sex 327
compared with an enlarged clitoris.....325, 334
Percussion caps.....521, 527
Perforations (post-mortem) and ulcers compared..... 306
Pericardium, sudden death resulting from diseases of the 279
Peroxide of hydrogen, used as a hair dye 207
Petroleum, Acts relating to the sale and storage of 536
burns from 457
explosions 536
PAGE
Petroleum, test for..... 536
PFAFF (Emil), table of the measurements of hairs of different animals 200
Pharynx, post-mortem examination of the 302
Phlebitis, sudden death from 281
Phosphamine, combustibility of..... 541
Phosphate of lime, deposition in viscera after death..... 93
Phosphoretted hydrogen, combustibility of 541
Phosphorus, burns from 456
combustion of varieties of..... 524
influence on putrefraction after death from 91
Photographs, necessity for always producing the original negatives in evidence 143
value in medico-legal cases of 143, 146
Phrenic nerve, death from division of the 283
Phthisis, Re identity 175
influence of, on body weight 581
Physostigmia, action of, on the iris... 42
Picric acid, post-mortem after poisoning by 290
Pitch stains..... 238
Pneumogastric, death from division of the 283
Poisoning, analysis of hair in cases of 208
appearances in stomach indicative of 107
rigor mortis after death from 72
and survivorship..... 392
Poisons, death from certain mineral 282
—from narcotic 282
—from vegetable, condition of face after 293
detection of, at a remote period after death 291
influence on putrefaction of..... 91
introduced through vagina or anus 305
putrefaction in the stomach compared with the effects of irritant 106
Policies, negotiable nature of 369
Policy, meaning of, in insurance..... 356
POLLOCK (Chief Baron), remarks on insurance in its relation to insanity and suicide 378
Polydactylism, hereditary nature of... 175
Pomum Adami in the sexes compared 313
PONCET, on the condition of the retina after death 44
Position of dead body, importance in medico-legal cases of recording the 65
Post-mortem blood 38, 216

PAGE
Post-mortem, condition of face at the, to be noted 293
—of skin at, as compared with the result of a burn 472
cooling..... 45
—causes of..... 46
—circumstances influencing the rapidity of 50
—time occupied by 47
details to be noted before the clothes are removed at a 292
digestion of HUNTER 105
elevation of temperature 46
external examination of the body at a 293
on a frozen body 290
hæmorrhages 87
internal examination of body at the 296
maturity of new born children to be determined at the..... 295
method of conducting a 290
—of deciding at a, how long a meal had been taken before death 573
necessity for, in sudden death although not caused by poison or violence 280
notes to be made at a 291
order to be observed in opening the thorax and abdomen at a ... 298
—in which the various viscera should be examined 296
preservation of articles for analysis 306
— of blood for analysis at a 307
question as to a struggle during life determined at the 292
rigidity..... 293
the surroundings of a body to be noted at the 292
stains (*see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses)..... 75
value of, a long time after death 289
Post-mortem examination, importance of 4
best time after death for a..... 291
to be complete and methodical ... 290
not to be conducted by artificial light..... 290
details that may be discovered at a, a long time after death..... 291
identity determined at the 293
an inculpated person not to be present at the..... 290
how far interfered with by putrefaction 289
not interfered with by the decomposition of a body 109
positive and negative evidence derived from a 282
PAGE
Post-mortem examination at a remote period after death 291
of the abdomen 303
of the aorta 300
of the bladder, etc., ... 304
of the brain..... 296
of the female genitals 304
of the heart 300
of larynx, etc., ... 302
of the liver..... 303
of the lungs 300
of the lymphatic glands for the colouring matter of a suspected tattoo 192
of the kidneys 303
of the spinal cord 296
of the spleen 304
of the stomach and intestines 305
of the thorax 297, 299
of wounds 294
after death from anæmia 285
—from apnœa..... 287, 298
—from asthenia..... 286
—from coma 284
—from syncope 286
Potatoes, nutritive value of 567
Poultry, nutritive value of 567
Poverty and cold in relation to questions of survivorship 391
Pregnancy, determined from the discovery of fœtal bones in the same coffin with female adult ... 151
discernible at a remote period after death 291
Re identity..... 147
and insurance..... 365
mobility of the joints of the pelvis during 312
nausea of, a cause of death from starvation 561
Premature birth, influence on body weight of 581
burial..... 29, 30
Premium in insurance 355
Prescriptions, explosive..... 527
Presumption of death 380, 388
—bigamy and..... 381
—life insurance and 381
of survivorship (*see* Survivorship)... 382
—points to be considered in deciding 385
PREYER, researches on hæmoglobin 216
—on sleep 39
Profession and sex..... 314
Proud flesh..... 472
Prussian law on the presumption of survivorship 385
PRYRAND, sign of death suggested by 40
Pubes and umbilicus, distance between, a test of sex 334

PAGE

Pupils, dilatation of the, after death 43
Purpura nautica (*see* Scurvy) 589
Putrefaction, action of air on the development of 89, 90
—of moisture on the development of 88, 90
—of temperature on the development of 88, 90
apparent suffocation, the effects of the gases of..... 86
blood displacements, a result of... 86
of the bladder..... 108
of the blood-vessels 108
of bodies in cesspools 95
changes produced by 82
—in tissues and viscera resulting from..... 102
and chemical analysis..... 106
chemical composition of the gases of..... 83
circumstances promoting 88
—retarding 88
colour changes, resulting from ... 82, 96
compared with results of digestion 105
conditions modifying 87
definition of 74
degree of, to be observed at a post-mortem 293
delayed by arsenic..... 106
—by cold 434
of the diaphragm 108
discoloration of viscera as a result of.....102, 103
distension produced by..... 84
during life.....74, 102
effects of age and sex on 91
—on apparent age..... 85
of alcohol on 105
—on the brain of infants and adults..... 103, 107
—of burial on 90, 92
— —in peat and turf on 94
—of cause of death on 91
—of corpulence and leanness on... 91
—of disease likely to be confounded with phenomena of... 102
—on face resulting from 85
—of, on the larynx and trachea ... 103
—of poisons on 91
—on the stomach of 104
—of submersion in water on..... 95
—on the tongue resulting from ... 85
—of violence and body injuries on 92, 100
fluid effusions resulting from 87
of the gall-bladder..... 107
gases of 83, 96
of the gullet..... 108
hæmorrhages the result of..... 87
of the heart 107

PAGE

Putrefaction no hindrance to a post-mortem 109
influence of antiseptics on..... 92
—of lime on 92
—of mineral acids on 92
—of vermin on 109
of intestines..... 107
of the kidneys..... 108
of the liver 107
luminosity as a sign of 102
of the lungs..... 107
a means of determining the time of death 99, 119
of the mesentery and omentum ... 107
modifications of, resulting from submersion 95
of the pancreas 108
phenomena of..... 82
—order of the 100
and the post-mortem..... 289
power of hair to resist 198
prominence of the eyes caused by 84
as a sign of death..... 74, 81
softening of tissues as a result of... 102
spermatozoa not destroyed by..... 236
of the spleen 107
spontaneous delivery, the result of 85
— movements of a corpse resulting from..... 85
in the stomach compared with morbid and other conditions ... 104
treatment of bodies for identification in a state of advanced 110
of the uterus 108
in water 97
in water, air, and earth..... 89
Pyæmia, putrefaction after death from..... 91
Pyrites in coal..... 521
Pyroxylin, *see* Gun Cotton.
Pyroxylic spirit, *see* Methylic Alcohol.

Q

QUETELET, table of heights and weights at different ages 167

R

Race, difficulty of determining race from the skull..... 171
and identity 146, 171
measurements of the skeletons of different races..... 172
Rangoon oil, *see* Petroleum.
RANKE, on the urea lost in cases of starvation 581
Rape and age..... 161

PAGE

Rape, examination of genital hairs... 196
Rape oil, power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies 531
Recognition of persons 249
conditions necessary for 243
by a flash of lightning 246
—from firearms 246
by moonlight 246
by starlight..... 246
means of restoring a body for, when putrefaction is far advanced 110
Rectum, post-mortem examination of 306
Redness, inflammatory..... 86
post-mortem, a result of blood displacements 86
Red Saunders stains 239
Re-examination of witnesses 21
Regent's Park explosion 537
Relapsing fever, caused by improper food 591
Relative danger of multiparæ and primiparæ 365
RÉNÉ, temperature of new-born children 45
Respiration, its cessation a sign of death 36
CHEYNE-STOKES' 37
condition of lungs before the establishment of 301
FORT, on artificial..... 29
means of determining cessation of recovery after the prolonged cessation of 36
Respiratory muscles, death from stoppage to the action of the ... 283
system, examination in insurance cases of the..... 360
Rhatany stains 239
Ribs, influence of age on the cartilages of the 159
Rice, nutritive value of..... 567
RICHARDSON (Dr. B. W.), disinfectant for a decomposed body to be used at a post-mortem ... 110
experiments on the action of extreme cold on the living body ... 423
—with the induced spark..... 500
on post-mortem cooling 51
process of embalming 117
researches on muscular contractility..... 56
RICHARDSON (of Pennsylvania), researches on the size of blood corpuscles 215
— —of different animals 232
—on the spectra of blood..... 225
RICHET, researches on rigor mortis 63
Rickets, caused by improper food 590
influence on dentition 212

PAGE

RICORD, on the mortality from cold 422
RIEMBAULT on death from coal mine explosions 542
Rigidity from causes other than rigor mortis 73
post-mortem, *see* Rigor mortis.
Rigor mortis 58, 293
cause of 60
circumstances modifying the time of its appearance and disappearance..... 70
conditions delaying and hastening its appearance 62
influence of ice-cold water on 71
—of poisons on 72
instantaneous 63, 508
and death from lightning 72, 508
means of distinguishing it from other forms of rigidity 73
its occurrence in paralysed parts 72
the order in which various regions are affected by 69
the order of its disappearance ... 70
in starvation 580
effects of strychnia on 73
time after death that it sets in... 61
the time of its disappearance 70
Ringworm, as a cause of loss of hair 204
RIPAULT, sign of death suggested by 42
ROBIN, on the spontaneous combustion of charcoal 523
Rock oil, *see* Petroleum.
Rockets 521
Roman law on the presumption of survivorship 383
ROMANES, remarks by, on Preyer's paper on "Sleep" 39
ROSENMÜLLER, organ of..... 321
ROSENTHAL, experiments on muscular contractility 53
Rust stains 238
Rye meal, nutritive value of 567

S

Saccharine constituents of food 566
Safety lamp 542
Salmon, nutritive value of 567
Salt, effects resulting from non-supply of, in food 566
Sanguinaria stains 238
SANSOM (Dr.), on the diet of children 570
(modification of Balfour's) test of the heart's action 34
SAUNDERS, researches on the teeth... 209
SAVORY, account of an hermaphroditic sheep 322
Sawdust, combustible 524

PAGE

Sawdust and oil, spontaneous combustibility of 532
Scalds (*see* Burns) 453
Scars, *see* Cicatrix.
Re identity 147, 180
rules for the examination of..... 194
SCHULTZE, test for silk suggested by 199
Scurvy caused by improper food..... 589
Seaham colliery dust 546
Seal oil, power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies 531
Secrets, professional 20
"Seeing sparks" 248
Seminal animalcules, *see* Spermatozoa.
emissions, how far a test of sex ... 333
stains 234
—action of heat on 234
—chemical reactions of..... 234
—examination of old 236
—general appearance of 234
—guiacum test for 235
—LASSAIGNE'S test for..... 235
—microscopic examination of 235
—test to distinguish albuminous from..... 235
Servants, who responsible for supply of food to 562, 564
Setons, scars of 186
Sex, concealed 330
conclusions respecting questions of 331
conditions that may raise a doubt in the female as to..... 325
conformation of individual as a test of 334
determination of 310, 312
duty of the medical jurist in cases of doubtful 333
examination of cases of doubtful... 333
the genital gland, the only test of.. 322
and the growth of hair..... 325
influence on putrefaction of 91
in relation to personal identity..... 145, 150, 162
and profession..... 314
seminal emissions and menstrual discharges, how far tests of 333
and survivorship 387, 391
Sexes, difference in length and weight in the 163
homologous organs of the 321
various points of distinction in the 312
Sexless beings 315, 330
Sexual hairs 334
organs, differentiation of the 320
tastes and habits 332, 335
"Shape of mankind," what is implied by the phrase.....313, 318
Shipwreck and survivorship..... 388

PAGE

Shock, death from 282, 286
SIEVEKING (Dr.), on life insurance... 366
normal relationship between height and weight 168
Sight, limits of 242
the size of objects visible to unaided 248
Signal light composition 527
Silk, characters of 199
spontaneous combustibility of 531
test for..... 199
Silver, Berthollet's fulminating..... 526
fulminate..... 526
nitrate of, colour resulting from ingestion, permanent..... 192
oxalate..... 526
oxide 526
potassium fulminate 526
Sinus pocularis 321
Size of object and vision..... 248
Skeleton, *see* Bones.
age determined from the 157
determination of the stature from the length of the..... 171
of male and female compared 310
measurements of the.....169, 172
time after burial a body takes to be reduced to a 93
Skin, daily loss by the 568
effects of a burn on, compared with a post-mortem change..... 472
extent of injury to the, to prove fatal..... 461
a heat conductor of low power 423, 424
Skull, influence of age on the..... 159
various shapes of the according to race 171
weight and capacity of the, in different races..... 171
Sleep long persistent 39, 42
Small pox, scars of 186
SMART (Dr. William), on the fatality of burns..... 461
Smell at mouth to be observed at the post-mortem 293
SMITH (Dr. E.), diet scale 570
Smothering and survivorship 390
Soap and water used to wash blood stains, examination of 226
Soda, salicylate of, rigor mortis after death from..... 63
Softening, putrefactive..... 102
Somatic death 28
SOMMER, researches on rigor mortis 69
SORBY (Dr.), researches on spectroscopic examination of blood 215 *et seq.*
—respecting colouring matters present in hair 204
Sound, velocity of, in different media 249

PAGE

Sound, intensity of, under different conditions 250
Spectroscopic examination, bodies with which blood might be confounded 231
Speech, peculiarities of, Re identity 147
Spermatozoa 236
action of acids, alkalies and heat on 236
compared with trichomonads 237
power of resisting putrefaction, etc. 236
rule to be observed in deciding the nature of bodies supposed to be 237
semen without 235
size of human..... 236
tailless..... 236
their tenacity to hairs 196
a test of the male sex 331, 333
vitality of 236
with what they may be confounded 237
Spinal cord, cadaveric ecchymoses in the 80
death from injury to the upper part of the 283
examination of the..... 297
Spine, death from injuries to the ... 283
Spleen, post-mortem examination of the 304
putrefactive changes in the 107
Spontaneous combustion, *see* Combustion.
post-mortem muscular movements 55, 85
SQUIRE (B.), on the removal of a nævus 189
Stains of blood (*see* Blood Stains) ... 213
of semen (*see* Seminal Stains) 234
arising from bile..... 81
general points to be observed in examining 212
anatto 239
archil 239
brazil wood..... 238
camwood..... 239
catechu 239
flowers..... 239
fruit 239
grease 237
iron (rust) 238
kino 239
lemon on steel 238
logwood 238
madder 238
red Saunders 239
rhatany 239
sanguinaria..... 238
tar and pitch 238
tobacco juice 238
Starch, an improper diet for infants 573
Starlight, recognition by 246
Starvation, acute 560
and age 392

PAGE

Starvation, and asthenia 283
blood after death from 216
chronic 560
circumstances influencing the time of death in cases of 583
—under which death may occur from..... 561
by criminal neglect 562
—usual defence in cases of 560
disease a cause of 561
and emaciation 582
exhibitions 563
fatty changes in cases of chronic... 580
and habit of body 393
hæmoglobin after death from 38
and hysteria at times connected ... 561
of infants from the mother's milk being of poor quality 563
influence of breathing an impure air in cases of..... 578
influenced by age 584
—by the temperature to which the patient is exposed 584
loss of urea during..... 581
muscular power possible in cases of 583
period of death in 583
post-mortem appearances indicative of 585
pretended 560
by preventing a child from taking the breast 560
the pulse in..... 577
questions of legal interest bearing on..... 563
recovery after..... 585
of servants, etc..... 560
suicidal 563
and survivorship 392
symptoms of 575
the temperature in..... 578
treatment of 580
and uterine irregularities 561
water, access to, an influencing condition in cases of 584
with and without water..... 392
weight, gain in, on taking food after long..... 580
—loss of, in 578
in young girls 561
Stature, Re identity.....146, 148, 162
influence of factory life on 165
Steam, burns from..... 456
Sterility and hermaphrodism 331
Sternum, influence of age on the..... 159
Stillborns, burial of, with adults frequent 151
STOKES, researches on the colouring matter of blood 215
Stomach, cadaveric ecchymoses in the 81

PAGE

Stomach, effects of putrefaction, disease, etc., on the 104
post-mortem examination of the ... 305
Strangulation, death from..... 283
—simulated by the effects of decomposition 85
Struggle, data for deciding at a post-mortem whether a struggle had occurred before death 292
STRUVE, researches on the colouring matter of blood 215
Strychnia, effects of poisoning by, on rigor mortis..... 73
influence on putrefaction after death from 91
rigor mortis after death from 63, 65
Subcutaneous hypostases (*see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses)..... 75
Submersion, death from 283
Subpœna..... 16
Sudden death 279
influence of, on rigor mortis..... 62
SUE (M.), table of the size of the fœtus and of children at different ages 162
Suffocation, likely to be simulated by the development of putrefactive gases 86
a cause of death from burns..... 465
death from 283
Sugillations, *see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses 75
Suicidal starvation..... 563
Suicide, law respecting 377
of the sane and insane 376
and life insurance 375
Sulphur, firing point of..... 573
Sulphuric acid burn 457
Sun, effects of the morning 438
Sunstroke 435
not an accident 366
cause of the phenomena of 437
post-mortem appearances of 442
prophylactics against..... 438
sequelæ of 441
treatment of 441
Suppuration, death from 283
Surgical operations, cicatrices arising from..... 185
Survivorship 383
in cases of death from cold 391
—drowning..... 388
—heat 392
—lightning 392
—poisons..... 392
—shipwreck 388
—smothering 390
—starvation 392
and extremes of temperature 422
law on, English 385

PAGE

Survivorship, law on, French 384
—Mahometan..... 385
—Prussian 385
—Roman 383
of mother and infant in childbed 393
presumption of 382
where the time of death of one of the parties is known, and the other unknown 393
where two or more persons meet their death by a common accident 383
Sympathetic inks 239
Syncope, a cause of death from burns 465
causes of 283
as a mode of death 283
possibility of its being confounded with death 39
proper 286
—causes of 286
—definition of 286
—post-mortem appearances after death from 286
varieties of 283, 284
Syphilis as a cause of the loss of hair 204
influence of, on dentition..... 212
—body weight 581
Re identity 175
transmission of, by tattooing 190
Syrens, human 318

T

Tabes mesenterica, influence on body weight..... 581
TANNER (Dr.), fast of forty days ... 563
loss of weight during forty days fast 578
Tapping, death from..... 286
Tar stains 238
TARDIEU, on obliteration of tattooes 190
Tattooes, accidental 189
arising from coal mine explosions 190
caused by gunpowder burns..... 456
in chimney sweeps 190
circumstances influencing permanence of..... 191
colouring matters used for 191
—bodies used found in contiguous absorbent glands 192
death resulting from 190
—from attempted obliteration of 193
from the firing of fire-arms 189
not effaced by post-mortem separation of the cuticle 191
—by maceration of the skin in water or in spirit 191
how effected 189
from gunpowder and coal mine explosions compared..... 457
obliteration of 191, 192, 193

PAGE

Tattooes, how far they may be obliterated by time 190
operation necessary to produce ... 189
permanence of 193
Re-identity 147, 189
rules for examination of 194
from scratches and printers' ink... 190
from scratches with steel pens and writing ink 190
transmission of syphilis by 190
TAYLOR and WILKS, experiments on post-mortem cooling..... 47
TAYLOR, on formation of adipocere 114
on the line of redness in burns..... 474
on rigor mortis 70
on the vesications of burns 479
TEALE, case of high body temperature 420
Teeth 209
circumstances influencing development of 212
development of the 211
to be examined at a post-mortem.. 292
indestructibility of the, after death 94
method of deciding the age of children from the 210
peculiarities of, Re identity 149, 150, 209
supernumerary 212
tables showing the arrangement of the temporary and permanent... 209
time of the appearance of the..... 211
TEICHMANN, test for blood..... 222
Temperature, abnormal body 420
of the body as a test of death..... 45
—as a means of determining the length of time a body has been dead..... 45
—to be observed at a post-mortem 293
daily range of..... 419
extremes of..... 419
normal body 419
power of living animals to tolerate extremes of.....420, 422
regulation of, in the body..... 419
survivorship and extremes of 422
Tenancy by courtesy 314, 383
Testes, non-descent of the 327
presence of, the proof of the sex being male 322, 331
simulated by prolapsed ovaries ... 326
distinction between ovaries and ... 335
Tests of death, popular 35, 37
Tetanic rigidity, post-mortem 64
Tetanus, death from 283
from burns 466
Thermic fever..... 435
THIN (Dr.), on the symptoms produced by an extreme heat..... 440
Thoracic duct, death from diseases of the 283

PAGE

Thorax, examination of the, at a post-mortem 299
and abdomen, post-mortem examination of the 298
Thrombosis, sudden death from...279, 280
Thunder 497
Thunderstorm, safe and dangerous places in a 499
"Thunderer" (H.M.S.), cases of burns from the explosion on..... 461
Thymus gland, post-mortem examination of the..... 302
TIDY, experiments with petroleum lamps 538
researches on recognition by the flash of fire-arms..... 247
on the vesications of burns 481
Time, changes effected by 147
Tobacco stains 238
leaves, spontaneous combustion of 530
Toes, supernumerary 317
Tolerance, law of, in relation opium 363
—as regards the power of the living body to bear extremes of temperature 421
Tongue, effects produced after death by putrefaction on the 85
to be observed at a post-mortem ... 293
Total abstinence and life insurance 374
Tottenham Court Road explosion... 541
Trachea, post-mortem examination of the 302
Trades, hazardous 364, 373
in respect to personal identity 145
Trance 33, 39
Trichinosis, examination at a post-mortem for..... 307
Trichomonas vaginæ..... 237
Tropics, dangers of the..... 365
True bill 6
Turf, effects of burial in 95
Turkish bath, experiments in a 436
Turpentine, its power of conferring spontaneous combustibility on organic bodies 532
volatility and firing point of the vapour of..... 540
Twins, operation for dividing united 319
Typhus, caused by improper food ... 591

U

Ulcers and perforations, found at a post-mortem compared..... 306
scars of..... 186
of stomach, etc., sudden death from..... 280

PAGE
Umbilicus, position of, and hair on, in male and female respectively 313
Upas antiar, experiments with 286
Uræmic poisoning 282
Urea, loss of, during starvation 581
quantity daily excreted by children and adults 573
Ureters, post-mortem examination of the 304
Urethra, post-mortem examination of the 304
Urine, characters of normal 362
examination of the, for blood 229
daily loss by the 568
to be preserved at a post-mortem 304
Uterus, a manly appearance resulting from the absence of the 326
difficulties in determining sex, arising from prolapsus of the 326
normal and abnormal conditions of the 304
post-mortem examination of the 304
its power of resisting decomposition 313
putrefactive changes of the 108
round ligament of the 321
sudden death from rupture of the 280

V

Vaccination, scars of 186
Vagina, injuries inflicted through the 305
post-mortem examination of the 304
Veal, nutritive value of 567
Vegetables, necessity for in diet 590
nutritive value of 567
Veins, condition of blood after death from admission of air into 216
condition of hæmoglobin after death from entrance of air into 38
Venæsection, proper position in performing 286
Vermin, influence of, on putrefaction 109
VERPILLEUX, on explosive mixtures of dust and air 543
Vertebræ, influence of age on the 156
Vesications, nature of fluid in the, produced by burns 479
contents of, formed by burns inflicted before and after death 477
as tests of burns being produced during life 475
Vesicles, formation of, before and after death from burns 40
Vetch, injurious action of certain varieties of 589
Vibices (*see* Cadaveric Ecchymoses) 75, 77
VIERORDT, quantity of food required daily 569
Violence, condition of face after death from 293
Violence, influence of, on putrefaction 92
injuries due to exhumation mistaken for acts of 100
putrefaction in relation to marks of 100
simulated by the effects of lightning 504
VIRCHOW on the distinction between a testicle and an ovary 335
Virginity to be observed at a post-mortem 295
Vision, effects of age on the acuteness of 245
normal 243
and size of object 248
VITAL, on explosive mixtures of dust and air 543, 545

W

WALTHER, experiments on the action of an extreme cold on the living animal 421
WARD, table of the weight and capacity of the skulls of different nations 171
Warehouses, fires in 532
Warmth, an influencing condition in cases of starvation 584
Water, access to, an influencing condition in cases of starvation 584
appearances presented by body at different periods after submersion in 97
burns from boiling water 455
effects of, on putrefaction 89
—on decomposition of submersion in 95
necessity for in diet 565
position in which a dead body floats on 97
putrefaction in 95
quantity required by children and adults per day 565
results of a deficiency of, in diet 565
—of drinking cold water when heated 429
sudden death from drinking cold 280
Weapons, examination of, for hairs 195
found in the hands after death 67
and wounds 295
Weight of adults 166
of children at birth, circumstances influencing 164
at different ages 581
—conditions influencing 581
diminution in child's weight after birth 163
of the fœtus and of children at different ages 161

PAGE
Weight, loss of, in cases of starvation 578
—of, to what extent consistent with life 579
of man, how distributed 581
mean weight of man 581
sudden increase in the case of those in training 572
Wheat flour, nutritive value of 567
WILLAN (Dr.), case of starvation 585
WILLICH, formula of 359
WINSLOW (Dr.), on starvation 560
Wisdom teeth, first to decay 211
Witness box, the 18
Witnesses 16
the skilled or expert 17
Wolffian ducts 320
Womanly men 326
Women, manly 325
Wood, spontaneous combustion of 528
spirit, *see* Methylic Alcohol.
WOOD (Dr. Horatio C.), on sun-
Wool fibres 199
spontaneous combustion of 531
WORONICHEN, researches on the teeth 210
Wounded, effects of severe cold on the 429
Wounds, burns not regarded in law as 453
PAGE
Wounds and Cicatrices 181, 184
details to be observed at a post-mortem respecting 294
inflicted after death 294
from lightning 503
and their relations to weapons 295
resulting from burns 462
WRIGHT (Dr.), on the vesications of burns 480
Written notes, use of in giving evidence 19

X

Xanthophyl 207
Xerotine Siccative 537

Y

Young, their power to bear extremes of heat and cold 422

Zinc chloride, putrefaction after death from 91
Zymotic diseases, sudden death from 280

INDEX TO CASES REFERRED TO.

	PAGE
Aram (Eugene), case of...	267
Atlee (Lydia), case of	271
Aubert, case of	261
Bailey v. Imperial Insurance Company	397
Ball (Hugh Swinton), case of	413
Baronet, case of	258
Beake v. Nicholson	402
Beasney's trust	407
Benoit, case of	273
Bishop (Rosetta), case of	273
Borrodaile v. Hunter	402
Brembridge v. Hoare	398
Briggs, murder of, *see* R. v. Müller.	
Broughton v. Randall	416
Calo, case of	602
Canning (Elizabeth), case of	601
Cashim (Miss), case of	494
Cassali, case of	258
Chapelton, case of fasting girl at	596
Chattock v. Shaw	400
Christine (Millie) ("Two-headed Nightingale"), case of	341
Church v. Smith	405
Clark (John), trial of	13
Clarke, murder of, *see* Aram (Eugene).	
Cornish (Mark), case of	602
Craig v. Fenn	400
Cross v. Railway Accident Insurance Company	403
Da Costa v. Jones	347
Davy, Re	408
De la Pommerais, case of	401
Dautun (Auguste), case of	263
D'Eon (Chevalier), case of	347
Desha, case of	125
Doe v. Nepeun	406
Douat (Vital), Re	408
Douglas Peerage, case	173, 258
Duckett v. Williams	404
Dufaur v. Professional Life Insurance Company	379
Dumas (Blanche), case of	342
Dutille (Armand), case of	258
Earl of Mar (Exors. of) v. Edinburgh Life Insurance Company	401
Ebermann (Gottlieb), case of	262
Elgie (Mrs.), case of	397
Eltham Murder	276
Evans v. Cox	399
Fauntleroy (Exors. of) v. the Amicable	402
Fitton v. Accidental Death Assurance Company	403
Foulkes v. Selway	10
Fowkes (Exors. of) v. Manchester and London Assurance Company	371, 397
Franklin's Expedition, cases of starvation in	597
Frazer v. Bagley	273
Garbero (Anna), case of	595
Garnons v. Barnard	14
Geach v. Ingall	397
Gilchrist, case of	491
Göttlich (Gottlieb), case of	345
Granet (Guillaume), case of	600
Green v. Green	415
Greenacre, case of	263
Greetham v. Milnes	415
Guérin, case of	267
Guerre (Martin), *see* Dutille (Armand).	
Hebdon v. West	395
Hendon, mutilation case at	267
Hepburn v. Lordan	553

	PAGE
Hiorns and Drew v. Railway Passengers' Insurance Company ...	395
Hoag, *see* Parker (J.)	260
Hoffstedt, case of	401
Hohmann (Catherine)	348
Holliss v. Turner	134
Horn v. Anglo-Australian Life Insurance Company	379
Houet (Widow), case of	267
Huelin v. Wilson	416
Huguenin v. Rayley	399
Hungerford murder, *see* R. v. Day and the Tedbury's.	
Hunter (Elizabeth), case of	271
Huntley v. St. George Insurance Company	398
Hutton v. Waterloo Life Association	400
Hutton, Re	381
Infants, identification of	257
Irish Famine	599
"Jane Lowden," case of the	598
Jay v. Gresham Life Insurance Company	399
Julius v. Bishop of Oxford	18
Keir, case of the murder of	123
Kinnear v. Rock Insurance Company	402
Knowles v. North British Insurance Company	552
Koebel v. Saunders	552
Lane (H.), murder of, *see* R. v. Wainwright	
Lateau (Louise), case of	595
Leete v. Gresham Life Office	398
Lefevre v. Boyd	398
Lesurgues, case of	181
Lewis's trusts	416
Livingstone, case of Dr.	142
Lowestoft murder	50
Macdonald v. Law Life Insurance Company	405
Macleane v. Insurance Company ...	408
Mair v. Railway Passengers' Insurance Company	403
Market Harborough Fasting Girl, case of	595
Martin v. Travellers' Insurance Company	404
Mason v. Nicholson	537
Mawer (Peter), case of	94
Maynard v. Rhode	396
Meer Khan, case of	268
Michael v. Gillespy	551
Moore, Ann, case of	594
Muller (Salomé), case of	263
National Insurance Company, case against	400
Ommaney v. Stillwell	414
Palmer and Fish v. Irving	397
Parker (J.), case of	260
Parkman (Dr.), case of	124, 264
Patagonian Missionaries, cases of starvation occurring to the	597
"Peculiar People," cases of	564
Phene's trusts	406
Pickering murder	136
Pole v. Rogers	399
Providence Insurance Company, case against	399
Prudential Insurance Company v. Edmonds	370, 407
R. v. Barrett	13
Bayley	12
Bedingfield	14
Berryman	271
Blewitt	493
Bonner	14
Briggs	405
Cass	272
Castro alias Orton (Tichborne Case)	145, 146, 173, 256
Cleary	14
Cook	493
Cotton	401
Davey	564
Day and the Tedbury's	278
Devine	273
Ellison	122
Foster	12
Gaitskell	493
Gardner	122, 140
Gibbings	274
Good	493
Goodfellow	493
Haines	247
Hall (Mary)	564
Hanson	272
Harrington	272
Harvey	13
Hay	408
Heywood	122
Hill	493
Jacob	564, 575, 578, 582, 593
Jenkins	13
John	14
King	493
Leonard, O'Brien, etc.	554
Londesborough	13
Lumley	381, 406
Macmillan	494
Mahaig	129
Manning and wife	124

	PAGE
R. v. May	377
Mead	14
Mills	602
Mitchell	560, 603
Morby	564, 603
Morgan	13
Müller	275
Murrow	453, 485
Newton	493
Orton, *see* R. v. Castro.	
Paine	318
Palmer	401
Peace (Blackheath burglar)	174
Perkins	15
Pettingill	13
Platts	270
Pook	276
Pryke	560
Pym	13
Qualter	13
Raynon	256
Reason and Tranter	14
Reed and Donelan	256
Ross (Elizabeth)	259
Savage	11
Saville	122
Scott	603
Sheward	266
Spicer	140
Squire	564
Stapley	247
Staunton	579, 582, 601
Steed	272
Stephenson	11
Taylor	493
Teague	272
Tinkler	14
Vamplew	161
Varney	271
Wainwright	264
Walters	446
Wanstell	13
Waters	446
Waters (Margaret)	564
Wheeler	9, 277
White	247
Wilmot	8
Woodcock	14
Ralston and Insurance office	396
Rawlings v. Desborough	399
Reed (Robert), case of	122
Ross v. Bradshaw	396
Russell (Lord William), case of	121
Saxe Gotha (Duke of), case of	395
Schwabe v. Clift	378, 402
Selwyn, Re	413
Shottisham Angel (The), case of	595
Siamese Twins	341
Sieur Labbé, case of	246
Simcox v. Bignold	398
Sinclair v. Maritime Insurance Coy.	366, 403
Smith v. Accident Insurance Coy.	368, 404
Smyth v. Smyth	186, 256
Sœur Fried, case of	396
Southcombe v. Merriman	399
St. Albans murder (*see* R. v. Wheeler)	9
Stormont v. Waterloo Association Company	376
Stowmarket explosion	258
Stuart, case of	261
Suydam (Levi), case of	345
Sweet v. Fairlie	397
Tanner, case of voluntary fasting by Dr.	563, 578, 583, 603
Taylor v. Deplock	411
Thames Mystery	266
Tichborne case, *see* R. v. Castro.	
Townshend, case of Colonel	33
Tynewydd, case of imprisoned miners at	598
Underwood v. Wing	410
Von Lindenau v. Desborough	395
Wainewright v. Bland	401
Walsh (Caroline), case of	259
Walters v. Barker	396
Waterloo Bridge case	265
Watson v. England	405
Watson v. Mainwaring	371, 398
Wells Harbour case	9
Welsh Fasting Girl, case of, *see* R. v. Jacob.	
Wheelton v. Hurdisty	400
Whitechapel Tragedy, *see* R. v. Wainwright	264
Wiggins v. Gresham Life Office	399
Willis v. Poole	397
Wilshere v. Brown	396
Wing v. Angrave	385
Winspear v. Accident Insurance Company	404

By the same Author.

WILL SHORTLY BE PUBLISHED,

LEGAL MEDICINE.

PART II.

HANDBOOK OF MODERN CHEMISTRY,

INORGANIC AND ORGANIC.

Price 16*s.*

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

"The mere collection of such a mass of details must have been a colossal task, and we are bound to say that the way in which they are arranged shows that the hand of the experienced professor has been at work, as well as that of the patient and careful compiler. Dr. Tidy's work is quite worthy of ranking with the classical manuals of Miller and Fownes, and we may safely prophesy that it will speedily take its place side by side with them in all chemical libraries."—*Chemical News.*

"The subjects here touched upon are clearly dealt with, and Dr. Tidy's style of writing cannot fail to attract the attention of the reader. . . . Great clearness of style is given to the book by the methodical manner in which Dr. Tidy has arranged the individual consideration of each element under several heads."—*Nature.*

"Dr. Tidy's work is a kind of highly condensed cyclopædia of chemistry. In fact the work contains within itself the materials of a small manual of qualitative analysis. The student, anxious to get placed before him as much information as he possibly can, will appreciate the terseness of Dr. Tidy's style. We doubt if any other chemical work containing so large an amount of information could be procured."—*Dublin Journal of Medical Science.*

J. & A. CHURCHILL, New Burlington Street.

THE LONDON WATER SUPPLY.

Price 2*s.* 6*d.*

J. & A. CHURCHILL, New Burlington Street.

WORKS BY DR. DOBELL,

Consulting Physician (late Senior Physician) to the Royal Hospital for Diseases of the Chest, etc.

A New and Enlarged Edition, carefully Revised and Annotated, with Coloured Plate.

ON LOSS OF WEIGHT, BLOOD-SPITTING, and LUNG DISEASE. To which is now added Part VI., on the FUNCTIONS and DISORDERS of the LIVER, and their Management in accordance with the Results of Modern Discovery. Octavo. Cloth, 10*s.* 6*d.* Churchill.

AFFECTIONS OF THE HEART and in its Neighbourhood. Cases, Aphorisms, and Commentaries. Illustrated. Second Issue. Octavo. Cloth. 6*s.* 6*d.* Lewis.

ON WINTER COUGH, CATARRH, BRONCHITIS, EMPHYSEMA, ASTHMA. Coloured Plates. Third Edition, 10*s.* 6*d.* Churchill.

ON DIET and REGIMEN in SICKNESS and HEALTH, and on the Interdependence and Prevention of Diseases, and the Diminution of their Fatality. Seventh Edition. Octavo. Cloth. 10*s.* 6*d.* Lewis.

SMITH, ELDER, & CO.'S PUBLICATIONS.

ATLAS OF HISTOLOGY.

By E. KLEIN, M.D., F.R.S.

LECTURER ON HISTOLOGY AT ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S HOSPITAL MEDICAL SCHOOL,

AND

E. NOBLE SMITH, F.R.C.S., Edin., &c.

FORMERLY SENIOR HOUSE-SURGEON TO ST. MARY'S HOSPITAL, AND RESIDENT MEDICAL OFFICER TO THE CHILDREN'S HOSPITAL AT BRISTOL, AND THE LOCK HOSPITAL, LONDON.

A complete Representation of the Microscopic Structure of Simple and Compound Tissues of Man and the higher Animals, in carefully executed Coloured Engravings, with Explanatory Text of the Figures, and a concise Account of the hitherto ascertained facts in Histology.

Royal 4to, with 48 Coloured Plates, bound in half-leather, price £4 4s.; or in Thirteen Parts, price 6s. each.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

"We are much pleased with these plates. They give very faithful delineations of the objects described in the text, and they are not overcharged. They should be on the table of every practitioner who desires to make himself familiar with the progress of Histology."—*Lancet*, April 26, 1879.

"This admirably executed Atlas has throughout maintained the high promise with which it started, and fulfils all that could be expected from the joint work of our best histologist and the most accomplished of British medical draughtsmen. The illustrations of the last two parts, especially devoted to the display and brief description of the intimate structure of the nervous centres and nerve ganglia, are admirable for the perfection and beauty of the sections and the choice of specimens, as they are for the delicate skill and intimate knowledge of the draughtsman. The text is only too short, for it is full of accurate, recent and lucid information. It is long since any work of more entirely satisfactory conception and execution has issued from the English medical press. This is very high praise; but the rare merits of this standard production deserve no less."—*British Medical Journal*, October 4, 1879.

Royal 4to, bound in half-leather, price £1 5s.

THE DESCRIPTIVE ATLAS OF ANATOMY;

A REPRESENTATION OF THE ANATOMY OF THE HUMAN BODY.

In 92 Royal 4to plates, containing 550 Illustrations, introducing Heitzmann's Figures, considerably modified, and with many original Drawings from Nature.

By E. NOBLE SMITH, F.R.C.S., Edin.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

"Certainly one of the most remarkable publications of the day. The great advantage which it presents is that all the attachments of bones, the arteries, veins, &c., are copiously lettered and described *in situ*, and the arteries and veins are coloured. The book is one of great utility and merit, and reflects credit on the artist, and also on those who have produced it."—*British Medical Journal.*

"The plan of this work is most excellent, and to one who is unable to keep his anatomical knowledge always ready at demand, but who requires occasionally to refer to particular points, it will prove an invaluable aid. Instead of a letterpress description, with letters or figures to aid in identifying the various processes of bone, or muscles, or blood-vessels, these structures are labelled *in situ*."—*Glasgow Medical Journal.*

London: SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15, Waterloo Place.

SMITH, ELDER, & CO.'S PUBLICATIONS.

DEMONSTRATIONS of ANATOMY; being a Guide to the Knowledge of the Human Body by Dissection. By GEORGE VINER ELLIS, Emeritus Professor of University College, London. Ninth Edition, Revised. With 248 engravings on wood. Small 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

ILLUSTRATIONS of DISSECTIONS. In a Series of Original Coloured Plates, the Size of Life, representing the Dissection of the Human Body. By G. V. ELLIS and G. H. FORD. Imperial folio. Two vols. half-bound in Morocco, £6 6*s.* May also be had in parts, separately. Parts 1 to 28, 3*s.* 6*d.* each; Part 29, 5*s.*

A DIRECTORY for the DISSECTION of the HUMAN BODY. By JOHN CLELAND, M.D., F.R.S., Professor of Anatomy in the University of Glasgow. Second Edition. Fcp., 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

MANUAL of PRACTICAL ANATOMY. THE UPPER LIMB. With Outline Plates. By J. COSSAR EWART, M.D. Edin., F.R.C.S.E., F.R.S.E., Lecturer on Anatomy, School of Medicine, Edinburgh. Demy 8vo. price 4*s.* 6*d.*

SURGERY: its PRINCIPLES and PRACTICE. By TIMOTHY HOLMES, M.A., Cantab., F.R.C.S., Surgeon to St. George's Hospital. Second Edition. With upwards of 400 Illustrations. Royal 8vo. 30*s.*

An INDEX of SURGERY; being a Concise Classification of the Main Facts and Theories of Surgery, for the use of Senior Students and others. By C. B. KEETLEY, F.R.C.S., Senior Assistant Surgeon to the West London Hospital, Surgeon to the Surgical Aid Society. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

SURGICAL LECTURES. Delivered in the Theatre of the Westminster Hospital. By RICHARD DAVY, M.B., F.R.C.S, Surgeon to the Hospital. Demy 8vo. with Illustrations, 7*s.* 6*d.*

ANTISEPTIC SURGERY; its Principles, Practice, History, and Results. By W. WATSON CHEYNE, M.B., F.R.C.S., Assistant-Surgeon to King's College Hospital, and Demonstrator of Surgical Pathology in King's College. With 145 Illustrations, 8vo. 21*s.*

The SURGERY of DEFORMITIES: the Nature, Symptoms, and Treatment of Deformities of the Human Body. A MANUAL FOR STUDENTS AND PRACTITIONERS. By E. NOBLE SMITH, F.R.C.S. Ed., L.R.C.P. Lond., &c., Surgeon to the Farringdon Dispensary; formerly Senior House-Surgeon to St. Mary's Hospital, and Resident Medical Officer to the Children's Hospital, Bristol, and to the Lock Hospital, London. Large Crown 8vo., with 118 Illustrations, 10*s.* 6*d.*

ANTISEPTIC SURGERY: an Address delivered at St. Thomas's Hospital, with subsequent Debate. To which are added a short Statement of the Theory of the Antiseptic Method, a Description of the Materials employed in carrying it out, and some applications of the Method of Operations and Injuries in Different Regions of the Body, and to Wounds received in War. By Sir WILLIAM MACCORMAC, M.A., F.R.C.S, E. & I. M.Ch. (Hon. Caus.), Surgeon and Lecturer on Surgery at St. Thomas's Hospital. With Illustrations. 8vo. price 15*s.*

A MANUAL of DENTAL SURGERY and PATHOLOGY. By ALFRED COLEMAN, L.C.P., F.R.C.S.Exam., L.D.S., &c.; Senior Dental Surgeon and Lecturer on Dental Surgery to St. Bartholomew's and the Dental Hospital of London; Member of the Board of Examiners in Dental Surgery, Royal College of Surgeons; late President, Odontological Society of Great Britain. With 388 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

SYPHILIS and LOCAL CONTAGIOUS DISORDERS. Second Edition, entirely re-written. By BERKELEY HILL, M.D. Lond, F.R.C.S., Professor of Clinical Surgery in University College, Surgeon to University College Hospital and to the Lock Hospital; and ARTHUR COOPER, L.R.C.P, M.R.C.S., late House Surgeon to the Lock Hospital &c. Royal 8vo. 18*s.*

BY THE SAME AUTHORS.

THE STUDENT'S MANUAL of VENEREAL DISEASES. Being a Concise Description of those Affections and their Treatment. Second Edition, Post 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

The ESSENTIALS of BANDAGING: for Managing Fractures and Dislocations; for administering Ether and Chloroform; and for using other Surgical Apparatus. With 134 Illustrations. By BERKELEY HILL, M.B. Lond, F.R.C.S., Professor of Clinical Surgery in University College, Surgeon to University College Hospital, and Surgeon to the Lock Hospital. Fourth Edition, revised and much enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

London: SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15, Waterloo Place.

SMITH, ELDER, & CO.'S PUBLICATIONS.

A TREATISE on the SCIENCE and PRACTICE of MIDWIFERY. By W. S. PLAYFAIR, M.D., F.R.C.P., Physician-Accoucheur to H.I. and R.H. the Duchess of Edinburgh: Professor of Obstetric Medicine in King's College; Physician for the Diseases of Women and Children to King's College Hospital; Consulting Physician to the General Lying-in Hospital, and to the Evelina Hospital for Children: President of the Obstetrical Society of London; late Examiner in Midwifery to the University of London, and to the Royal College of Physicians. Third Edition. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. With 166 Illustrations, 28*s.*

A MANUAL OF MIDWIFERY for MIDWIVES. By FANCOURT BARNES, M.D. Aber., M.R.C.P. Lond., Physician to the British Lying-in Hospital; Assistant-Physician to the Royal Maternity Charity of London; Physician for the Diseases of Women to the St. George's and St. James's Dispensary. Crown 8vo. with numerous Illustrations, 6*s.*

DISEASES of WOMEN: including their Pathology, Causation, Symptoms, Diagnosis and Treatment. A Manual for Students and Practitioners. By ARTHUR W. EDIS, M.D., Lond., F.R.C.P., Assistant Obstetric Physician to the Middlesex Hospital, late Physician to the British Lying-in Hospital. With numerous Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

MANUAL of PATHOLOGICAL HISTOLOGY. By CORNIL and RANVIER. Translated, by authority, from the New and Re-written French Edition, with the Original Illustrations.—HISTOLOGY OF THE TISSUES. Demy 8vo, price 21*s.*

A TEXT-BOOK of PRACTICAL HISTOLOGY. With 30 Outline Plates, 1 Coloured Plate, and 27 Wood Engravings. By WILLIAM STIRLING, M.D., Sc.D., F.R.S.E., Regius Professor of the Institutes of Medicine in the University of Aberdeen. Demy 4to, price 14*s.*

A COURSE of PRACTICAL HISTOLOGY. By EDWARD ALBERT SCHÄFER, Assistant-Professor of Physiology, University College. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 10*s.* 6*d.*

COMPENDIUM of HISTOLOGY. Twenty-four Lectures. By HEINRICH FREY, Professor. Translated from the German, by permission of the Author, by by GEORGE R. CUTTER, M.D. With 208 Illustrations. 8vo, 12*s.*

ELEMENTS of HUMAN PHYSIOLOGY. By Dr. L. HERMANN, Professor of Physiology in the University of Zurich. Second Edition. Entirely recast from the Sixth German Edition, with very copious additions, and many additional Woodcuts, by ARTHUR GAMGEE, M.D., F.R.S., Brackenbury Professor of Physiology in Owen's College, Manchester, and Examiner in Physiology in the University of Edinburgh. Demy 8vo, 16*s.*

A TREATISE ON THE THEORY and PRACTICE OF MEDICINE. By JOHN SYER BRISTOWE, M.D. Lond., Fellow and formerly Censor of the Royal College of Physicians; Senior Physician to, and Joint-Lecturer on Medicine at, St. Thomas's Hospital; President of the Society of Medical Officers of Health; Examiner in Medicine to the Royal College of Surgeons, formerly Examiner in Medicine to the University of London, and Lecturer on General Pathology and on Physiology at St. Thomas's Hospital. Third Edition. 8vo, 21*s.*

CLINICAL MANUAL for the STUDY of MEDICAL CASES. Edited by JAMES FINLAYSON, M.D., Physician and Lecturer on Clinical Medicine in the Glasgow Western Infirmary, &c. With Special Chapters by Prof. GAIRDNER on the Physiognomy of Disease; Prof. STEPHENSON on Disorders of the Female Organs; Dr. ALEXANDER ROBERTSON, on Insanity; Dr. SAMSON GEMMELL on Physical Diagnosis; Dr. JOSEPH COATS on Laryngoscopy and also on the Method of Performing Post-Mortem Examinations. The rest of the book, on the Examination of Medical Cases and on the Symptoms of Disorder in the Various Systems, is by Dr. FINLAYSON. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

SCROFULA and its GLAND DISEASES. An Introduction to the General Pathology of Scrofula. With an Account of the Histology, Diagnosis, and Treatment of its Glandular Affections. By FREDERICK TREVES, F.R.C.S., Assistant-Surgeon to, and Senior Demonstrator of Anatomy at the London Hospital, late Wilson Professor of Pathology at the Royal College of Surgeons. Demy 8vo. With Plates, 10*s.* 6*d.*

On CHOREA and other Allied Movement Disorders of Early Life. By OCTAVIUS STURGES, M.D., Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, Physician to the Westminster Hospital, Assistant-Physician to the Hospital for Children. Crown 8vo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

London: SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15, Waterloo Place.